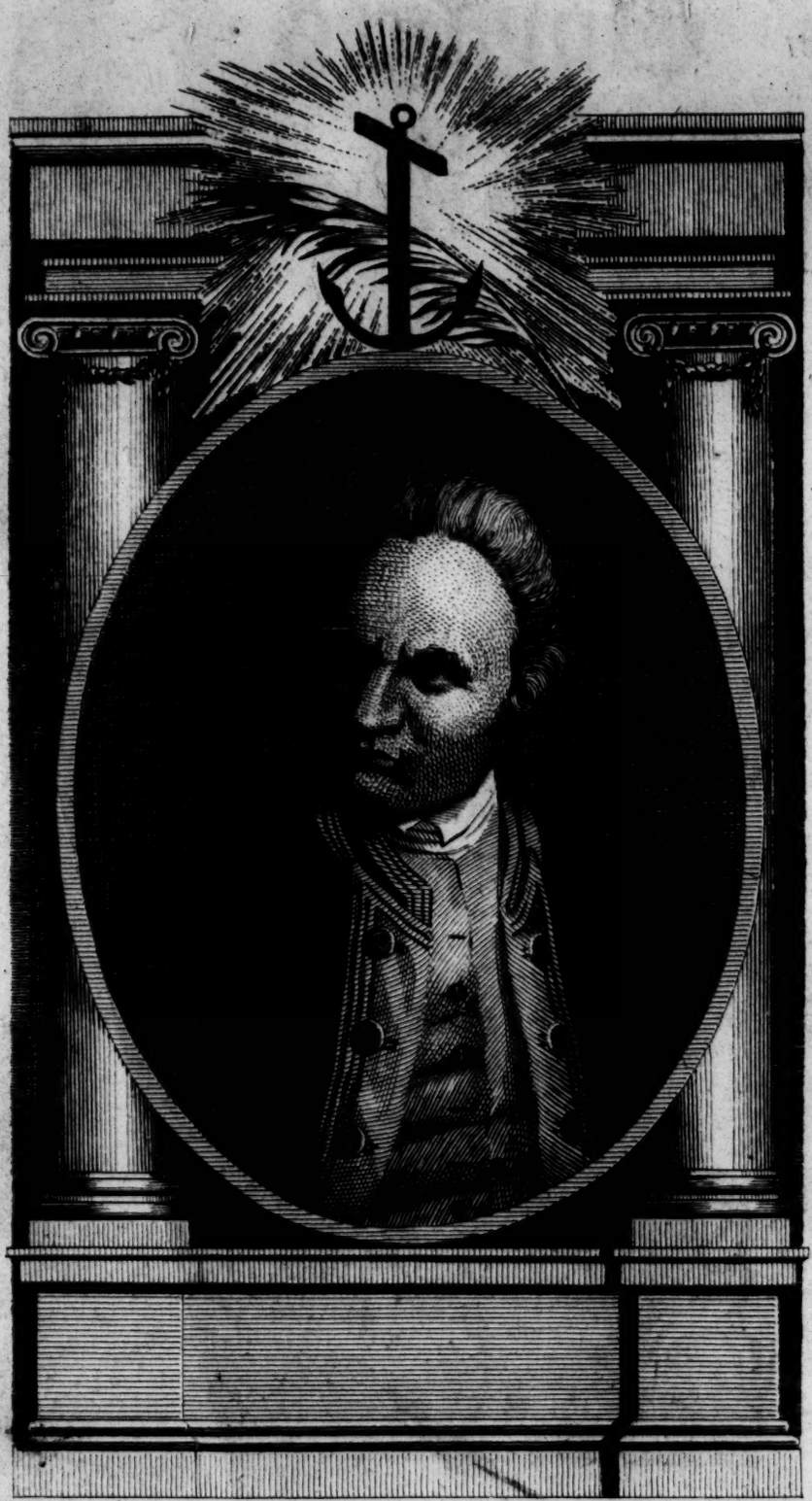


Pye fc.

CAPTAIN COOK

COOK's

Voyages

ROUND THE WORLD,

FOR MAKING

DISCOVERIES

TOWARDS THE

NORTH AND SOUTH POLES.

WITH AN APPENDIX.



Manchester:

PRINTED BY SOWLER AND RUSSELL.

1799.

CONTENTS.

FIRST VOYAGE.

CHAP. I.

An account of Captain Cook—The departure of the Endeavour from Plymouth—Her passage to the island of Madeira—A description of its natural curiosities and trade—A particular account of Funchiale, the capital of Madeira—The passage from Madeira to Rio de Janeiro—An account of this capital of the Portuguese dominions in South America, and of the circumjacent country—Incidents that happened while the Endeavour lay in the harbour of Rio de Janeiro. Page 1

CHAP. II.

The departure of the Endeavour from Rio de Janeiro—Her passage from the entrance of the streight of Le Maire—The inhabitants of Terra del Fuego described—Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander ascend a mountain in search of plants—An account of what happened to them in this excursion—The Endeavour passes through the Streight le Maire—An account of her passage, and a further description of the inhabitants of Terra del Fuego—An account of Cape Horn, and the newly discovered islands—An account of their figure and appearance—The inhabitants described; with a narrative of the various incidents during the course, and on the Endeavour's arrival among them. 19

CHAP. III.

The Endeavour arrives at Otaheite, or George the Third's island—An account of several incidents during his stay in this island—Excursions into the woods—Visits from several of the chiefs—The music of the natives, and their manner of burying their dead—Other excursions and incidents, both on board and on shore—First interview with Oberea, the supposed queen of the island—The quadrant stolen, and the consequences—A visit to Tootahah, an Indian chief—A wrestling match described—European seeds are sown—The Indians give our people names. 27

CHAP. IV.

An extraordinary visit—Divine service attended by the natives of Otaheite—An uncommon sight—Tubourai Tamaide found guilty of theft—A relation of what happened at the fort, when observing

the Tranſit of Venus—A deſcription of an Indian funeral—Preparations made for leaving the iſland—An accounnt of their departure, and the behaviour of the natives on this occaſion. 38

CHAP. V.

An hiſtorical and deſcriptive account of Otaheite—Of the iſland and its productions—Of the inhabitants, their dreſs, dwellings, manner of living—Diverſions, and diſeaſe. 51

CHAP. VI.

The Endeavour continues her voyage—Viſits the iſlands in the neighbourhood of Otaheite—An account of ſeveral incidents, and of various particulars relative to the inhabitants—The paſſage of the Endeavour from Oteroah to New Zealand—Events on going aſhore, and incidents while the ſhip was in Poverty Bay—The country deſcribed—Excurſions to Cape Turnagain, and return to Tolaga—The inhabitants deſcribed, and a narrative of what happened while we were on that part of the coaſt—The range from Tolaga to Mercury Bay—Incidents that happened on board the Endeavour and aſhore—A deſcription of the country—Sail from Mercury Bay to the Bay of Iſlands—Deſcription of the Indians on the banks of the Thames—Interview and ſkirmiſhes with the natives—Range from the Bay of Iſlands round North Cape. 54

CHAP. VII.

The Endeavour continues her voyage to Queen Charlotte's Sound—Tranſactions in the Sound—A ſhocking cuſtom of the inhabitants—The coaſt of Admiralty Bay deſcribed—The departure of the Endeavour from New Zealand, and other particulars—An account of New Zealand, the inhabitants, and cuſtoms. 76

CHAP. VIII.

Paſſage from New Zealand to Botany Bay, in New Holland—Various incidents related—A deſcription of the country and its inhabitants—Sails from Botany Bay to Trinity Bay—Her dangerous ſituation in her paſſage from Trinity Bay to Endeavour River. 86

CHAP. IX.

The ſhip refitted—Tranſactions during that time—The country and its inhabitants diſcribed—The range from Endeavour River to the extremity of the country—The Endeavour departs from South Wales—That country and people deſcribed. 98

CHAP. X.

The Endeavour continues her voyage from South Wales to New Guiney—An account of incidents upon landing there—Proceeds from New Guiney to the iſland Savau—Its product and inhabitants—Run from Savau to Batavia—Tranſactions while the Endeavour was refitting at this place. 110

CHAP. XI.

An account of Batavia, and its various productions—The Endeavour sails from Batavia to the Cape of Good Hope—The Cape and St. Helena described—Remarks on the Hottentots—The Endeavour returns to England, and anchors in the Downs on Wednesday, June 12, 1771. 129

SECOND VOYAGE.

CHAP. I.

The Resolution and Adventure take their departure from Deptford—Touch at the island of St. Jago—Pursue their voyage to the Cape of Good Hope—Departure from the Cape—Continue their voyage in search of a Southern Continent—Sequel of this search—Separation of the ships, and the arrival of the Resolution in Dusky Bay. 171

CHAP. II.

A narrative of what happened in Dusky Bay—Interviews with the natives—Sails to Charlotte's Sound—Is there joined by the Adventure—Transactions in this place—Captain Furneaux's narrative—The ships proceed to the island of Otaheite, and their arrival there—Are in a critical situation. 186

CHAP. III.

State of the island—Customs of the natives—Passage from Ulitea to the Friendly Isles—Hervey's Island discovered—Incidents at Middleburgh—The two ships arrive at Amsterdam—Incidents that happened during their stay at that island. 211

CHAP. IV.

The Resolution and Adventure continue their voyage from Amsterdam—Proceed for Queen Charlotte's Sound—An interview with the inhabitants—The final separation of the two ships—Transactions and incidents in Queen Charlotte's Sound—The inhabitants discovered to be cannibals—The Resolution departs from the Sound, and proceeds in search after her consort—Course of the Resolution in search of the supposed continent; and the methods pursued to explore the Southern Pacific Ocean—Arrives at Easter Island, and transactions there, &c. 222

CHAP. V.

The Resolution sails from Easter Island to the Marquesas—Departs from the Marquesas, with an account of the inhabitants, &c.—The Resolution leaves Otaheite—Her arrival at the island Huaheine—Various incidents related—The ship proceeds to Ulietea—Incidents during her stay, and the character of Oedidee. 128

CHAP. VI.

Departure of the Reſolution from Ulitea—Incidents at Savage Iſland—Paſſage from Savage Iſland to Rotterdam—Tranſactions at this place, and the inſolence of the natives—An account of the people in Turtle Iſland—Tranſactions while here, and ferocious behaviour of the inhabitants—The Reſolution continues her courſe from Port Sandwich—Steers in a direction for Sandwich Iſland, in order to diſcover the Southern extremity of the Archipelago—Hoſtile behaviour of the natives of Sandwich Iſle—More new iſlands diſcovered. 245

CHAP. VII.

New Caledonia diſcovered—The Reſolution is obliged to depart from Caledonia—Continues her voyage to New Zealand—She arrrives at Queen Charlotte's Sound—An account of incidents while the ſhip lay there. 260

CHAP. VIII.

The departure of the Reſolution from New Zealand—Her paſſage from thence to Terra del Fuego—The run from Cape Deſeada to Chriſtmas Sound—The Reſolution departs from Chriſtmas Sound—Doubles Cape Horn—Her paſſage through Strait Le Maire, and round Staten Iſland—Departs from Staten Iſland—The iſland of Georgia diſcovered, and a deſcriptive account of the ſame. 269

CHAP. IX.

The Reſolution continues her courſe—Newland and Saunders Iſles diſcovered—Conjectures, and ſome reaſons that there may be land about the ſouth pole—The Reſolution alters her courſe to the eaſt—Proceedings till her arrival at the Cape of Good Hope—Sails for the Iſle Fayal, and returns to England—Captain Furneaux's narrative, from the time the Adventure was ſeparated from the Reſolution, to her arrival in England, including the report of Lieutenant Burney, concerning the untimely death of the boat's crew, who were murdered by ſome of the natives of Queen Charlotte's Sound. 281

THIRD VOYAGE.

CHAP. I.

Captain Cook's departure from England—Junction with the Diſcovery at the Cape of Good Hope—Paſſage to Prince Edward's Iſland—Arrival at Van Diemen's Land—Interview with the natives—Arrival at Queen Charlotte's Sound—Particulars of the horrid maſſacre of the Adventure's boat's crew—Departure from Queen Charlotte's Sound. 322

CHAP. II.

Refreſhments obtained at Wenooa-ette—Singularity in the natives of Hervey's Iſland—Rich ſubmarine Grotto at Palmerſton's Iſland—Arrival at the Friendly Islands—Amiable character of the Natives—Deſcription of their perſons—Tranſactions with the Natives—Captain Clerke's expedient to prevent their Depredations—Opinions of the islanders of a Volcano—Different entertainments exhibited by the Engliſh and Natives—Curious mode of ſhaving—Viſit of Poulaho, King of the Friendly Islands—Poulaho's inanimate Viceroy—Offering to their Deity to deprecate Death—Departure from the Friendly Islands. 349

CHAP. III.

Island of Toobouai diſcovered—Arrival at Otaheite—Omai's reception—Interview with Wahcladooa, the chief of Tiaraboo—Omai's imprudent conduct—Girls dreſſed to bring a preſent—Omai's war canoe—Otoo's preſent and meſſage to the King of Great Britain—Departure from Otaheite, and viſit to Eimeo—Concluſion of the hiſtory of Omai, and of the two New Zealand youths. 363

CHAP. IV.

Arrival at Ulietea—Intelligence from Omai—Deſertion from the ſhips—The chief's family confined on that account—Conſpiracy to ſeize the Captains Cook and Clerke—Deſerters brought back—Christmas Iſland and the Sandwich Iſlands diſcovered, &c. &c. 380

CHAP. V.

Curious marine phænomena—Arrival at Nootka Sound—Intercourſe with the natives—Deſcription of their perſons—Their general diſpoſitions, and their eagerneſs to poſſeſs iron and other metals. 394

CHAP. VI.

Diſcovery of Cook's River—Reflections on this diſcovery—Poſſeſſion taken of the country and river, in his Majeſty's name—A beautiful bird deſcribed—Conjectures concerning a Ruſſian letter brought on board by one of the natives—Picturesque appearance of a volcano—Second viſit from a native—Providential eſcape—Arrival at the Island of Oonalaſhka, and intercourſe with the natives. 412

CHAP. VII.

Return to the Southward—Burney's Island—Paſs the Eaſtern Cape of Aſia—Deſcription and ſituation of it—Arrival at Norton Sound—Interview with the natives—Deſcription of the Ruſſian ſettlement at Oonalaſhka—Mowee and Owhyhee, two of the Sandwich Islands, diſcovered—The natives refuſe to drink ſugar-cane beer. 426

CHAP. VIII.

Description of Karakakooa Bay—Ceremonies at the landing of Captain Cook—Arrival of Tereeoboo, king of the island—Visit from the king, and returned by Captain Cook—Tereeoboo's magnificent present—The ships leave the island—The Resolution damaged in a gale, and obliged to return—Death of Captain Cook. 441

CHAP. IX.

Death of Captain Cook, with an account of the transactions at the Island of Owhyhee, subsequent to the death of Captain Cook—Captain Clerke's departure from Owhyhee—Arrival at Atooi—Final departure from the Sandwich Islands—Description of the natives, and treatment of their women. 454

CHAP. X.

Return to Kamptscatka—Death of Captain Clerke—An account of his services—Anchor in the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul—Funeral of Captain Clerke—Departure from Awatska Bay—Captain King sent to Canton—Arrived at the Cape of Good Hope—At the Orkney's; and at the Nore—Concluding reflections. 515

APPENDIX.

Commencement and progress of the operations for forming a Colony at Port Jackson and Norfolk Island, interspersed with incidental occurrences. 529

CAPTAIN COOK's

Voyages round the World.

CHAP. I.

An Account of Captain Cook..The departure of the Endeavour from Plymouth..Her paſſage to the iſland of Madeira..A deſcription of its natural curioſities and trade....A particular account of Funchiale, the capital of Madeira....The paſſage from Madeira to Rio de Janeiro....An account of this capital of the Portugueſe dominions in South America, and of the circumjacent country..Incidents that happened while the Endeavour lay in the harbour of Rio de Janeiro.

WHEN merit burſts through the clouds of original indigence, when genius and abilities gain the palm of reward, the biographer becomes animated with his ſubject, and feels the ſocial ſympathies expand within his breaſt.

Diſtinguiſhed as this country is for its able navigators, it acquires no inconſiderable acceſſion of fame from boaſting the name of Cook, whoſe three principal voyages we are now about to detail in an unbroken ſeries.

This able and amiable man was born at Marton, in Cleveland, a village about four miles from Great Ayton, in Yorkſhire, on the 27th of October, 1728. His father, who lived in the humble ſtation of a farmer's ſervant, married a woman in the ſame

ſphere of life with himſelf; and both were noted in their neighbourhood for their honeſty, ſobriety, and induſtry, qualities which reflect a luſtre on the loweſt ranks.

When our navigator was about two years old, his father and family removed to Great Ayton, and was appointed to ſuperintend a conſiderable farm belonging to the late Thomas Scottowe, Eſq. known by the name of Airyholm.

As the father long continued in this truſt, the ſon, of courſe, followed the ſame ſervile employment, as far as his tender years would admit. His early education appears to have been very ſlender; but at the age of thirteen we find him put under the tuition of Mr. Pullen, who taught ſchool at Ayton, where he learned the rudiments of arithmetic and book-keeping, and is ſaid to have ſhewn a remarkable facility in acquiring the ſcience of numbers.

About the beginning of 1745, when young Cook was ſeventeen years old, his father bound him apprentice to William Sanderſon, for four years, to learn the grocery and haberdaſhery buſineſs, at Snaith, a populous fiſhing town about ten miles from Whitby. But as he evinced a ſtrong partiality for a maritime life, for which his predilection was probably ſtrengthened by the ſituation of the place, and the company with which, it is probable, he aſſociated, after a year and a half's ſervitude, on ſome trivial diſagreement with his maſter, he obtained a releaſe from his engagements, and determined to follow the bent of his inclination.

While he continued at Snaith, according to Mr. Sanderſon's account, he diſcovered a maturity of judgment, and a quickneſs in calculations beyond his years.

In July 1746, he was bound apprentice to Meſſrs. Walker, of Whitby, for the term of three years, which he ſerved to the full ſatisfaction of his maſters. His firſt voyage was on board the ſhip Freelove, burden of about four hundred and fifty tons, chiefly employed

employed in the coal trade from Newcaſtle to London.

In May 1748, his maſter ordered him home to aſſiſt in rigging and fitting for ſea, a fine new ſhip, named the Three Brothers, of ſix hundred tons. This was deſigned to improve him in his profeſſion, and to qualify him for a better birth, when his ſervitude ſhould expire. After two coal voyages in this veſſel, ſhe was taken into the ſervice of government, and ſent as a tranſport to Middleburgh, to convey ſome troops to Dublin. Theſe being landed at their deſtination, another corps was taken on board, and brought to Liverpool. From thence the ſhip proceeded for Deptford, where ſhe was paid off in April, 1749. The remaining part of the ſeaſon Cook ſerved on board her in the Norway trade.

Being honourably releaſed from his engagements, he next entered on board a ſhip employed in the Baltic trade, and performed ſeveral voyages, of no great importance, during the two following years. In 1752, his old maſter promoted him to be mate of one of his ſhips, called the Friendſhip, in which capacity he acted for ſome time, with ſo much credit to himſelf and ſatisfaction to the owners, that it is ſaid, he was offered the place of captain. This, however, he declined, and fortunate was it for his country he did ſo.

In the ſpring of 1755, hoſtilities commenced between Great-Britain and France. As preſs-warrants had been iſſued, Mr. Cook, who then lay in the river Thames, afraid of being preſſed, reſolved, if poſſible, to conceal himſelf; but afterwards reflecting on the difficulty of this, he adopted the reſolution of entering as a volunteer in the royal navy, "having a mind," as he expreſſed himſelf, "to try his fortune in that way."

In purſuance of this deſign, he repaired to a houſe of rendezvous at Wapping, and entered on board the Eagle, a ſixty gun ſhip, at that time commanded by Captain Hamer. To this ſhip, Captain, afterwards

Sir Hugh Palliſer, being appointed in October following, Cook's diligence and attention to the duties of his profeſſion did not eſcape the notice of that intelligent commander, and he met with every encouragement compatible with his humble ſtation.

Cook's merit having been blazoned among his connections and friends in his native country, ſome of them generouſly intereſted themſelves in his behalf, and procured a letter of recommendation to his captain from Mr. Oſbaldeſton, member of parliament for Scarborough, in which it was requeſted he would point out in what manner they could contribute to his promotion.

Captain Palliſer did full juſtice to Cook's character, and ſuggeſted, that a maſter's warrant might, perhaps, be procured for him, by which he would be put in a ſituation ſuited to his talents, and be enabled to reflect credit on thoſe who honoured him with their patronage.

In conſequence of this, intereſt was made for a maſter's warrant, which he obtained to the Grampus ſloop, in May 1759; but this appointment did not take place, as the former maſter unexpectedly returned. In a few days, however, he was made maſter of the Garland; but here too he was diſappointed, for, on enquiry, it was found that the ſhip had already ſailed. At laſt, he was appointed to the Mercury, which was deſtined for North America, under the command of Sir Charles Saunders, who, in conjunction with General Wolfe, was then engaged in the memorable ſiege of Quebec.

During that ſignal tranſaction, it was found neceſſary to obtain the ſoundings of the river St. Lawrence, directly oppoſite to the French camp at Montmorency and Beauport. As this was univerſally eſteemed to be a dangerous and difficult ſervice, and as Cook's ſagacity and intrepidity were now well known, Captain Palliſer recommended him for the undertaking; and in the choice that was made the ſervice was not injured. Cook executed his office in the

completeſt manner, and to the entire ſatisfaction of his ſuperiors. He did not, however, effect this without great riſk. Being engaged in this purſuit for ſeveral ſucceſſive nights, he was at laſt diſcovered by the enemy, who ſent a number of canoes filled with Indians to ſurround him, and he had no other alternative but to make for the Iſle of Orleans, where he was ſo cloſely purſued, that he had ſcarcely leaped from the bow of the boat, before the Indians entered by the ſtern, and carried her off in triumph.

There is little reaſon to believe, that before this period Cook had uſed a pencil, or was acquainted with the principles of drawing; but ſuch was the vigour of his mind, and his aptitude for the acquiſition of knowledge, that he ſoon maſtered every object to which he applied. And notwithſtanding the diſadvantages under which he laboured, he furniſhed the admiral with as complete a draught of the channel and its ſoundings, as could have been furniſhed by the moſt expert ſurveyor in peace and by daylight.

Our navigator performed another ſervice, not leſs important, and which redounds equally to his honour. The navigation of the river St. Lawrence is both difficult and dangerous, and was then particularly ſo to the Engliſh, who were ſtrangers in that quarter. The admiral, therefore, who had conceived a very favourable opinion of Mr. Cook's abilities, appointed him to ſurvey the river below Quebec, which he alſo executed with the ſame diligence and ability he had diſplayed on the former occaſion.

This chart of the river, when completed, was publiſhed, with ſoundings and directions for ſafely navigating it; and ſo great was the accuracy obſerved, that it has ſuperſeded all other ſurveys.

After the conqueſt of Canada, ſo glorious to every perſon who had a ſhare in it, Mr. Cook was appointed maſter of the Northumberland, under Lord Colvill, on the 2d of September, 1759. In this ſhip his lordſhip continued the following winter as commodore, at Halifax; and Cook's conduct, in his

new

new ſtation, did not fail, as on former occaſions, to gain him the friendſhip and eſteem of his commander.

Senſible that he was now in the road to promotion, he ſhewed a laudable deſire to qualify himſelf to adorn his profeſſion, by devoting his leiſure hours to the ſtudy of ſuch branches of knowledge as reflect a luſtre on naval life. At Hallifax he firſt read Euclid's Elements, and ſtudied aſtronomy. The books he was able to procure, were few indeed; but application and perſeverance ſupplied many deficiencies, and enabled him to make a progreſs, which a man of leſs genius could not attain under much ſuperior advantages.

He received a lieutenant's commiſſion on the 1ſt of April, 1760, and daily advanced in the career of glory. In September, 1762, he aſſiſted at the recapture of Newfoundland, after which the Engliſh fleet remained ſome time at Placentia, in order to put that place into a better ſtate of defence. During this period, Mr. Cook had an other opportunity of diſplaying his diligence, and manifeſting his zeal in the ſervice of his country: he ſurveyed the harbour and heights of that place, and, by this means, attracted the notice of Captain, afterwards Admiral Graves, who was at that time governor of Newfoundland. Captain Graves having entered into converſation with him, found him poſſeſſed of ſuch intelligence and judgment, that he conceived a very favourable opinion of his abilities in general, and his nautical ſkill in particular; and in cultivating a longer acquaintance with him, was ſtill more and more prepoſſeſſed in his favour.

Endowed with a vigorous and active mind, and ſtimulated, perhaps, by the ſucceſs that had attended his paſt labours, and the hopes of future promotion, Cook continued to diſplay the moſt unremitting aſſiduity to make himſelf acquainted with the North American coaſt, and to facilitate its navigation; while the eſteem which Captain Graves had juſtly

conceived

conceived for him, was heightened by the concurrent teſtimonies of approbation, which all the officers, under whom he had ſerved, ſo freely paid him.

Towards the cloſe of 1762, Lieutenant Cook returned to England, and on the 21ſt of December he married at Barking, in Eſſex, a young lady of the name of Batts, whom he tenderly loved, and who had every claim to his warmeſt affection and eſteem. It is ſaid, that Cook had been godfather to this lady, and that he declared at that time his wiſh for their future union. If this anecdote is true, it is a ſingular inſtance of the firmneſs of his character, and the ſtrength of his attachment. His ſituation in life, however, and the high and important ſervices to which he was called, did not ſuffer him to enjoy, without interruption, that matrimonial felicity which both parties ſeem to have been ſo well qualified to taſte.

On the concluſion of the war in 1763, Captain Graves was again ſent out as governor of Newfoundland; and as that iſland was conſidered of great commercial importance, and had been a principal object of contention between Great-Britain and France, the governor obtained, at his preſſing ſolicitation, an eſtabliſhment for the ſurvey of its coaſts; and Lieutenant Cook was appointed to carry this plan into execution. He, therefore, went out with his friend the governor; and having ſurveyed the ſmall iſlands of St. Pierre and Miquelon, which, by treaty, had been ceded to France; after the buſineſs was finiſhed he returned to England, at the cloſe of the ſeaſon.

In the beginning of the following year, he accompanied his former patron, Sir Hugh Palliſer, who had been appointed governor of Labradore and Newfoundland, and proſecuted his ſurveys of the coaſts as before.

For his employment, Cook was, by the unanimous voice of the beſt judges, deemed extremely well qualified; and the charts which he afterwards publiſhed, reflect

reflect the higheſt credit on his abilities. He alſo explored the interior of Newfoundland, in a much more accurate manner than had ever been done before; and by penetrating into the heart of the country, diſcovered ſeveral large lakes, the poſition of which he exactly aſcertained. In this ſervice he appears to have been occaſionally engaged till 1767. However, we find him with Sir William Burnaby, on the Jamaica ſtation in 1765; and that officer having occaſion to ſend diſpatches to the governor of Jucatan, relative to the log cutters in the Bay of Honduras, Lieutenant Cook was ſelected for that miſſion, and he performed it in a manner that entitled him to the approbation of the admiral. A relation of this voyage and journey was publiſhed in 1769, under the title of "Remarks on a Paſſage from the River Baliſe, in the Bay of Honduras, to Merida, the capital of the Province of Jucatan, in the Spaniſh Weſt Indies, by Lieutenant Cook."

That our navigator had, by this time, made a conſiderable proficiency in practical aſtronomy, is evident from a ſhort paper, drawn up by him, which was inſerted in the ſeventh volume of the Philoſophical Tranſactions, entitled, "An Obſervation of an Eclipſe of the Sun at the Iſland of Newfoundland, Auguſt 5, 1766, with the Longitude of the Place of Obſervation deduced from it." This obſervation was made at one of the Burgeo iſlands, near Cape Ray, in latitude 47 deg. 36 min. 19 ſec. on the ſouthweſt extremity of Newfoundland; and Cook's paper having been communicated to Mr. Witchell, he compared it with an obſervation made on the ſame eclipſe by Profeſſor Hornſby, and thence computed the difference of longitude of the places of obſervation, making proper allowance for parallax, and the prolate ſpheroidal figure of the earth. That Cook was now accounted an able mathematician, the admiſſion of this paper into the Philoſophical Tranſactions, and the notice that was taken of it, will ſufficiently verify.

For

For the preſent reign it was reſerved to carry the ſpirit of enterpriſe to its fulleſt extent, and to direct it to the accompliſhment of the nobleſt purpoſes. As ſoon as the return of peace gave an opportunity for promoting the intereſts of ſcience, by enlarging the bounds of diſcovery, two voyages were projected by his preſent majeſty, which were performed by Captains Byron, Wallis, and Carteret; and before the two latter gentlemen returned, a third was reſolved on, the principal object of which was the improvement of aſtronomy.

It having been long before calculated, that the planet Venus would paſs over the Sun's diſk in 1769, it was judged that the moſt proper place for obſerving this phenomenon, would be either at the Marqueſas, or at one of thoſe iſlands to which Taſman had given the ſeveral appellations of Amſterdam, Rotterdam, and Middleburgh; but which are now better known under the general name of the Friendly Iſles. This being a matter of much importance in the ſcience of aſtronomy, the Royal Society, with a laudable zeal for its advancement, preſented a memorial to his majeſty, requeſting, among other things, that a veſſel might be fitted out at the expence of government, to convey proper perſons to obſerve this tranſit at one of the places already mentioned.

The petition being readily complied with, and orders having been given by the lords commiſſioners of the admiralty to provide a veſſel for that purpoſe, on the 3d of April, Mr. Stephens, the ſecretary to the board, informed the ſociety that every thing was expediting according to their wiſhes.

Mr. Dalrymple was originally fixed on to ſuperintend this expedition: a man eminent in ſcience, a member of the Royal Society, and who had already diſtinguiſhed himſelf reſpecting the geography of the Southern Ocean. As this gentleman had been regularly bred to the ſea, he inſiſted on having a brevit commiſſion, as captain of the veſſel, before he would undertake the employ. Sir Edward Hawke, who

then preſided at the admiralty board, violently oppoſed this meaſure; and being preſſed on the ſubject, declared, that nothing could induce him to give the ſanction of his name to ſuch a commiſſion.

Both parties were inflexible; and it was, therefore, thought expedient to look out ſome other perſon to conduct the expedition. Accordingly, Mr. Stephens having recommended Lieutenant Cook, and this recommendation being ſtrengthened by the teſtimony of Sir Hugh Palliſer, who was well acquainted with Cook's merit, and abilities for the diſcharge of this office, he was appointed to this diſtinguiſhed poſt by the lords commiſſioners, and promoted to the rank of lieutenant of the royal navy on the 25th of May 1768.

This appointment having taken place, Sir Hugh Palliſer was commiſſioned to provide a veſſel adapted for ſuch a voyage. After examining a great number of ſhips, then lying in the Thames, in conjunction with Cook, of whoſe judgment he entertained the higheſt opinion, they at laſt fixed on the Endeavour, a veſſel of three hundred and ſeventy tons, which had been built for the coal trade.

In the interim, Captain Wallis having returned from his voyage round the world, and having ſignified to the Royal Society, that Port Royal Harbour in King George's Iſland, now called Otaheite, would be the moſt convenient place for obſerving the tranſit, his opinion was adopted, and the obſervers were ordered to repair thither.

Mr. Charles Green, the coadjutor of Dr. Bradley, the aſtronomer royal, was nominated to aſſiſt Captain Cook in conducting the aſtronomical part of the undertaking; and he was accompanied alſo by Joſeph Banks, Eſq. the preſent preſident of the Royal Society, whoſe baronetage, to which he has been ſince raiſed, reflects honour on his ſovereign and the order. This friend of ſcience, at an early period of life, poſſeſſed of an opulent fortune and zealous to apply it to the beſt ends, embarked on this tedious and hazardous enterpriſe,

enterpriſe, animated by the wiſh alone of improving himſelf, and enlarging the bounds of knowledge. He took two draughtſmen with him, and had likewiſe a ſecretary and four ſervants in his retinue.

Dr. Solander, an ingenious and learned Swede, who had been appointed to a place in the Britiſh Muſeum, and was an adept in natural philoſophy, likewiſe joined the expedition. Poſſeſſed of the enthuſiaſm with which Linnæus inſpired his diſciples, he braved danger in the proſecution of his favourite ſtudies, and being a man of erudition and capacity, he added no ſmall eclat to the voyage in which he embarked.

Though the principal intention of this expedition was to obſerve the tranſit of Venus, it was thought proper to make it comprehend other objects alſo. Captain Cook was, therefore, directed, after he had accompliſhed his main buſineſs, to proceed in making farther diſcoveries in the South Seas, which now began to be explored with uncommon reſolution.

The complement of the Endeavour conſiſted of eighty-four perſons. She was victualled for eighteen months, and ten carriage and twelve ſwivel guns, with abundance of ammunition, and all manner of ſtores were taken on board.

Being completely fitted for ſea, Captain Cook ſailed from Deptford on the 30th of July 1768, and on the 13th of Auguſt anchored in Plymouth Sound, from which, after a few days ſtay, they proceeded to ſea.

The firſt land they made, after their leaving the Channel, was on the 2d of September, when Cape Finiſterre and Cape Ortugal, in Spain, both came in view. They arrived on the 13th at Madeira, and anchored in Fonchial Road. Here unfortunately they loſt Mr. Weir, the maſter's mate, who, in heaving the anchor, fell overboard and was drowned.

This iſland has a beautiful appearance from the ſea, thoſe parts of hills which preſent themſelves being covered with vines.

The only article of trade is wine, which is made by preſſing the juice out in a ſquare wooden veſſel. The perſons employed, having taken off their ſtockings and jackets, get into it, and with their elbows and feet preſs out as much of the juice as they can. In like manner the ſtalks, being tied together, are preſſed under a ſquare piece of wood by a lever, with a ſtone faſtened to the end of it.

There are no wheel carriages of any ſort, nor have the people any thing that reſembles them, except a hollow board, or ſledge, upon which thoſe wine veſſels are drawn, that are too big to be carried by hand.

Nature has been very liberal in her gifts to Madeira. The inhabitants are not without ingenuity, but they want induſtry. The ſoil is ſo very rich, and there is ſuch a variety in the climate, that there is ſcarcely any article, either of the neceſſaries or luxuries of life, which cannot be cultivated in the iſland. Pine apples and mangoes grow almoſt ſpontaneouſly in the town, and great variety of fruit upon the hills. Corn is alſo very large and plenty. The beef, mutton, and pork, are remarkably good.

Foncho, which is fennel in Portugueſe, gave name to the town of Fonchial. It is ſeated at the bottom of a bay; indifferently built, the ſtreets narrow, and very wretchedly paved. In the churches there are great numbers of ornaments, with pictures and images of ſaints, for the moſt part indifferently executed. A better taſte prevails in ſome of the convents, particularly that of the Franciſcans, where ſimplicity and neatneſs unite. The infirmary does honour to the architect, and is the moſt capital edifice in the whole place.

There are many very high hills; Pico Ruivo is near five thouſand one hundred feet in height, perpendicularly from its baſe. The inhabitants are computed to be between ſeventy and eighty thouſand; and the revenue ariſing from the cuſtoms, is ſuppoſed to amount to twenty or thirty thouſand pounds ſterling per annum.

On

On the 19th of September we ſailed from Madeira, and on the 21ſt we ſaw the iſlands called the Salvages, northward of the Canaries. The principal of theſe was about five leagues to the ſouth half weſt. On the 23d the Peak of Teneriffe bore weſt by ſouth half ſouth. The height of this mountain is 15,379 feet, which is about 148 yards leſs than three miles.

On the 7th of October Mr. Banks went out in a boat, and caught what our ſailors call a Portugueſe man of war; together with ſeveral ſhell fiſhes, which are always found floating upon the water.

On the 25th we croſſed the line with the uſual ceremonies; and as proviſions by this time began to grow ſhort, we reſolved to put into the harbour of Rio de Janeiro; and on the 8th of November we ſaw the coaſt of Braſil. We ſtood off along ſhore till the 12th, having in view ſucceſſively Cape Thomas, and an iſland juſt without Cape Frio, and then made ſail for Rio de Janeiro on the 13th in the morning.

On the 14th Captain Cook went on ſhore, and obtained leave to furniſh the ſhip with proviſions; but this permiſſion was clogged with the conditions of employing an inhabitant as a factor, and of ſending a ſoldier in the Endeavour's boat every time ſhe came from ſhore to the veſſel. To theſe uncivil terms the Captain made many objections; but the viceroy was determined to inſiſt on them, neither would he permit Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander to remain on ſhore, nor ſuffer the former to go up the country to collect plants. Captain Cook conceiving from theſe and other marks of jealouſy, that the viceroy thought they were come to trade, uſed all his endeavours to convince him to the contrary; and acquainted him, that they were bound to the South Seas, to obſerve the tranſit of Venus over the diſk of the ſun, an object of great conſequence to the improvement of navigation; but the viceroy by his anſwer ſeemed ignorant of the phœnomenon. An officer was now appointed to attend the Captain, which order he was deſired to underſtand as an intended compliment; however, when he

he would have declined ſuch a ceremony, the viceroy very politely forced it upon him.

Dr. Solander and Mr. Banks were not a little chagrined on hearing that they would not be permitted to reſide on ſhore, and ſtill more ſo when they underſtood that they were not even allowed to quit the ſhip; for the viceroy had ordered, that the Captain only, with ſuch ſailors as were required by their duty, ſhould come on ſhore. However, they attempted to go on ſhore, but were ſtopped by the guard-boat; yet ſeveral of the crew, without the knowledge of the centinel, let themſelves down by a rope from the cabin window into the boat about midnight, and drove away with the tide, till they were out of hearing. They afterwards landed on an unfrequented part of the country, and were treated by the inhabitants with great civility.

Captain Cook, uneaſy with the reſtrictions of the viceroy, remonſtrated with him; but the latter would return no other anſwer but that the king his maſter's orders muſt be obeyed. The captain thus repulſed, and much diſpleaſed, reſolved to go no more on ſhore, rather than, whenever he did ſo, to be treated as a priſoner in his own boat; for the officer who was ſo polite as to accompany him, conſtantly attended him, both to and from the ſhore. Two memorials were now drawn up and preſented to the viceroy, one written by the Captain, and the other by Mr. Banks: but the anſwers returned were by no means ſatisfactory. Several papers paſſed between them and the viceroy to no good purpoſe; from whence the captain thought it neceſſary in order to vindicate his own compliance, to urge the viceroy to an act of force in the execution of his orders. For this purpoſe he ſent Lieut. Hicks with a packet, giving him his orders not to admit of a guard in his boat. As this gentleman was reſolved to obey his captain's commands, the officer of the guard boat did not oppoſe him by force, but acquainted the viceroy with what had happened, on which the lieutenant was ſent away with the packet unopened.

When

When returned, he found a guard of ſoldiers placed in the boat, and inſiſted on their quitting it. Whereupon the officer ſeized the boat's crew, and conducted them under an eſcort to priſon, and the lieutenant was ſent back to the ſhip guarded. When the captain was informed of this tranſaction, he wrote to the viceroy to demand his boat and her crew, incloſing the memorial which Mr. Hicks his lieutenant had brought back. Theſe papers he ſent by a petty officer to avoid continuing the diſpute concerning the guard, which muſt have been kept up by a commiſſioned officer. An anſwer was now promiſed by the viceroy; but before this could arrive, the long boat, which had four pipes of rum on board, was driven windward, (the rope breaking that was thrown from the ſhip,) together with a ſmall ſkiff that was faſtened to the boat: Immediate orders were given for manning the yawl, which being diſpatched accordingly with proper directions, returned, and brought the people on board the next morning; from whom Captain Cook learned, that the long-boat having filled with water, they had brought her to a grapling, and quitted her, and falling in with a reef of rocks on her return, they were forced to cut the faſtenings of Mr. Banks's little boat, and ſent her adrift. The captain now diſpatched another letter to his excellency, wherein he informed him of the accident, deſired he would aſſiſt him with a boat to recover his own, and, at the ſame time, renewed his demand of the delivery of the pinnance and her crew. The viceroy granted the requeſt, but in his anſwer to the captain's remonſtrance, ſuggeſted ſome doubts that he entertained, whether the Endeavour was really a king's ſhip, and alſo accuſed the crew of ſmuggling. Captain Cook, in his reply, ſaid, that he was willing to ſhew his commiſſion, adding, if any attempt ſhould be made to carry on a contraband trade, he requeſted his excellency would order the offender to be taken into cuſtody. The diſpute being thus terminated, Mr. Banks attempted to elude the vigilance of the guard, which he found means

means to do, and got ſafe on ſhore on the 26th in the morning. He took care to avoid the town, and paſſed the day in the fields, where he could beſt gratify his curioſity. Mr. Banks found the country people inclined to treat with him civilly, and was invited to their habitations. But it was afterwards heard, that ſearch had been making for this gentleman when abſent. He and Dr. Solander therefore reſolved to run no more riſques in going aſhore, while they remained at this place.

On the 1ſt of December, having taken in water and proviſions, we got, with leave from the viceroy, a pilot on board; but the wind prevented us from putting to ſea. A Spaniſh packet from Buenos Ayres, bound for Spain, arriving the next day, the captain of her with great politeneſs offered to take our letters to Europe. The favour was accepted, and Captain Cook delivered into his hands a packet for the ſecretary of the Admiralty, containing copies of all the papers that had paſſed between him and the viceroy, leaving the duplicates with his excellency.

On the 5th we weighed anchor, and towed down the bay, but were ſtopped at Santa Cruz, the principal fortification, the order from the viceroy, to let us paſs, by an unaccountable negligence, not having been ſent; ſo that it was not till the 7th that we got under ſail. When we had paſſed the fort, the guard-boat left us, and our pilot was diſcharged. Of the town and neighbouring country we ſhall give the following deſcription:

Rio de Janeiro was probably ſo called becauſe diſcovered on the feſtival of St. Januarius, from whence we may ſuppoſe the river Januarius took its name, and alſo the town, which is the capital of the Portugueſe in America. This town is ſituated on the weſt ſide of the river, from which it is extended about three quarters of a mile. The ground whereon it ſtands is a level plain. It is defended on the north ſide by a hill, that extends from the river, having a ſmall plain, which contains the ſuburbs and the king's

dock.

dock. The houſes in general are of ſtone, and two ſtories high; its circuit is about three miles; and appears to be equal in ſize to the largeſt country towns in England. The ſtreets are ſtraight and of a convenient breadth; and the principal ſtreet is near 100 feet in width. The churches are richly ornamented, and there is more religious parade in this place than any of the popiſh countries in Europe. But the inhabitants may pay their devotion at the ſhrine of any ſaint; for a ſmall cupboard, having a glaſs window, and in which is one of the tutelary gods, is placed almoſt before every houſe, and a lamp is kept conſtantly burning, leſt the old proverb ſhould be verified "Out of ſight, out of mind." Before theſe ſaints the people pray and ſing with ſuch vehemence, that in the night they were diſtinctly heard by our ſailors on board the ſhip.

The inhabitants of Rio de Janeiro are exceeding numerous, and conſiſt of Portugueſe, Negroes, and Indians, which laſt were the original natives of the country. The townſhip of Rio is but a ſmall part of the Capitanea, or province; yet it is ſaid to contain 37,000 white people, and 629,000 blacks, many of whom are free, making together 966,000, in the proportion of 17 to 1.

The military is compoſed of twelve regiments of regular troops, ſix being Portugueſe, and ſix Creoles, and twelve regiments of provincial militia. The inhabitants are ſervilely ſubmiſſive to the regulars, and it has been ſaid, that if any of them ſhould omit the compliment of taking off his hat, when he meets an officer, he would be immediately knocked down. But the ſubordination of the officers to the viceroy is equally mortifying, for they are obliged to wait three times a day to know, or receive his commands: the anſwer frequently is, "There is nothing new."

In Rio de Janeiro the gentry keep their chaiſes, which are drawn by mules; the ladies however uſe a ſedan chair, boarded before and behind, with curtains on each ſide, which is carried by two negroes on a pole connected with the top of a chair, by two rods, coming from under its bottom, one on each ſide, and reſting to

the top. The women in general, are more ready to grant amorous favours than thoſe of any other civilized parts of the world. As ſoon as the evening began, females appeared at the windows on every ſide, who diſtinguiſhed ſuch of the men as beſt pleaſed their fancies by throwing down noſegays; and Dr. Solander and two other gentlemen received ſo many of theſe love-tokens, that they threw them away by hat-fulls.

This place is very uſeful for ſhips that are in want of refreſhment. The harbour is ſafe and commodious and diſtinguiſhed by a remarkable hill, in the ſhape of a cone, at the weſt point of the bay. The entrance is not wide, but is eaſy, from the ſea breeze which prevails from noon to ſun-ſet, for any ſhip to enter before the wind. Proviſions, except wheaten bread and flour, are eaſily procured. Beef, both freſh and jerked, may be bought at two-pence farthing a pound, but is very lean Mutton is ſcarce to be produced. Hogs and poultry are dear. Garden ſtuff and fruit are in abundance. Rum, ſugar, and molaſſes are all excellent, and to be had at reaſonable prices.

The air is ſeldom immoderately hot, as the ſea breeze is generally ſucceeded by a land wind. The ſeaſons are divided into dry and rainy, though their commencement of late has been irregular and uncertain; but at this time the rain had juſt began, and fell in heavy ſhowers during our ſtay.

CHAP. II.

The departure of the Endeavour from Rio de Janeiro.—Her paſſage from the entrance of the ſtreight of Le Maire.—The inhabitants of Terra del Fuego deſcribed.—Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander aſcend a mountain in ſearch of plants.—An account of what happened to them in this excurſion.—The Endeavour paſſes through the Streight le Maire.—An account of her paſſage, and a further deſcription of the inhabitants of Terra del Fuego.—An account of Cape Horn, and the newly diſcovered iſlands.—An account of their figure and appearance.—The inhabitants deſcribed; with a narrative of the various incidents during the courſe, and on the Endeavour's arrival among them.

ON the 8th of December, 1768, having procured neceſſary ſupplies, we took our departure from Rio de Janeiro; and on the 9th an amazing number of atoms were taken out of the ſea. They are of a yelloviſh colour, and few of them were more than the fifth part of an inch long. The ſea was tinged in ſuch a manner with theſe equivocal ſubſtances, as to exhibit broad ſtreaks of a ſimilar colour for near a mile in length, and ſeveral yards in breadth.

On the 11th we hooked a ſhark. It proved to be a female. When opened we took ſix young ones out of it, five of which were alive, and ſwam briſkly in a tub of water. On the 30th we ran fifty leagues through vaſt numbers of land inſects; ſome in the air, and others upon the water. At this time we judged ourſelves to be nearly oppoſite to the bay called Sands Fond, (with bottom) where it is ſuppoſed that the continent of America is divided by a paſſage.

On the 3d of January, 1769, we ſaw the appearance of land, in lat. 47 deg. 17 min. ſouth, and long. 61 deg. 29 min. 45 ſec. weſt, which we miſtook for Pepy's Iſland. In appearance it ſo much reſembled

land, that we bore away for it; and it was three hours before we were convinced that it was one of thoſe deceptions which ſailors call a fog bank. On the 11th after having paſſed Falkland's Iſland, we ſaw the coaſt of Terra del Fuego, at the diſtance of about four leagues from the weſt to ſouth-eaſt by ſouth.

On the 14th we entered the Streight of Le Maire, but were afterwards driven out again with ſuch violence (the tide being againſt us) that the ſhip's bow-ſprit was frequently under water. At length we got anchorage in a ſmall cove, on the eaſt of Cape St. Vincent, the entrance to which our Captain named St. Vincent's Bay.

Dr. Solander and Mr. Banks went on ſhore, where having continued four hours, they returned about nine in the evening, with above an hundred different plants and flowers, of which none of the European botaniſts had taken any notice, near this bay.

On the 18th we came to an anchor in twelve fathom water, upon coral rocks, at the diſtance of about a mile from the ſhore. At this time two of the natives came down upon the beach, as if they expected that the ſtrangers intended to land, but as there was no ſhelter here, the ſhip got under ſail again, and the Indians retired diſappointed. The ſame afternoon we came into the Bay of Good Succeſs, and the veſſel coming to an anchor, the captain went on ſhore, accompanied by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, in order to ſearch for a watering place, and diſcourſe with the Indians. Theſe gentlemen had not proceeded above one hundred yards before the captain, when two of the Indians that had ſeated themſelves roſe up, and threw away the ſmall ſticks they held in their hands, as a token of amity. They afterwards returned to their companions, who had remained at ſome diſtance behind them, and made ſigns to their gueſts to advance, whom they received in a friendly, though uncouth manner. In return for their civility, ſome ribbands and beads were diſtributed among them. Thus a ſort of mutual confidence was eſtabliſhed, and the reſt of the Engliſh joined the party, the Indians converſing with them in

their

their way, in an amicable manner. Capt. Cook and his friends took three of them to the ſhip, dreſſed them in jackets, and gave them bread and other proviſions, part of which they carried on ſhore with them; but they refuſed to drink rum or brandy, making ſigns that it burned their throats, as their proper drink was water. One of theſe people made long and loud ſpeeches, but no part of them was intelligible to any of us. Another ſtole the covering of a globe, which he concealed under his garment, that was made of ſkin. After having remained on board about two hours, they returned on ſhore, Mr. Banks accompanying them. He conducted them to their companions, who ſeemed no ways curious to know what their friends had ſeen, and the latter were as little diſpoſed to relate, as the former were to enquire. None of theſe people exceeded five feet ten inches in height, but their bodies appeared large and robuſt, though their limbs were ſmall. They had broad flat faces, high cheeks, noſes inclining to flatneſs, wide noſtrils, ſmall black eyes, large mouths, ſmall, but indifferent teeth, and ſtraight black hair, falling down over their ears and foreheads, the latter being generally beſmeared with brown and red paints, and like all the original natives of America, they were beardleſs, their garments were the ſkins of ſeals and guanicoes, which they wrapped round their ſhoulders. The men likewiſe wore on their heads a bunch of yarn, which fell over their foreheads, and was tied behind with the ſinews or tendons of ſome animals. Many of both ſexes were painted on different parts of their bodies with red, white, and brown colours, and had alſo three or four perpendicular lines pricked acroſs their cheeks and noſes. The women had a ſmall ſtring tied round each ancle, and each wore a flap of ſkin faſtened round the middle. They carried their children upon their backs, and were generally employed in domeſtic labour and drudgery.

Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, attended by their ſervants, ſet out from the ſhip on the 16th, with a deſign of going into the country as far as they could that day, and return in the evening. Having entered a wood, they

they aſcended a hill through a pathleſs wilderneſs till the afternoon. After they had reached what they took for a plain, they were greatly diſappointed to find it a ſwamp, covered with birch, the buſhes interwoven and ſo inflexible that they could not be divided; however they ſtepped over them, but were up to the ancles in boggy ground. Before they had got over this ſwamp, an accident happened that greatly diſconcerted them. Mr. Buchan, one of the draughtſmen whom Mr. Banks had taken with him, fell into a fit. It was abſolutely neceſſary to kindle a fire, and ſuch as were moſt fatigued remained to aſſiſt him; but Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and Mr. Monkhouſe proceeded, and attained the ſpot they had in view, where they found a great variety of plants that gratified their curioſity. On returning to their company, amidſt the ſnow, which fell in great abundance, they found Mr. Buchan much recovered. They had previouſly ſent Mr. Monkhouſe and Mr. Green back to him and thoſe that remained with him, in order to bring them to a hill which was conjectured to lie in a better tract for returning to the wood, and which was accordingly fixed on as a place of rendezvous.

Dr. Solander having often paſſed over mountains in cold countries, was ſenſible, that extreme cold, when joined with fatigue, occaſions a drowſineſs that is not eaſily reſiſted; he therefore intreated his friends to keep in motion, however diſagreeable it might be to them. His words were, "Whoever ſits down will ſleep, and whoever ſleeps will wake no more."—Every one ſeemed accordingly armed with reſolution; but, on a ſudden, the cold became ſo very intenſe as to threaten the moſt dreadful effects. It was now very remarkable, that the Doctor himſelf, who had ſo forcibly admoniſhed and alarmed his party, was the firſt that inſiſted to be ſuffered to repoſe. In ſpite of the moſt earneſt intreaties of his friends, he lay down amidſt the ſnow, and it was with difficulty that they kept him awake. One of the black ſervants alſo became weak and faint, and was on the point of following this bad example. Mr. Buchan was therefore detached with a party to make a fire at the

firſt

firſt commodious ſpot they could find. Mr. Banks and four more remained with the doctor and Richmond, the black, who with the utmoſt difficulty were perſuaded to come on; and when they had traverſed the greateſt part of the ſwamp, they expreſſed their inability of going any farther. When the black was told if he remained there he would ſoon be frozen to death, his reply was, that he was ſo much exhauſted with fatigue, that death would be a relief to him. Dr. Solander ſaid, he was not unwilling to go, but that he muſt firſt take ſome ſleep, ſtill perſiſting in acting contrary to the opinion which he himſelf had delivered to the company. Thus reſolved, they both ſat down, ſupported by ſome buſhes, and in a ſhort time fell aſleep. Intelligence came from the advanced party, that a fire was kindled about a quarter of a mile farther on the way. Mr. Banks then awakened the doctor, who had already almoſt loſt the uſe of his limbs, though it was but a few minutes ſince he ſat down; nevertheleſs he conſented to go on, but every meaſure taken to relieve the black proved ineffectual. He remained motionleſs, and they were obliged to leave him to the care of a ſailor, and the other black ſervant, who appeared to be the leaſt hurt by the cold, and they were to be relieved as ſoon as two others were ſufficiently warmed, to fill their places. The doctor, with much difficulty, was got to the fire; and as to thoſe who were ſent to relieve the companions of Richmond, they returned without having been able to find them. What rendered the mortification ſtill greater, was, that a bottle of rum (the whole ſtock of the party) could not be found, and was judged to have been left with one of the three that were miſſing.

A fall of ſnow continuing for near two hours, there now remained no hopes of ſeeing the three abſent perſons again. At one o'clock a great ſhout was heard at a diſtance, which gave inexpreſſible ſatisfaction to every one preſent. Mr. Banks and four others went forwards and met the ſailor, who had juſt ſtrength enough to walk. He was immediately ſent to the fire, and they proceeded to ſeek the other two. They found Richmond

mond upon his legs, but incapable of moving them; the other black was lying ſenſeleſs upon the ground. Our endeavours to bring them to the fire were fruitleſs; nor was it poſſible to kindle one upon the ſpot, on account of the ſnow; ſo that there remained no alternative, but to leave the two unfortunate negroes to their fate. Briſcoe, another ſervant to Mr. Banks, in particular, began to loſe his ſenſibility. At laſt they reached the fire, and paſſed the night in a very diſagreeable manner.

The party that ſet out from the ſhip, conſiſted of twelve; two of theſe were already judged to be dead; it was doubtful whether the third would be able to return on board, and Mr. Buchan, a fourth, ſeemed to be threatened with a return of his fits.

At day-break on the 17th, nothing preſented itſelf to the view all around but ſnow, which covered alike the trees and the ground; and the blaſts of wind were ſo frequent and violent, that their journey ſeemed to be rendered impracticable, and they had reaſon to dread periſhing with cold and famine. About ſix in the morning, they were flattered with hope of being delivered, by diſcovering the ſun through the clouds, which gradually diminiſhed. Before their ſetting out, meſſengers were diſpatched to the unhappy negroes; but returned with the news of their death.

Hunger prevailing over every other conſideration, induced our travellers to divide the ſmall remainder of their proviſions, and to ſet forward on their journey about ten in the morning. To their great aſtoniſhment and ſatisfaction, in about three hours they found themſelves aſhore, and much nearer to the ſhip than their moſt ſanguine expectations could have ſuggeſted. When they looked back upon their former rout from the ſea, they found, that inſtead of aſcending the hill, in a direct line, they had made a circle almoſt round the country. On their return, theſe wanderers received ſuch congratulations from thoſe on board, as can more eaſily be imagined than expreſſed.

Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went on ſhore again on the 20th of this month, landing in the bottom of the bay,

bay, where they collected a number of ſhells and plants hitherto unknown. After having returned from dinner, they went to viſit an Indian town, about two miles up the country, the acceſs to which, on account of the mud, was difficult. When they approached the town, two of the natives came out to meet them, who began to ſhout in their uſual manner. They afterwards conducted Mr. Banks and the doctor to their town. This town was inhabited by a tribe of about fifty men, women, and children. Their bows and arrows were conſtructed with neatneſs and ingenuity, being made of wood highly poliſhed; and the point, which was either glaſs or flint, very ſkilfully fitted. The natives here did not ſhew any ſurprize at the ſight of fire arms, but appeared to be well acquainted with their uſe. It is likely that the ſpot on which the doctor and Mr. Banks met them, was not a fixed habitation, as their houſes did not ſeem as if they were erected to ſtand for any long time, and they had no boats or canoes about them. They did not appear to have any form of government, or any ideas of ſubordination. They ſeemed to be the very outcaſts of men, and a people that paſſed their lives in wandering in a forlorn manner over dreary waſtes; their dwelling being a thatched hovel, and their cloathing ſcarcely ſufficient to keep them from periſhing with cold, even in theſe climates. Their only food was ſhell-fiſh, which, on any one ſpot, muſt ſoon be exhauſted; nor had they the rudeſt implement of art, nor even ſo much as was neceſſary to dreſs their food. Thoſe who can be happy in ſuch a ſituation, can only be ſo, becauſe they have not a due feeling of their miſery.

We obſerved in this place ſea lions and dogs, and no other quadrupeds; nevertheleſs it is probable there are other kinds of animals in the country. A great variety of plants were found by the doctor and Mr. Banks.

On Sunday, January 22, having got in our wood and water, we ſailed out of the bay, and continued our courſe through the ſtreight; and in paſſing this, notwithſtanding the deſcription which ſome voyagers have given of Terra del Fuego, we did not find that it had,

agreeable to their repreſentations, ſuch a forbidding aſpect. Nine miles weſtward of Cape St. Diego, the low point that forms the north entrance of the ſtreight of Le Maire, are three hills, called the Three Brothers; and on Terra del Fuego is another hill, in the form of a ſugar loaf, which ſtands on the weſt ſide, not far from the ſea. We had not that difficulty mentioned in the hiſtory of Lord Anſon's voyage, in finding where the ſtreight of Le Maire lies.

The ſtreight of Le Maire is bounded on the weſt by Terra del Fuego, and on the eaſt by the weſt end of Staten iſland, and is nearly five leagues in length, nor leſs in breadth. The bay of Good Succeſs is ſeated about the middle of it, on the ſide of Terra del Fuego, which preſents itſelf at the entrance of the ſtreight from the northward; and the ſouth end of it may be diſtinguiſhed by a land mark, reſembling a road from the ſea to the country. It affords good anchorage, and plenty of wood and water.

January the 26th, we took our departure from Cape Horn, and the fartheſt ſouthern latitude we made was 60 deg. 10 min. and our long. was then 74 deg. 30 min. weſt. Cape Horn is ſituated in 55 deg. 53 min. ſouth latitude, and 68 deg. 13 min. weſt long. The weather being calm, Mr. Banks ſailed in a ſmall boat to ſhoot birds, when he killed ſome ſheer-waters and albatroſſes. At this time we found ourſelves to be 12 deg. to the weſtward, and three and a half to the northward of the ſtreight of Magellan, having from the eaſt entrance of the ſtreight, been 33 days in ſailing round Cape Horn.

March 1ſt, we found ourſelves both by obſervation and the log, in lat. 38 deg. 44 min. ſouth, and 110 deg. 33 min. weſt longitude, a concurrence very ſingular in a run of 660 leagues; and which proved, that no current had affected the ſhip in her courſe; and it was likewiſe concluded, that we had not come near land of any conſiderable extent; for currents are always found at no great diſtance from the ſhore. On the 25th, a marine, about twenty, threw himſelf overboard, on account of a quarrel about a piece of ſeal ſkin, which he took

took by way of a frolic; but being charged with it as a theft, he took the accuſation ſo much to heart, that in the duſk of the evening he threw himſelf into the ſea and was drowned.

On the 4th of April, about ten o'clock A. M. Peter Briſcoe, ſervant to Mr. Banks, diſcovered land to the ſouth, at the diſtance of about three or four leagues. Captain Cook immediately gave orders to haul for it, when we found an iſland of an oval form, having a lagoon or lake in the centre, that extended over the greater part of it. The ſurrounding border of land was low and narrow in many places, eſpecially towards the ſouth, where the beach conſiſted of a reef of rocks. Several of the natives were diſcovered on ſhore; they appeared to be tall, with heads remarkably large, which probably ſome bandage might have increaſed. Some of theſe people were ſeen a-breaſt of the ſhip, holding poles or pikes of twice their own height. They appeared alſo naked; but when they retired, on the ſhip's paſſing the iſlands, they put on a light coloured covering. Our captain called this place Lagoon iſland. It lay in 18 deg. ſouth lat. and 139 weſt longitude.

CHAP. III.

The Endeavour arrives at Otaheite, or George the Third's iſland—An account of ſeveral incidents during his ſtay in this iſland—Excurſions into the woods—Viſits from ſeveral of the chiefs—The muſic of the natives, and their manner of burying their dead—Other excurſions and incidents, both on board and on ſhore—Firſt interview with Oberea, the ſuppoſed queen of the iſland—The quadrant ſtolen, and the conſequences—A viſit to Tootahah, an Indian chief—A wreſtling match deſcribed—European ſeeds are ſown—The Indians give our people names.

ON the 11th of April we made Otaheite, or, as Capt. Wallis had named it, King George the Third's iſland. The calms prevented our approaching it till the morning, when a breeze ſprung up, and ſeveral canoes

were ſeen making towards the ſhip. Few of them, however, would come near, and thoſe who did, could not be perſuaded to come on board. They had brought with them young plantains and branches of trees, which were hauled up the ſhip's ſide, and, by their deſire, were ſtuck in conſpicuous parts of the rigging, as tokens of peace and friendſhip. We then purchaſed their commodities, conſiſting of cocoa-nuts, bannas, bread-fruit, apples, and figs, which were very acceptable to the crew. On the evening of the ſame we opened the north-weſt point of the iſle, to which the Dolphin's people had given the name of York iſland. We lay off and on all night, and in the morning of the 13th we entered Port Royal harbour, in the iſland of Otaheite, and anchored within half a mile of the ſhore. Many of the natives came off immediately in their canoes, and brought with them bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, apples, and ſome hops, which they bartered for beads and other trinkets with the ſhip's company.

Among thoſe who came on board the Endeavour, was an elderly man, named Owhaw, known to Mr. Gore, and others who had viſited this iſland with Capt. Wallis. Owhaw being conſidered by our gentlemen as a very uſeful man, they ſtudied to pleaſe him, and to gratify all his wiſhes. As our continuance in George's iſland was not likely to be very ſhort, certain rules were drawn up to be obſerved by every perſon on board, for the better eſtabliſhing a regular trade with the natives. The ſubſtance of theſe rules were,

"That in order to prevent quarrels and confuſion, every one of the ſhip's crew ſhould endeavour to treat the inhabitants of Otaheite with humanity, and by all fair means to cultivate a friendſhip with them. That no officer, ſeaman, or other perſon, belonging to the ſhip, excepting ſuch only who were appointed to barter with the natives, ſhould trade, or offer to trade for any kinds of proviſions, fruit, or other produce of the iſland, without having expreſs leave ſo to do. That no perſon ſhould embezzle, trade, or offer to trade with any part of the ſhip's ſtores; and that no ſort of iron, or any thing

thing made of iron, nor any ſort of cloth, or other uſeful article in the ſhip, ſhould be given in exchange for any thing but proviſion." Theſe neceſſary rules were ſigned by Captain Cook, and, being his orders, to the non-obſervance of them were annexed certain penalties, beſides the puniſhment according to the uſual cuſtom of the navy.

When the bark was properly ſecured, Captain Cook, Mr. Banks, and Dr. Solander, went on ſhore, with a party under arms, and their friend the old Indian. They were received by ſome of the natives with awe and reverence, who exchanged the tokens of peace, and offered to conduct them to a ſpot of ground, which would be more convenient for them to occupy, than where they had landed. On their way, the Engliſh made the Indians ſome preſents, which the latter very thankfully received. They now took a circuit of about four miles through groves of bread-fruit and cocoa-trees. Intermingled with theſe were the dwellings of the natives, which conſiſted of huts without walls. In the courſe of their journey they found but few fowls or hogs, and underſtood, that none of their conductors, nor any of the people they had hitherto ſeen, were perſons of rank in the iſland. Thoſe of our crew who had been before at Otaheite, were likewiſe of opinion, that the queen's reſidence had been removed, as no trace of it was now to be diſcovered.

Next day, in the morning, before they could leave the ſhip, ſeveral canoes came about her filled with people, whoſe dreſs denoted them to be of the ſuperior claſs. Two of theſe came on board, and each of them fixed upon a friend: one of them choſe Mr. Banks, and the other Captain Cook. The ceremonials conſiſted of taking off their cloaths in great part, and putting them upon their adopted friends. This compliment was returned by our gentlemen preſenting them with ſome trinkets. They then made ſigns for their new friends to go with them to the place of their abode; and the latter being deſirous of being acquainted with the people, and finding out a more convenient harbour, accepted the invitation,

invitation, and went with them, accompanied by Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, Captain Cook, and others. We all landed in two boats at the diſtance of three miles, among a great number of the natives, who conducted us to a large habitation, where we were introduced to a middle-aged man, named Tohtahah. When we were ſeated, he preſented to Mr. Banks a cock, a hen, and a piece of perfumed cloth, which compliment was returned by a preſent from Mr. Banks. We were then conducted to ſeveral other large dwellings, wherein we walked about with great freedom. The ladies, ſo far from ſhunning, invited, and even preſſed us to be ſeated, by frequently pointing to the mat upon the ground.

Walking afterwards along the ſhore, we met, accompanied by a great number of natives, another chief, named Tubourai Tamaide, with whom we ſettled a treaty of peace, in the manner before deſcribed. This chief gave us to underſtand, that he had proviſions at our ſervice, if we choſe to eat, which he produced, and we dined heartily upon bread-fruit, plantains, and fiſh. During this viſit, Tomio, the chief's wife, placed herſelf upon the ſame mat with Mr. Banks, cloſe by him; but as ſhe was not young, nor appeared ever to have poſſeſſed many charms, this gentleman paid little attention to her; and Tomio received an additional mortification, when Mr. Banks beckoned to a pretty girl, who came and placed herſelf by him. The princeſs was ſomewhat chagrined at this preference being given to her rival. This whimſical ſcene was interrupted by an event of a more ſerious nature: Dr. Solander having miſſed his opera-glaſs, a complaint was made to the chief, which interrupted the convivial party. The complaint was enforced by Mr. Banks's ſtarting up and ſtriking the but-end of his muſket againſt the ground, which ſtruck the Indians with ſuch a panic, that all of them ran precipitately out of the houſe, except the chief, and a few others of the ſuperior claſs. That no diſadvantageous notions might be entertained of them on account of this circumſtance, the chief obſerved, with an air of great probity, that the place which the doctor had mentioned

on

on this occaſion, was not within his diſtrict, but he would ſend to the chief of it, and endeavour to recover it; adding, that if this could not be done, he would make the doctor compenſation, by giving him as much new cloth as ſhould be thought equal to the value. The caſe however was brought in a little time, and the glaſs itſelf ſoon after. After this adventure was amicably terminated, we returned to the ſhip about ſix in the evening.

On Saturday the 15th, in the morning, ſeveral of the chiefs came on board, bringing with them hogs, and other refreſhments, in exchange for which they received linen, beads, and other trinkets; but ſome of them took the liberty of ſtealing the lightning chain. This day the captain, attended by Mr. Banks, and ſome of the other gentlemen, went on ſhore, to fix on a proper ſpot to erect a fort for their defence, during their ſtay on the iſland, and the ground was accordingly marked out for that purpoſe; a great number of the natives looking on all the while, and behaving in the moſt peaceable and friendly manner.

Mr. Banks and his friends having ſeen few hogs and poultry in their walks, they ſuſpected that they had been driven up the country; for which reaſon they determined to penetrate into the woods, the tent being guarded by a petty officer and a party of marines. On this excurſion ſeveral of the natives accompanied the Engliſh. While the party were on their march, they were alarmed by the diſcharge of two pieces fired by the guard of the tent. Owhaw having now called together the captain's party, diſperſed all the Indians, except three, who, in token of their fidelity, broke branches of trees, according to their cuſtom, and whom it was thought proper to retain. When they returned to the tent, they found that an Indian having ſnatched away one of the centinel's muſkets, a young midſhipman, who commanded the party, was ſo imprudent as to give the marines orders to fire, which were obeyed, and many of the natives were wounded; but this did not ſatisfy them, as the offender had not fallen, they therefore purſued

ſued him, and revenged the theft by his death. This action, which was equally inconſiſtent with policy and humanity, could not but be very diſpleaſing to Mr. Banks; but as what had paſſed could not be recalled, nothing remained but to endeavour to accommodate matters with the Indians. Accordingly he croſſed the river, where he met an old man, through whoſe mediation ſeveral of the natives were prevailed on to come over to them, and to give the uſual tokens of friendſhip.

Mr. Banks on the 17th, had the misfortune to loſe Mr. Buchan. The ſame day they received a viſit from Tubourai Tamaide, and Tootahah. They brought with them ſome plantain branches, and till theſe were received, they would not venture on board. They bartered ſome bread-fruit and a hog, which was ready dreſſed, for nails, with the Engliſh.

Tubourai Tamaide viſited Mr. Banks at his tent on Wedneſday the 19th, and brought with him his wife and family. He afterwards aſked that gentleman to accompany him to the woods. On their arrival at a place where he ſometimes reſided, he preſented his gueſts with two garments, one of which was of red cloth, and the other was made of fine matting; having thus clothed Mr. Banks, he conducted him to the ſhip, and ſtaid to dinner with his wife and ſon.

On the 22d we were entertained by ſome of the muſicians of the country, who performed on an inſtrument ſomewhat reſembling a German flute, but the performer blew through his noſtril inſtead of his mouth, and others accompanied this inſtrument, ſinging only one tune.

On the 24th, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander made an excurſion into the country, and found it level and fertile along the ſhore, for about two miles to the eaſtward; after which the hills reached quite to the water's edge; and farther on, they ran out into the ſea. Having paſſed theſe hills, which continued about three miles, we came to an extenſive plain, abounding with good habitations, and the people ſeemed to enjoy a conſiderable ſhare of property. This place was rendered ſtill more agreeable

by

by a wide river iſſuing from a valley, and which watered it. We croſſed this river, when perceiving the country to be barren, we reſolved to return.

On the 25th, in the evening, ſeveral of the gentlemen's knives were miſſing; Mr. Banks, who had loſt his among the reſt, accuſed Tubourai Tamaide of having taken it, which, as he was innocent, occaſioned him a great deal of unmerited anxiety. He made ſigns, while the tears ſtarted from his eyes, that if he had ever been guilty of ſuch a theft as was imputed to him, he would ſuffer his throat to be cut. But though he was innocent, it was plain from many inſtances, that the natives of this iſland were very much addicted to thieving; though Mr. Banks's ſervant had miſlaid the knife in queſtion, yet the reſt were produced in a rag by one of the natives.

When the guns, on the 26th, which were ſix ſwivels, had been mounted on the fort, the Indians ſeemed to be in great trouble, and ſeveral of the fiſhermen removed, fearing, notwithſtanding all the marks of friendſhip which had been ſhewn to them by our people, they ſhould, in a few days, be fired at from the fort; yet the next day, being the 27th, Tubourai Tamaide came with three women and a friend of his, who was a remarkable glutton, and after dinner returned to his own houſe in the wood. In a ſhort time after he came back to complain to Mr. Banks of a butcher, who had threatened to cut his wife's throat, becauſe ſhe would not barter a ſtone hatchet for a nail. It appearing clearly that the offender had infringed one of the rules enjoined by the captain for trading with the natives, he was flogged on board in their ſight.

On the 28th, Terapo, one of Tubourai Tamaide's female attendants, came down to the fort in the greateſt affliction, the tears guſhing from her eyes. Mr. Banks ſeeing her full of lamentation and ſorrow, inſiſted upon knowing the cauſe, but inſtead of anſwering, ſhe ſtruck herſelf ſeveral times with a ſhark's tooth upon her head, till an effuſion of blood followed,

lowed, while her diſtreſs was diſregarded by ſeveral other Indians, who continued laughing and talking with the utmoſt unconcern. After this ſhe gathered up ſome pieces of cloth, which ſhe had thrown down to catch the blood, and threw them into the ſea, as if ſhe wiſhed to prevent the leaſt trace or mark of her abſurd behaviour. She then bathed in the river, and with remarkable chearfulneſs, returned to the tent, as if nothing extraordinary had happened.

Mr. Molineux, maſter of the Endeavour, ſeeing a woman whoſe name was Oberea, he declared ſhe was the ſame perſon whom he judged to be the queen of the iſland when he was there with Captain Wallis. The eyes of every one were now fixed on her, of whom ſo much had been ſaid by the crew of the Dolphin. With regard to her perſon, ſhe was tall and rather large made; ſhe was about forty years of age, her ſkin white, and her eyes had great expreſſion in them: ſhe had been handſome, but her beauty was now upon the decline. Many preſents were made her, particularly a child's doll, which ſhe viewed very attentively. Captain Cook accompanied her on ſhore, and when we landed, ſhe preſented him with a hog and ſome plantains, in return for his preſents, which were carried to the fort in proceſſion, Oberea and the captain bringing up the rear. In their way they met Tootahah, who no ſooner ſaw the doll, than he diſcovered ſtrong ſymptoms of jealouſy, nor could any method be found of conciliating his friendſhip, but that of complimenting him with a baby alſo. A doll was now preferable to a hatchet, but a very ſhort time taught the Indians the ſuperior value of iron, which on account of its uſefulneſs, prevailed over every other conſideration.

On the 29th, near noon, Mr. Banks paid a viſit to Oberea, but was informed that ſhe was aſleep under the awning of her canoe; and, going to call her up, was ſurpriſed at finding her in bed with a young fellow, a diſcovery which cauſed him to retire rather diſconcerted; but he ſoon underſtood that a com-

merce

merce of this ſort was by no means conſidered as ſcandalous, the ladies frequently courting the men to amorous dalliance, of which they made no ſecret; and as to young Obadee, found in bed with the queen, he was well known by every one to be the object of her laſcivious hours. The queen ſoon got up, and dreſſed herſelf to wait upon Mr. Banks, and, after having, as a token of her particular regard, put on him a ſuit of fine cloth, they proceeded together to the tents. In the evening Mr. Banks viſited Tubourai Tamaide. He was aſtoniſhed to find this chief and his family all in tears, and not being able to diſcover the cauſe, he ſoon took leave of them. Upon his return, the officers told him, that Owhaw had foretold, that the guns would be fired within four days, and as this was the eve of the third day, they were alarmed at the ſituation they judged themſelves to be in. As we were apprehenſive of ill conſequences from this prepoſſeſſion, the centinels were doubled at the fort, and we thought it neceſſary to keep under arms.

On the 30th, Tomio came in great haſte to our tent, and taking Mr. Banks by the arm, told him that Tubourai Tamaide was dying, owing to ſomewhat that had been given him by our people, and intreated him inſtantly to go to him. Accordingly Mr. Banks went and found the Indian very ſick. He had been vomiting, and had thrown up a leaf which they ſaid contained ſome of the poiſon. Mr. Banks having examined the leaf, found it was nothing but tobacco, which the Indian had begged of ſome of the ſhip's company.

The matter, however, appeared in a very ſerious light to Tubourai Tamaide, who really concluded from the violent ſickneſs he ſuffered, that he had ſwallowed ſome deadly drug, the terror of which no doubt, contributed to make him yet more ſick. While Mr. Banks was examining the leaf, he looked up to him, as if he had been juſt on the point of death. But when the nature of the dreadful poiſon was found out, he only ordered him to drink of cocoa-nut milk, which

ſoon reſtored him to health, and he was as chearful as before the accident happened.

On the 1ſt of May, Captain Cook having produced an iron adze, which was made in imitation of the ſtone ones uſed by the natives, ſhewed it to Tootahah, as a curioſity. The latter ſnatched it up, and inſiſted on having it; and though he was offered the choice of any of the articles in the cheſts which were opened before him, yet he would not accept of any thing in its ſtead.

May 2, we took the aſtronomical quadrant and ſome of the inſtruments on ſhore that afternoon; and to our great ſurpriſe when we wanted to make uſe of the quadrant, the next day, it was not to be found; a matter which was looked upon as the more extraordinary, as a centinel had been placed the whole night within a few yards of the place where it was depoſited. A ſtrict ſearch was made in and about the fort, and a reward offered in order to obtain it again. But this proving fruitleſs, Mr. Banks and ſome other gentlemen ſet out for the woods, where they thought they might get ſome tidings of what was ſtolen. In their way they met with Tubourai Tamaide and ſome of the natives. This chief was made to underſtand by ſigns, that they had loſt the quadrant, and that as ſome of their countrymen muſt have taken it, they inſiſted upon being ſhewn the place where it was concealed. Having proceeded a few miles together, after ſome enquiry, Tubourai Tamaide was informed who the thief was, and it was found that he was then at a place about four miles diſtant. As they had no fire arms but a brace of piſtols, nor caring to truſt themſelves ſo far from the fort, a meſſage was diſpatched to Captain Cook, requeſting him to ſend out a party to ſupport them. The Captain accordingly ſet out with a party properly armed, after having laid an embargo upon all the canoes in the bay.

In the mean time, Mr. Banks and Mr. Green proceeded on their way, and at the place which had been mentioned, were met by one of Tubourai Tamaide's own

own people, bringing with him part of the quadrant; the caſe and the other parts of the inſtrument were recovered ſoon afterwards, when it was found that it had received no real injury, though it had been taken to pieces.

When they returned in the evening, they were much ſurpriſed to find Tootahah under confinement in the fort, while a croud of natives ſurrounded the gate, diſcovering marks of the greateſt anxiety for the fate of their chief. The occaſion of this detention originated from the conduct of the Indians: alarmed at Captain Cook's having gone up the country with an armed party, moſt of the natives left the fort that evening, and one of the canoes attempted to quit the bay. The lieutenant who commanded on board the ſhip, having it in charge not to ſuffer any canoe to depart, ſent a boat to detain her, but ſhe no ſooner approached, than the Indians jumped into the ſea. Tootahah being of the number, was taken up, and ſent by the lieutenant to the officer that commanded at the fort, who concluded he ſhould do right to detain him priſoner, while the poor chief thought of nothing but being put to death, till Captain Cook cauſed him to be returned, to the great joy of his countrymen.

On the 3d proviſions were extremely ſcarce, as the markets continued to be ill ſupplied on the account already mentioned; and it was not without ſome difficulty that Mr. Banks got a few baſkets of bread-fruit. However, ſome time afterwards, having produced ſome nails to barter for proviſions, we got twenty cocoa-nuts and ſome bread-fruit, for one of the ſmalleſt ſize, ſo that we ſoon had plenty of theſe articles, though no hogs.

On the 10th, in the forenoon, Oberea paid us a viſit, accompanied by Obadee, preſenting us with a hog and ſome bread-fruit. This was the firſt viſit we had received from this lady, ſince the loſs of our quadrant, and the confinement of Tootahah. By this time our forge was ſet up, which afforded a new ſub-

ject

ject of admiration to the Indians, and to Captain Cook an additional opportunity of conferring obligations on them, by permitting the ſmith to convert the old iron, which they were ſuppoſed to have procured from the Dolphin, into different kinds of tools. Oberea produced as much iron as would have made for her another axe; this ſhe requeſted to have done; but the lady could not be gratified in this particular, upon which ſhe brought a broken axe, deſiring it might be mended. The axe was mended, and to all appearance ſhe was content.

On the 11th we ſowed, in ground properly prepared, ſeeds of melons, and other plants, but none of them came up except muſtard. Mr. Banks thought the ſeeds were ſpoiled by a total excluſion of freſh air, they having all been put into ſmall bottles, and ſealed up with roſin.

CHAP. IV.

An extraordinary viſit—Divine ſervice attended by the natives of Otaheite—An uncommon ſight—Tubourai Tamaide found guilty of theft—A relation of what happened at the fort, when obſerving the Tranſit of Venus—A deſcription of an Indian funeral—Preparations made for leaving the iſland—An account of their departure, and the behaviour of the natives on this occaſion.

ON the 12th of this month (May) an uncommon ceremony was performed by ſome of the natives. As Mr. Banks was ſitting in his boat, trading with them as uſual, ſome ladies, who were ſtrangers, advanced in proceſſion towards him. The reſt of the Indians on each ſide gave way, and formed a lane for the viſitors to paſs, who coming up to Mr. Banks, preſented him with ſome parrot's feathers, and various kinds of plants. Tupid, who ſtood by Mr. Banks, acted as his maſter of the ceremonies, and receiving the branches, which were brought at ſix different times,

times, laid down in the boat. After this ſome large bundles of cloth were brought, conſiſting of nine pieces, divided into three parcels, one of the women, called Oorattooa, who appeared to be the principal, ſtepping upon one of them, pulled up her cloaths as high as her waiſt, and then, with an air of unaffected ſimplicity, turned round three times. This ceremony ſhe repeated, with ſimilar circumſtances, on the other two parcels of cloth; and the whole being then preſented to Mr. Banks, the ladies went and ſaluted him; in return for which extraordinary favours, he made them ſuch preſents as he thought would beſt pleaſe them.

On Sunday the 14th, divine ſervice was performed at the fort. Tubourai Tamaide and his wife were preſent, but though they behaved with much decency, they made no enquiries with reſpect to the ceremonies. The day thus began with acts of devotion, but concluded with thoſe of lewdneſs exhibited among the natives by way of entertainment.

On Monday the 15th, Tubourai Tamaide was detected in having committed a theft. Mr. Banks had a good opinion of this chief, but, when his honeſty was put to the teſt, a baſket of nails, left in the corner of the tent proved irreſiſtible. He confeſſed the fact of having ſtolen four nails, but when reſtitution was demanded, Tamaide ſaid the nails were at Eparre. High words paſſed on the occaſion, and in the end, the Indian produced one of the nails, and was to be forgiven on reſtoring the reſt; but his virtue was not equal to the taſk, and he withdrew himſelf, as uſual, when he had committed any offence.

On the 25th, Mr. Banks ſeeing Tubourai Tamaide and his wife Tomio at the tent for the firſt time ſince the former had been detected in ſtealing the nails, he endeavoured to perſuade him to reſtore them, but in vain. As our gentlemen treated him with a reſerve and coolneſs, which he could not but perceive, his ſtay was ſhort, and he departed in a very abrupt manner; nor could our ſurgeon the next morning

perſuade

perſuade him to effect a reconciliation by bringing down the nails.

At this time the preparations were made for viewing the tranſit of Venus, and two parties were ſent out to make obſervations from different ſpots, that in caſe of failing in one place they might ſucceed in another. They employed themſelves for ſome time in preparing their inſtruments, and inſtructing thoſe gentlemen who were to go out, in the uſe of them; and on Thurſday the 1ſt of June, they ſent the long boat with Mr. Gore, Mr. Monkhouſe, (the two obſervers) and Mr. Sporing, with proper inſtruments, to Emayo. Others were ſent to find out a ſpot that might anſwer the purpoſe, at a convenient diſtance from their principal ſtation.

The party that went towards Emayo, after rowing the greater part of the night, having hailed a canoe, were informed of a place, by the Indians on board, which was judged proper for their obſervatory, where they accordingly fixed their tents. It was a rock that roſe out of the water about 140 yards from the ſhore.

Saturday the 3d, (the day of the tranſit) Mr. Banks, as ſoon as it was light, left them, in order to go and get freſh proviſions on the iſland. This gentleman had the ſatisfaction to ſee the ſun riſe without a cloud. The king, whoſe name was Tarraro, came to pay him a viſit, as he was trading with the natives, and brought with him Nunna his ſiſter. As it was cuſtomary for the people in theſe parts to be ſeated at their conferences, Mr. Banks ſpread his turban of India cloth, which he wore as a hat, upon the ground, on which they all ſet down. Then a hog and a dog, ſome cocoa-nuts, and bread-fruit, were brought, being the king's preſent, and Mr. Banks ſent for an adze, a ſhirt, and ſome beads, which were preſented to his majeſty, who received them with apparent ſatisfaction. Afterwards the king, his ſiſter, and three beautiful females, their attendants, returned with Mr. Banks to the obſervatory, where he ſhewed them

the

the tranſit of Venus, when the planet was upon the ſun, and acquainted them, that to view in that ſituation was the cauſe of his undertaking a voyage to thoſe remoter parts. According to this gentleman's account, the produce of this iſland is nearly the ſame with that of Otaheite; the people alſo reſembled thoſe of that iſland; he had ſeen many of them upon it who were acquainted with the nature of trading articles. The parties that were ſent out to make their obſervations on the tranſit, had good ſucceſs in their undertaking: though they differed rather more than might have been expected in their account of the contact.

Mr. Green's account was as follows:

The firſt external contact - -	9	25	4	Morn.
The firſt internal contact, or total emerſion, - - - - -	9	44	4	Morn.
The ſecond internal contact, or beginning of the emerſion, - -	3	14	8	Aftern.
The ſecond external contact, or total emerſion, - - - -	3	32	10	Aftern.

Latitude of the obſervatory 17 deg. 29 min. 15 ſec. ſouth;—longitude, 149 deg. 32 min. 30 ſec. weſt from Greenwich.

While the gentlemen and officers were buſied in viewing the tranſit, ſome of the ſhip's company having broke into the ſtore-room, took the liberty of ſtealing a quantity of ſpike-nails. After a ſtrict ſearch, the thief was found out; he had, however, but few of the nails in his poſſeſſion; but he was ordered to receive two dozen of laſhes, by way of example.

On the 4th, an old female of ſome diſtinction dying, gave us an opportunity of obſerving the ceremonies uſed by theſe iſlanders in diſpoſing of the dead bodies of their people. In the front of the ſquare ſpace, a ſort of ſtile was placed where the relations of the deceaſed ſtood to give token of their grief. There were under the awning ſome pieces of cloth, whereon were the tears and blood of the mourners, who uſed to wound themſelves with a ſhark's tooth upon theſe occaſions. Four temporary houſes were erected at a ſmall diſtance, in one of which remained ſome of the relations of the deceaſed; the chief mourner reſided

in another; and was dreſſed in a particular manner, in order to perform a certain ceremony. When the corpſe is rotten, the bones are buried near the ſpot. Concerning the ceremony we are about to ſpeak of, the following is the account we have of it, which may not be unentertaining to the reader. It was performed on the 10th, and Mr. Banks was ſo deſirous of being preſent, that he agreed to take a part in it, when he was informed that he could not be a ſpectator on any other condition.

He went accordingly in the evening, to the place where the body was to be depoſited, where he was met by the relations of the deceaſed, and was afterwards joined by ſeveral other perſons. Tubourai Tamaide was the principal mourner, whoſe dreſs was whimſical, though not altogether ungraceful. Mr. Banks was obliged to quit his European dreſs, and had no other covering than a ſmall piece of cloth that was tied round his middle; his body was blacked over with charcoal and water, as were the bodies of ſeveral others, and among them ſome females, who were no more covered than himſelf. The proceſſion then began, and the chief mourner uttered ſome words which were judged to be a prayer, when he approached the body, and he repeated theſe words as he came up to his own houſe. They afterwards went on, by permiſſion, towards the fort. It is uſual for the reſt of the Indians to ſhun theſe proceſſions as much as poſſible; they accordingly ran into the woods in great haſte as ſoon as they came in view.

From the fort the mourners proceeded along the ſhore, croſſed the river, then entered the woods, paſſing ſeveral houſes, which became immediately uninhabited, and during the reſt of the proceſſion, which continued for half an hour, not an Indian was viſible. Mr. Banks filled an office that they called Niniveh, and there were two others of the ſame character. When none of the other natives were to be ſeen, they approached the chief mourner, ſaying, Imatara; then thoſe who had aſſiſted at the ceremony bathed in the river,

river, and resumed their former dress. Such was this uncommon ceremony, in which Mr. Banks performed a principal part, and received applause from Tubourai Tamaide, the chief mourner. What can have introduced among these Indians so strange a custom as that of exposing their dead above ground, till the flesh is consumed by putrefaction, and then burying their bones, it is, perhaps, impossible to guess; nor is it less difficult to determine, why the repositories of their dead should be also places of worship.

On the 12th, the Indians having lost some of their bows and arrows, and strings of plaited hair, a complaint was made to the captain. The affair was enquired into, and the fact being well attested, the offenders received each two dozen of lashes.

On the 14th, in the night, an iron coal-rake for the oven, was stole; and many other things having, at different times, been conveyed away, Capt. Cook judged it of some consequence, to put an end, if possible, to such practices, by making it their common interest to prevent it. He had already given strict orders, that the centinels should not fire upon the Indians, even if they were detected in the fact; but many repeated depredations determined him to make reprisals.

A few days after, twenty-seven of their double canoes with sails arrived, containing cargoes of fish; these the captain seized, and they gave notice, that unless the rake, and all the other things that had been stolen, were returned, the vessel should be burnt. The menaces produced no other effect than the restitution of the rake, all the other things remaining in their possession. The captain, however, thought fit to give up the cargoes, as the innocent natives were in great distress for want of them, and in order to prevent the confusion arising from disputes concerning the property of the different lots of goods which they had on board.

On the 19th, in the evening, while the canoes were still detained, Oberea and several of her attend-

ants paid us a viſit. She came from Tootahah's palace, in a double canoe, and brought with her a hog, bread-fruit, and other preſents, but not a ſingle article of the things that had been ſtolen; theſe ſhe ſaid had been taken away by her favourite Obadee, whom ſhe had beaten and diſmiſſed. She ſeemed, however, conſcious that her ſtory did not deſerve credit, and appeared at firſt much terrified; though ſhe ſurmounted her fears with great fortitude, and was deſirous of ſleeping with her attendants in Mr. Banks's tents; but this being refuſed, ſhe was obliged to paſs the night in her canoe. The next morning Oberea returned, putting herſelf wholly in our power, when we accepted of her preſents, which ſhe doubtleſs thought, and juſtly too, the moſt effectual means to bring about a reconciliation.

On June the 26th, Captain Cook ſetting out in the pinnace with Mr. Banks, ſailed to the eaſtward, with a deſign of circum-navigating the iſland. They went on ſhore in the forenoon, in a diſtrict in the government of Ahio, a young chief, who at their tents had frequently been their viſitant. Afterwards they proceeded to the harbour where M. Bougainville's veſſel lay, and the ſpot where he pitched his tent.

Coming to a large bay, when the Engliſh gentlemen mentioned their deſign of going to the other ſide, their Indian guide ſaid he would not accompany them, and alſo endeavoured to diſſuade the captain and his people from going; obſerving, "That the country was inhabited by people who were not ſubject to Tootahah, and who would deſtroy them all." Notwithſtanding, they reſolved to put their deſigns into execution, loading their piſtols with ball; ſo at laſt he ventured to go with them. Having rowed till it was dark, they reached a narrow iſthmus which ſevered the iſland in two parts, and theſe formed diſtinct governments. However, as they had not yet got into the hoſtile part of the country, it was thought proper to go on ſhore to ſpend the night, where Oberatova, the lady who had paid her compliments in ſo extra-

ordinary

ordinary a manner at the fort, provided them with a ſupper, and they proceeded for the other government in the morning.

They afterwards landed in the diſtrict of a chief called Maraitata. Theſe people gave the captain a very good reception, ſold them a hog for a hatchet, and furniſhed them with proviſions. Though the country was apparently fertile, very little bread-fruit was to be found here, a nut called ahee furniſhing the principal ſubſtance of the inhabitants.

Being fatigued with their journey, they went on board their boat, and landed in the evening on an iſland which was called Otooareite, to ſeek for refreſhment. Mr. Banks going into the woods for this purpoſe, when it was dark, could diſcover only one houſe, wherein he found ſome of the nuts before mentioned and a little bread-fruit. There was a good harbour in the ſouthern part of this iſland, and the ſurrounding country appeared to be extremely fruitful.

When they left the place, the chief piloted them over the ſhoals. In the evening they opened the bay on the north-weſt ſide of the iſland, which anſwered to that on the ſouth-eaſt in ſuch a manner as to interſect it at the iſthmus. Several canoes came off here, and ſome beautiful women, giving tokens that they ſhould be glad to ſee them aſhore, they readily accepted the invitation. They met with a very friendly reception from the chief, whoſe name was Wiverou, who gave directions to ſome of his people to aſſiſt them in dreſſing their victuals, which were now very plentiful, and they ſupped at Wiverou's houſe, in company with Mathiabo. Part of the houſe was allotted for them to ſleep in, and ſoon after ſupper they retired to reſt. Mathiabo having borrowed a cloak of Mr. Banks, under the notion of uſing it as a coverlet when he lay down, made off with it, without being perceived either by that gentleman or his companions. However, news of the robbery being preſently brought them by one of the natives, they ſet out in purſuit of Mathiabo, but had proceeded only a very little

little way before they were met by a perſon bringing back the cloak, which the chief had given up rather through fear than from any principle of honeſty. On their return, they found the houſe quite deſerted; and about four in the morning, the centinel gave the alarm that the boat was miſſing. Captain Cook and Mr. Banks were greatly aſtoniſhed at this account, and ran to the water ſide; but though it was a clear ſtar-light morning, no boat was to be ſeen. Their ſituation was now extremely diſagreeable. The party conſiſted of no more than four, having with them only one muſket and two pocket piſtols, without a ſpare ball or a charge of powder.

After having remained ſome time in a ſtate of anxiety ariſing from theſe circumſtances, of which they feared the Indians might take advantage, the boat, which had been driven away by the tide, returned; and Mr. Banks and his companions had no ſooner breakfaſted than they departed. This place is ſituated on the north ſide of Tiarrabou, the ſouth eaſt peninſula of the iſland, about five miles eaſt from the iſthmus, with an harbour equal to any in thoſe parts. It was fertile and populous, and the inhabitants every where behaved with great civility.

On Friday the 30th, they arrived at Otahorou, where they found their old acquaintance Tootahah, who received them with great civility, and provided them a good ſupper, and convenient lodging; and though they had been ſo ſhamefully plundered the laſt time they ſlept with this chief, they ſpent the night with the greateſt ſecurity, none of their cloaths nor any other article being miſſing the next morning. They returned to the fort at Port-Royal harbour on the 1ſt of July, having diſcovered the iſland, including both peninſulas, to be about 100 miles in circumference.

On the 3d, Mr. Banks made an excurſion, in order to trace the river up the valley to its ſource, and to remark how far the country was inhabited along the banks of it. He took Indian guides with him,

and

and after having ſeen houſes for about ſix miles, they came to one which was ſaid to be the laſt that could be met with. The maſter preſented them with cocoa-nuts and other fruits, and they proceeded on their walk, after a ſhort ſtay. They often paſſed through vaults formed by rocky fragments in the courſe of their journey, in which, as they were told, benighted travellers ſometimes took ſhelter. Purſuing the courſe of the river about ſix miles farther, they found it banked on both ſides by rocks almoſt 100 feet in height, and nearly perpendicular; a way, however, might be traced up theſe precipices, along which their Indian guides would have conducted them, but they declined the offer, as there did not appear to be any thing at the ſummit which could repay them for the toil and dangers of aſcending it.

Mr. Banks ſought in vain for minerals among the rocks, which were naked almoſt on all ſides, but no mineral ſubſtances were found. The ſtones every where exhibited ſigns of having been burnt, which was the caſe of all the ſtones that were found while we ſtaid at Otaheite, and both there and in the neighbouring iſlands the traces of fire were evident in the clay upon the hills.

On the 4th, a great quantity of the ſeeds of water-melons, oranges, limes, and other plants, brought from Rio de Janeiro, were planted on each ſide of the fort, by Mr. Banks, who alſo plentifully ſupplied the Indians with them, and planted many of them in the woods.

By this time they began to think of making preparations to depart; but Omao and Oberea, and their ſon and daughter, viſited them before they were ready to ſail. The ſon of Waheatua, chief of the ſouth-eaſt peninſula, was alſo here at the ſame time; and they were favoured with the company of the Indian who had been ſo dexterous as to ſteal the quadrant, as before related. The carpenters being ordered to take down the gates and paliſadoes of the fort, to be converted into fire-wood, one of the natives ſtole the

ſtaple

ſtaple and hook of the gate; he was purſued, in vain, but the property was afterwards recovered, and returned to the owners by Tubourai Tamaide.

Before their departure, two circumſtances happened which gave Captain Cook ſome uneaſineſs. The firſt was that two foreign ſailors having been abroad, one of them was robbed of his knife, which as he was endeavouring to recover, he was dangerouſly hurt with a ſtone by the natives, and his companion alſo received a ſlight wound in the head. The offenders eſcaped, and the captain was not anxious to have them taken, as he did not want to have any diſputes with the Indians.

Between the 8th and 9th, two young marines one night withdrew themſelves from the fort, and in the morning were not to be met with. Notice having been given the next day that the ſhip would ſail that or the enſuing day; as they did not return, Captain Cook began to be apprehenſive that they deſigned to remain on ſhore; but as he was appriſed, in ſuch a caſe no effectual means could be taken to recover them without running a riſque of deſtroying the harmony ſubſiſting between the Engliſh and the natives, he reſolved to wait a day in hopes of their returning of their own accord. But as they were ſtill miſſing on the 10th in the morning, an enquiry was made after them, when the Indians declared, that they did not propoſe to return, having taken refuge among the mountains, where it was impoſſible for them to be diſcovered; and added, that each of them had taken a wife. In conſequence of this, it was intimated to ſeveral of the chiefs that were in the fort with the women, among whom were Tubourai Tamaide, Tomio, and Oberea, that they would not be ſuffered to quit it till the deſerters were produced. They did not ſhew any ſigns of fear or diſcontent, but aſſured the captain the marines ſhould be ſent back. In the mean time, Mr. Hicks was diſpatched in the pinnace to bring Tootahah on board the ſhip,

and

and he executed his commiſſion without giving any alarm.

Night coming on, Captain Cook thought it not prudent to let the people, whom he had detained as hoſtages, remain at the fort; he therefore gave orders to remove them on board, which greatly alarmed them all, eſpecially the females, who teſtified the moſt gloomy apprehenſions by floods of tears. Captain Cook eſcorted Oberea and others to the ſhip; but Mr. Banks remained on ſhore with ſome Indians, whom he thought it of leſs importance to detain. In the evening, one of the marines was brought back by ſome of the natives, who reported that the other and two of our men who went to recover them, would be detained while Tootahah was confined. Upon this, Mr. Hicks was diſpatched in the long boat, with a ſtrong body of men, to reſcue the priſoners; at the ſame time, the captain told Tootahah, that it was incumbent on him to aſſiſt them with ſome of his people, and to give orders in his name, that the men ſhould be ſet at liberty; for that he would be expected to anſwer for the event. Tootahah immediately complied, and this party releaſed the men without oppoſition.

On the 11th, about ſeven in the morning, they returned, but without the arms, which had been taken from them when they were made priſoners; theſe, however, being reſtored ſoon after, the chiefs on board were allowed to return, and thoſe who had been detained on ſhore, were alſo ſet at liberty. On examining the deſerters, it appeared that the Indians had told the truth, they having choſen two girls, with whom they would have remained in the iſland. At this time, the power of Oberea was not ſo great as it was when the Dolphin firſt diſcovered the iſland. Tupia, whoſe name has been often mentioned in this voyage, had been her prime miniſter. He had a knowledge of navigation, and was thoroughly acquainted with the number, ſituation, and inhabitants of the adjacent iſlands. This chief had often expreſſed a deſire to go with us when we continued our voyage.

On the 11th in the morning he came on board, with a boy about twelve years of age, his ſervant, named Taiyota, and requeſted the gentlemen on board to let him go with them. As we thought he might be uſeful to us in many particulars, we unanimouſly agreed to comply with his requeſt. Tupia then went on ſhore for the laſt time to bid farewel to his friends, to whom he gave ſeveral baubles, as parting tokens of remembrance.

Mr. Banks, after dinner, being willing to obtain a drawing of the Moraia, which Tootahah had in his poſſeſſion at Eparre, Captain Cook accompanied him thither in the pinnace, together with Dr. Solander. They immediately, upon landing, repaired to Tootahah's houſe, where they were met by Oberea and ſeveral others. A general good underſtanding prevailed. Tupia came back with them, and they promiſed to view the gentlemen early the next day, as they were told they ſhould then ſail.

On the 13th, theſe friendly people came very early on board, and the ſhip was ſurrounded with a vaſt number of canoes, filled with Indians of the lower ſort. Between eleven and twelve we weighed anchor; and, notwithſtanding all the little miſunderſtandings between the Engliſh and the natives, the latter, who poſſeſſed a great fund of good nature and much ſenſibility, took their leave, weeping in an affectionate manner. As to Tupia, he ſupported himſelf through this ſcene with a becoming fortitude. Tears flowed from his eyes, it is true, but the effort he made to conceal them, did him additional honour. He went with Mr. Banks to the maſt-head, and waving his hand, took a laſt farewel of his country. Thus we departed from Otaheite, after a ſtay of juſt three months.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

An hiſtorical and deſcriptive account of Otaheite—Of the iſland and its productions—Of the inhabitants, their dreſs, dwellings, manner of living—Diverſions, and diſeaſe.

PORT Royal bay, in the iſland of Otaheite, we found to be within half a degree of its real ſituation; and point Venus, the northern extremity of this iſland, and the eaſtern part of the bay, lies in 144 deg. 30 min. longitude. A reef of coral rocks ſurround the iſland, forming ſeveral excellent bays, among which, and equal to the beſt of them, is Port Royal. The moſt proper ground for anchoring, is on the eaſtern ſide of the bay. The ſhore is a fine ſandy beach, behind which runs a river of freſh water, very convenient for a fleet of ſhips. The face of the country is very uneven. It riſes in ridges that run up into the middle of the iſland, where they form mountains which may be ſeen at the diſtance of ſixty miles. The only parts of the iſland that are inhabited, are the low lands, lying between the foot of the ridges and the ſea. The houſes do not form villages, but are ranged along the whole border. Before them are little groups of plantain trees, which furniſh them with cloth. According to Tupia's account, this iſland could furniſh above 6000 fighting men. The produce is bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, bananas, ſweet potatoes, yams, jumbu, a delicious fruit, ſugar-cane, the paper mulberry, ſeveral ſorts of figs, with many other plants and trees, all which the earth produces ſpontaneouſly.

The people in general are of a larger make than the Europeans. The males are moſtly tall, and robuſt, and the women above the ſize of our Engliſh ladies. Their natural complexion is of a fine clear olive, their ſkin delicately ſmooth and ſoft. Their faces in general are handſome, and their eyes full of ſenſibility. Their teeth are remarkably white and regular, and their breath entirely free from any diſagreeable ſmell.

They cloath themſelves in cloth and matting of various kinds: the firſt they wear in fine, the latter in wet weather. The women of a ſuperior claſs wear three or four pieces. One, which is of conſiderable length, they wrap ſeveral times round their waiſt, and falls down to the middle of the leg. Two or three other ſhort pieces, with a hole cut in the middle of each, are placed on one another, and their heads coming through the holes, the long ends hang before and behind, both ſides being open, by which means they have the free uſe of their arms.

The men's dreſs is very ſimilar, differing only in this inſtance, and one part of the garment, inſtead of falling below the knees, is brought between the legs. This dreſs is worn by all ranks of people, the only diſtinction being quantity in the ſuperior claſs. The boys and girls go quite naked; the firſt till they are ſeven or eight years old; the latter till they are about five or ſix.

The natives of Otaheite ſeldom uſe their houſes but to ſleep in, or to avoid the rain, as they eat in the open air. Their cloaths ſerve them for a covering in the night. We ſaw houſes that are general receptacles for the inhabitants of a diſtrict, many of them being more than 200 feet in length, 40 in breath, and 70 or 80 feet high.

Their cookery conſiſts chiefly in baking, the manner of doing which has been noticed. When a chief kills a hog, he divides it equally among his vaſſals. When the bread-fruit is not in ſeaſon, cocoa-nuts, bananas, and plantains, are ſubſtituted in their ſtead. They bake their bread-fruit in a manner which renders it ſomewhat like a mealy potatoe. Of this three diſhes are made, by beating them up with bananas, plantains, or ſour paſte, which is called by them mahie.

The chief eats generally alone, unleſs when viſited by a ſtranger. Not having known the uſe of a table they ſit on the ground, and leaves of trees ſpread before them ſerve as a table cloth. They then begin their meals with the ceremony of waſhing their mouths and hands; after which they eat a handful of bread-fruit and fiſh, dipt in ſalt water alternately, till the whole is conſumed

conſumed, taking a ſip of ſalt water between almoſt every morſel. The bread-fruit and fiſh is ſucceeded by the ſecond courſe. During this time a ſoft fluid of paſte is prepared from the bread-fruit, which they drink out of cocoa-nut ſhells: this concludes the meal, and their hands and mouths are again waſhed as at the beginning.

One of the worſt cuſtoms of the people of Otaheite is, that which ſeveral of the principal people of the iſland have adopted, of uniting in an aſſociation, wherein no woman confines herſelf to any particular man, by which means they obtain a perpetual ſociety. The members have meetings wherein the men amuſe themſelves with wreſtling, and the women dance the timorodee, in ſuch a manner as is moſt likely to excite the deſires of the other ſex, and which were frequently gratified in the aſſembly. A much worſe practice is the conſequence of this. If any of the women prove with child, the infant is deſtroyed, unleſs the mother's natural affection ſhould prevail with her to preſerve its life, which, however, is forfeited unleſs ſhe can procure a man to adopt it. And where ſhe ſucceeds in this, ſhe is expelled from the ſociety, being called Whannownow, which ſignifies the bearer of children, by way of reproach.

Soon after our arrival at Otaheite, we were appriſed of the natives having the French diſeaſe among them. The iſlanders call it by a name expreſſive of its effects, obſerving, that the hair and nails of thoſe who were firſt infected by it, fell off, and the fleſh rotted from the bones, while their countrymen, and even neareſt relations, who were unaffected, were ſo much terrified at its ſymptoms, that the unhappy ſufferer was often forſaken by them, and left to periſh in the moſt miſerable condition.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

The Endeavour continues her voyage—Viſits the iſlands in the neighbourhood of Otaheite—An account of ſeveral incidents, and of various particulars relative to the inhabitants—The paſſage of the Endeavour from Oteroah to New Zealand—Events on going aſhore, and incidents while the ſhip was in Poverty Bay—The country deſcribed—Excurſions to Cape Turnagain, and return to Tolaga—The inhabitants deſcribed, and a narrative of what happened while we were on that part of the coaſt—The range from Tolaga to Mercury Bay—Incidents that happened on board the Endeavour and aſhore—A deſcription of the country—Sail from Mercury Bay to the Bay of Iſlands—Deſcription of the Indians on the banks of the Thames—Interview and ſkirmiſhes with the natives—Range from the Bay of Iſlands round North Cape.

ON the 13th of July, 1769, after leaving the iſland of Otaheite, we continued our courſe, with clear weather and a gentle breeze, and were informed by Tupia, that four iſlands which he called Huaheine, Ulieta, Otaha, and Bolabola, were at the diſtance of about one and two days ſail; and that hogs, fowls, and other refreſhments, very ſcarce on board, were to be got there in great abundance. On the 15th, we made but little way, on account of the calms which ſucceeded the light breezes. Tupia often prayed to his god Tane, for a wind, and boaſted of his ſucceſs, which indeed he took care to inſure, by never applying to Tane, till he ſaw a breeze ſo near, that he knew it muſt reach the ſhip before his prayer was concluded.

On the 16th, we ſounded near the north-weſt part of the iſland of Huaheine, but found no bottom at 70 fathoms. Several of the canoes put off; but the Indians ſeemed fearful of coming near the bark till the ſight of Tupia removed their apprehenſions. They then came along

along ſide, and the king of the iſland, with his queen, came on board. They ſeemed ſurpriſed at every thing that was ſhewn them, but made no enquiries after any thing but what was offered to their notice. After ſome time they became more familiar; and the king, whoſe name was Oree, as a token of amity, propoſed exchanging names with Captain Cook, which was readily accepted.

Having anchored in a ſmall harbour, we went on ſhore with Mr. Banks and ſome other gentlemen, accompanied by the king and Tupia. As ſoon as we landed, Tupia uncovered himſelf as low as the waiſt, and deſired Mr. Monkhouſe to do the ſame. Being ſeated, he now began a ſpeech, or prayer, which laſted about twenty minutes; the king, who ſtood oppoſite to him, anſwering in what ſeemed ſet replies. During this harangue, Tupia delivered, at different times, a handkerchief, a black ſilk neckcloth, ſome plantains, and two bunches of feathers, all which we carried on board. Theſe ceremonies were conſidered as a kind of ratification of a peace between us and the king of Huaheine.

On the 17th, we went again on ſhore, and made an excurſion into the country, the productions of which greatly reſembled thoſe of Otaheite; the rocks and clay ſeemed, indeed, more burnt: the boat houſes were curious, and remarkably large. The level part of the country affords the moſt beautiful landſcapes that the imagination can poſſibly form an idea of.

On the 19th, we offered the natives ſome hatchets, for which we procured three very large hogs. As we intended to ſail in the afternoon, king Oree, and others of the natives came on board to take their leave. Capt. Cook preſented to Oree, a pewter plate, ſtamped with this inſcription, "His Britannic Majeſty's ſhip Endeavour, Captain Cook, commander, 16th of July, 1769." We gave him alſo ſome medals, reſembling our Engliſh coin, which he promiſed to keep, in order to remember us.

On the 20th, by the direction of Tupia, we anchored in a bay, formed by a reef, on the north ſide of the iſland.

iſland. Two canoes ſoon came off from the ſhore, and the natives brought with them two ſmall hogs, which they exchanged for ſome nails and beads. The captain, Mr. Banks, and other gentlemen, now went on ſhore, accompanied by Tupia, who introduced them with the ſame kind of ceremonies that had taken place on their landing at Huaheine; after which Captain Cook took poſſeſſion of this and the three neighbouring iſlands, Huaheine, Otaha, and Bolabola, in the name of his Britannic majeſty.

On the 21ſt, the maſter was ſent to inſpect the ſouthern part of the iſland, and a lieutenant was diſpatched in the yawl to ſound the harbour where the Endeavour lay. While the captain went in the pinnace, to take a view of that part of the iſland which lay to the northward, Mr. Banks and the gentlemen, went again on ſhore, trading with the natives, and ſearching after the productions and curioſities of the country.

The hazy weather and briſk gales prevented us from getting under ſail till the 24th, when we put to ſea, and ſteered northward within the reef, towards an opening, at the diſtance of about ſix leagues, in effecting which we were in danger of ſtriking on a rock, the man who ſounded, crying out on a ſudden, "two fathoms," which could not but alarm us greatly; but either the maſter was miſtaken, or the ſhip went along the edge of a coral rock, many of which in the neighbourhood of theſe iſlands are as ſteep as a wall.

The bay where the Endeavour lay at anchor, called Oopoa, is capacious enough to hold a great number of ſhipping, and ſecured from the ſea by a reef of rocks. Its ſituation is off the eaſtermoſt part of the iſland. The proviſions conſiſt of cocoa-nuts, yams, plantains, and a few hogs and fowls. The country round about the place where we landed, was not ſo plentiful as at Otaheite or Huaheine. The ſouthermoſt opening in the reef, or channel into the harbour, by which we entered, is a little more than a cable's length wide; it lies off the eaſtermoſt point of the iſland, and may be found by a ſmall woody iſland, which lies to the ſouth-eaſt of it,

it, called Oatara; north-weſt from which are two other iſlots called Opururu and Tamou. Between theſe is the channel through which we went out of the harbour, and it is a full quarter of a mile wide.

On the 25th, we were within a league or two of the iſland of Otoha; but could not get near enough to the land, the wind having proved contrary. In the morning, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went in the long-boat with the maſter, in order to ſound a harbour on the eaſt ſide of the iſland, which they found ſafe and convenient. We then went on ſhore, and purchaſed a large quantity of plantains, and ſome hogs and fowls. The produce of this iſland was much the ſame with that of Ulieta, but ſeemed to be more barren.

We then made ſail to the northward, and at eight o'clock on the 29th, we were under the high peaks of Bolabola. We found the iſland inacceſſible in this part. On the 30th, we diſcovered an iſland which Tupia called Maurua, but ſaid it was ſmall, ſurrounded by a reef, and without commodious harbour, but inhabited, and nearly yield the ſame produce as the adjacent iſlands. In the afternoon, finding ourſelves to windward of ſome harbours that lay on the weſt ſide of Ulieta, we intended to put into one of them, in order to ſtop a leak which had ſprung in the powder room. The wind being right againſt us, we plied on and off till the afternoon of the 1ſt of Auguſt, when we came to an anchor in the entrance of the channel, which led into one of the harbours.

On Wedneſday the 2d, when the tide turned, we came into a proper place for mooring, in 28 fathom. Many of the natives came off, and brought hogs, fowls, and plantains, which were purchaſed upon moderate terms. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went on ſhore, and ſpent the day very agreeably; the natives ſhewed them great reſpect, being conducted to the houſes of the chief people. In one houſe, they obſerved ſome very young girls, dreſſed in the neateſt manner, who kept their places, waiting for the ſtrangers to accoſt them; theſe girls were the moſt beautiful the gentlemen had ever ſeen.

In one of theſe houſes we were entertained with a dance. The performer put upon his head a large piece of wicker-work, about four feet long of a cylindrical form, covered with feathers, and edged round with ſhark's teeth. With this head-dreſs, he began to dance with a ſlow motion; frequently moving his head ſo as to deſcribe a circle with the top of his wicker-cap, and ſometimes throwing it ſo near the faces of the by-ſtanders as to make them jump back; this they conſidered as an excellent piece of humour, and it always produced a hearty laugh, when practiſed upon any of the Engliſh gentlemen.

On Saturday the 5th, ſome hogs and fowls, and ſeveral large pieces of cloth, many of them being fifty or ſixty yards in length, together with a quantity of plantains, and cocoa-nuts, were ſent to Captain Cook, as a preſent from the Earee Rahie of the iſland of Bolabola, accompanied with a meſſage, importing that he was then on the iſland, and intended waiting on the captain.

On the 6th, the king of Bolabola did not viſit us agreeable to his promiſe; his abſence, however, was not in the leaſt regretted, as he ſent three young women to demand ſomething in return for his preſent. After dinner, we ſet out to pay the king a viſit on ſhore. As this man was the Earee Rahie of the Bolabola man, who had conquered this, and were in dread of all the neighbouring iſlands, we were greatly diſappointed, inſtead of finding a vigorous, enterpriſing young chief, to ſee a poor feeble old dotard, half blind, and ſinking under the weight of age and infirmities. He received us without either that ſtate or ceremony which we had hitherto met with among other chiefs.

On Wedneſday the 9th, having ſtopped a leak, and taken on board a freſh ſtock of proviſions, we ſailed out of the harbour: and though we were ſeveral leagues diſtant from the iſland of Bolabola, Tupia earneſtly intreated Captain Cook, that a ſhot might be fired towards it; which, to gratify him, the captain complied with. It was ſuppoſed to have been intended by Tupia as a mark of his reſentment againſt the inhabitants of that place,

place, as they had formerly taken from him large poſſeſſions which he held in the iſland of Ulieta, of which iſland Tupia was a native, and a ſubordinate chief, but was driven out by theſe warriors.

Being detained longer at Ulieta in repairing the ſhip than we expected, we did not go on ſhore at Bolabola; but after giving the general name of the Society Iſlands, to the iſlands of Huaheine, Ulietea, Bolabola, Otaha, and Maurua, which lies between the latitude of 16 deg. 10 min. and 18 deg. 55 min. ſouth, we purſued our courſe, ſtanding ſoutherly for an iſland, to which we were directed by Tupia, at above 100 leagues diſtant. This we diſcovered on the 13th, and were informed by him it was called Obiterea.

On the 14th, we ſtood in for land, and ſaw ſeveral of the inhabitants coming along the ſhore. One of the lieutenants was diſpatched in the pinnace to ſound for anchorage, and to obtain what intelligence could be got from the natives concerning any land that might go farther to the ſouth. Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and Tupia, went with the lieutenant in the boat. When they approached the ſhore, they obſerved that the Indians were armed with long lances. A number of them were ſoon drawn together on the beach, and two jumped into the water, endeavouring to gain the boat, but ſhe ſoon left them, and ſome others that had made the ſame attempt, far enough behind her. Having doubled the point where they intended to land, they opened a large bay, and ſaw another party of the natives ſtanding at the end of it, armed like thoſe whom they had ſeen before. Preparations were then made for landing, on which a canoe full of Indians made off towards them. Obſerving this, Tupia received orders to acquaint them that the Engliſh did not intend to offer them violence, but meant to traffic with them for nails, which were produced. Thus informed, they came along-ſide the boat, and took ſome nails that were given them, being ſeemingly well pleaſed with the preſent. Yet, a few minutes after, theſe people boarded the boat, deſigning to drag her on ſhore; but ſome muſkets being diſcharged

over their heads, they leaped into the ſea, and having reached the canoe, put back with all poſſible expedition, joining their countrymen who ſtood ready to receive them. The boat immediately purſued the fugitive, but the crew finding the ſurf extremely violent, did not venture to land there, but coaſted along ſhore to try if they could not find a more convenient place.

Soon after the canoe got on ſhore, a man oppoſite the boat flouriſhed his weapon, calling out at the ſame time with a ſhrill voice, which was a mark of defiance, as Tupia explained it to the Engliſh.—Not being able to find a proper landing-place, they returned, with an intention to attempt it where the canoe went on ſhore; whereupon another warrior repeated the defiance: his appearance was more formidable than that of the other. When he thought fit to retire, a grave man came forward, who aſked Tupia ſeveral queſtions, relating to the place from whence the veſſel came, as who were the perſons on board? whither they were bound? &c. After this, it was propoſed that the people in the boat ſhould go on ſhore and trade with them, if they would lay aſide their weapons; but the latter would not agree to this, unleſs the Engliſh would do the like. As this propoſal was by no means an equal one, when it was conſidered that the hazard muſt, for many reaſons, be greater to the boat's crew than the Indians; and as perfidy was dreaded, it was not complied with. Beſides, ſince neither the bay which the Endeavour entered, nor any other part of the iſland, furniſhed good harbour or anchorage, it was reſolved not to attempt landing any more, but to ſail from hence to the ſouthward.

On the 15th, we ſailed from this iſland with a fine breeze; but on the 16th it was hazy, and we bore away for what reſembled very high peaks of land. The weather clearing up, we were convinced of our miſtake, and reſumed our courſe accordingly. Land was diſcovered at weſt by north, on the 7th of October, and in the morning of the 8th, we came to an anchor oppoſite a ſmall river, not above half a league from the coaſt.

Captain

Captain Cook, Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and ſome other gentlemen, having left the pinnace at the mouth of the river, proceeded a little further up, when we landed, leaving the yawl to the care of ſome of our boys, and went up to a few ſmall houſes in the neighbourhood. Some of the natives that had concealed themſelves in the neighbourhood, took advantage of our abſence from the boat, and ruſhed out, advancing and brandiſhing their long wooden lances. On this, our boy dropped down the ſtream. The cockſwain of the pinnace then fired a muſquetoon over their heads, but it did not prevent them from following the boat, in conſequence of which he levelled his piece, and ſhot one of them dead on the ſpot. Struck with aſtoniſhment at the death of their companion, the others remained motionleſs for ſome time, but as ſoon as they recovered from their fright, retreated to the woods with the utmoſt precipitation. The report of the gun brought the advanced party back to the boat, and both the pinnace and yawl returned immediately to the ſhip.

On the 9th, a great number of natives were ſeen near the place where the gentlemen in the yawl had landed the preceding evening, and the greateſt part of them appeared to be unarmed. The long-boat, pinnace, and yawl, being manned with marines and ſailors, Captain Cook and Tupia went on ſhore, and landed on the oppoſite ſide of the river, over-againſt a ſpot where ſeveral Indians were ſitting on the ground. They immediately ſtarted up, and began to handle their weapons, each producing either a long pike, or a kind of truncheon made of ſtone, with a ſtring through the handle of it, which they twiſted round their wriſts. Tupia was directed to ſpeak to them in his language; and we were greatly ſurpriſed to find that he was well underſtood, the natives ſpeaking in his language, though in a different dialect. Their intentions at firſt appeared to be very hoſtile, brandiſhing their weapons in the uſual threatening manner; upon which a muſket was fired at ſome diſtance: the ball happened to fall into the water, at which they appeared rather terrified, and deſiſted from

from their menaces. Having now drawn up the marines, we advanced nearer to the ſide of the river. Tupia, again ſpeaking, informed them of our deſire to traffic with them for proviſions: to this they conſented, provided we would go over to them to the other ſide of the river. The propoſal was agreed to, upon condition that the natives would quit their weapons; but the moſt ſolemn aſſurances of friendſhip could not prevail with them to make ſuch a conceſſion. Not thinking it prudent, therefore, to croſs the river, we, in our turn, intreated the Indians to come over to us, and after ſome time prevailed on one of them ſo to do. He was preſently followed by others. They did not appear to value beads and iron, which we offered in the way of barter, but propoſed to exchange their weapons for ours; which being objected to, they endeavoured to ſnatch our arms from us, but being on our guard, from the information given us by Tupia, that they were ſtill our enemies; and Tupia, by our direction, gave them to underſtand, that any further offers of violence would be puniſhed with inſtant death. One of them, nevertheleſs, had the audacity to ſnatch Mr. Green's dagger when his back was turned to them, and retiring a few paces, flouriſhed it over his head; but his temerity coſt him his life; for Mr. Monkhouſe fired a muſket, and he inſtantly dropped. Soon after, though not before we had diſcharged our pieces, they retreated ſlowly up the country, and we returned to our boat.

The behaviour of the Indians, added to our want of freſh water, induced Captain Cook to continue his voyage round the bay, with a hope of getting ſome of the natives aboard, that by civil uſage he might convey through them a favourable idea of us to their countrymen, and thereby ſettle a good correſpondence with them. An event occurred which, though attended with diſagreeable circumſtances, promiſed to facilitate this deſign. Two canoes appeared, making towards land, and Captain Cook propoſed intercepting them with our boats. One of them got clear off, but the Indians in the other finding it impoſſible to eſcape, began to attack

tack our people in the boats with their paddles. This compelled the Endeavour's people to fire upon them, when four of the Indians were killed, and the other three, who were young men, jumped into the water, and endeavoured to ſwim aſhore; they were, however, taken up, and conveyed on board. At firſt they diſcovered all the ſigns of fear and terror, thinking they ſhould be killed; but Tupia, by repeated aſſurances of friendſhip, removed their apprehenſions, and they afterwards eat heartily of the ſhip's proviſions. Having retired to reſt in the evening, they ſlept very quietly for ſome hours, but about midnight their fears returning, they appeared in great agitation, frequently making loud and diſmal groans. Again the kind careſſes and friendly promiſes of Tupia operated ſo effectually, that they became calm, and ſung a ſong, which at the dead of the night had a pleaſing effect. The next morning, after they were dreſſed according to the mode of their country, and were ornamented with necklaces and bracelets, preparations were made for ſending them to their countrymen, at which they expreſſed great ſatisfaction; but finding the boat approaching Captain Cook's firſt landing-place, they intimated that the inhabitants were foes, and that after killing their enemies, they always eat them.

The captain, nevertheleſs, judged it expedient to land near the ſame ſpot, which he accordingly did, with Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and Tupia; reſolving at the ſame time to protect the youths from any injury that might be offered them. Theſe had ſcarcely departed on their return to their friends, when two large parties of Indians advanced haſtily towards them, upon which they again flew to us for protection. When the Indians drew near, one of the boys diſcovered his uncle among them, and a converſation enſued acroſs the river, in which the boy gave a juſt account of our hoſpitality, and took great pains to diſplay his finery.

A ſhort time after this converſation, the uncle ſwam acroſs the river, bringing with him a green bough, a token of friendſhip, which we received as ſuch, and ſeveral preſents were made them. Notwithſtanding the preſence

preſence of this relation, all three of the boys, by their own deſire, returned to the ſhip; but as the captain intended to ſail the next morning, he ſent them aſhore in the evening, though much againſt their inclination. They informed us of a particular kind of deer upon the iſland.

On the 11th, at ſix o'clock in the morning, we weighed and ſet ſail, in hopes of finding a better anchoring place, Captain Cook having given the bay the name of Poverty Bay. In the afternoon we were becalmed; and ſeveral canoes full of Indians came off from the ſhore, who received many preſents, and afterwards bartered even their clothes, and ſome of their paddles, ſo eager were they of European commodities. The Indians were armed with bludgeons made of wood, and of the bone of a large animal; they were contrived for cloſe fighting.

Having finiſhed their traffic, they ſet off in ſuch a hurry, that they forgot three of their companions, who remained on board all night. Theſe teſtified their fears and apprehenſions, notwithſtanding Tupia took great pains to convince them they were in danger; and about ſeven o'clock the next morning, a canoe came off with four Indians on board. It was at firſt with difficulty the Indians in the ſhip could prevail on thoſe in the canoe to come near them, and not till after the former had aſſured them, that the Engliſh did not eat men.

On the 12th, ſeveral Indians came off in a canoe, and at times appeared to be peaceably inclined, but at others to menace hoſtilities, brandiſhing their lances, and other hoſtile geſtures. A four-pounder loaded with grape ſhot, was therefore ordered to be fired, but not pointed at them. This had the deſired effect, and made them drop a-ſtern.

On Friday the 13th, in the morning, we made for an inlet, but finding it not ſheltered, ſtood out again; and were chaced by a canoe filled with Indians, but the Endeavour out-ſailed them. She purſued her courſe round the bay, but could not find an opening. Nine canoes full

full of Indians came from the ſhore, and five of them, after having conſulted together, purſued the Endeavour, apparently with a hoſtile deſign. Tupia was deſired to acquaint them, that immediate deſtruction would enſue, if they perſevered in their attempts; but words had no influence, and a four-pounder, with grape-ſhot was fired. They were terrified at this ſort of reaſoning, and went away faſter than they came.

On the 20th, we anchored in a bay two leagues to the north of the Foreland. To this bay we were invited by the natives in canoes, who behaved very amicably, and pointed to a place where they ſaid we ſhould find plenty of freſh water. We determined here to get ſome knowledge of the country, though the harbour was not ſo good a ſhelter from the weather as we expected. Two chiefs, whom we ſaw in the canoes, came on board; they were dreſſed in jackets, the one ornamented with tufts of red feathers, the other with dog-ſkins. We preſented to them linen and ſome ſpike nails, but they did not value the laſt ſo much as the inhabitants of the other iſlands.

Towards the evening we went on ſhore, accompanied by the captain and Dr. Solander. We were courteouſly received by the inhabitants, who did not appear in numerous bodies, and in other inſtances were ſcrupulouſly attentive not to give offence. We made them ſeveral ſmall preſents, and in this agreeable tour round the bay, we had the pleaſure of finding two ſtreams of freſh water. We remained on ſhore all night, and the next day Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander diſcovered ſeveral large birds, among which were quails and large pigeons. Many ſtages for drying fiſh were obſerved near where we landed, and ſome houſes with fences. We ſaw dogs with pointed ears, and very ugly. Sweet potatoes, like thoſe which grow in America, were found. The cloth plant grows ſpontaneous. In the neighbouring vallies the lands were laid out in regular plantations; and in the bay we bought plenty of crabs, cray-fiſh, and horſe-mackarel, larger than thoſe on the Engliſh coaſts. The low lands were planted with cacoes; the hollows with

gourds; but as to the woods, they were almoſt impaſſable on account of the number of ſupple-jacks which grew there. We went into ſeveral houſes belonging to the natives, and met with a very civil reception; and, without the leaſt reſerve, they ſhewed us whatever we deſired to ſee. At times we found them at their meals, which our preſence never interrupted. At this ſeaſon fiſh conſtituted their chief food; with which they eat, inſtead of bread, roots of a kind of fearn; theſe, when roaſted upon a fire, are ſweet and clammy: in taſte not diſagreeable, though rather unpleaſant, from the number of their fibres. They have doubtleſs in other ſeaſons of the year an abundance of excellent vegetables.

The women of this place paint their faces with a mixture of red ochre and oil, which, as they are very plain, renders them in appearance more homely. This kind of daubing being generally wet upon their cheeks and foreheads, was eaſily transferred to thoſe who ſaluted them, as was frequently viſible upon the noſes of our people. The young ones, who were complete coquets, wore a petticoat, under which was a girdle, made of the blades of graſs ſtrongly perfumed, to which was pendant a ſmall bunch of leaves, of ſome fragrant plant. The faces of the men were not in general painted; but they were daubed with dry red ochre from head to foot, their apparel not excepted. Though in perſonal cleanlineſs they were not equal to our friends at Otaheite, yet in ſome particulars they ſurpaſſed them: for their dwellings were furniſhed with privies, and they had dunghills upon which their offals and filth were depoſited. Among the females chaſtity was lightly eſteemed. They reſorted frequently to the watering-place, where they freely beſtowed every favour that was requeſted. An officer meeting with an elderly woman, he accompanied her to her houſe, and having preſented her with ſome cloth and beads, a young girl was ſingled out, with whom he was given to underſtand he might retire. Soon after an elderly man, with two women, came in as viſitors, who with much formality, ſaluted the whole company, after the cuſtom of the place, which is by gently joining the tips

tips of their noſes together. On his return, which was on Saturday the 21ſt, he was furniſhed with a guide, who, whenever they came to a brook or rivulet, took him on his back, to prevent his being wet. Many of the natives were curiouſly tataowed; an old man in particular, was marked on the breaſt with curious figures. Theſe Indians at night dance in a very uncouth manner, with antic geſtures, lolling out their tongues, and making ſtrange grimaces. In their dances, old men as well as the young ones, are capital performers.

On the 22d, in the evening, we weighed anchor and put to ſea; but the wind being contrary, we ſtood for another bay, a little to the ſouth, called by the natives Tolaga, in order to complete our wood and water, and to extend our correſpondence with the natives. We found a watering-place in a ſmall cove a little within the ſouth point of the bay, which bore ſouth by eaſt, diſtant about a mile. Several canoes with Indians on board, trafficked with us very fairly for glaſs bottles.

On Monday the 23d, in the afternoon, we went on ſhore, accompanied by Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and the captain. We examined and found the water extremely good; alſo plenty of wood; and the natives ſhewed us as much civility as thoſe from whom we had lately departed. At this watering-place we ſet up an aſtronomical quadrant, and took ſeveral ſolar and lunar obſervations. In our walks through the vales, we ſaw many houſes uninhabited, the natives reſiding chiefly in ſheds, or the ridges of the hills, which are very ſteep. The hills are cloathed with beautiful flowering ſhrubs, intermixed with a number of tall ſtately palms, which perfume the air, making it perfectly odoriferous. We met with various kinds of edible herbage in great abundance, and many trees which produced fruit fit to eat. Sweet potatoes and plantains are cultivated near the houſes.

On our return, we met an old man who entertained us with the military exerciſe of the natives, which are performed with patoo-patoo and the lance. The former has been already mentioned, and is uſed as a battle-

axe; the latter is 18 or 20 feet in length, and made of extreme hard wood, and ſharpened at each end. A ſtake was ſubſtituted for a ſuppoſed enemy. The old warrior firſt attacked him with his lance, advancing with a moſt furious aſpect. Having pierced him, the patoo-patoo was uſed to demoliſh his head, at which he ſtruck with a force which would at one blow have ſplit any man's ſkull; from whence we concluded no quarter was given by theſe people to their foes in time of action.

The natives in theſe parts are very numerous. They are tolerably well ſhaped, but lean and tall. Their faces reſemble thoſe of the Europeans. Their noſes are aqualine, their eyes dark coloured, their hair black, which is tied up to the top of their heads, and the men's beards are of a moderate length. Their tataowing is done very curiouſly, in various figures, which makes their ſkin reſemble carving; it is confined to the principal men, the females and ſervants uſing only red paint with which they daub their faces, which otherwiſe would not be diſagreeable.

On the 25th, we ſet up the armourers forge on ſhore for neceſſary uſes, and got our wood and water without the leaſt moleſtation from the natives, with whom we exchanged glaſs bottles and beads for different ſorts of fiſh.

On the 27th, Captain Cook and Dr. Solander went to inſpect the bay, when the doctor was not a little ſurpriſed to find the natives in the poſſeſſion of a boy's top which they knew how to ſpin by whipping it, and had purchaſed it out of curioſity. Mr. Banks was during this employed in attaining the ſummit of a ſteep hill that had previouſly engaged their attention, and near it he found many inhabited houſes. When the gentlemen met at the watering-place, the inhabitants ſang their war-ſong, which was a ſtrange medley of ſhouting and grimace, at which the women aſſiſted. The next day Captain Cook and other gentlemen went upon the iſland at the entrance of the bay, and met with a canoe that was 67 feet in length, ſix in breadth, and four in height; her bottom, which was ſharp, conſiſted of

three

three trunks of trees, and the ſides and head were curiouſly carved.

Their huts are built under trees, their form is an oblong ſquare, the door low on the ſide, and the windows are in the ends; reeds covered with thatch, compoſe the walls; the beams of the caves, which come to the ground, are covered with thatch; moſt of the houſes had been deſerted, through fear of the Engliſh, upon their landing. There is a great variety of fiſh in the bay, ſhell and cray fiſh are very plentiful, ſome of the latter weigh 12 pounds.

Sunday, October the 29th, we ſet ſail from this bay. It is ſituated in latitude 38 deg. 22 min. ſouth, four leagues to the north of Gable End Foreland; there are two high rocks at the entrance of the bay, which form a cove very good for procuring wood and water. This is a very hilly country, though it preſents the eye with an agreeable verdure, various woods, and many ſmall plantations. Mr. Banks found a great number of trees in the woods, quite unknown to Europeans; the firewood reſembled the maple-tree, and produced a gum of whitiſh colour; other trees yielded a gum of a deep yellow green. The only roots were yams and ſweet potatoes, though the ſoil appears very proper for producing every ſpecies of vegetables.

On Monday the 30th, ſailing to the northward, we fell in with a ſmall iſland about a mile diſtant from the north-eaſt point of the main, and this being the moſt eaſtern part of it, the captain named it Eaſt Cape, and the iſland Eaſt Iſland; it was but ſmall, and appeared barren. The cape is in latitude 37 deg. 42 min. 30 ſec. ſouth. Having doubled the cape, many villages preſented themſelves to view, and the adjacent land appeared cultivated. In the evening of the 30th, Lieutenant Hicks diſcovered a bay, to which his name was given. Next morning about nine, ſeveral canoes came off from the ſhore with a number of armed men, who appeared to have hoſtile intentions. Before theſe had reached the ſhip, another canoe, larger than any that had yet been ſeen, full of armed Indians, came off, and made

made towards the Endeavour, with great expedition. The captain now judging it expedient to prevent, if poſſible, their attacking him, ordered a gun to be fired over their heads. This not producing the deſired effect, another gun was fired with ball, which threw them into ſuch conſternation, that they immediately returned faſter than they came.

On the 1ſt of November, not leſs than between 40 and 50 canoes were ſeen, ſeveral of which came off as before, threatening to attack the Engliſh. One of their chiefs flouriſhed his pike, and made ſeveral harangues, ſeeming to bid defiance to thoſe on board the veſſel. At laſt, after repeated invitations, they came cloſe along ſide; but inſtead of ſhewing a diſpoſition to trade, the haranguing chief uttered a ſentence, and took up a ſtone which he threw againſt the ſhip, and immediately after ſeized their arms. A piece of cloth, however, happening to attract their eyes, they began to be more mild and reaſonable. A quantity of cray-fiſh, muſcles, and conger eels was now purchaſed. No fraud was attempted by this company of Indians, but ſome others that came after them, took goods from the veſſel without making proper returns. Yet, when theſe ſavages began to traffick with the ſailors, they renewed their frauds; and one of them was bold enough to ſeize ſome linen that was hung to dry, and run away with it. In order to induce him to return, a muſket was fired over his head, but this not anſwering the end, he was ſhot in the back with ſmall ſhot, yet he ſtill perſevered in his deſign.

In conſequence of their behaviour, though they made no preparations to attack the veſſel, the captain gave orders to fire a four-pounder, which paſſed over them; but its effects on the water terrified them ſo much, that they retreated with precipitation to the ſhore.

In the afternoon, about two o'clock, we diſcovered a pretty high iſland to the weſt. Some time after, perceiving other rocks and iſlands in the ſame quarter, but not being able to weather them before night came on, we bore up between them and the main land. In the evening, a double canoe, built after the ſame faſhion as

thoſe of Otaheite, came up, when Tupia entered into a friendly converſation with the Indians, and was told that the iſland, cloſe to which we lay, was called Mow-tohora.

The next morning, being the 2d, a number of canoes appeared, and one, which proved to be the ſame that pelted us the night before, came up. After converſing with Tupia, and behaving peaceably about an hour, they complimented us with another volley of ſtones. We returned the ſalute by firing a muſket, which made them inſtantly take to their paddles. Between ten and eleven we ſailed between a low flat iſland and the main land.

On the 3d, we paſſed the night near a ſmall iſland, which Captain Cook named the Mayor. We now ſailed towards an inlet that had been diſcovered, and having anchored in ſeven fathom water, the ſhip was ſoon ſurrounded by a number of canoes, and the people on board them did not ſeem diſpoſed for ſome time to commit any acts of hoſtility.

On the 4th, at day break, no leſs than twelve canoes made their appearance, containing near two hundred men, armed with ſpears, lances, and ſtones, who ſeemed determined to attack the ſhip, and would have boarded her, had they known on what quarter they could beſt have made their attack. While they were paddling round her, which kept the crew upon the watch in the rain, Tupia, at the requeſt of the captain, uſed a number of diſſuaſive arguments to prevent their carrying their apparent deſigns into execution; but we could not pacify them by the fire of our muſkets; they then laid aſide their hoſtile intentions, and began to trade; yet they could not refrain from their fraudulent practices; for after they had fairly bartered two of their weapons, they would not deliver up a third, for which they had received cloth, and only laughed at thoſe who demanded an equivalent. The offender was wounded with ſmall ſhot; but his countrymen took not the leaſt notice of him, and continued to trade without the leaſt diſcompoſure.

On

On the 5th, in the morning, the Indians came off to the ſhip again, who behaved much better than they had done the preceding day. An old man in particular, named Tojava, teſtified his prudence and honeſty, to whom, and a friend with him, the captain preſented ſome nails, and two pieces of Engliſh cloth. Tojava informed us that they were often viſited by freebooters from the north, who ſtripped them of all they could lay their hands on, and at times made captives of their wives and children; and that being ignorant who the Engliſh were upon their firſt arrival, the natives had been much alarmed, but were now ſatisfied of their good intentions.

On the 8th, we were viſited by ſeveral canoes, in one of which was Tojava, who, deſcrying two canoes, haſtened back to the ſhore, apprehending they were freebooters; but finding his miſtake, he ſoon returned; and the Indians ſupplied us with as much excellent fiſh as ſerved the whole ſhip's company. This day a variety of plants were collected by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander.

On the 10th, Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and the captain, went in boats to inſpect a large river that runs into the bay. They found it broader ſome miles within than at the mouth, and interſected into a number of ſtreams, by ſeveral ſmall iſlands, which were covered with trees. At the mouth of the river there was good anchorage in five fathom water. Great plenty of oyſters were procured from a bed which had been diſcovered, and they proved exceedingly good.

On the 18th, we ſteered between the main and an iſland which ſeemed very fertile. Several canoes filled with Indians, came along ſide, and the Indians ſang their war ſong; but the Endeavour's people paying them no attention, they threw a volley of ſtones; and then paddled away; however, they preſently returned their inſults. Tupia ſpoke to them, making uſe of his old arguments, that inevitable deſtruction would enſue if they perſiſted; they anſwered by brandiſhing their weapons, intimating, that if the Engliſh durſt come aſhore, they would deſtroy them all. Tupia ſtill continued

in

in expoſtulating with them, but to no purpoſe; and they ſoon gave another volley of ſtones; but upon a muſket being fired at one of their boats, they made a precipitate retreat. We caſt anchor in 23 fathom water in the evening, and early the next morning ſailed up an inlet.

On the 22d, early in the morning, we made ſail, and kept plying till the flood obliged us once more to come to an anchor. The captain and Dr. Solander went on ſhore to the weſt, but made no obſervations worth relating. After the gentlemen departed, the ſhip was ſurrounded with canoes, which kept Mr. Banks on board, that he might trade with the Indians, who bartered their arms and cloaths for paper, taking no unfair advantages. But though they were in general honeſt in their dealings, one of them took a fancy to a half minute glaſs, and being detected in ſecreting the ſame, it was reſolved to give him a ſmatch of the cat-o'-nine-tails. The Indians interfered to ſtop the current of juſtice, but being oppoſed, they got their arms from the canoes, and ſome of the people in them attempted to get on board. Mr. Banks and Tupia now coming upon deck, the Indians applied to Tupia, who informed them of the nature of the offender's intended puniſhment, and that he had no influence over Mr. Hicks, the commanding officer. They appeared pacified, and the criminal received not only a dozen, but afterwards a good drubbing from an old man, who was thought to be his father. The canoes immediately went off, the Indians ſaying, they ſhould be afraid to return again on board.

On the 23d, the weather ſtill continuing unfavourable, and the wind contrary, we kept plying down the river, anchoring between the tides, and at the north weſt extremity of the Thames. Not being able to approach land, we had but a diſtant view of the main, for a courſe of near thirty miles. The country ſeemed to be thinly inhabited; the natives are well made, ſtrong, and active; their bodies are

painted with red ochre, and their canoes, which are well conſtructed, were ornamented with carved work.

On the 27th, we found ourſelves within a mile of many ſmall iſlands, laying cloſe under the main, at the diſtance of twenty-two miles from Cape Brett. Here we lay about two hours, during which time ſeveral canoes came off from the iſlands, which we called Cavalles, the name of ſome fiſh which we purchaſed of the Indians. Theſe people were very inſolent, uſing many frantic geſtures, and pelting us with ſtones. Nor did they give over their inſults, till ſome ſmall ſhot hit one who had a ſtone in his hand.

On the 29th, having weathered Cape Brett, we bore away to leeward, and got into a large bay, where we anchored on the ſouth-weſt ſide of ſeveral iſlands, and ſuddenly came into four fathoms and a half water. Upon ſounding, we found we had got upon a bank, and accordingly weighed and dropped over it, and anchored again in ten fathoms and a half, after which we were ſurrounded by 33 large canoes, containing near three hundred Indians, armed. Some of them were admitted on board, and Captain Cook gave a piece of broad cloth to one of the chiefs, and ſome ſmall preſents to the other. They traded peaceably for ſome time, being terrified at the fire-arms, with the effects of which they were not unacquainted; but whilſt the captain was at dinner, on a ſignal given by one of the chiefs, all the Indians quitted the ſhip, and attempted to tow away the buoy; a muſket was now fired over them, but it produced no good effect; ſmall ſhot was then fired at them, but it did not reach them. A muſket loaded with ball, was therefore ordered to be fired, and Otegoowgoow (ſon of one of the chiefs) was wounded in the thigh by it, which induced them immediately to throw the buoy overboard. The captain, Mr. Banks, and Dr. Solander, landed up the iſland, and the Indians in the canoes ſoon after came on ſhore. The gentlemen were in a ſmall cove, and were preſently ſurrounded by near 400 armed Indians; but the captain, not

ſuſpecting

ſuſpecting any hoſtile deſign on the part of the natives, remained peaceably diſpoſed. The gentlemen marching towards them, drew a line, intimating that they were not to paſs it: they did not infringe upon the boundary for ſome time; but at laſt, they ſang the ſong of defiance, whilſt a party attempted to draw the Endeavour's boat on ſhore: theſe ſignals for an attack being immediately followed by the Indians breaking in upon the line, the gentlemen judged it time to defend themſelves, and accordingly the captain fired his muſket, loaded with ſmall ſhot, which was ſeconded by Mr. Banks's diſcharging his piece, and two of the men followed his example. This threw the Indians into confuſion, and they retreated, but were rallied again by one of the chiefs, who ſhouted and waved his patoo-patoo. The doctor now pointed his muſket at this hero, and hit him: this ſtopped his career, and he took flight with the other Indians. They were now at too great a diſtance for a ball to reach them, but theſe operations being obſerved from the ſhip, ſhe brought her broadſide to bear, and by firing over them, ſoon diſperſed them. The Indians had in this ſkirmiſh two of their people wounded, but none killed: peace being thus reſtored, the gentlemen began to gather celery and other herbs; but ſuſpecting ſome of the natives were lurking about with evil deſigns, they repaired to a cave at ſome ſmall diſtance. Here they found the chief, who had that day received a preſent from the captain; he came forth with his wife and brother, and ſolicited their clemency.

In the afternoon, the Engliſh rowed to another part of the iſland, when landing, and gaining an eminence, they had a very agreeable and romantic view of a great number of ſmall iſlands, well inhabited and cultivated.

On the 15th of December, in the morning, we weighed anchor, but were ſoon becalmed, and a ſtrong current ſetting towards the ſhore, we were driven in with ſuch rapidity, that we expected every

moment to be run upon the breakers, which appeared above water, not more than a cable's length diſtance; and we were ſo near the land, that Tupia, who was totally ignorant of the danger, held a converſation with the Indians, who were ſtanding on the beach. We were happily relieved from this alarming ſituation by a freſh breeze ſuddenly ſpringing up from the ſhore.

On the 25th, we ſtood to the ſouthward, but had no land in ſight, and were twenty leagues to the weſtward of North Cape. At mid-night it blew a ſtorm from the eaſt, accompanied with heavy ſhowers of rain, which compelled us to bring the ſhip to, under her main-ſail. The gale continued till Thurſday the 28th, when it fell about two o'clock in the morning; but at eight increaſed to a hurricane, with a prodigious ſea. At noon the gale ſomewhat abated, but had ſtill heavy ſqualls. On the 29th, we wore, and ſtood to the north-weſt. On the 31ſt, we tacked, and ſtood to the weſtward. We were now to the neareſt land about three leagues, and had ſomewhat more than forty fathom water.

CHAP. VII.

The Endeavour continues her voyage to Queen Charlotte's Sound—Tranſactions in the Sound—A ſhocking cuſtom of the inhabitants—The coaſt of Admiralty Bay deſcribed—The departure of the Endeavour from New Zealand, and other particulars—An account of New Zealand, the inhabitants, and cuſtoms.

JANUARY the 1ſt, 1770, we tacked and ſtood to the eaſtward: at noon, we ſtood to the weſtward; found our lat. to be 34 deg. 37 min. ſouth; our diſtance from the Three Kings ten or eleven leagues. On the 3d, we ſaw land; it was high and flat beyond the reach of the naked eye.

On the morning of the 4th, we ſtood along ſhore. The coaſt appeared ſandy, barren, and inhoſpitable.

Steering

Steering northward, on the 6th we ſaw land again, which we ſuppoſed to be Cape Maria. We continued ſteering eaſt till the 9th, when we were off a point of land which Captain Cook named Woody Head.

On the 15th, we ſteered for an inlet, it being almoſt calm, the ſhip was carried by a current within a cable's length of the ſhore; but by the aſſiſtance of the boats ſhe got clear. At three, we anchored in a very ſafe cove on the north-weſt ſide of the bay, and unmoored in eleven fathom water. In paſſing the point of the bay, we obſerved an armed centinel on duty, who was twice relieved; and now four canoes came off, for the purpoſe, as we imagined, of reconnoitring; for none of the Indians would venture on board, except an old man who ſeemed of elevated rank. His countrymen expoſtulated with him, laid hold of him, and took great pains to prevent his coming aboard, but they could not divert him from his purpoſe. We received him with the utmoſt civility. Tupia and the old man joined noſes, according to the cuſtom of the country, and having received ſeveral preſents, he retired to his aſſociates, who began to dance and laugh. Whether their expreſſions of joy were tokens of enmity or friendſhip, we could not determine. Captain Cook and other gentlemen went on ſhore, where they met with a fine ſtream of excellent water.

On the 16th, three canoes came off with a number of Indians, who brought ſeveral of their women with them, which circumſtance was thought to be a favourable preſage of their peaceable diſpoſition; but they ſoon convinced us of our miſtake, by attempting to ſtop our long boat; upon which Captain Cook had recourſe to the old expedient of firing ſhot over their heads, which intimidated them for the preſent: they ſoon gave freſh proofs of their treacherous deſigns, for one of them ſnatched at ſome paper from our market-man, and miſſing it, put himſelf in a threatening attitude; whereupon ſome ſhot was fired, which wounded him in the knee; but Tupia ſtill

continued

continued converſing with his companions, making enquiries concerning their traditions reſpecting the antiquities of their country. He alſo aſked them if they had ever ſeen a ſhip ſo large as the Endeavour? they replied they had not, nor never heard that ſuch a veſſel had been on their coaſt.

The women, who accompanied the men in their canoes, wore a head-dreſs; it was compoſed of black feathers, tied in a bunch on the top of the head, which greatly increaſed their height. The captain, Mr. Banks, and the doctor, viſited a cove about a mile from the ſhip. There was a family of Indians who were greatly alarmed at the approach of theſe gentlemen, all running away except one; but upon Tupia's converſing with him, the others returned. They found by the proviſions of this family, that they were cannibals, there being ſeveral human bones that had been lately dreſſed and picked, and it appeared that a ſhort time before, ſix of their enemies having fallen into their hands, they killed four, and eat them, and that the other two were drowned in endeavouring to make their eſcape.

On the 29th, we were viſited by Topoa, in company with other Indians, who behaved very civilly. During the time the bark was preparing for ſea, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander often went on ſhore. Capt. Cook alſo made ſeveral obſervations on the coaſt to the north-weſt, and perceived many iſlands, forming bays, in which there appeared good anchorage for ſhipping. Returning to the ſhip, he met with many of the natives, of whom he purchaſed a ſmall quantity of fiſh.

On the 30th, ſome of our people, who were ſent out early in the morning to gather celery, met with about twenty Indians, among whom were five or ſix women, whoſe huſbands had lately been made captives. They ſat down upon the ground together, and cut many parts of their bodies in a moſt ſhocking manner, with ſhells, in teſtimony of their exceſſive grief. But what made the horrid ſpectacle more terrible,

rible, was, that the male Indians who were with them, paid not the leaſt attention to it, but with the greateſt unconcern imaginable, employed themſelves in repairing their huts. This day, the carpenter having prepared two poſts, they were ſet up as memorials, being inſcribed with the date of the year, the month, and the ſhip's name. Captain Cook then gave ſomething to every one preſent, after which, he honoured this inlet with the name of Queen Charlotte's Sound. After taking leave of the natives, Topoa attended us in his canoe to the ſhip, and returned home after dinner.

On the 31ſt, having taken in our wood and water, we diſpatched one party to make brooms, and another to catch fiſh. Towards the cloſe of the evening, we had a ſtrong gale from the north-weſt, with ſuch heavy ſhowers, that our ſweet little warblers on ſhore began to ſuſpend their wild notes, with which till now, they had conſtantly ſerenaded us during the night, affording us a pleaſure not to be expreſſed.

On the 1ſt of February, the gale increaſed to a ſtorm, with heavy guſts from the main land, which obliged us to let go another anchor. Towards night they became more moderate, but the rain poured down with ſuch impetuoſity, that the brooks at our watering place overflowed its banks, and carried away, to our loſs, ten caſks full of water.

On the 5th, we got under ſail, but the wind ſoon falling, we came again to anchor a little above Motuara. This day, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went again on ſhore in ſearch of natural curioſities, and by accident met with a very amiable Indian family, among whom was a widow, and a pretty youth about ten years of age. The woman mourned for her huſband according to the cuſtom of the country, with tears of blood. The mother and ſon were ſitting upon mats, the reſt of the family of both ſexes, about ſeventeen in number, ſat round them. This family ſeemed the moſt intelligent of any Indians we had hitherto converſed with, which made us regret our late

late acquaintance with them; for had we fallen into their company before, we ſhould probably have gained more information from them in one day, than we had been able to acquire during our whole ſtay upon the coaſt.

Monday the 6th, the Endeavour ſailed out of the bay, which, from the ſavage cuſtom of eating human fleſh, we called Cannibal Bay. We bent our courſe to an opening in the eaſt; and when in the mouth of the ſtreight, were becalmed in latitude 410 ſouth, and 184 deg. 45 min. weſt longitude. The land about this ſound, which we ſaw at the diſtance of 20 leagues, conſiſts entirely of high hills and deep vallies, well ſtored with excellent timber fit for all purpoſes. The number of inhabitants are about 400. They are poor, and their canoes without ornaments. On our arrival, they were much pleaſed with our paper; but when they knew it would be ſpoiled by the wet, they would not have it.

On the 17th, we weighed anchor, and a freſh breeze with a tide of ebb, hurried us through the ſtreight with great ſwiftneſs. In paſſing it, we thought it ſafeſt to keep to the north-eaſt ſhore, for on this ſide we ſaw nothing to fear. In the afternoon, three canoes came off, having ſeveral Indians on board. Theſe made a good appearance, and there was no difficulty in perſuading them to come on board, when a mutual exchange of preſents took place. One old man was tataowed in a remarkable manner; he had likewiſe a red ſtreak acroſs his noſe, and his head and beard were very white. His garment was made of flax. Teeth and green ſtones decorated his ears, and we concluded from his deportment, that he was a perſon of diſtinguiſhed rank, and theſe people withdrew highly ſatisfied with the preſents that they had received.

On the 9th of April, we diſcovered an iſland called Eahienomauwee. About ſixty Indians, in double canoes, came within a ſtone's throw of the ſhip on the 14th. As they ſurveyed her with ſurprize,

Tupia endeavoured to perſuade them to come nearer, but this they could not be prevailed on to do. On this account, the iſland was denominated the iſland of Looker's-on.

On the 4th of March, ſeveral whales and ſeals were ſeen; and on the 9th, we ſaw a ledge of rocks, and ſoon after another ledge at three leagues diſtance from the ſhore, which we paſſed in the night to the northward, and at day-break obſerved the others under our bows, which was a fortunate eſcape; and in conſideration of their having been ſo nearly caught among theſe, they were denominated the Traps.

On the 16th, we paſſed a point which conſiſted of high red cliffs, and received the name of Caſcade Point, on account of ſeveral ſmall ſtreams which fell down it. In the morning of the 18th, the vallies were obſerved covered with ſnow, as well as the mountains, which ſeemed to have fallen the night before, when we had rain at ſea. Thus we paſſed the whole north-weſt coaſt of Tovy Poenamoo, which had nothing worthy our obſervation but of naked and barren rocks covered with ſnow, ſome of which we conjectured might have remained there ſince the creation. From this uncomfortable country we determined to depart, having ſailed round the whole country by the 27th of this month. And it was now reſolved by a council of war to ſteer for the coaſt of New Holland, in the courſe of their return by the way of the Eaſt Indies.

On the 31ſt, we took our departure from an eaſtern point of land, to which we gave the name of Cape Farewel, calling the bay out of which we ſailed, Admiralty Bay. We called a bay between the iſland and Cape Farewel, Blind Bay, which was ſuppoſed to have been the ſame that was called Murderer's Bay, by Taſman, the firſt diſcoverer of New Zealand; but though he named it Staten iſland, thinking to take poſſeſſion of it, yet, being attacked by the Indians, he never went on ſhore to effect his purpoſe. This coaſt, now more accurately examined, is diſcovered to conſiſt of two iſlands.

They are ſituated between the 34th and 35th deg. of ſouth latitude, and between 181 deg. and 194 deg. weſt longitude. The northern iſland is called Eahienomauwee, and the ſouthern is named Tovy Poenamoo by the natives. The former, though mountainous in ſome places, is ſtored with wood, and in every valley there is a rivulet. The ſoil in thoſe vallies is light, but fertile and well adapted for the plentiful productions of all the fruits, plants, and corn of Europe.

Tovy Poenamoo is barren and mountainous, and appeared to be almoſt deſtitute of inhabitants.

In New Zealand is only one ſhrub or tree, which produces fruit, which is a kind of berry almoſt taſteleſs; but they have a plant which anſwers all the uſes of hemp and flax. This plant is found both in high and low grounds, in dry mould, and deep bogs; but as it grows largeſt in the latter, that ſeems to be its proper ſoil.

The natives are as large as the largeſt Europeans. Their complexion is brown, but little more ſo than that of a Spaniard. The women poſſeſs not that delicacy which diſtinguiſhes the European ladies; but their voice diſtinguiſhes them from the men.

The inhabitants of New Zealand are as modeſt and reſerved in their behaviour and converſation as the politeſt nations of Europe. The women, indeed, were not dead to the ſofteſt impreſſions; but their mode of conſent was in their idea as harmleſs as the conſent to marriage with us, and equally binding to the ſtipulated time. If any of the Engliſh addreſſed one of their women, he was informed, that the conſent of her friends muſt be obtained, which uſually followed on his making a preſent. This done, he was obliged to treat his temporary wife as delicately as we do in England.

A gentleman who ſailed in the Endeavour, having addreſſed a family of rank, received an anſwer, of which the following is an exact tranſlation: "Any of theſe young ladies will think themſelves honoured by your addreſſes, but you muſt firſt make me a preſent, and you muſt then come and ſleep with us on ſhore, for day-

light

light muſt by no means be a witneſs of what paſſes between you."

Their dreſs is formed of the leaves of the flag, ſplit into ſlips, which are interwoven and made into a kind of matting, the ends, which are ſeven or eight inches in length, hanging out on the upper ſide. One piece of this matting being tied over the ſhoulders, reaches to the knees: the other piece being wrapped round the waiſt falls almoſt to the ground. Theſe two pieces are faſtened to a ſtring, which, by means of a bodkin of bone, is paſſed through, and tacks them together. The men wear the lower garment only at particular times.

The ears of both ſexes are bored, and the holes ſtretched ſo as to admit a man's finger. The ornaments of their ears are feathers, cloth, bones, and ſometimes bits of wood: a great many of them made uſe of the nails which were given them by the Engliſh, for this purpoſe, and the women ſometimes adorned their ears with white down of the albetroſs, which they ſpread before and behind the whole in a large bunch. They likewiſe hung to their ears by ſtrings, chiſſels, bodkins, the teeth of dogs, and the teeth and nails of their deceaſed friends. The arms and ancles of the women are adorned with ſhells and bones, or any thing elſe through which they can paſs a ſtring. We ſaw one man who had the griſtle of his noſe perforated, and a feather paſſed through it, projecting over each cheek.

Theſe people ſhew leſs ingenuity in the ſtructure of their houſes, than in any thing elſe belonging to them; they are 16 to 24 feet long, 10 or 12 wide, and 6 or 8 in height. The frame is of ſlight ſticks of wood, and the walls and roof are of dry graſs pretty firmly compacted. The door is only high enough to admit a perſon crawling on hands and knees. There is a ſquare hole near the door, ſerving both for window and chimney, near which is the fire place.

The Indians uſe axes, adzes, and chiſſels, with the laſt they likewiſe bore holes. Their chiſſels are made of jaſper, or the bone of a man's arm; their axes and adzes of hard black ſtone. They uſe their ſmall jaſper

tools till they are blunted, and then throw them away, having no inſtrument to ſharpen them with.

Their tillage is excellent, owing to the neceſſity they are under of cultivating, or running the riſque of ſtarving. At Tegadoo their crops were juſt put into the ground, and the ſurface of the field was as ſmooth as a garden; the roots were ranged in regular lines, and to every root there remained a hillock. A long narrow ſtake, ſharpened to an edge at bottom, with a piece fixed acroſs a little above it, for the convenience of driving it into the ground with the foot, ſupplies both the place of plough and ſpade. The ſoil being light, their work is not very laborious, and with this inſtrument alone they will turn up ground of ſix or ſeven acres in extent.

Their warlike weapons are ſpears, darts, battle-axes, and the patoo-patoo. Whether they fight in boats or on ſhore, the battle is hand to hand, ſo that they muſt make bloody work of it. They truſt chiefly in the patoo-patoo, which is faſtened to their wriſts, by means of a ſtrong ſtrap, that it may not be wreſted out of their hands. They have a kind of a ſtaff of diſtinction, which is carried by the principal warriors. It is formed of a whale's rib, quite white, and adorned with carving, feathers, and the hair of dogs.

As to the religion of theſe people, they acknowledge one Supreme Being, and ſeveral ſubordinate deities. Their mode of worſhip we could not learn, nor was any place proper for that purpoſe ſeen. There was indeed a ſmall ſquare area, encompaſſed with ſtones, in the middle of which hung a baſket of fern roots on one of their ſpades. This they ſaid was an offering to their gods, to obtain from them a plentiful crop of proviſions. They gave the ſame account of the origin of the world, and the production of mankind, as our friends in Otaheite. Tupia, however, ſeemed to have much more deep and extenſive knowledge of theſe ſubjects than any of the people of this iſland; and when he ſometimes delivered a long diſcourſe, he was ſure of a numerous audience,

dience, who heard him with remarkable reverence and attention.

With regard to the manner of diſpoſing of their dead, we could form no certain opinion. The ſouthern diſtrict ſaid, they diſpoſed of their dead, by throwing them into the ſea. We ſaw, however, not the leaſt ſign of any grave or monument; but the body of many among the living, bore the marks of wounds, in token of grief for the loſs of their friends and relations.

Before we cloſe the account of New Zealand, we beg leave to obſerve, that hitherto our navigation has been very unfavourable to the ſuppoſition of a ſouthern continent. The navigators who have ſupported the poſitions upon which this is founded, are Taſmaṅ, Juan Fernandes, Hermite, Quiros, and Rogewin; but the track of the Endeavour has totally ſubverted all their theoretical arguments. Upon a view of the chart it will appear, that a large ſpace extends quite to the tropics, which has not been explored by us nor any other navigators; yet we believe there is no cape of any ſouthern continent, and no ſouthern continent to the northward of 40 deg. ſouth. Of what may lie farther to the ſouthward of 40 deg. we can give no opinion; yet are far from diſcouraging any future attempts after new diſcoveries: for a voyage like this may be of public utility. Should no continent be found, new iſlands within the tropics may be diſcovered. Tupia, in a rough chart of his own drawing, laid down no leſs than ſeventy-four; and he gave us an account of above one hundred and thirty, which no European veſſel has ever yet viſited.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Paſſage from New Zealand to Botany Bay, in New Holland—Various incidents related—A deſcription of the country and its inhabitants—Sails from Botany Bay to Trinity Bay—Her dangerous ſituation in her paſſage from Trinity Bay to Endeavour River.

ON the 31ſt of March, 1770, we ſailed from Cape Farewel, having fine weather, and a fair wind. This cape lies in lat. 40 deg. 33 min. S. and in 186 deg. W. longitude. We ſteered weſt with a freſh gale till the 2d of April, when, by obſervation, we found our latitude to be 40 deg. and our longitude from Cape Farewel 2 deg. 31 min. W. On the 17th, we had freſh gales, with ſqualls, and dark weather in the morning; and in the afternoon a hard gale and a great ſea, which obliged us to run under our fore-ſail and mizen all night.

On the 18th, in the morning, we were viſited by a pintado bird, an infallible ſign that land was near, which we diſcovered at ſix o'clock in the morning of the 19th, four or five leagues diſtant. To the ſouthermoſt point in ſight, we gave the name of Point Hicks. On the following day we had a diſtant view of the country, which was in general covered with wood, and interſperſed with ſeveral ſmall lawns. It appeared to be inhabited, as ſmoke was ſeen in ſeveral places. On the 22d, we were ſo near the ſhore, as to ſee ſeveral of the inhabitants on the coaſt, who were of a dark complexion, if not perfect negroes. The trees on this iſland were both tall and large, but we ſaw no place fit to give ſhelter, even for a boat.

On the 27th, we ſaw ſeveral of the inhabitants walking along the ſhore, four of them carrying a canoe on their ſhoulders, but as they did not attempt to come off to the ſhip, the captain took Meſſrs. Banks and Solander, and Tupia, in the yawl, to that part of the ſhore where they ſaw the natives, near which four canoes lay

cloſe

close in land. The Indians sat on the rocks till the yawl was a quarter of a mile from the shore, and then they ran away into the woods. The surf beating violently on the beach, prevented the boat from landing; the gentlemen were therefore obliged to make what observations they could at a distance. They saw a great number of cabbage trees on shore.

At five in the evening, they returned to the ship, and a light breeze springing up, we sailed to the northward, where we discovered several people on shore, who, on our approach, retired to an eminence, soon after which two canoes arrived on the shore, and four men, who came in them, joined the others. The pinnace having been sent a-head to sound, arrived near the spot where the Indians had stationed themselves, on which one of them hid himself among the rocks, near the landing place, and the others retreated farther up the hill. The pinnace keeping along shore, the Indians walked near in a line with her; they were armed with long pikes, and, by various signs and words, invited the boat's crew to land. The ship having come to an anchor, we observed a few huts, in which were some of the natives. We anchored opposite a village of about eight houses, and observed an old woman and three children come out of a wood; they were met by three smaller ones, all of whom, as well as the woman, were quite naked.

Having formed a design of landing, we manned the boats, and took Tupia with us, but had no sooner come near the shore, than two men advanced, as if to dispute our setting foot on land. They were each of them armed with different kinds of weapons. They called out aloud, warra warra wai! the meaning of it Tupia did not understand. The captain threw them beads, nails, and other trifles, which they took up, and seemed pleased with. He then made signals that he wanted water, and used every possible means to convince them that no injury was intended. They made signs to the boat's crew to land, on which we put the boat in, but had no sooner done so, than the two Indians came again to oppose us. A musket was fired between them,

on

on the report of which, one of them dropped a bundle of lances, which he immediately ſnatched up again in great haſte. One of them threw a ſtone at the boat, on which the captain ordered a muſket loaded with ſmall ſhot, to be fired, which wounding the eldeſt of them in the legs, he retired haſtily to one of the huts that ſtood at ſome little diſtance.

The people in the boats now landed, imagining that the wound which this man had received, would put an end to the conteſt. In this, however, we were miſtaken, for he immediately returned with a kind of ſhield, with two holes in it to ſee through. They now advanced with great intrepidity, and both diſcharged their lances, but did not wound any of us. Another muſket was fired at them, on which they threw another lance, and then took to their heels.

We now went up to the huts, in one of which we found the children, who had ſecreted themſelves behind ſome bark. We looked at them, but left them without its being known we had ſeen them, and having thrown ſeveral pieces of cloth, ribbands, beads, and other things, into the hut, we took ſeveral of their lances, and then re-embarked in the boat.

We now ſailed to the north point of the bay, and found plenty of freſh water. On taking a view of the hut where we had ſeen the children, we had the mortification to find that every Indian had fled, and that they had left all their preſents behind them. The captain now went in the pinnace to inſpect the bay, and ſaw ſeveral of the natives, who all fled as he approached them. Some of the men having been ſent to get wood and water, they no ſooner went on board to dinner, than the natives came down to the place, and examined the caſks with great attention, but did not offer to remove them. When the people were on ſhore in the afternoon, about twenty of the natives, all armed, advanced within a trifling diſtance of them, and then ſtopped, while two of their number approached ſtill nearer. Mr. Hicks, the commanding officer on ſhore, went towards them, with preſents in his hands, and endeavoured, by every

poſſible

poſſible means, to aſſure them of his friendly intentions, but to no purpoſe, for they retired before he came up to them.

On the 30th, the natives came down to the huts before it was light, and were repeatedly heard to ſhout very loud, and ſoon after day-break they were ſeen on the beach, but quickly retired about a mile, and kindled ſeveral fires in the woods. This day ſome of the ſhip's crew being employed in cutting graſs at a diſtance from the main body, while the natives purſued them, but ſtopping within fifty or ſixty yards of them, they ſhouted ſeveral times, and retreated to the woods. In the evening they behaved exactly in the ſame manner, when the captain followed them alone and unarmed, for ſome time, but they ſtill retired as he approached.

On May the 1ſt, the ſouth point of the bay was named Sutherland Point, one of the ſeamen of the name of Sutherland, having died that day, was buried on ſhore; and more preſents were left in the huts, ſuch as looking-glaſſes, combs, &c. but the former ones had not been taken away. Making an excurſion about the country, we found it agreeably variegated with wood and lawn. The country might be cultivated without cutting down one of them. The graſs grows in large tufts, almoſt cloſe to each other. In this excurſion, we met with many places where the inhabitants had ſlept without ſhelter, and one man, who ran away, the moment he beheld us. More preſents were left in their huts, and at their ſleeping places, in hopes of producing a friendly intercourſe. We ſaw the dung of an animal which feeds on graſs, and traced the foot-ſteps of another, which had claws like a dog, and was about the ſize of a wolf: alſo the track of a ſmall animal, whoſe foot was like that of a pole.

The woods abound with a vaſt variety of beautiful birds, among which were cockatoos, and parroquets, which flew in large flocks. The ſecond lieutenant, Mr. Gore, having been with a boat in order to drudge for oyſters, ſaw ſome Indians, who made ſigns for him to come on ſhore, which he declined: having finiſhed

his buſineſs, he ſent the boat away, and went by land with a midſhipman, to join the party that was getting water. In their way, they met with more than twenty of the natives, who followed them ſo cloſe as to come within a few yards of them; Mr. Gore ſtopped, and faced them, on which the Indians ſtopped alſo; and when he proceeded again, they followed him; but they did not attack him, though they had each man a lance. The Indians coming in ſight of the water caſks, ſtood at the diſtance of a quarter of a mile, while Mr. Gore and his companions reached their ſhipmates in ſafety. Three of the waterers now advanced towards the Indians, but obſerving they did not retire, they very imprudently turned about, and retreated haſtily: this apparent ſign of cowardice inſpired the ſavages, who diſcharged four of their lances at the fugitives, which flying beyond them, they eſcaped unhurt. At this inſtant the captain came up with Meſſrs. Banks and Solander, and Tupia advancing, made ſigns of friendſhip; but the natives would not ſtay their coming up to them.

On the following day, they went again on ſhore, where many plants were collected by Dr. Solander, and Mr. Banks. They ſaw ſeveral parties of the Indians, who all ran away on their approach. Tupia having learnt to ſhoot, frequently ſtaid alone to ſhoot parrots, and the Indians conſtantly fled away from him with as much precipitation as from the Engliſh. On the 3d, fourteen or fifteen Indians, in the ſame number of canoes, were engaged in ſtriking fiſh within half a mile of the watering-place.

The captain landing on ſhore, found ſeveral of the Indians walking about, who immediately retreated to their canoes, and rowed off. They went up the country, where they found the ſoil to be a black mould, which appeared to be calculated for the production of any kind of grain. They ſaw ſome of the fineſt meadows that were ever beheld, and met with a few rocky places, the ſtone of which is ſandy, and ſeemed to be admirably adapted for building. In the woods, they found a tree bearing cherries, if ſhape and colour may entitle

entitle them to that name, the juice of which was agreeably tart. They now returned to their boat, and ſeeing a fire at a diſtance, rowed towards it; but the Indians fled at their coming near them.

On the 6th of May, we ſailed from Botany Bay, and at noon were off a harbour, which was called Port Jackſon, and in the evening near a bay, to which we gave the name of Broken Bay. The next day, at noon, the northermoſt land in ſight, projecting ſo as to juſtify the calling it Cape Three Points. On the 9th, we paſſed a rocky point, which was named Point Stephens. Next day ſaw ſmoke in ſeveral places on ſhore, and in the evening diſcovered three remarkable high hills, which the captain named the Three Brothers. They lie in latitude 31 deg. 40 min. and may be ſeen 14 leagues from the ſhore.

On the 15th, in the morning, by the aſſiſtance of our glaſſes, we diſcerned about a ſcore of Indians, each loaded with a bundle, which we imagined to be palm leaves for covering their houſes. We traced them for more than an hour, during which time they took not the leaſt notice of the ſhip; at length they left the beach, and were loſt behind a hill, which they gained by a gentle aſcent. At noon, in lat. 28 deg. 37 min. 30 ſec. ſouth, and in 206 deg. 30 min. weſt longitude, the captain diſcovered a high point of land, and named it Cape Byron.

On the 18th, in the morning, we deſcried a point ſo unequal, that it looked like two ſmall iſlands under the land, and was therefore called Double Iſland Point. At noon, by help of glaſſes, diſcovered ſome ſands, which lay in patches of ſeveral acres. We obſerved they were moveable, and that they had not been long in their preſent ſituation; for we ſaw trees half buried, and the tops of others ſtill green. At this time two beautiful water-ſnakes ſwam by the ſhip, in every reſpect reſembling land-ſnakes, except that their tails were flat and broad, probably to ſerve them inſtead of fins in ſwimming.

On the 22d, at ſix in the morning, by help of our glaſſes, when a-breaſt of the ſouth point of a large bay, in which the captain intended to anchor, we diſcovered that the land was covered with palm-nut trees, none of which we had ſeen ſince we quitted the iſlands within the tropic. On the 23d, early in the morning, Captain Cook, attended by ſeveral gentlemen, and Tupia, went on ſhore to examine the country. The wind blew ſo freſh, and we found it ſo cold, that being at ſome diſtance from the ſhore, we took with us our cloaks. We landed a little within the point of a bay, which led into a large lagoon, by the ſides of which grows the true mangrove, ſuch as is found in the Weſt Indies, as it does alſo on ſome bogs, and ſwamps of ſalt water, which we diſcovered.

On the 24th, we made ſail out of the bay, and on the day following were a-breaſt of a point, which being immediately under the tropic, the captain named Cape Capricorn; on the weſt ſide, we ſaw an amazing number of large birds, reſembling the pelican, ſome of which were near five feet high. We anchored in twelve fathom water, having the main land and barren iſlands all round us.

On the 29th, we ſtood between the range of almoſt barren iſlands and the main land, which appeared mountainous. We had here very ſhallow water, and anchored in ſixteen feet, which was not more than the ſhip drew. Mr. Banks tried to fiſh from the cabin windows, but the water was too ſhallow. The ground indeed was covered with crabs, which greedily ſeized the bait, and held it till they were above water. Theſe crabs were of two kinds, one of a very fine blue, with a white belly, and the other marked with blue on the joints, and three brown ſpots on the back.

On June the 1ſt, we got under ſail, and our lat. by obſervation was 21 deg. 29 min. ſouth. We had quite opened the weſtern inlet, which we have diſtinguiſhed by the name of Bread Sound. At eight in the evening we anchored in eleven fathom, with a ſandy bottom, about two leagues from the main land.

On

On the 2d, we got under ſail, and diſcovered a point of land, which we called Cape Conway. The land about Cape Conway forms a moſt beautiful landſcape, being diverſified with hills and dales. By the help of our glaſſes, we diſcovered two men and a woman on the iſland, and a canoe, with an outrigger like thoſe of Otaheite.

On the 8th, we ſtood away for the northermoſt point in ſight, to which we gave the name of Point Hillock. At ſix in the evening we were a-breaſt of a point of land, which we named Cape Sandwich. We now ranged northward along the ſhore, towards a cluſter of iſlands, on one of which was 40 or 50 men, women, and children, ſtanding together, all ſtark naked, and looking at the ſhip with a curioſity never obſerved among theſe people before. At noon, our lat. by obſervation, was 17 deg. 59 min. and we were a-breaſt of the north point of Rockingham Bay. This boundary of the bay is formed by an iſland of conſiderable height, which we diſtinguiſhed by the name of Dunk Iſle.

Sunday the 10th, was remarkable for the dangerous ſituation of the Endeavour. As no accident remarkably unfortunate had befallen us, during a navigation of more than 1300 miles, upon a coaſt every where abounding with the moſt dangerous rocks and ſhoals, no name of diſtreſs had hitherto been given to any cape or point of land which we had ſeen. But we now gave the name of Cape Tribulation, to a point we had juſt ſeen fartheſt to the northward, becauſe here we became acquainted with misfortune. The cape lies in latitude 16 deg. 6 min. S. and 214 deg. 31 min. W. longitude.

At ſix in the evening we ſhortened ſail, and hauled off cloſe upon a wind, to avoid the danger of ſome rocks which were ſeen a-head, and to obſerve whether there were any iſlands in the offing, as we were near the lat. of thoſe iſlands ſaid to have been diſcovered by Quiros. We had got into 21 fathom water, when ſuddenly we fell into 12, 10, and 8 fathom, in a few minutes. Every man was inſtantly ordered to his ſtation, and were upon the point of anchoring, when on a ſudden,

we

we had again deep water, ſo that we thought all danger at an end, concluding that we had ſailed over the tail of ſome ſhoals. We had 21 fathoms and upwards before ten o'clock, and this depth continuing ſome time, the gentlemen, who had hitherto been upon duty, retired to reſt; but in leſs than an hour, the water ſhallowed at once from 20 to 17 fathoms, and before ſoundings could be taken, the ſhip ſtruck upon a rock, and remained immovable. Every one was inſtantly on deck, with countenances fully expreſſive of the horrors of our ſituation. Knowing we were not near the ſhore, concluded that we were upon a rock of coral, the points of which are ſharp, and the ſurface ſo rough, as to grind away whatever it rubbed againſt, even with the gentleſt motion. All the ſails being immediately taken in, and our boats hoiſted out, we found that the ſhip had been lifted over the ledge of a rock, and lay in a hollow within it. Finding the water was deepeſt a-ſtern, we carried out the anchor from the ſtarboard quarter, and applied our whole force to the capſtan, in hopes to get the veſſel off, but in vain. She beat ſo violently againſt the rock, that the crew could ſcarcely ſtand on their legs. Our beſt chance of eſcaping ſeemed now to be by lightening her; but having ſtruck at high water, we ſhould have been in our preſent ſituation after the veſſel ſhould draw as much leſs water as the water had ſunk; our anxiety abated a little, on finding that the ſhip ſettled on the rocks as the tide ebbed, and we flattered ourſelves, that if the ſhip ſhould keep together till the next tide, we might have ſome chance of floating her. We therefore inſtantly ſtarted the water in the hold, and pumped it up. The decayed ſtores, oil-jars, caſks, ballaſt, ſix guns, and other things, were thrown overboard, in order to get at the heavier articles; and in this buſineſs we were employed till day-break, during which time not an oath was ſworn, ſo much were the minds of the ſailors impreſſed with a ſenſe of their danger.

On the 11th, at day-light, we ſaw land at eight leagues diſtance, but not a ſingle iſland between us and the main, on which part of the crew might have been landed,

landed, while the boat went on ſhore with the reſt; ſo that the deſtruction of the greater part of us would have been inevitable had the ſhip gone to pieces. As we expected high water about eleven o'clock, every thing was prepared to make another effort to free the ſhip, but the tide fell ſo much ſhort of that in the night, that ſhe did not float by 18 inches, though we had thrown overboard 50 tons weight: we therefore renewed our toil, and threw overboard every thing that could poſſibly be ſpared; as the tide fell, the water poured in ſo rapidly, that we could ſcarce keep her free by the conſtant working of two pumps. Our only hope depended on the mid-night tide, and preparations were accordingly made for another effort to get the ſhip off. The tide began to riſe at five o'clock, when the leak likewiſe increaſed to ſuch a degree, that two pumps more were manned, but only one of them would work; three, therefore, kept going till nine o'clock, at which time the ſhip righted; but ſo much water had been admitted by the leak, that we expected ſhe would ſink as ſoon as the water ſhould bear her off the rock. Our ſituation was deplorable beyond deſcription, almoſt all hope being at an end. We knew that when the fatal moment ſhould arrive, all authority would be at an end. The boats were incapable of conveying all on ſhore, and dreaded a conteſt for the preference as more ſhocking than the ſhipwreck itſelf: yet it was conſidered, that thoſe who might be left on board, would eventually meet with a wilder fate than thoſe who, by gaining the ſhore, would have no chance but to linger out the remains of life among the rudeſt ſavages in the univerſe, and in a country where fire-arms would barely enable them to ſupport themſelves in a moſt wretched ſituation.

At ten minutes after ten the ſhip floated, and was heaved into deep water, when we were happy to find that ſhe did not admit more water than ſhe had done before: yet, as the leak had for a conſiderable time gained on the pumps, there was now three feet nine inches water in the hold. By this time, the men were ſo worn by fatigue of mind and body, that none of them could

could pump above five or ſix minutes at a time, and then threw themſelves, quite ſpent, on the deck, amidſt a ſtream of water which came from the pumps. Between the inſide lining of the ſhip's bottom, and the outſide planking, there is a ſpace of about 17 inches. The man who had hitherto taken the depth of water at the well, had taken it no farther than the cieling, but being now relieved by another perſon, who took the depth of the outſide plank, it appeared by this miſtake, that the leak had ſuddenly gained upon the pumps, the whole difference between the two planks. This circumſtance deprived us of all hopes, and ſcarce any one thought it worth while to labour: but the miſtake was ſoon diſcovered; and the joy ariſing from ſuch unexpected good news, inſpired the men with ſo much vigour, that before eight in the morning, they had pumped out conſiderably more water than they had ſhipped. We now talked of nothing but getting the ſhip into ſome harbour, and ſet heartily to work to get in the anchors; one of which, and the cable of another, we loſt; but theſe were now conſidered as trifles. Having a good breeze from ſea, we got under ſail at eleven o'clock, and ſteered for land. As we could not diſcover the exact ſituation of the leak, we had no proſpect of ſtopping it within ſide of the veſſel; but on the 12th, the following expedient, which one of the midſhipmen had formerly ſeen tried with ſucceſs, was adopted. We took an old ſtudding ſail, and having mixed a large quantity of oakum and wool, chopped ſmall, it was ſtitched down in handfuls on the ſail, as lightly as poſſible, the dung of ſheep, and other filth being ſpread over it. Thus prepared, the ſail was hauled under the ſhip, by ropes, which kept it extended till it came under the leak, when the ſuction carried in the oakum and wool from the ſurface of the ſail. This experiment ſucceeded ſo well, that inſtead of three pumps, the water was eaſily kept under with one.

We had hitherto no farther view than to run the ſhip into ſome harbour, and build a veſſel from her materials, in which we might reach the Eaſt Indies; but

we

we now began to think of finding a proper place to repair her damage, and then purſued her voyage on its original plan. At ſix in the evening, we anchored ſeven leagues from the ſhore, and found that the ſhip made 15 inches water an hour during the night; but as the pumps could clear this quantity, we were not uneaſy. In the morning we paſſed two iſlands, and called them Hope Iſlands, becauſe the reaching of them had been the object of our wiſhes. In the afternoon, the maſter was ſent out in a boat, to ſound and ſearch for a harbour where the ſhip might be repaired, and we anchored at ſun-ſet, in four fathoms water, three miles from the ſhore. One of the mates being ſent out in the pinnace, returned at nine o'clock, reporting, that he had found ſuch a harbour as was wanted, at the diſtance of two leagues.

On the 13th, at ſix o'clock, we ſailed, having previouſly ſent the boat a-head to point out the ſhoals that we ſaw in our way. We ſoon anchored about a mile from the ſhore, when the captain went out, and found the channel very narrow, but the harbour better adapted to our preſent purpoſe, than any place we had ſeen in the courſe of the voyage. As it blew very freſh this day, we could not venture to run into the harbour, but remained at anchor the two ſucceeding days, in the courſe of which we obſerved four Indians on the hills, who ſtopped and made three fires.

Our men, by this time, began to be afflicted with the ſcurvy; and our Indian friend Tupia, was ſo ill with it, that he had livid ſpots on both legs. The wind continued freſh till the 17th, and then we reſolved to puſh in for the harbour, and twice ran the ſhip aground; the ſecond time ſhe ſtuck faſt, on which we took down the booms, fore-yard, and fore-top maſts, and made a raft on the ſide of the ſhip; and as the tide happened to be riſing, ſhe floated at one o'clock. We ſoon got her into the harbour, where ſhe was moored along the ſide of a beach, and the anchors, cables, &c. immediately taken out of her.

CHAP. IX.

The ſhip refitted—Tranſactions during that time—The country and its inhabitants deſcribed—The range from Endeavour River to the extremity of the country—The Endeavour departs from South Wales—That country and people deſcribed.

ON the 18th, in the morning, we erected a tent for the ſick, who were brought on ſhore as ſoon as it was ready for their reception. We likewiſe built a ſtage from the ſhip to the ſhore, and ſet up a tent to hold the proviſions and ſtores that were landed the ſame day. The boat was now diſpatched in ſearch of fiſh for the refreſhment of the ſick, but ſhe returned without getting any; but Tupia employed himſelf in angling, and lived entirely upon what he caught, and recovered his health very faſt.

On the 19th, the ſmith's forge was ſet up, and the armourer prepared the neceſſary iron-work for the repair of the veſſel. The officers' ſtores, ballaſt, water, &c. were likewiſe ordered out, in order to lighten the ſhip. On the 20th, as we were removing the coals, the water ruſhed in, near the foremaſt, about three feet from the keel; ſo that it was reſolved to clear the hold entirely; which being done on the 22d, we warped the ſhip higher up the harbour, to a ſtation more proper for laying her aſhore, in order to ſtop the leak.

Early in the morning, the tide having left her, we proceeded to examine the leak, when it appeared that the rocks had cut through four planks into the timbers, and that three other planks were damaged. In theſe breaches not a ſplinter was to be ſeen, the whole being ſmooth as if cut away by an inſtrument: but it was the will of an Omnipotent Being, that the veſſel ſhould be preſerved by a very ſingular circumſtance: for though one of the holes was large enough to have ſunk her, even with eight pumps conſtantly

at

at work, yet this inlet to our deſtruction was partly ſtopped up, by a fragment of the rock being left ſticking therein. We likewiſe found ſome pieces of oakum, wood, &c. had got between the timbers, and ſtopped thoſe parts of the leak that the ſtone had left open. Excluſive of the leak, great damage was done to various parts of the ſhip's bottom. While the ſmiths were employed in making nails and bolts, the carpenters began to work on the veſſel; and ſome of the people were ſent on the other ſide of the river to ſhoot birds for the ſick. They found a ſtream of freſh water, and ſeveral of the inhabitants of the iſland.

On the 24th, Mr. Gore and a party of men that ſet out with him, procured a bunch or two of wild plantains, and a few palm cabbages, for the refreſhment of the ſick: the repairs of the ſhip on the ſtarboard ſide having been finiſhed the preceding day, the carpenters now began to work under her larboard bow; and being examined abaft, it appeared ſhe had received very little injury in that quarter. On the 26th, the carpenter was engaged in caulking the ſhip, and the men in other neceſſary buſineſs; and on the 27th, the armourer continued to work at the forge, and the carpenter on the ſhip, while the captain made ſeveral hauls with the large net, and caught ſuch a quantity, that two pounds and a half were diſtributed to each man; and plenty of greens had been gathered, which, when boiled with peas, made an excellent meſs.

On the 1ſt of July, all the crew had permiſſion to go on ſhore, except one from each meſs. Some of our people who went up the country, gave an account of their having ſeen ſeveral animals, and a fire about a mile up the river. On the 3d, the maſter, who had been ſent in the pinnace, returned, and reported, that he had found a paſſage out at ſea, between ſhoals which conſiſted of coral rocks, many whereof were dry at low water. He

He found cockels ſo large, that one of them was more than ſufficient for two men; likewiſe plenty of other ſhell-fiſh, of which he brought a ſupply to the ſhip, in his return to which he had landed in a bay where ſome Indians were at ſupper; but they inſtantly retired, leaving ſome eggs by a fire for dreſſing them. This day we made another attempt to float the ſhip, and happily ſucceeded at high water; when we found that by the poſition ſhe had lain in, one of her planks was ſprung, ſo that it was again neceſſary to lay her aſhore. An alligator ſwam by her ſeveral times at high water.

Wedneſday the 4th, was employed in trimming her upon an even keel, warping her over, and laying her down on a ſand-bank, on the ſouth ſide of the river; and on the next ſhe was again floated, and moored off the beach, in order to receive the ſtores on board. This day, the 6th, Mr. Banks ſailed up the river, to make an excurſion up the country, and returned on the 8th. Having followed the courſe of the river, they found it at length contracted into a narrow channel, bounded by ſteep banks, adorned with trees of a moſt beautiful appearance, among which was the bark tree. The land was low, and covered with graſs, and ſeemed capable of being cultivated to great perfection.

Going in purſuit of game, we ſaw four animals, two of which were chaſed by Mr. Banks's greyhound, but they greatly outſtripped him in ſpeed, by leaping over the long thick graſs, which incommoded the dog in running. It was obſerved of the animals that they bounded forward on two legs, inſtead of running on four. Having returned to the boat, they proceeded up the river, till it contracted to a brook of freſh water, but in which the tide roſe conſiderably. Having ſtopped to paſs the night, we ſaw at ſome diſtance a ſmoke, on which three of us approached it, but the Indians were gone. The tide favouring us in the morning, we loſt no time in getting back to the ſhip.

The

The next day, the ſecond lieutenant came on ſhore, and ſoon after ſaw four Indians, in a ſmall canoe. The captain now determined to take notice of theſe people, as the moſt likely way to be noticed by them. This project anſwered; two of them came within muſket ſhot of the veſſel, where they converſed very loud; in return, the people on board ſhouted, and made ſigns of invitation. The Indians gradually approached, with their lances held up; not in a menacing manner, but as if they meant to intimate that they were capable of defending themſelves. They came almoſt along ſide, when the captain threw them cloth, nails, paper, &c. which did not ſeem to attract their notice; at length, one of the ſailors threw a ſmall fiſh, which ſo pleaſed them, that they hinted their deſigns of bringing their companions, and immediately rowed for ſhore. In the interim, Tupia and ſome of the crew landed on the oppoſite ſhore.

The four Indians now came quite along ſide the ſhip, and having received farther preſents, landed where Tupia and the ſailors had gone. They had each two lances, and a ſtick with which they threw them. Advancing towards the Engliſh, Tupia perſuaded them to lay down their arms, and ſit by him, which they readily did. Others of the crew now going on ſhore, the Indians ſeemed jealous, leſt they ſhould get between them and their arms; but care was taken to convince them that no ſuch thing was intended, and more trifles were preſented to them. The crew ſtaid with them till dinner time, and then made ſigns of invitation for them to go to the ſhip and eat; but this they declined, and retired in their canoe.

Theſe men were of the common ſtature, with very ſmall limbs: their complexion was of a deep chocolate, their hair black, either lank or curled, but not of the woolly kind; the breaſts and upper lip of one of them were painted with ſtreaks of white, which he called carbanda, and ſome of their bodies painted red.

red. Their teeth were white and even, their eyes bright, and their features rather pleaſing; their voices muſical, and they repeated ſeveral Engliſh words with great readineſs.

The next morning, the viſit of three of theſe Indians was renewed, and they brought with them a fourth, whom they called Yaparico, who appeared to be a perſon of ſome conſequence. The bone of a bird, about ſix inches long, was thruſt through his noſe. Theſe people being all naked, the captain gave one of them an old ſhirt, which he bound round his head like a turban. They brought a fiſh to the ſhip, which was ſuppoſed to be in payment for that given them the day before: after ſtaying ſome time with apparent ſatisfaction, they ſuddenly leaped into their canoe, and rowed off, from a jealouſy of ſome of the gentlemen, who were examining it.

On the 12th, three Indians viſited Tupia's tent, and after remaining ſome time, went for two others, whom they introduced by name. Some fiſh was offered them, but they ſeemed not much to regard it; after eating a little, they gave the reſt to Mr. Banks's dog. On the 14th, Mr. Gore ſhot one of the animals above-mentioned. It chanced to be a young one, weighing more than 38 pounds, but when they are full grown, they are as large as a ſheep. The ſkin of this beaſt, which is called Kangaroo, is covered with ſhort fur, and is of a dark mouſe-colour; the head and ears are ſomewhat like thoſe of a hare; this animal was dreſſed for dinner, and proved to be fine eating. The ſhip's crew fed on turtle almoſt every day, finer than thoſe eaten in England, owing to their being killed before their natural fat was waſted, and their juices changed.

On the 17th, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went with the captain into the woods, and ſaw four Indians in a canoe, who went on ſhore, and walked up without ſign of fear. They accepted ſome beads, and departed, intimating that they did not chuſe to be followed. The natives being now become fami-

liar

liar with the ſhip's crew, one of them was deſired to throw his lance, which he did, with ſuch dexterity and force, that though it was not above four feet from the ground at the higheſt, it penetrated deeply into a tree at the diſtance of fifty yards. The natives now came on board the ſhip, and were well pleaſed with their entertainment.

On the 19th, we ſaw ſeveral of the women, who, as well as the men, were quite naked. We were this day viſited by ten Indians, who ſeemed reſolved to have one of the turtles that was on board, which they repeatedly made ſigns for, and being as repeatedly refuſed, they expreſſed the utmoſt rage and reſentment: one of them in particular, having received a denial from Mr. Banks, he ſtamped, and puſhed him away in a moſt violent manner. At length they laid hands on two of the turtles, and drew them to the ſide of the ſhip where the canoe lay, but the ſailors took them away. They made ſeveral ſimilar attempts, but being equally unſucceſsful, they leaped ſuddenly into their canoe, and rowed off. At this inſtant, the captain, with Mr. Banks, and five of the ſeamen, went on ſhore, where many of the crew were employed. One of the Indians ſnatched a firebrand from under a pitch kettle, and running to the windward of what effects were left on ſhore, ſet fire to the graſs, which burned rapidly, ſcorched a pig to death, burned part of the ſmith's forge, and would have deſtroyed a tent of Mr. Banks's, but ſome people came from the ſhip juſt time enough to get it out of the way of the flames. In the mean while, the Indians went to a place where the fiſhing nets lay, and a quantity of linen was laid out to dry, and there again ſet fire to the graſs, in ſpite of all perſuaſion, and even of threats. A muſket loaded with ſmall ſhot, was fired, and one of them being wounded, they ran away, and this ſecond fire was extinguiſhed: but the other burned far into the woods.

The Indians ſtill continuing in ſight, a muſket was fired with ball, the report only of which ſent them out

out of ſight; but their voices being heard in the woods, the captain with a few people went to meet them. Both parties ſtopped when in ſight of each other; at which time an old Indian advanced, and ſpoke aloud to his companions, who placed their lances againſt a tree, and came forward in a friendly manner. When they came up to us, we returned the darts we had taken, and perceived with great ſatisfaction, that this rendered the reconciliation complete. Having received from us ſome trinkets, they walked amicably towards the coaſt, intimating by ſigns, that they would not fire the graſs again.

On the 20th, our ſhip being ready for ſea, the maſter was ſent in ſearch of a paſſage to the northward, but could not find any; while the captain ſounded and buoyed the bar. This day we ſaw not any Indians; but the hills, for many miles, were on fire, which at night made an appearance truly ſublime.

On the 24th, one of the ſailors, who with others had been ſent to gather kale, having ſtrayed from the reſt, fell in with four Indians at dinner. He was at firſt much alarmed, but had prudence enough to conceal his apprehenſions; and ſitting down by them, gave them his knife, which having examined, they returned. He would have left them, but they ſeemed diſpoſed to detain him, till, by feeling his hands and face, they were convinced he was made of fleſh and blood like themſelves. They treated him with great civility, and having kept him about half an hour, they made ſigns that he might depart. When he left them, not taking the direct road to the ſhip, they came from the fire, and ſhewed him the neareſt way; from whence we concluded, that they knew from whence he came.

Mr. Banks having gone on ſhore in ſearch of plants, found the cloth that had been diſtributed among the natives, lying in a heap, as uſeleſs lumber. Indeed, they ſeemed to ſet very little value upon any thing

we had, except our turtle, a commodity we were leaſt inclined and able to ſpare.

On the 29th, we got the anchor up, and made all ready to put to ſea. A boat was ſent out to aſcertain what water was upon the bar; when returned, the officer reported, that there was only 13 feet, which was ſix inches leſs than the ſhip drew. We therefore this day gave up all hopes of ſailing. On the 30th, we had freſh gales and hazy weather, till Tueſday the 31ſt, at three in the morning, when the weather became more moderate. During all the time, the pinnace and yawl continued to ply the net and hook with tolerable good ſucceſs, bringing in at different times a turtle, and from 2 to 300 weight of fiſh.

On the 4th of Auguſt, we once more got under ſail, and put to ſea. We ſtood off E. by N. with the pinnace a-head to keep ſounding. About noon we came to an anchor, when the harbour from whence we had ſailed bore S. 70 W. diſtant about five leagues. The captain here named the northermoſt point of land in ſight Cape Bedford, and the harbour we had quitted, Endeavour River. Our lat. by obſervation, was 15 deg. 32 min. S.

Endeavour River is only a ſmall bar harbour, which runs in a winding channel, three or four leagues in land. The depth of water for ſhipping, is not more than a mile within the bar, and only on the north ſide. The proviſions we procured in this harbour conſiſted of turtle, oyſters of different ſorts, cavalhe, flat fiſh, ſkate, or ray fiſh, purſlain, wild beans, and cabbage palms. The ſoil of the hills, though ſtony, produces coarſe graſs, beſides wood; that of the vallies is in general well cloathed, and has the appearance of fertility. The trees are of various ſorts, of which the gum trees are the moſt common. On each ſide of the river are mangroves, which in ſome parts extend a mile within the coaſt.

On the 4th, Captain Cook went up to the maſt-head to look at ſome dangerous ſhoals, ſeveral of which we ſaw above water. This day, ſuch a quan-

tity of fiſh was caught, as allowed a dividend of two pounds to each man. During the ſix following days, we attempted to ſail between the ſhoals and breakers, by which we were every way ſurrounded. On the 10th, we were between a head land and three iſlands, which had been diſcovered the preceding day.

On the 11th, early in the morning, Mr. Banks and Captain Cook went to viſit the largeſt of the three iſlands, and having gained the ſummit of the largeſt hill, they beheld a reef of rocks, whereon the ſea broke in a frightful manner; but the hazy weather preventing a perfect view, they lodged under a buſh during the night, and next day ſeeing what had the appearance of a channel between the reefs, one of the mates was ſent out in the pinnace to examine it; and at noon returned, having found 15 and 28 fathom of water. While buſy in this ſurvey, Mr. Banks was attentive to his favourite purſuit, and collected many plants he had not ſeen before. This iſland, viſible at twelve leagues diſtance, and in general barren, we found to be about eight leagues in circumference. There are ſome ſandy bays and low land on the N. W. ſide, which is covered with long graſs, and trees of the ſame kind with thoſe on the main; lizards of a very large ſize alſo abounded, ſome of which we took. We found alſo freſh water in two places; one running ſtream, cloſe to the ſea, was a little brackiſh; the other was a ſtanding pool perfectly ſweet.

On our return to the ſhip, the captain named this place the Lizard Iſlands, on account of our having ſeen no other animals but lizards. When returning, we landed on a low ſandy iſland, upon which were birds of various kinds. We took a neſt of young eagles, and therefore called the place Eagle Iſland.

On the 12th, the officers held a conſultation, and we were unanimous in opinion, that it would be beſt to quit the coaſt altogether, till we could approach it with leſs danger; in conſequence of which concurrent

rent opinion, we ſailed on the 13th, and got through one of the channels in the reef, happy at finding ourſelves once more in the open ſea, after having been ſurrounded by dreadful ſhoals and rocks for near three months. We have now ſailed above 1000 miles, during which run we had been obliged to keep ſounding, without the intermiſſion of a ſingle minute; a circumſtance which, it is ſuppoſed, never happened to any one ſhip but the Endeavour.

On the 4th we anchored, and by obſervation, our lat. was 13 deg. 46 min. S. and at this time we had no land in ſight. On the 15th, we ſteered a weſterly courſe, in order to get ſight of land, that we might not overſhoot the paſſage, if a paſſage there was between this land and New Guiney. Early in the afternoon, we had ſight of land, which had the appearance of hilly iſlands, but it was judged to be part of the main, and we ſaw breakers between the veſſel and the land, in which there was an opening; to get clear, we ſet all our ſails, and ſtood to the northward till midnight, and then went on a ſouthward tack for about three miles, when the breeze died away to a dead calm. When day-light came on, we ſaw a dreadful ſurf break at a vaſt height, within a mile of the ſhip, towards which the rolling waves carried her with great rapidity. Thus diſtreſſed, the boats were ſent a-head to tow, and the head of the veſſel was brought about, but not till ſhe was within 100 yards of the rock, between which and her nothing was left but the chaſm, and which had riſen and broke to a wonderful height on the rock; but in the moment we expected inſtant deſtruction, a breeze, hardly diſcernable, aided the boats in getting the veſſel in an oblique direction from the rock. The hopes, however, afforded by this providential circumſtance, were deſtroyed by a perfect calm, which ſucceeded in a few minutes; yet the breeze once more returned; before we had loſt the little ground which had been gained. At this time a ſmall opening was ſeen in the reef, and a young officer being

ſent to examine it, found that its breadth did not much exceed the length of the ſhip, but that there was ſmooth water on the other ſide of the rocks. Animated by the deſire of preſerving life, we now attempted to paſs the opening; but this was impoſſible, for it having become high water in the interim, the ebb-tide ruſhed through it with amazing impetuoſity, carrying the ſhip about a mile from the reef, and ſhe ſoon reached the diſtance of near two miles by the help of the boats.

When the ebb-tide was ſpent, the tide of flood again drove the veſſel very near the rocks, ſo that our proſpect of deſtruction was renewed, when we diſcovered another opening, and a light breeze ſpringing up, we entered it, and were driven through it with a rapidity that prevented the ſhip from ſtriking againſt either ſide of the channel. The ſhip now came to an anchor, and our men were grateful for having regained a ſtation, which they had been very lately moſt anxious to quit. The name of Providence Channel, was given to the opening through which the ſhip had thus eſcaped the moſt imminent dangers.

On the 17th, the boats went out to fiſh, and met with great ſucceſs, particularly in catching cockles, ſome of which were of ſuch an amazing ſize, as to require the ſtrength of two men to remove them. Mr. Banks likewiſe ſucceeded in his ſearch for rare ſhells, and different kinds of coral.

On the 21ſt, we ſailed through a channel, in which was a number of ſhoals; and gave the name of York Cape to a point of the main land which forms the ſide of the channel. In the afternoon, we anchored between ſome iſlands, and obſerved, that the channel now began to grow wider; we perceived two diſtant points, between which no land could be ſeen, ſo that the hope of having at length explored a paſſage into the Indian ſea, began to animate every breaſt; but, to bring the matter to a certainty, the captain took a party, and accompanied by the gentlemen,

tlemen, they landed on an iſland, on which they had ſeen a number of Indians, ten of whom were on a hill, one of them carrying a bow and a bundle of arrows, the reſt armed with lances. Three of theſe Indians ſtood on ſhore, as if to oppoſe the landing of the boat, but they retired before it reached the beach.

The captain and his company aſcended a hill, from whence they had a view of near 40 miles, in which ſpace there was nothing that threatened to oppoſe their paſſage, ſo that the certainty of a channel ſeemed almoſt indubitable. Previous to their leaving the iſland, Captain Cook diſplayed the Engliſh colours, and took poſſeſſion of all the country, from the 38th deg. of S. lat. to the preſent ſpot, by the name of New South Wales, for the king of Great Britain.

The next morning we ſaw three naked women collecting ſhell-fiſh on the beach; and weighing anchor, named it Cape Cornwall to the extreme point of the largeſt iſland on the north-weſt ſide of the paſſage; ſome low iſlands near the middle of the channel receiving the name of Wallis's iſle; ſoon after which the ſhip came to an anchor, and the long-boat was ſent out to ſound. Towards evening we ſailed again, and the captain landed with Mr. Banks, on a ſmall iſland, frequented by immenſe numbers of birds, the majority of which being boobies, the place received the name of Booby Iſland.

We were now advanced to the northern extremity of New Holland, and had the ſatisfaction of viewing the open ſea to the weſtward. The N. E. entrance of the paſſage is formed by the main land of New Holland, and by a number of iſlands, which took the name of the Prince of Wales's Iſland, and which Captain Cook imagines may reach to New Guiney; theſe iſlands abound with trees and graſs, and were known to be inhabited, from the ſmoke that was ſeen aſcending in many places.

New

New South Wales is a much larger country than any hitherto known, and not deemed a continent, being larger than all Europe, which is proved by the Endeavour's having coaſted more than 2000 miles, even if her tract were reduced to a ſtraight line. Northward of the lat. of 33 deg. the country is hilly, yet not mountainous; but to the S. of that lat. it is moſtly low and even ground. The hills in general are diverſified by lawns and woods, and many of the vallies abound with herbage, though, on the whole, it cannot be deemed a fertile country.

CHAP. X.

The Endeavour continues her voyage from South Wales to New Guiney—An account of incidents upon landing there—Proceeds from New Guiney to the iſland Savau—Its product and inhabitants—Run from Savau to Batavia—Tranſactions while the Endeavour was refitting at this place.

ON the 23d of Auguſt, 1770, after leaving Booby Iſland, we had light airs till five o'clock, when it fell calm, and we came to an anchor in eight fathom water, with a ſoft ſandy bottom. On the 24th, ſoon after the anchor was weighed, we got under ſail, ſteering N. W. and in a few hours one of the boats a-head made the ſignal for ſhoal-water. We inſtantly brought the ſhip to, with all her ſails ſtanding, and a ſurvey being taken of the ſea around her, it was found that ſhe had met with another narrow eſcape, as ſhe was almoſt encompaſſed with ſhoals, that ſhe muſt have ſtruck before the boat's crew had made the ſignal, if ſhe had been half the length of a cable on either ſide. In the afternoon, we made ſail with the ebb tide, and got out of danger before ſun-ſet, and brought to for that night.

On the 26th, it was the captain's intention to ſteer N. W. but having met with thoſe ſhoals, altered our courſe, and ſoon got into deep water. On the 27th,

purſued

purſued our voyage, ſhortening ſail at night, and tacking till day-break of the 28th, when we ſteered due N. in ſearch of New Guiney. At this time our lat. by obſervation, was 8 deg. 52 min. S. We here obſerved many parts of the ſea covered with a kind of ſcum, to which our ſailors gave the name of ſpawn.

Land having been this day diſcovered from the maſt-head, we ſtood off and on all night, and at day-break ſailed towards it with a briſk gale. Between ſix and ſeven in the morning we had ſight of a ſmall low iſland, at about a league from the main, in lat. 80 deg. 13 min. S. and in long. 221 deg. 25 min. W. and it had already been diſtinguiſhed by the names of Bartholomew and Whermoyſen. It appeared a very level iſland, clothed with trees. The boats were ſent out to ſound, the water being ſhallow; but as the ſhip, in ſailing two leagues, had found no increaſe in its depth, ſignals were made for the boats to return on board. We then ſtood out to ſea till midnight, tacked, and ſtood in for morning.

On the 30th, when about four leagues diſtant, we had ſight of it, and its appearance was ſtill flat and woody. We now held a northward courſe, ſcarcely within ſight of land, and as the water was juſt deep enough to navigate the veſſel, many unſucceſsful attempts were made to bring her near enough to get on ſhore: it was therefore determined to land in one of the boats, while the ſhip kept plying off and on. In conſequence of this reſolution,

On September the 3d, Captain Cook, Mr. Banks, and Dr. Solander, attended by the boat's crew, and Mr. Banks's ſervant, ſet off from the ſhip in the pinnace, being in all twelve perſons, well armed. We rowed directly to the ſhore, but when come within 200 yards of it, found the water ſo ſhallow, that we were obliged to leave the boat in care of the ſailors, and wade to land. We had no ſooner reached the ſhore, than we ſaw ſeveral prints of human feet on the ſand, below high water mark, from whence it

was

was evident, that the natives had been there. We walked by the ſide of a wood, and came to a grove of cocoa-nut trees, not far from which was a ſhed or hut, which had been covered with leaves, and near it lay a number of freſh ſhells of the fruit. Having now advanced a quarter of a mile from the boat, three Indians ruſhed out of the wood with a hideous ſhout, at about the diſtance of 100 yards, and as they ran towards us, the foremoſt threw ſomething out of his hand, which flew on one ſide of him, and burnt exactly like gun-powder, but made no report; and the others threw their lances at us. No time was to be loſt; we diſcharged our pieces loaded with ſmall ſhot only, which we imagine they did not feel; for without retreating, they caſt a third dart: we therefore loaded with ball, and fired a ſecond time. It is probable ſome of them were wounded, as they all took to their heels immediately.

We improved this interval, in which the deſtruction of the natives was no longer neceſſary to our defence, and with all expedition returned to our boat. In the way we perceived ſignals on board, that more Indians were coming down in a body; and before we got into the water, we perceived ſeveral of them coming round a point at the diſtance of about 500 yards. When they ſaw us, they halted, and ſeemed to wait till the main body ſhould join them. They continued in this ſtation, without giving us any interruption, while we entered the water, and waded towards the boat. We now took a view of them at our leiſure. They made much the ſame appearance as the New Hollanders, being nearly of the ſame ſtature, and having their hair ſhort cropped. They were alſo like them ſtark naked. During this time they were ſhouting at a diſtance, and letting off their fires, which ſeemed to be diſcharged by a ſhort piece of ſtick, probably a hollow cane; this being ſwung ſideways, produced fire and ſmoak like that occaſioned by a muſket. The crew on board the ſhip ſaw this ſtrange appearance, and thought the natives had

had fire-arms. Thoſe who went out in the boat, had rowed a-breaſt of them, fired ſome muſkets above their heads, the balls of which being heard by the natives rattling among the trees, they retired very deliberately, and our people in the boat returned to the ſhip. This place is in lat. 6 deg. 15 min. S.

September the 3d, we made ſail to the weſtward, being reſolved to ſpend no more time upon this coaſt; but before we got under ſail, ſome of the officers ſtrongly urged the captain to ſend a party of men on ſhore, to cut down the cocoa-nut trees, for the ſake of the fruit. This Captain Cook, with equal wiſdom and humanity, peremptorily refuſed, as unjuſt and cruel; ſenſible that the poor Indians, who could not brook even the landing of a ſmall party on their coaſt, would have made a vigorous effort to defend their property had it been invaded; conſequently many muſt have fallen a ſacrifice on their ſide, and perhaps ſome of our own people. "I ſhould, (ſays Captain Cook) have regretted the neceſſity of ſuch a meaſure, if I had been in want of the neceſſaries of life; and certainly it would have been highly criminal when nothing was to be obtained but two or three hundred green cocoa-nuts; which would at moſt procure us mere tranſient gratification. I might indeed have proceeded farther along the coaſt to the northward, or weſtward, in ſearch of a place where the ſhip might have lain ſo near the ſhore, as to cover the people with her guns when they landed; but this would have obviated only part of the miſchief, and though it might have ſecured us, it would probably in the very act have been fatal to the natives. Beſides, we had reaſon to think that before ſuch a place could have been found, we ſhould have been carried ſo far to the weſtward as to have been obliged to go to Batavia, which was another reaſon for making the beſt of our way to that place, eſpecially as no diſcoveries could be expected in ſeas which had already been navigated, and where every coaſt had been laid down by the Dutch geographers."

On the 8th, we paſſed two ſmall iſlands, on one of which Captain Cook would have landed, but having only ten fathom water, the ground being alſo rocky, and the wind blowing freſh, we might have endangered the ſafety of the ſhip. We now ſailed at a moderate rate till the next morning at three o'clock; after which we had no ground with 120 fathoms. Before noon we had ſight of land, which was conjectured to be either the Arrou Iſlands, or Timor Laoet. We were now in lat. 9 deg. 37 min. S. and in long. 233 deg. 54 min. W. We ſtood off and on during the night; and on the 12th, we ſaw a number of fires and ſmoke in ſeveral places, from whence it was conjectured that the place was well peopled. The land and ſea breezes being very ſlight, we continued in ſight of the iſland for two days, when it was obſerved that the hills reached in many places quite to the ſea coaſt, and where that was not the caſe, there were large and noble groves of cocoa-nut trees, which ran about a mile up the country, at which diſtance, great numbers of houſes and plantations were ſeen; the plantations were ſurrounded with fences, and extended nearly to the ſummits of the moſt lofty hills; yet, neither the natives nor cattle were ſeen on any of them, which was thought a very extraordinary circumſtance.

On the 16th, we had ſight of the little iſland called Rotte; and the ſame day ſaw the iſland Semau, at a diſtance to the ſouthward of Timor. The iſland of Rotte is chiefly covered with buſhy wood without leaves, but there are a number of fan palm trees on it, growing near the ſandy beaches; and the whole conſiſt of alternate hills and vallies. The iſland of Semau is not ſo hilly as Timor, but reſembles it greatly in other reſpects. At ten o'clock this night a dull reddiſh light was ſeen in the air, many parts of which emitted rays of a brighter colour, which ſoon vaniſhed, and were ſucceeded by others of the ſame kind. This phœnomenon, which reached about ten degrees above the horizon, bore a conſiderable reſemblance to the Aurora Borealis, only that the rays of light which it emitted had no tre-

mulous

mulous motion: it was ſurveyed for two hours, during which time its brightneſs continued undiminiſhed. As the ſhip was now clear of all the iſlands which had been laid down in ſuch maps as were on board, we made ſail during the night, and were ſurpriſed the next morning at the ſight of an iſland to the W. S. W. which we flattered ourſelves was a new diſcovery. Before noon we had ſight of houſes, groves of cocoa-nut trees, and large flocks of ſheep. This was a welcome ſight to people whoſe health was declining for want of refreſhment, and it was inſtantly reſolved to attempt the purchaſe of what we ſtood ſo much in need of. The ſecond lieutenant was immediately diſpatched in the pinnace, in ſearch of a landing-place; and he took with him ſuch things as it was thought might be acceptable to the natives.—During Mr. Gore's abſence, the people on board ſaw two men on horſeback upon the hills, who frequently ſtopped to take a view of the veſſel. The lieutenant ſoon returned with an account that he had entered a little cove, near which ſtood a few houſes; that ſeveral men advanced and invited him to land; and that they converſed together as well as they could by ſigns.

The lieutenant not being able to find any place in which the ſhip might come to anchor, he was diſpatched again with money and goods to buy ſuch neceſſaries as were immediately wanted for the ſick. Dr. Solander attended the lieutenant, and during their abſence, the ſhip ſtood off and on the ſhore. Soon after the boat had put off, two other horſemen were ſeen from the ſhip, one of whom had a laced hat on, and was dreſſed in a coat and waiſtcoat of the faſhion of Europe. Theſe men rode about on ſhore taking little notice of the boat, but regarding the ſhip with the utmoſt attention. As ſoon as the boat reached the ſhore, ſome other perſons on horſeback, and many on foot, haſtened to the ſpot, and it was obſerved that ſome cocoa-nuts were put into the boat, from whence it was concluded, that a traffic had commenced with the natives. A ſignal being made from the boat that the ſhip might anchor

in a bay at ſome diſtance, ſhe immediately bore away for it. When the lieutenant came on board, he reported, that he could not purchaſe any cocoa-nuts, as the owner of them was abſent, and that what he had brought, were given him, in return for which he had preſſed the natives with ſome linen. The method by which he learned that there was a harbour in the neighbourhood, was by the natives drawing a kind of rude map on the ſand, in which the harbour, and a town near it, was repreſented; it was likewiſe hinted to him, that fruit, fowl, hogs, and ſheep, might be there obtained in great abundance. He ſaw ſeveral of the principal inhabitants of the iſland, who had chains of gold about their necks, and wore fine linen. The word Portugueſe being frequently repeated by the Indians, it was conjectured that ſome natives of Portugal were in the iſland, and one of the boat's crew being of that kingdom, he ſpoke to the iſlanders in his own language, but ſoon found that they had only learned a few words, of which they did not know the meaning. While the natives were endeavouring to repreſent the ſituation of the town near the harbour, one of them, in order to be more particular in directions, informed the Engliſh, that they would ſee ſomething which he endeavoured to deſcribe by placing his fingers acroſs each other; and the Portugueſe ſailor took it for granted, that he could mean nothing but a croſs. When the boat's crew were on the point of returning to the ſhip, the gentleman who had been ſeen on horſeback in the dreſs of Europe, came down to the beach; but the lieutenant did not think it proper to hold a conference with him, becauſe he had left his commiſſion on board the ſhip.

When the ſhip had entered the bay, in the evening, according to the directions received, an Indian town was ſeen at a diſtance; upon which a jack was hoiſted on the fore-top-maſt head; preſently afterwards three guns were fired, and Dutch colours were hoiſted in the town; the ſhip, however, held on her way, and came to an anchor at ſeven in the evening. The colours being ſeen hoiſted on the beach the next morning, the

captain

captain concluded, that the Dutch had a ſettlement on the iſland; the therefore diſpatched the ſecond lieutenant to acquaint the governor, or other principal reſident, who they were, and that the ſhip had put in for neceſſary refreſhments. The lieutenant having landed, he was received by a kind of guard of ſomething more than twenty Indians, armed with muſkets, who, after they had taken down their colours from the beach, proceeded without the leaſt military order; and thus eſcorted him to the town, where the colours had been hoiſted the preceding evening. The lieutenant was now conducted to the Raja, or king of the iſland, to whom, by means of a Portugueſe interpreter, he made known his buſineſs. The raja ſaid, he was ready to ſupply the ſhip with the neceſſary refreſhments, but that he could not trade with any other people than the Dutch, with whom he was in alliance, without having firſt obtained their conſent; he added, however, that he would make application to the Dutch agent, who was the only white man among them. To this agent, whoſe name was Lange, and who proved to be the perſon that was ſeen from the ſhip in the European dreſs, a letter was diſpatched, and in a few hours he came to the town, behaved politely to the lieutenant, and told him he might buy what he thought proper of the inhabitants of the iſland. This offer being freely made, and readily accepted, the raja and Mr. Lange intimated their wiſhes to go on board the ſhip, and that two of the boat's crew might be left as hoſtages for their ſafe return. The lieutenant gratified them in both theſe requeſts, and took them on board juſt before dinner was ſerved. It was thought that they would have ſat down without ceremony; but now the raja intimated his doubts, whether being a black, they would permit him to ſit down with them. The politeneſs of the officers ſoon removed his ſcruples, and the greateſt good humour and feſtivity prevailed among them. As Dr. Solander and another gentleman on board, were tolerably proficients in Dutch, they acted as interpreters between Mr. Lange and the officers, while ſome of the

ſailors,

ſailors, who underſtood Portugueſe, converſed with ſuch of the raja's attendants as ſpoke that language. Our dinner conſiſted chiefly of mutton, which, when the raja had taſted, he requeſted of us an Engliſh ſheep, and the only one we had left was preſented to him. Our complaiſance in this particular, encouraged the king to aſk for an Engliſh dog, and Mr. Banks politely gave him his greyhound. A ſpying-glaſs was alſo put into his hand, Mr. Johan Chriſtopher Lange having intimated that ſuch a preſent would be very acceptable. Our viſitors now informed us, that the iſland abounded with buffaloes, ſheep, hogs, and fowls, plenty of which ſhould be driven down to the ſhore the next day. This put us all in high ſpirits, and the liquor circulated rather faſter than either the Indians or the Saxon could bear; but they had, however, the reſolution to expreſs a deſire to depart, before they were quite intoxicated. When they came upon deck, they were received in the ſame manner as when they came aboard, by the marines under arms; and the raja expreſſing a deſire to ſee them exerciſe, his curioſity was gratified. They fired three rounds. The king obſerved them with great attention, and appeared much ſurpriſed at the regularity and expedition of their manœuvres. They were diſmiſſed with many preſents, and on their departure, were ſaluted with nine guns.

Our gentlemen, on their arrival at the town, taſted their palm wine, which was the freſh juice of the trees, unfermented. It had a ſweet, but not diſagreeable taſte, and hopes were entertained that it might contribute to recover our ſick of the ſcurvy.

On the 19th, Captain Cook, attended by ſeveral gentlemen, went on ſhore to return the raja's viſit; but their principal intention was to purchaſe the cattle and fowls, which they had been aſſured the preceding day ſhou'd be driven down to the beach. We were greatly chagrined at finding no ſteps had been taken to fulfil this promiſe: however, we proceeded to the houſe of aſſembly, which, with a few other houſes, built by the Dutch Eaſt India Company, are diſtinguiſhed from the

the reſt, by having two pieces of wood, reſembling a pair of cows horns, fixed at each end of the roof; and theſe we concluded to be what the Portugueſe ſailors conſtruct into croſſes, from the Indian having croſſed his fingers when he was deſcribing the town. At the houſe of aſſembly, we ſaw Mr. Lange and the raja, whoſe name was A Madocho Lomi Djara, ſurrounded by many of the principal people; Captain Cook having informed them, that he had loaded his boat with goods, which he wiſhed to exchange for neceſſary refreſhments, permiſſion was given him to land them. We now endeavoured to make an agreement for the hogs, ſheep, and buffaloes, which were to be paid for in caſh; but this buſineſs was no ſooner hinted, than Mr. Lange took his leave, having firſt told the captain that he had received a letter from the governor of Concordia, in Timor, the contents of which ſhould be diſcloſed at his return. As the morning was now far advanced, and we had no proviſions on board, we requeſted the raja's permiſſion to buy a ſmall hog and ſome rice, and to order his people to dreſs the dinner for us. He very obligingly replied, that if we would eat victuals dreſſed by his ſubjects, which he could ſcarcely ſuppoſe, he would do himſelf the honour of entertaining us. A dinner being thus procured, the captain ſent off his boat to bring liquors from the ſhip. It was ready about five o'clock, and after we were ſeated on mats, which were ſpread on the floor, it was ſerved in ſix and thirty baſkets. We were then conducted by turns to a hole in the floor, near which ſtood a man with water in a veſſel, made of the leaves of the fan-palm, who aſſiſted us in waſhing our hands. This done, we returned to our places, and expected the king. Having waited ſome time, we enquired the reaſon of his abſence, and were informed that the perſon who gave the entertainment never partook of it with his gueſts, but that the raja was ready to come and taſte of what was provided, if we entertained a thought that the victuals were poiſoned. We declared that we did not harbour any ſuch ſuſpicion, and deſired that the cuſtom of the country might

might not be violated on our account. The pork and rice were excellent, and the broth not to be deſpiſed; but the ſpoons, made of leaves, were ſo ſmall, that few of us had patience to uſe them. We did not drink our wine at the place where we had dined; and the remains of the dinner we left to the ſeamen and ſervants.

When we thought the wine had ſo far operated as to open the heart, we took an opportunity to enquire after the buffaloes and ſheep, of which we had not in all this time heard a ſyllable, though they were to have been at the beach early in the morning. Mr. Lange, the Saxon Dutchman, now began to communicate to us the contents of the letter, which he pretended to have received from the governor of Concordia, and wherein he ſaid, inſtructions were given, that if the ſhip ſhould touch at this iſland, and be in want of proviſions, ſhe ſhould be ſupplied; but he was not to permit her to remain longer than was neceſſary; nor were any large preſents to be made to the natives of low rank. It is probable that the whole of this ſtory was a fiction; and that by precluding our liberality to the natives, the Saxon Dutchman hoped more eaſily to draw all the preſents of any value into his own pocket. In the evening we were informed, that only a few ſheep had been brought to the beach, which had been driven away before our people could procure money from the ſhip to pay for them.

Vexed at being thus diſappointed in purchaſing the chief articles moſt wanted, we remonſtrated with Mr. Lange, who now found another ſubterfuge. He ſaid, had we gone down to the beach, we might have bought what we pleaſed; but the natives were afraid of being impoſed on by our ſeamen with counterfeit money. We could not but feel ſome indignation againſt a man who had concealed this, being true; or alledged it, being falſe. Captain Cook repaired immediately to the beach, but no cattle were to be ſeen, nor any near at hand to be bought. The raja, indeed, had given a more plauſible reaſon for our diſappointment: he ſaid, the

the buffaloes being far up in the country, there had not been time to bring them down to the beach.

On the 20th, Dr. Solander went aſhore with Captain Cook, and while the former went up to the town to ſpeak to Lange, the captain remained on the beach with a view of purchaſing proviſions. Here he met with an old Indian, who, as he appeared to have ſome authority, we called him the Prime Miniſter. The captain preſented him with a ſpying-glaſs; but only a ſmall buffalo was offered to be ſold. The price was five guineas, nearly twice its real value. Three, however, were offered, which the dealer thought a good price; but ſaid, he muſt acquaint the king with what had been bid before he could ſtrike the bargain. A meſſenger was immediately diſpatched to the raja, and on his return, brought word, that not leſs than five guineas would be taken for the buffalo. The captain abſolutely refuſed to give the ſum demanded, which occaſioned the ſending away a ſecond meſſenger; and during his abſence, Dr. Solander was ſeen coming from the town, followed by above a hundred men, ſome of whom were armed with muſkets, and others with lances. Upon enquiring into the meaning of this hoſtile appearance, the doctor informed us, that the people would not trade with us becauſe we had refuſed to give them more than half the value for their commodities; and that we were not to expect permiſſion to trade upon any terms longer than this day.

A native of Timor, whoſe parents were Portugueſe, came down with this party, and delivered to the captain what was pretended to be the order of the raja, and which was in ſubſtance the ſame that Lange had told Dr. Solander; but it was afterwards diſcovered that this man was a confident of Lange's in the ſcheme of extortion. The Engliſh gentleman had at the ſame time no doubt, but that the ſuppoſed order of the raja was a contrivance of theſe men, and while they were debating how to act in this critical juncture, anxious to bring the affair to ſpeedy iſſue, the Portugueſe began to drive away ſuch of the natives as had brought palm-

ſyrup and fowls to ſell, and others who were now bringing ſheep and buffaloes to the market. At this juncture, Captain Cook happened to look at the old man who had been diſtinguiſhed by the name of prime miniſter, imagined that he ſaw in his features a diſapprobation of the preſent proceedings; and, willing to improve the advantage, he graſped the Indian's hand, and gave him an old broad ſword. This well-timed preſent produced all the good effects that could be wiſhed; the prime miniſter was enraptured at ſo honourable a mark of diſtinction, and brandiſhing his ſword over the head of the impertinent Portugueſe, he made both him and a man who commanded the party, to ſit down behind him on the ground. The whole buſineſs was now accompliſhed; the natives, eager to ſupply whatever was wanted, brought their cattle in for ſale, and the market was ſoon ſtocked. Captain Cook purchaſed of the natives ſome hundred gallons of palm-ſyrup, a ſmall quantity of garlick, a large number of eggs, ſome limes and cocoa-nuts, thirty dozen of fowls, three hogs, ſix ſheep, and nine buffaloes. Having obtained theſe articles, we now prepared for ſailing from this place.

The iſland of Savu is ſituated in 10 deg. 35 min. S. lat. and 237 deg. 30 min. W. long. The harbour in which the ſhip lay was called Seba. The iſland produces tobacco, cotton, betel, tamarinds, limes, oranges, mangoes, Guiney corn, rice, callevances, and melons. A ſmall quantity of cinnamon was ſeen, and ſome European herbs, ſuch as garlick, fennel, celery, and marjoram.

The people of this iſland are below the middle ſtature; their hair is black and ſtraight. The men are well formed and ſprightly, and their features differ much from each other; the women, on the contrary, have all one ſet of features, are very ſhort, and broad built. The men have ſilver pincers hanging by ſtrings round their necks, with which they pluck out the hairs of their beards. The dreſs of the men conſiſts of two pieces of cotton cloth, one of which is bound round the middle, and the lower edge of it being drawn pretty tight between the legs, the upper edge is left looſe,

ſo

ſo as to form a kind of pocket, in which they carry knives and other things; the other piece being paſſed under the former on the back of the wearer, the ends of it are carried over the ſhoulders, and tucked into the pocket before. The women drew the upper edge of the piece round the waiſt tight, while the lower edge, dropping to the knees, made a kind of petticoat: the other piece of cloth is faſtened acroſs the breaſt, and under the arms.

As to the food of theſe people, they eat all the tame animals to be found in the iſland; but they prefer the hog to all others; the next to this they admire horſe-fleſh; to which ſucceeds the buffalo; then poultry: they prefer cats and dogs to goats and ſheep. Fiſh is not eaten but by the poor, nor by them except when their buſineſs requires them to be upon the beach; and then each man has a light caſting net, which is girt round his body, and with this he takes any ſmall fiſh that comes in his way.

On the 21ſt of September, we got under ſail, and bent our courſe weſtward. At four in the afternoon, in lat. 10 deg. 38 min. S. and long. 238 deg. 28 min. W. we diſcovered a ſmall low iſland. In the evening of the 23d, we got clear of the iſlands: and on the 28th, we ſteered all day N. W. with a view of making the land of Java; and on the 30th, Captain Cook took into his poſſeſſion the log-book and journals, at leaſt all he could find of the officers, petty officers, and ſeamen, whom he ſtrictly enjoined to ſecrecy with reſpect to where they had been. At ſeven in the evening, we had thunder and lightning, and about eleven, by the light of the flaſhes, we ſaw the weſt end of Java.

On the 2d of October, we were cloſe in with the coaſt of Java, in fifteen fathom water, along which we ſtood. In the forenoon a boat was ſent aſhore, in order to procure ſome fruit for Tupia, who was at this time extremely ill. Our people returned with four cocoa-nuts and ſome plantains, for which they had paid a ſhilling; but ſome herbage for the cattle the Indians gave our ſeamen, and aſſiſted them to cut it.

We now made but very little way till night, when the land breeze ſpringing up, we ſailed to the E. S. E. and on the following day came to an anchor in the road of Batavia. At this place we found a number of large Dutch veſſels, the Harcourt Eaſt Indiaman from England, which had loſt her paſſage to China, and two ſhips belonging to the private trade of our India Company. The Endeavour had no ſooner anchored, than a ſhip was obſerved, with a broad pendant flying, from which a boat was diſpatched to demand the name of the veſſel, with that of the commander, &c. To theſe enquiries, Captain Cook gave ſuch anſwers as he thought proper, and the officer who commanded the boat departed.

The captain now diſpatched an officer to the governor of the town, to apologize for the Endeavour's not ſaluting; for he had but three guns proper for the purpoſe, except ſwivels, and he was apprehenſive that they would not be heard. The ſhip was ſo leaky, that ſhe made about nine inches water in an hour; part of the falſe keel was gone; one of her pumps was totally uſeleſs, and the reſt ſo much decayed, that they could not laſt long. The officers concurring in opinion, that the ſhip could not ſafely put to ſea again in this condition, the captain reſolved to ſolicit permiſſion to heave her down; but as he learned that this muſt be done in writing, he drew up a petition, and had it tranſlated into Dutch.

On the 10th, the captain and the reſt of the gentlemen went on ſhore, and applied to the Engliſh reſident at Batavia; this gentleman, whoſe name was Leith, received his countrymen in the politeſt manner, and entertained them at dinner with great hoſpitality. Mr. Leith informed us, that a public hotel was kept in town, by order of the Dutch governor, at which place merchants and other ſtrangers were obliged to lodge, and that the landlord of the hotel was bound to find them warehouſes for their goods, on condition of receiving ten ſhillings on every hundred pounds of their value; but as the Endeavour was a king's ſhip, her officers

officers and the other gentlemen might reſide where they thought proper.

In the afternoon, Captain Cook attended the governor-general, who received him politely, and told him to wait on the council the next morning, when his petition ſhould be laid before him, and every thing he ſolicited ſhould be granted.

On the 11th, Captain Cook waited on the gentlemen of the council, who informed him that all his requeſts ſhould be complied with. In the interim, the other gentlemen made a contract with the maſter of the hotel, to furniſh them and their friends with as much tea, coffee, punch, and tobacco, as they might have occaſion for, and to keep them a ſeparate table, for nine ſhillings a day Engliſh money.

Our Indian friend Tupia, had hitherto continued on board, on account of his diſorder, which was of the bilious kind, yet he perſiſted in refuſing every medicine that was offered him. Mr. Banks ſent for him on ſhore, in hopes that he might recover his health. While in the ſhip, he was exceedingly liſtleſs and low ſpirited, but he no ſooner entered the town, than he ſeemed as if reanimated. The houſes, the carriages, ſtreets, people, and a multiplicity of other objects, wholly new to him, produced an effect like the ſuppoſed power of faſcination.

About this time we had procured an order to the ſuperintendant of the iſland of Ouruſt, where the ſhip was to be repaired, to receive her there, and by one of the ſhips that ſailed for Holland, an account was ſent to Mr. Stephens, ſecretary to the Admiralty, of our arrival at this place. Here the captain found an unexpected difficulty in procuring money for the expences that would be incurred by refitting the Endeavour; private perſons had neither the ability nor inclination to advance the ſum required; he therefore ſent a written application to the governor himſelf, who ordered the Shebander to ſupply the captain with what money he might want out of the company's treaſury.

On

On the 18th, we ran down to Ouruſt, and laid the ſhip along ſide of the wharf on Cooper's iſland, in order to take out her ſtores. In a little more than nine days, we began to experience the fatal effects of the climate and ſituation. Tupia ſunk on a ſudden, and grew every day worſe and worſe. Tayeto, his boy, was ſeized with an inflammation on his lungs. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander were attacked by fevers, and the two ſervants of the former became very ill; in ſhort, almoſt every perſon on board and aſhore fell ſick in a few days, owing, as we imagined, to the low ſwampy ſituation of the place.

On the 26th, we erected a tent for the ſick. Tupia, of whoſe life we began to deſpair, deſired to be removed to the ſhip, in hopes of breathing a freer air; however, this could not be done, as ſhe was unrigged, and preparing to be laid down at the careening place; but on the 28th, Mr. Banks conveyed him to Cooper's iſland, and, as he ſeemed pleaſed with the ſpot near which the ſhip lay, a tent was pitched for him.

On the 5th of November, after many unavoidable delays, the ſhip was laid down, and the ſame day Mr. Monkhouſe, our ſurgeon, fell a ſacrifice to this fatal country. Dr. Solander was juſt able to attend his funeral, but Mr. Banks in his turn was confined to his bed. The power of diſeaſe, from the peſtiferous air of the country, daily gaining ſtrength, ſeveral Malay ſervants were hired to attend the ſick, but they had ſo little ſenſe either of duty or humanity, that the patient was obliged frequently to get out of bed to ſeek them.

On the 9th, our Indian boy Tayeto, paid the debt of nature, and Tupia was ſo affected at the loſs, that it was doubted whether he would ſurvive it till the next day.

Dr. Solander and Mr. Banks were now ſo worn down by their diſorders, that the phyſicians declared they had no chance for recovery, but by removing into the country. In conſequence of this advice, a

houſe

houſe was hired for them, at the diſtance of about two miles from the town, which belonged to the maſter of the hotel, who engaged to ſupply them with proviſions, and the uſe of ſlaves. As they had already experienced the unfeeling inattention of theſe fellows to the ſick, they bought each of them a Malay woman, who, from the tenderneſs of their ſex, made them good nurſes. While theſe gentlemen were taking meaſures for the recovery of their health, they received an account of the death of Tupia, who ſunk at once after the loſs of his boy, Tayeto, whom he loved with the tenderneſs of a parent: they were both buried in the iſland of Edam.

On the 14th, the bottom of the ſhip was thoroughly repaired, and much to Captain Cook's ſatisfaction, who beſtowed great encomiums on the officers and workmen at the marine-yard; in his opinion, there is not one in the world, where a ſhip can be laid down with more convenient ſpeed and ſafety, nor repaired with more diligence and ſkill.

At this time Captain Cook was taken ill. Mr. Sporting alſo, and a ſailor who attended Mr. Banks, were ſeized with the deadly intermittents, and only ten of the ſhip's company, were capable of doing duty. Yet, notwithſtanding theſe perplexing obſtacles, though haraſſed by a contagious diſeaſe, and alarmed by frequent deaths, we proceeded in rigging the ſhip, and getting water and neceſſary ſtores on board: the ſtores were eaſily obtained and ſhipped, but the water we were obliged to procure from Batavia, at the rate of ſix ſhillings and eight-pence a leager, or one hundred and fifty gallons.

On the 25th, in the night, there fell ſuch a ſhower of rain, as even all of us had cauſe to remember. The water poured through every part of Mr. Banks's houſe, and the lower apartments admitted a ſtream ſufficient to turn a mill. As this gentleman was now greatly reſtored in health, he went to Batavia the following day, and was ſurpriſed to ſee that the inhabitants had hung their bedding to dry. About the

26th of this month the monſoons ſet in; it blows in the day-time from the N. or N. W. and from the S. W. during the night; previous to this, there had been violent ſhowers of rain for ſeveral nights.

The ſhip being repaired, the ſick people recived on board her, and the greater part of her water and ſtores taken in, ſhe ſailed from Ouruſt on the 8th of December, and anchored in the road of Batavia: twelve days were employed in receiving the remainder of her proviſions, water, and other neceſſaries, though the buſineſs would have been done in much leſs time, but that ſome of the crew died, and the majority of the ſurvivors were ſo ill, as to be unable to give their aſſiſtance.

On the 24th, Captain Cook took leave of the governor, and ſome other gentlemen, who had diſtinguiſhed themſelves by the civilities they ſhewed him; but at this juncture an accident occurred, that might have produced conſequences by no means deſirable. A Batavian deſerted from a veſſel, and entered himſelf on board the Endeavour. The captain of the Dutch ſhip having made application to the governor, claiming the delinquent as a ſubject of the States General, the governor iſſued his order for the reſtoration of the man; when this order was given to him, he ſaid, that man ſhould be given up if he appeared to be a Dutchman. As the captain was at this time on ſhore, he gave the Dutch officer a note to the lieutenant, to deliver the deſerter on the condition abovementioned.

On the following day, the Dutchman waited on Captain Cook, informing him, that the lieutenant had abſolutely refuſed to give up the ſeaman, ſaying he was an Iriſhman, and of courſe a ſubject of his Britannic Majeſty; Captain Cook applauded the conduct of his officer, and added, that it could not be expected that he ſhould deliver up an Engliſh ſubject. The Dutch officer then ſaid, he was authoriſed, by the governor, to demand the fugitive as a Daniſh ſubject, adding, that his name was entered in the

ſhip's

ſhip's books as having been born at Elſineur. The Dutchman now took his leave, and he had not been long gone before the captain received a letter from the lieutenant on board, containing full proof that he was an Engliſh ſubject. This letter, the captain carried to the Shebander, deſiring him to lay it before the governor, and to inform him, that the man ſhould not be delivered upon any terms whatever. This ſpirited conduct on the part of Captain Cook, had the deſired effect; and thus the matter ended.

This day the captain, attended by Mr. Banks and the other gentlemen who had hitherto lived in the town, repaired on board the ſhip, which got under ſail the next morning. The Endeavour was ſaluted by the fort, and by the Elgin Eaſt Indiaman, which then lay in the road, but ſoon after theſe compliments were returned, the ſea-breeze ſetting in, they were obliged to come to anchor. Since the arrival of the ſhip in Batavia road, every perſon belonging to her had been ill, except the ſail-maker, who was more than 70 years old, yet this man got drunk every day while we remained there. We buried ſeven of our people at Batavia, viz. Tupia, and his boy, three of the ſailors, the ſervant of Mr. Green, and the ſurgeon; and at the time of the veſſel's ſailing, forty of the crew were ſick, and the reſt ſo enfeebled by their late illneſs, as to be ſcarcely able to do their duty.

CHAP. XII.

An account of Batavia, and its various productions—The Endeavour ſails from Batavia to the Cape of Good Hope—The Cape and St. Helena deſcribed—Remarks on the Hottentots—The Endeavour returns to England, and anchors in the Downs on Wedneſday, June 12, 1771.

BATAVIA, ſituated in 6 deg. 10 min. S. lat. and 106 deg. 50 min. E. long. from the meridian of Greenwich, is built on the bank of a large bay, about twenty miles from the ſtreight of Sunda, on the north

ſide of the iſland of Java, on a low boggy ground. Several ſmall rivers, which riſe forty miles up the country. There are wide canals of nearly ſtagnated water in almoſt every ſtreet, and as the banks of the canals are planted with trees, they appear at firſt very agreeable; but theſe trees and canals combine to render the air peſtilential. Some of the rivers are navigable more than thirty miles up the country; and the Dutch appear to have choſen this ſpot to build the town on, for the ſake of water carriage, in which convenience Batavia exceeds every place in the world, except the towns of Holland.

The new church in Batavia is a fine piece of building, and the dome of it may be ſeen far off at ſea. This church is illuminated by chandeliers of the moſt ſuperb workmanſhip, and has a fine organ: moſt of the other public buildings are ancient, conſtructed in an ill taſte, and give a very complete idea of Dutch clumſineſs.

Batavia is encompaſſed by a river of ſhallow water, the ſtream of which is very rapid; within this river, which is of different widths in various places, is an old ſtone wall, much decayed in many places, and within the wall is a canal, wider in ſome places than in others, ſo that there is no entering the gates of the town but by croſſing two draw-bridges; there are but few on the ramparts, and no perſons are permitted to walk there. There is a kind of citadel, or caſtle, in the N. E. corner of the town, the walls of which are both broader and higher than they are in other parts; it is furniſhed with a number of large guns, which command the landing-place.

Apartments are provided in this caſtle for the governor-general and all the council; and in caſe of a ſiege, they have orders to retire thither. In the caſtle are likewiſe a number of ſtore-houſes, in which the effects belonging to the company are depoſited. The company have in their poſſeſſion large quantities of gunpowder, which is kept in different places, that the lightning may not deſtroy the whole ſtock at once;

once; a great number of canon are likewiſe laid up within the caſtle. There are a great many forts built in different parts of the country, ſeveral miles diſtant from Batavia, moſt probably erected to keep the natives in ſubjection; and beſides theſe there are a number of fortified houſes, each mounting eight guns, which are ſo ſtationed as to command the canals, and the roads on the borders. There are houſes of this kind in many parts of the iſland of Java, and the other iſlands in its neighbourhood, of which the Dutch have obtained poſſeſſion. The Chineſe having rebelled againſt them in the year 1704, all their principal houſes were demoliſhed by the cannon of one of theſe fortified houſes, which is in the town of Batavia, where, likewiſe, there are a few more of them.

The fruits of this country are near forty in number, and of ſome of theſe there are ſeveral kinds. Pine-apples grow in ſuch abundance, that they may be purchaſed for the value of an Engliſh farthing. The ſweet oranges are good of their kind, but dear at particular times. The ſhaddocks of the Weſt Indies, called here pamplemooſes, have an agreeable flavour. Lemons are very ſcarce, but limes are altogether plentiful, and ſold at little more than twopence a ſcore. There are many kinds of oranges and lemons, but none of them excellent. Of mangoes there are plenty. Of bananas, there are an amazing variety of ſorts, ſome of which being boiled, are eaten as bread, while others are fried in a batter, and are a nouriſhing food: but of the numerous ſorts of fruit, three only are fit to be eaten: one indeed is remarkable, becauſe it is filled with ſeeds, which are not common to the reſt. Grapes are ſold from one ſhilling to eight-pence a pound, though they are far from being good. Tamarinds are cheap and plentiful. The cocoa-nut is plentiful in this country, and there are ſeveral kinds of this fruit, the beſt of which is very red between the ſhell and the ſkin.

In this country ſweet ſcented flowers are plentiful, many ſpecies of which being entirely unknown, are worth remarking. The combang tonquin, and combang carenaſſi, are particularly fragrant flowers, which bear ſcarcely any reſemblance to any of thoſe flowers with which we are acquainted. They are very ſmall, and ſeem to be of the dog's-bane ſpecies. The camunga, which is more like a bunch of leaves than a flower, is of a ſingular ſmell, but very grateful. The bon tanjong, is of a pale yellow caſt, and has a very agreeable ſmell; it is about an inch and an half in circumference, and conſiſts of pointed leaves, which gives it the appearance of a ſtar. There is alſo an extraordinary kind of flower called fundal malam, which ſignifies the intriguer of the night. This flower has no ſmell in the day-time, but as night comes on, it has a very fragrant ſcent, and is very much like the Engliſh tuberoſe. Theſe flowers being made into noſegays of different ſhapes, or ſtrung upon thread, are carried through the ſtreet for ſale on an evening.

A plant called the pandang is produced here, the leaves of which being ſhred ſmall, and mixed with other flowers, the natives of both ſexes fill their cloaths and hair with this mixture, which they likewiſe ſprinkle on their beds, and ſleep under this heap of ſweets, a thin piece of chintz being their only covering.

Formerly the only ſpice that grew on the iſland of Java was pepper. A conſiderable quantity is brought from thence by the Dutch, but very little of it is made uſe of in the country. The inhabitants prefer Cayan pepper, and are fond of cloves and nutmeg, but theſe firſt are too dear to be commonly uſed. Near the iſland of Amboyna are ſome little iſles, on which the cloves grow, and the Dutch were not eaſy till they all became their property. Scarcely any other nutmegs are found but on the iſland of Banda, which however furniſhes enough for all the nations that have a demand for that commodity. There are but few

nutmeg-

nutmeg-trees on the coaſt of New Guinea. The iſland of Java, of which we have already ſpoken, produces horſes, buffaloes, ſheep, goats, and hogs. The ſort of horſes ſaid to have been met with here when the country was firſt diſcovered, appeared to be nimble animals, though ſmall, being generally ſeldom above thirteen hands high. The horned cattle of this country are different from thoſe of Europe. They are quite lean, but of a very fine grain. The Chineſe and the natives of Java eat the buffalo fleſh, which the Dutch conſtantly refuſe, being impreſſed with a ſtrange idea that it is feveriſh. The ſheep are hairy like goats, and have long ears: they are moſtly found to be tough and ill-taſted. There happening to be a few from the Cape of Good Hope at Batavia, ſome of them were purchaſed at the rate of one ſhilling a pound.

In this country, palm-wine and arrack are very plentiful. Of the former, there are three ſorts; the firſt of which is drank in a few hours after it is drawn from the tree, and is moderately ſweet; the ſecond and third ſorts are made by fermentation, and by putting ſeveral ſorts of herbs and roots into the liquor.

In Java the religion of Mahomet is profeſſed, for which reaſon the natives do not make uſe of wine publicly, but in private they will not refuſe it. They alſo chew opium, whoſe intoxicating qualities proves its recommendation to the natives of India.

Some of the Indians are very rich, keep a great number of ſlaves, and live, in all reſpects, according to the cuſtom of their countries, while others are employed to carry goods by water: and others again ſubſiſt by fiſhing. The oranſlams, or believers of the faith, feed principally on boiled rice, mixed with a ſmall quantity of dried ſhrimps and other fiſh, which are imported from China, and a little of the fleſh of buffaloes and chickens; they are fond of fruit, of which they eat large quantities, and with the flour of the rice they make ſeveral ſorts of paſtry.

When

When a marriage is to be ſolemnized among them, all the gold and ſilver ornaments that can be procured, are borrowed to deck out the young couple, who, on theſe occaſions, never fail to make the moſt ſplendid appearance; ſumptuous entertainments are given by thoſe who can afford them, which continue twelve or fourteen days, and frequently more, during all which time the women take care that the bridegroom ſhall not viſit his wife privately, though the wedding takes place previous to the feſtival.

On the 27th of December, early in the morning, we weighed, left the harbour of Batavia, and ſtood out to ſea. On the 29th, after much delay by contrary winds, we weathered Pulo Pare, and ſtood for the main. On the ſame day, paſſed a ſmall iſland between Batavia and Bantam, called Man-eater's iſland. On Sunday the 30th, we weathered Wapping and Pulo Babi iſlands, and the next day, being the 31ſt, we ſtood over to the Sumatra ſhore.

On the 1ſt of January, we ſteered for the Java ſhore, and continued our courſe, as the wind permitted us, till three o'clock in the afternoon of the 5th, when we caſt anchor on the ſouth-eaſt ſide of Prince's iſland, in eighteen fathom water, in order to recruit our ſtores, and procure refreſhments for the ſick, many of whom were much worſe than they were at our departure from Batavia. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, accompanied by the captain and other gentlemen, went on ſhore. We met upon the beach ſome Indians, by whom we were conducted to their king. Having exchanged a few compliments with this perſon, we entered upon buſineſs; but in ſettling the price of turtle, could not agree. Upon this, we took leave, the Indians diſperſed, and we proceeded along ſhore in ſearch of a watering-place. We happily ſucceeded in finding a very convenient one, and had reaſon to believe, with care in filling, it would prove agreeable to our wiſhes.

On our return, ſome Indians, who remained with a canoe upon the beach, ſold us three turtles, but we

we were obliged to promiſe, that we would not tell the king. On the 6th, we renewed with better ſucceſs, our traffic for turtle. About noon the Indians lowered their demands ſlowly, inſomuch, that before the evening they accepted our ſtipulated price, and we had turtle in plenty.

Mr. Banks, in the evening, paid a viſit to the king, by whom he was received very graciouſly at his palace in the middle of a rice field, notwithſtanding his majeſty was buſily employed in dreſſing his own ſupper. The day following the Indians reſorted to the trading-place with fowls, fiſh, monkeys, ſmall deer, and ſome vegetables; but no turtle appeared till the next day, after which ſome were brought to market every day while we ſtaid there, but the whole quantity together was not equal to that we bought the day after our arrival.

On the 11th, Mr. Banks having received intelligence from a ſervant he had hired at Batavia, that the Indians of this iſland had a town ſituated near the ſhore, to the weſtward, he determined to go in ſearch of the ſame. With this view he ſet out in the morning, accompanied by the ſecond lieutenant; and apprehending his viſit might not be agreeable to the natives, he told ſuch of them as he met, that he was in ſearch of plants. Having come to a place where there were three or four houſes, they met with an old man, of whom they ventured to make a few enquiries concerning the town. He would have perſuaded them, that it was at a great diſtance; but perceiving that they proceeded forward, he joined company, and went on with them. The old man attempted ſeveral times to lead them out of the way, though without ſucceſs; but when at length they came within ſight of the houſes, he entered cordially into their party, and conducted them into the town, the name of which is Samadang. It conſiſts of about 400 houſes, and is divided by a brackiſh river into two parts, one called the old, and the other the new town. When they had entered the former, they

were

were accoſted by ſeveral Indians whom they had ſeen at the trading-place, and one of them undertook to carry them over to the new town, at 2d. per head. The bargain being made, they embarked in two ſmall canoes, placed along ſide each other, and laſhed together, to prevent their over-ſetting. They landed ſafely, though not without ſome difficulty; and when they came to the new town, the people ſhewed them every mark of cordial friendſhip, ſhewing them the houſes of their king and principal people. Few of the houſes were open at this time, the inhabitants having taken up their reſidence in the rice-grounds, to defend their crops againſt the birds and monkeys, who without this neceſſary caution would deſtroy them.

When their curioſity was ſatisfied, they hired a large ſailing-boat for two rupees, value 4s. which conveyed them to the bark time enough to dine upon one of the ſmall deer, weighing only 40lb. which proved to be exceeding good and ſavoury food. In the evening we again went on ſhore, to ſee how our people went on, who were employed in wooding and watering, when we were told, that an axe had been ſtolen. Application was immediately made to the king, who, after ſome altercation, promiſed that the axe ſhould be reſtored in the morning; and it was accordingly brought us by a man, who pretended, that the thief, afraid of a diſcovery, had left it at his houſe in the night.

On the 13th, having completed our wood and water, Mr. Banks took leave of his majeſty, to whom he had made ſeveral trifling preſents, and at parting, gave him two quires of paper, which he graciouſly accepted. During their converſation, the king enquired why the Engliſh did not touch at the iſland as they had uſed to do. Mr. Banks replied, that the reaſon was, as he ſuppoſed, becauſe they found a deficiency of turtle, of which there not being enough to ſupply one ſhip, many could not be expected; and to ſupply this defect, Mr. Banks adviſed his majeſty

to

to breed cattle, buffaloes, and ſheep; but he did not ſeem diſpoſed to adopt this prudent meaſure.

On the 14th, we had got on board a good ſtock of freſh proviſions, conſiſting of turtle, fowl, fiſh, two ſpecies of deer, one about the ſize of a ſheep, the other not bigger than a rabbit; alſo cocoa-nuts, plantains, limes, and other vegetables. The deer, however, ſerved only for preſent uſe, for we could ſeldom keep one of them alive more than twenty-four hours.

On the 15th, we weighed, with a light breeze at N. E. and ſtood out to ſea. We took our departure from Java Head, which is in lat. 6 deg. 49 min. S. and in long. 253 deg. 12 min. W.

In the month of February, we held on our courſe, and made the beſt of our way for the Cape of Good Hope; but now the fatal ſeeds of diſeaſe, our people had imbibed at Batavia, began to appear, with the moſt alarming ſymptoms, in dyſenteries and ſlow fevers. Our ſituation in a ſhort time was truly deplorable, and the ſhip was little better than an hoſpital, in which thoſe who did duty were too few to attend thoſe who were confined to their hammocks. Many of theſe were in the laſt ſtage of the deſtructive diſorder; and almoſt every night we committed a body to the ſea. Mr. Banks was among the number of the ſick, and for ſome time we deſpaired of his life. In the courſe of ſix weeks, we buried Mr. Sporing, a gentleman of Mr. Banks's retinue; Mr. Parker, his natural hiſtory painter; Mr. Green, the aſtronomer; the boatſwain; the carpenter and his mate; Mr. Monkhouſe, the midſhipman; our jolly ſail-maker and his aſſiſtant; the cook; the corporal of the marines; two of the carpenter's crew; a midſhipman, and nine ſailors: in all twenty-three perſons, beſides ſeven at Batavia.

On the 15th of March, we brought the ſhip to an anchor off the Cape of Good Hope. Captain Cook repaired immediately to the governor, who chearfully promiſed him every refreſhment the country afforded;

on which a houſe was hired for the ſick, and it was agreed they ſhould be lodged and boarded for 2s. each man per day.

At the time the Endeavour lay at the Cape of Good Hope, the Houghton Indiaman ſailed for England. She had buried near forty of her crew, and when ſhe left the Cape, had many of her hands in a helpleſs condition, occaſioned by the ſcurvy. Other ſhips likewiſe experienced a proportionable loſs by ſickneſs; ſo that our ſufferings were comparatively light, conſidering that we had been near three times as long.

We continued at the Cape till the 13th of April, in order to recover the ſick, procure ſtores, and to do ſome neceſſary work upon the ſhip and rigging. When this was finiſhed, we got all the ſick on board, ſeveral of whom were ſtill in a dangerous ſtate; and on the 14th, having taken leave of the governor, we unmoored and got ready to ſail.

The hiſtory of Caffraria is well known in Europe, and a deſcription of the Cape of Good Hope has been given by moſt of our circum-navigators; yet, we think an account of this country will be acceptable to our numerous ſubſcribers; and they will meet with ſome particulars which fell under our obſervation, that have either been wholly omitted, or miſrepreſented in other narratives.

The Cape of Good Hope, which is the moſt ſouthern part of Africa, was firſt diſcovered A. D. 1493, by Bartholomew Diaz, admiral of a Portugueſe fleet, who, on account of the boiſterous weather he met with when near it, diſtinguiſhed it by the name of Cabodos totos Tormentos, or the Cape of all Plagues; ſince which, no place in the univerſe had been more ſpoken of. The reaſon why it has ſo much attracted the attention of mariners of all nations, is, their being under the neceſſity of frequently calling there for water and other refreſhments, and alſo of doubling it in their voyage to the Eaſt Indies. But John, king of Portugal, not liking the name which his admiral had

had beſtowed upon it, changed it to that of Cabode Bona Eſperanca, the "Cape of Good Hope," which appellation it has ever ſince retained.

Neither Diaz, nor his ſucceſſor Vaſco de Gama, though they ſaw the Cape, thought proper to land: but in 1498, the Portugueſe admiral, Rio del Infanta, was the firſt who ventured on ſhore; and from his report, Emanuel, king of Portugal, determined to eſtabliſh a colony; but the Portugueſe having taken it into their heads, that the inhabitants of the Cape were cannibals, were too much afraid of being devoured, to obey their ſovereign in making the ſettlement he intended: however, ſome time after, another body of thoſe timid adventurers made good their landing, under the conduct of Francis d'Almeyda, a viceroy of Braſil, when the Portugueſe were ſhamefully defeated by the ſcarce armed, and unwarlike natives. The viceroy and fifty of his men being killed in the engagement, the remainder retired with precipitation to their ſhips. The Portugueſe determined to be revenged; but not having magnanimity enough to ſhew a becoming reſentment, they contrived a moſt inhuman and cowardly expedient.

About two years after, touching at the Cape, they landed with all the appearance of amity, accompanied with ſtrong profeſſions of friendſhip, and under this maſk, brought with them a large cannon loaded with grape-ſhot. The unſuſpecting natives, overjoyed by the gift of ſo great a treaſure, began to drag it away by the means of two large ropes, which had been previouſly faſtened to the muzzle. Great numbers laid hold of the ropes, and many others went before by way of triumph, when the treacherous Portugueſe firing off the cannon, a prodigious ſlaughter enſued, as moſt of the people ſtood within the range of the ſhot. Many were killed, ſeveral wounded; and the few who eſcaped, abandoned with the utmoſt precipitation the fatal preſent.

About the year 1600, the Dutch began to touch at the Cape, in their way to and from the Eaſt In-

dies; and becoming annually more ſenſible of the importance of the place, they effected a ſettlement in 1650, which ſince that time had riſen to great power and opulence, and been of eſſential ſervice to that nation. M. Van Ricbeeck, a ſurgeon, in his return from India, obſerving the conveniency of the place for a ſettlement, and laying before the Dutch Eaſt India Company a plan of its advantages, the ſcheme was approved, and the projector appointed governor. This adventurer ſailing with four ſhips to the Cape, entered into a negociation with the people, who, in conſideration of fifty thouſand guilders, or four thouſand three hundred and ſeventy-five pounds ſterling, agreed to yield up to the Dutch a conſiderable tract of country round the Cape. Van Ricbeeck, in order to ſecure his new purchaſe, immediately erected a ſtrong ſquare fort, laid out a large garden, and planted it with a great variety of the productions from Europe, that he might render the place as commodious and agreeable as poſſible.

Having thus ſucceſsfully founded a ſettlement, the Dutch company propoſed, in order the more effectually to eſtabliſh it, that every man who would ſettle three years at the Cape, ſhould have an inheritance of ſixty acres of land, provided that during that ſpace he would ſo improve his eſtate, as to render it ſufficient to maintain himſelf, and contribute ſomewhat towards the maintenance of the garriſon; and at the expiration of the time, he might either keep poſſeſſion of it, or ſell it, and return home. Induced by theſe propoſals, many went to ſeek their fortunes at the Cape, and were furniſhed on credit with cattle, grain, plants, utenſils, &c. The planters, however, at length grew weary of their habitations for want of conjugal ſociety: therefore, the governor of the company, to prevent their leaving the place, provided them with wives from the orphan-houſes, and other charitable foundations. In proceſs of time they greatly increaſed, and ſpread themſelves farther up the country, and along the coaſt, till they occupied all the

lands

lands from Sandanna Bay, round the ſouthern point of Africa, to Noſſel Bay, on the E. and afterwards purchaſed Terra de Natal, in order to extend their limits ſtill farther.

On the firſt ſettlement of the Dutch at the Cape, all the Hottentot tribes did not acquieſce in the ſale of the country to foreigners; for the Gunyemains diſſented from the agreement of the others, and, in 1659, diſputed the poſſeſſion of the purchaſed territories with the Dutch. They always made their attack in boiſterous weather, as thinking the fire-arms then of leſs uſe and efficacy; and upon theſe occaſions, they would murder indiſcriminately all the Europeans they could meet, burn down their houſes, and drive away their cattle. But the Hottentots themſelves at length growing tired of the war, one hundred of them, belonging to one nation, came unarmed to the Dutch fort, with a preſent of thirteen head of fine cattle, in order to ſue for peace. This, it may be imagined, was readily granted by the Dutch, who were heartily ſick of a conteſt in which themſelves were ſuch great loſers, without reaping any advantages from it.

The land over the Cape, which conſtitutes the peninſula formed by Table Bay on the N. and Falſe Bay on the S. conſiſts of high mountains, altogether naked and deſolate: the land behind theſe to the E. which may be conſidered as the iſthmus, is a plain of vaſt extent, conſiſting almoſt wholly of a light kind of ſea ſand, which produces nothing but heath, and is utterly incapable of cultivation.

Cape Town is the only one the Dutch have built here, and it conſiſts of about 1000 houſes, neatly built of brick, whited in general on the outſide. They are covered only with thatch, for the violence of the S. E. winds would render any other roof inconvenient and dangerous. The ſtreets are broad and commodious, croſſing each other at right angles. The houſes in general have pleaſant gardens behind, and neat court-yards before them.

The

The town extends from the ſea-ſhore to the company's garden, ſpreading along Table Bay. The fort is in a valley at a ſmall diſtance, its form pentagonal; it commands the landing-place, and is garriſoned by 200 ſoldiers. The governor's ſtore-houſes are within it; other officers beſides himſelf have apartments here, as well as 600 ſervants. The hoſpital for ſick ſeamen is of eſſential uſe to the Dutch fleets in going to and returning from India.

What is moſt to be admired at the Cape, is the company's gardens, where they have introduced almoſt all the fruits and flowers that are found in the other three quarters of the globe; moſt of which are improved, and flouriſh more than they did in their reſpective climates; and the garden is watered with ſprings that fall down from Table mountain juſt above them. Apples and pears are planted here, with grapes of Aſia, as well as thoſe of Europe. Here are alſo lemons, oranges, citrons, figs, Japan apples, and a great variety of other fruits.

Notwithſtanding the natural ſterility of the climate, induſtry has ſupplied this place with all the neceſſaries, and even luxuries of life, in the greateſt profuſion. The beef and mutton are excellent, though the oxen and ſheep are natives of the country. Good butter is made from the milk of cows, but the cheeſe is inferior to ours. Here are hogs, and a great variety of poultry; alſo goats, but theſe laſt are never eaten. Hares are to be found exactly like thoſe in Europe; likewiſe many kinds of antelopes; quails of two ſorts, and buzzards, all well flavoured.

The fields produce European wheat and barley; the gardens European vegetables; fruit of all kinds, beſides plantains, guavas, jambu, and other Indian fruits. The vineyards alſo produce wines of various ſorts, but not equal to thoſe of Europe, except the Conſtantia, which is made genuine only at one vineyard, about ten miles diſtant from the town. There is another vineyard near it, where wine is made,

made, and called by the ſame name, but it is greatly inferior.

There are great numbers of domeſtic animals in the various colonies and ſettlements at the Cape, and the woods and mountains abound with wild beaſts. The horſes, which were brought originally from Perſia, are of a bay or cheſnut colour, but rather ſmall. Among the wild beaſts, the elephant claims the firſt place. The rhinoceros is of a dark aſh colour, and has a ſnout like a hog. At the Cape, wolves are of two kinds; the one reſembles a ſheep-dog, and is ſpotted like a tyger; the other is like an European wolf.

Lions, tygers, leopards, &c. alſo abound here, and are ſo troubleſome, that the perſon who kills one of either ſort, is rewarded with twenty-five florins, or fifty ſhillings. The fleſh of the lion is eſteemed equal to veniſon, and the fat much valued. Here are much larger buffaloes than in Europe.

We ſaw here elks five feet high, with horns a foot long. Another ſingular animal is that called ſtink-box, from its offenſive ſmell both living and dead. Wild cats are of ſeveral ſorts. The firſt the Dutch, called the civit cat, not that it is really the animal of that name, but becauſe of the fine ſcent of the ſkin. The next the tyger cat, from its being ſpotted like a tyger. The third the mountain cat, which reſembles thoſe of Europe. The fourth is the blue cat, having a fine tinge, with a beautiful red liſt down its back.

Many jackalls, ermines, baboons, monkeys, &c. are found about the Cape, and frequently do great miſchief in the gardens. The porcupine is very common, and its fleſh eſteemed delicious. There are two ſorts of wild aſſes, one of which is a beautiful creature, called the zebra, and is liker to an horſe than an aſs; its legs are fine, has a twiſted tail, round fleſhy haunches, and a ſmooth ſkin. The females are white and black, and the males white and brown. The colours are ſtreaked in an admirable manner,

manner, ſo as to appear to a diſtant beholder as if covered with ribbons.

A great variety of birds and fowls are found at the Cape, both wild and tame. Here are three ſorts of eagles; namely, 1. The bone-breaker, who feeds on tortoiſes, to obtain the fleſh of which, it uſes this ſingular method: having carried the tortoiſe aloft in the air, it drops it upon ſome hard rock, by which means the ſhell is broken, and the eagle can come eaſily at its prey. 2. The dung-eagle, which tears out the entrails of animals to ſubſiſt on, and though not bigger than a gooſe, is ſtrong and voracious. 3. The duck-eagle, ſo called becauſe it feeds principally upon ducks.

But of all the numerous birds that are to be found here, the flamingo is one of the moſt ſingular. It has a long neck, and is larger than a ſwan: the legs are remarkably long, and of an orange tawney, and the feet are like thoſe of a gooſe: the bill contains blue teeth, with black points; the head and neck are entirely white; the upper part of the wings are of a bright flame colour, and the lower black.

Now we come to ſpeak of agriculture, for the Hottentots in general deteſt the very idea of cultivation, and would ſooner ſtarve than till the ground, ſo greatly are they addicted to ſloth and indolence. The working of the plough is here ſo laborious from the ſtiffneſs of the ſoil, that it frequently requires twenty oxen to one plough. The ſowing ſeaſon is in July, and the harveſt about Chriſtmas. The corn is not thraſhed with a flail, but trod out by horſes and oxen, on an artificial floor made of cow dung, ſtraw, and water, which, when mixed together, cements, and ſoon becomes perfectly hard. It is laid in an oval form. The cattle are confined by halters, which run from one to the other, and the driver ſtands in the middle, where he exerciſes a long ſtick to keep them continually to a quick pace. By this method, half a dozen horſes will do more in one day than a dozen men can in a week.

The

The women in general are very handſome: they have fine clear ſkins, and a bloom of colour that indicates a purity of conſtitution, and high health. They make the beſt wives in the world, both as miſtreſſes of a family and mothers, and there is ſcarcely a houſe that does not ſwarm with children.

There are ſixteen Hottentot nations, which inhabit this ſouthern promontory. The ſtature of the Hottentot men is from five to ſix feet high; their bodies are proportionable, and well made; they are ſeldom either too fat or lean, and ſcarce ever any crooked or deformed perſons amongſt them, any farther than they diſfigure their children themſelves, by flatting and breaking the griſtles of their noſes, looking on a flat noſe as a beauty. Their heads, as well as their eyes, are rather of the largeſt: their lips are naturally thick; their hair black and ſhort like the negroes, and they have exceeding white teeth.

The women are much leſs than the men; and what is moſt remarkable in them, is a callous flap or ſkin that falls over the pudenda, and in a manner conceals it. The report of which uſually excites the curioſity of the European ſailors to viſit the Hottentot villages near the Cape, where a great many of thoſe ladies, on ſeeing a ſtranger, will offer to ſatisfy their curioſity for a half-penny, before a crowd of people.

When a Hottentot brings a ſon into the world, there is great rejoicing; but the firſt thing they do with the child, is to daub it all over with cow-dung; then they lay it before the fire, or in the ſun, till the dung is dried: after which they rub it off, and waſh the child with the juice of certain herbs, laying it in the ſun, or before the fire again, till the liquor is dried in; after which they anoint the child from head to foot with butter, or ſheep's fat melted, which is dried in as the juice was; and this cuſtom of anointing their bodies with fat, they retain afterwards as long as they live. After the child has been thus ſmeared and greaſed, the mother gives it what name ſhe thinks proper, which is uſually the name of ſome wild beaſt, or domeſtic animal. When the wo-

man is well again, and able to leave her hut, ſhe rubs herſelf with cow-dung; and this filthy daubing is by theſe delicate people termed a purification. Being thus perfumed, and elegantly decorated with ſheep's guts, ſhe is permitted to go abroad, or to ſee company at home.

If the woman has twins, and they are girls, the man propoſes it to the kraal, that he may expoſe one of them either upon pretence of poverty, or that his wife has not milk for them both; and in this they indulge one another; they do the ſame when they have a boy and a girl, but always preſerve the boys, though they happen to have two at a birth. The expoſed child is carried to a diſtance from the kraal; and if they can find a cave or hole in the earth, that ſome wild beaſt has made, they put the child alive into it; and then having ſtopped up the mouth of the den with ſtones or earth, leave it there to ſtarve.

They do not deal thus, however, as has been obſerved, by their male children; on the birth of a boy, they kill a bullock, and if they have twins, two bullocks; and make an entertainment for all the neighbourhood, who congratulate the parents on their good fortune; and, as with us, the greateſt rejoicings are on the birth of the firſt ſon.

At the age of eighteen, the male Hottentots being deemed men, are admitted into male ſociety: the men of the village ſquat down, and form a circle, as is uſual upon public occaſions; the youth ſquats down without the circle, at ſome diſtance. The oldeſt man of the kraal then riſes from the circle, and, having obtained the general conſent for the admiſſion of a new member, he goes to the youth, acquaints him with the determination of the men of the kraal, and concludes his harangue with ſome verſes, which admoniſh him to behave like a man for the future.

The youth being then daubed with ſoot and fat, and ſprinkled with urine, is congratulated by the company in general in a kind of chorus, which contains the following wiſhes: that good fortune may attend him, that he

he may live long, and thrive daily; that he may ſoon have a beard, and many children, till it is univerſally allowed he is a uſeful man to the nation. A feaſt concludes the ceremony, but the youth himſelf is not permitted to participate of any part thereof till all the reſt are ſerved.

Having been thus admitted into the male ſociety, it is expected that he ſhould behave ill to women in general, and to his mother in particular, in order to evince his contempt of every thing feminine. Indeed it is uſual for a youth, as ſoon as admitted, to go to his mother's hut, and cudgel her heartily, for which he is highly applauded by the whole kraal; and even the ſuffering parent herſelf admires him for his ſpirit, and proteſts that the blows do not give her ſo much pain, as the thoughts of having brought ſuch a mettleſome ſon into the world affords her pleaſure. The more ill treatment he gives his mother, the more eſteem he obtains; and every time he ſtrikes her ſhe is in the higheſt raptures, and thanks Providence for having bleſſed her with ſuch a ſpirited child.

The Hottentots are exceeding ſuperſtitious, and fond of divination. In order to know the fate of a ſick perſon, they flay a ſheep alive; after having its ſkin entirely taken off, if the poor animal is able to get up and run away, it is deemed a propitious omen; but, on the contrary, if the excruciating pain kills it, they imagine that the patient will certainly die, and accordingly give him up entirely to nature, without taking any further care of him.

Whatever they believe of departed ſouls, they have no notion either of heaven or hell, or of a ſtate of rewards or puniſhments; this is evident from the behaviour of a dying Hottentot, and thoſe about him; neither he or his friends offer up any prayers to their gods for the ſalvation of his ſoul; or mention the ſtate of departed ſouls, or their apprehenſions of his being happy or miſerable after death: however, they ſet up terrible howlings and ſhriekings when the ſick man is in his laſt agonies; and yet theſe very people are frequently guilty

of murdering their ancient parents, as well as their innocent children; for when the father of a family is become perfectly uſeleſs and ſuperannuated, he is obliged to aſſign over his ſtock of cattle, and every thing elſe he has in the world, to his eldeſt ſon; and in default of ſons, to his next heir male: after which, the heir erects a tent or hut in ſome unfrequented place, a good diſtance from the kraal or camp he belongs to; and, having aſſembled the men of the kraal, acquaints them with the condition of his ſuperannuated relation, and deſires their conſent to expoſe him in the diſtant hut; to which the kraal ſcarce ever refuſe their conſent. Whereupon a day being appointed to carry the old man to the ſolitary tent, the heir kills an ox, and two or three ſheep, and invites the whole village to feaſt and be merry with him; and at the end of the entertainment, all the neighbourhood come and take a formal leave of the old wretch, thus condemned to be ſtarved or devoured by wild beaſts: then the unfortunate creature is laid upon one of their carriage oxen, and carried to his laſt home, attended to the place where he is to be buried alive, by moſt of his neighbours. The old man being taken down, and ſet in the middle of the hut provided for him, the company return to their kraal, and he never ſees the face of a human creature afterwards; they never ſo much as enquire whether he was ſtarved to death, or devoured by wild beaſts: he is no more thought of, than if he had never been. In the ſame manner they deal with a ſuperannuated mother; only as ſhe has nothing ſhe can call her own, ſhe has not the trouble of aſſigning her effects to her ſon. Whenever the Hottentots are upbraided with this unparalleled piece of barbarity, they reply, it would be a much greater cruelty to ſuffer an old creature to languiſh out a miſerable life, and to be many years a dying, than to make this quick diſpatch with them; and that it is out of their extreme tenderneſs they put an end to the lives of theſe old wretches; all the argument in the world againſt the inhumanity of the cuſtom, can make no impreſſion on them: and, indeed, as long as the Dutch have reſided

at

at the Cape, they have not been able to break them of one ſingle cuſtom, or prevail with them to alter any part of their conduct, how barbarous or abſurd ſoever: and, it ſeems, the captain of a kraal is not exempted from ſeeing his funeral ſolemnized in this manner, while he is alive, if he happens to become uſeleſs. And this leads us to treat of ſuch funerals as are ſolemnized after the perſon is really dead.

The ſick man, having reſigned his breath, is immediately bundled up, neck and heels together, in his ſheep-ſkin mantle, exceeding cloſe, ſo that no part of the corpſe appears: then the captain of the kraal, with ſome of the ſeniors, ſearch the neighbouring country for ſome cavity in a rock, or the den of a wild beaſt, to bury it in, never digging a grave, if they can find one of theſe within a moderate diſtance. After which, the whole kraal, men and women, prepare to attend the corpſe, ſeldom permitting it to remain above ground more than ſix hours. When all things are ready, all the neighbourhood aſſemble before the door of the deceaſed, the men ſitting down on their heels in one circle, and reſting their elbows on their knees (their uſual poſture) as the women do in another: here they clap their hands, and howl, crying, Bo, bo, bo; (i. e. father) lamenting their loſs. The corpſe being then brought out on that ſide the tent, where the perſon died, and not at the door, the bearers carry him in their arms to the grave, the men and women follow it in different parties, but without any manner of order, crying all the way, Bo, bo, bo! and wringing their hands, and performing a thouſand ridiculous geſtures and grimaces, which is frequently the ſubject of the Dutchmen's mirth; it being impoſſible, it is ſaid, to forbear laughing at the antic tricks they ſhew on ſuch an occaſion. Having put the corpſe into the cavity prepared for it, they ſtop up the mouth of it with ant hills, ſtones, and pieces of wood, believing the ants will feed on the corpſe, and ſoon conſume it. The grave being ſtopped up, the men and women rendezvous again before the tent of the deceaſed, where they repeat

their

their howling, and frequently call upon the name of their departed friend: after which two of the oldeſt men get up; and one of them going into the circle of the men, and the other into the circle of the women, urine upon every one of the company; and, where the kraals are ſo very large, that two cannot find water enough for this ceremony, they double or treble the number. Then the old men go into the tent of the deceaſed; and, having taken up ſome aſhes from the fire-place, they ſprinkle them upon the bodies of the people, bleſſing them as they go; and, if the deceaſed was a perſon of diſtinction, this is acted over again ſeveral days. But we ſhould have remembered, that the ceremony always concludes with an entertainment. If the deceaſed had any cattle, a ſheep is killed on the occaſion; and the caul being powdered with buchu, is tied about the heir's neck, who is forced to wear it while it rots off, which is no great penance, all ſtinks being perfumes to a Hottentot. All the relations alſo wear the cauls of ſheep about their necks; which it ſeems is their mourning, unleſs the children of the deceaſed are ſo poor, that they cannot kill a ſheep; and then they ſhave their heads in furrows of about an inch broad, leaving the hair on of the ſame breadth between every furrow.

It is not an eaſy matter to come at an Hottentot's religious notions; he is ſparing of his words, and laconic in his anſwers upon all occaſions; but when religious topics are introduced, he generally conceals his ſentiments in ſilence. Some on this account have doubted whether the Hottentots have any religion at all; but the moſt intelligent among the Dutch at the Cape poſitively affirm, that they believe in a Supreme Being, whom they ſtile Gounya Taquoa, or a God of Gods, and fancy that his place of reſidence is beyond the moon. They allow Gounya Taquoa is a humane benevolent being, yet they have no mode of worſhipping him; for which they give this reaſon, "That he curſed their firſt parents for having greatly offended him, on which account their poſterity have never from that time paid him adoration." They believe that the

moon

moon is an inferior viſible god, and the repreſentative of the high and inviſible: that ſhe has the direction of the weather; and therefore they pray to her when it is unſeaſonable. They never fail to aſſemble and worſhip this planet at the new and full moon, let the weather be never ſo bad; and though they diſtort their bodies, grin, and put on very frightful looks, crying and howling in a terrible manner, yet they have ſome expreſſions that ſhew their veneration and dependance on this inferior deity; as 'Mutſchi Atze, I ſalute you; you are welcome; Cheraqua kaka chori Ounqua, grant us paſture for our cattle and plenty of milk.' Theſe and other prayers to the moon they repeat, frequently dancing and clapping their hands all the while; and, at the end of every dance, crying, Ho, ho, ho, ho! raiſing and falling their voices, and uſing abundance of odd geſtures, that appear ridiculous to European ſpectators; and which no doubt, made them at firſt, before they knew any thing of their language, conclude, that this could not be the effect of devotion, eſpecially when the people themſelves told them, it was not an act of religion, but only intended for their diverſion. They continue thus ſhouting, ſinging and dancing, with proſtrations on the earth, the whole night, and even part of the next day, with ſome ſhort intervals, never reſting, unleſs they are quite ſpent with the violence of the action; and then they ſquat down upon their heels, holding their heads between their hands, and reſting their elbows on their knees; and, after a little time, they ſtart up again, and fall to ſinging and dancing in a circle as before, with all their might.

The Hottentots alſo adore a fly about the bigneſs of a hornet, called by ſome the gold beetle; whenever they ſee this inſect approach their kraal, they all aſſemble about it, and ſing and dance round it while it remains there, ſtrewing over it the powder of buchu, by botaniſts called ſpiræm; which when it is dried and pulverized, they always powder themſelves with it at feſtivals. They ſtrew the ſame powder alſo over the tops of their tents, and over the whole area of the kraal, as a teſtimony

a teſtimony of their veneration for the adored fly. They ſacrifice alſo two ſheep as a thankſgiving for the favour ſhewn their kraal, believing they ſhall certainly proſper after ſuch a viſit: and, if this inſect happens to light upon a tent, they look upon the owner of it for the future as a ſaint, and pay him more than uſual reſpect. The beſt ox of the kraal alſo is immediately ſacrificed, to teſtify their gratitude to the little winged deity, and to honour the ſaint he has been pleaſed thus to diſtinguiſh: to whom the entrails of the beaſt, the choiceſt morſel in their opinion, with the fat and the caul is preſented; and the caul being twiſted like a rope, the ſaint ever after wears it like a collar about his neck day and night, till it putrifies and rots off; and the ſaint only feaſts upon the entrails of the beaſt, while the reſt of the kraal feed upon the joints, that are not in ſo high eſteem among them: with the fat of the ſacrifice alſo the ſaint anoints his body from time to time, till it is all ſpent; and, if the fly lights upon a woman ſhe is no leſs reverenced by the neighbourhood, and entitled to the like privileges. It is ſcarce poſſible to expreſs the agonies the Hottentots are in, if any European attempts to take or kill one of theſe inſects, as the Dutch will ſometimes ſeem to attempt, to put them in a fright: they will beg and pray, and fall proſtrate on the ground, to procure the liberty of this little creature, if it falls into a Dutchman's hands; they are on ſuch an occaſion, in no leſs conſternation than the Indians near Fort St. George, when the kite with a white head, which they worſhip, is in danger. If a ſoldier takes one of theſe alive, and threatens to wring the neck of it off, the Indians will gather in crowds about him, and immediately collect the value of a ſhilling or two, to purchaſe the liberty of the captive bird they adore. But to return to the Hottentots: they imagine if this little bird ſhould be killed, all the cattle would die of diſeaſes, or be deſtroyed by wild beaſts; and they themſelves ſhould be the moſt miſerable of men, and look upon that kraal to be doomed to ſome imminent misfortune, where this animal ſeldom appears.

The

The Hollanders have ſent ſeveral reverend divines to the cape as miſſionaries, who have ſpared no pains to bring the Hottentots off from their idolatry, and induce them to embrace Chriſtianity; even their covetouſneſs and ambition have been applied to, and temporal rewards offered them, on condition of their being inſtructed in the principles of Chriſtianity. But no motives whatever, whether thoſe relating to this or another ſtate, have yet been able to make the leaſt impreſſion on any one of them: they hold faſt and hug their ancient ſuperſtitions, and will hear of no other religion. The reaſon that they neither imitate the Europeans in their building, planting or cloathing, is becauſe they imagine themſelves to be religiouſly obliged to follow the cuſtoms of their anceſtors; and that, if they ſhould deviate from them in the leaſt of theſe matters, it might make way for a total change of their religion and manners, which they cannot think of without abhorrence. One of the Dutch governors at the Cape, bred up an Hottentot from his infancy, obliging him to follow the faſhions and cuſtoms of the Europeans, to be taught ſeveral languages, and to be fully inſtructed in the principles of the Chriſtian religion, cloathing him handſomely, and treating him, in all reſpects, as a perſon for whom he had a high eſteem; and let him know, that he deſigned him for ſome beneficial and honourable employment. The governor afterwards ſent him a voyage to Batavia, where he was employed, under the commiſſary his friend, for ſome time, till that gentleman died; and then he returned to the Cape of Good Hope: but, having paid a viſit to the Hottentots of his relations and acquaintance, he threw off all his fine cloaths, bundled them up, and laid them at the governor's feet, and deſired he would give him leave to renounce his Chriſtianity, and live and die in the religion and cuſtoms of his anceſtors; only begged the governor would give him leave to keep the hanger and collar he wore for his ſake; which while the governor was deliberating with himſelf upon, ſcarce believing the fellow to be in earneſt, the young Hottentot took the oppor-

tunity of running away, and never came to the Cape afterwards, thinking himſelf extremely happy that he had exchanged his European cloaths for a ſheep ſkin, and the reſt of the Hottentots dreſs and ornaments: the Engliſh Eaſt India company, we are informed, made the like experiment, bringing over two of that nation hither, whom they cloathed decently after the European manner, and uſed them, in all reſpects, with the greateſt goodneſs and gentleneſs, hoping, by that means to be better informed of the condition of their country, and whether it might be worth the while to make a ſettlement there: but the two Hottentots only learnt Engliſh enough to bewail their misfortune in being brought from their country and their friends; and, after two years trial of them, being again ſet on ſhore at the Cape, they immediately ſtripped off their European cloaths, and, having taken up the ſheep mantle again, rejoiced beyond meaſure for their happy eſcape from the Engliſh.

The poor Hottentots ſometimes employ themſelves in making arms, viz. bows and arrows, lances and darts, bartering them with the rich for cattle, to begin the world with: others get elephants teeth, and what they do not uſe in making rings and ornaments for themſelves, are generally diſpoſed of, it is thought, to the Portugueſe, and other Europeans who touch at Terra de Natal, and other parts of the eaſtern or weſtern coaſt.

The Hottentots ſell very few teeth to the Dutch; though it is manifeſt they kill abundance of elephants: they ſupply the Hollanders however with cattle, and take wine, brandy or tobacco, in return; and an ox may be purchaſed of them for a pound of tobacco, and a large ſheep for half a pound.

As to coin, the reader will conclude they have none; nor do they ever ſee any, unleſs ſome ſmall pieces of money the Dutch ſometimes give them for their wages at the Cape; and it muſt not be forgot, that the Hottentots find abundance of oſtrich's eggs in the ſand, which they barter with the ſea-faring men, that touch at the Cape, for brandy and tobacco; every ſailor almoſt being

being proud of bringing home one of theſe egg ſhells to his friends, after he has fried and eaten the yolk, which makes a large pancake, and is pretty good food, but rather of the ſtrongeſt.

Their butchers are ſaid to be great artiſts in their way, and to handle a knife as dexterouſly as an anatomiſt: having tied the hind and fore legs of a ſheep, they throw the creature on his back, and with cords two of them extend it to its full ſtretch, while a third rips it up; ſo that all the entrails appear: then, with one hand, he tears the guts from the carcaſe, and with the other ſtirs the blood, avoiding, as much as he can, the breaking any of the blood-veſſels about the heart; ſo that the ſheep is a long time a dying: in the mean time he gives the guts to another, who juſt rids them of the filth, and rinces them in water, and part of them are boiled and eaten amongſt them, before the ſheep is well dead: having ſcooped the blood out of the body of the animal with their hands or ſea ſhells, they cut the reſt of the guts in ſmall pieces, and ſtrew them in the blood, which is the Hottentots favourite diſh. An ox alſo is killed in the ſame barbarous manner; being thrown upon his back, and his legs extended with cords, he is ripped up, and his guts taken out firſt; in which cruel operation the beaſt is half an hour a dying: they ſeparate the parts with great exactneſs, dividing the fleſh, the bones, the membranes, muſcles, veins, and arteries, and laying them in ſeveral parcels, every thing entire. The bones alſo are taken out of the fleſh, and laid together in ſuch order, that they might be eaſily formed into an exact ſkeleton: theſe they boil by themſelves, and get the marrow out of them, with which they anoint their bodies. Of the ſheep ſkin, as has been obſerved already, they make a mantle, if it be large; but, if it is ſmall, they cut it into thongs, to adorn their women's legs: and the hide of an ox ſerves either to cover their tents, or to make girts or ſtraps of, with which they bind their baggage on their carriage oxen when they decamp; and, if they have no other uſe for their ox-hides, they lay them by, and eat them when they want other food.

They have another artificer, who is both ſelmonger and taylor: that is, he dreſſes ſkins after their way, and then makes them into mantles: he takes a ſheep ſkin juſt flayed off, and, rubbing it well with fat, the ſkin becomes tough and ſmooth; and if it be for one of his countrymen, he rubs it over alſo with freſh cow-dung, and lays it in the ſun till it is dry: then he rubs it with fat and cow dung again; which he repeats ſeveral times, till it becomes perfectly black, and ſtinks ſo that no European can bear it; and then, with a little ſhaping and ſewing, it is a compleat mantle for a Hottentot: but, if it be dreſſed for a Dutchman, he only rubs the ſkin well with fat, which ſecures the wool from coming off. If he be to dreſs an ox's hide, he rubs the hairy ſide with wood aſhes; then ſprinkling it with water, rolls it up, and lays it a day or two in the ſun; which expedient effectually brings off the hair; this ſkin is then well greaſed, ſtretched out, and dried again, when it is deemed good leather.

Their ſmiths do not only faſhion their iron, but melt it from the ore: they find plenty of iron ſtones in ſeveral parts of their country; and having got a heap of theſe, they put them into a hole in the ground, heated and prepared for the purpoſe: then they make a fire over the ſtones, which they ſupply with fuel, and keep it up till the iron melts; and then it runs into another hole, which they make for a receiver, a little lower than the firſt: as ſoon as the iron in the receiver is cold, they break it to pieces with ſtones; and, heating the pieces again in other fires, beat them with ſtones, till they ſhape them into the heads of lances, darts, arrows, and bows, and ſuch weapons as they uſe; for they ſcarce ever form any other utenſils, but arms of this metal: they get the hardeſt flat ſtone, according to Monſieur Vogel, and, laying the iron upon it, as upon an anvil, beat it with another round ſtone, which ſerves them for a hammer; then they grind it upon the flat ſtone, and poliſh it as nicely as any European artificer could do with all his tools: they have ſome copper ore too, which they melt in like manner: but they make only toys and

ornaments

ornaments for their dreſs of this metal: nor, indeed, do they ever work in iron, but when they want weapons. They would never labour, if their neceſſities did not ſometimes compel them to it: but, when they do, no people work harder, or more indefatigably; for for they never leave a piece of work till they have finiſhed it.

The ivory-turner makes the ivory rings that are worn ornamentally about the arms; and conſidering that his only tool is a common claſp knife, which he procures from the Dutch, the workmanſhip has great merit.

The potter, or maker of earthen veſſels, is another art; but this, it ſeems, they are all dextrous at, every family making the pots and pans they want. For theſe they uſe only the earth of ant-hills, clearing them of all ſand and gravel; after which they work it together with bruiſed ants eggs, that are ſaid to conſtitute an extraordinary cement. When they have moulded theſe materials into a kind of paſte, they take as much of them as will make one of their pots, and faſhion it by hand upon a flat ſtone, making it of the form of a Roman urn; then they ſmooth it within and without very carefully, not leaving the leaſt roughneſs upon the ſurface; and, having dried it in the ſun two or three days, they put the pot into a hole in the ground, and burn it by making a fire over it; and, when they take it out, it appears perfectly black: every family alſo make their own mats, with which they cover their tents or huts; but this is chiefly the buſineſs of the women: they gather the flags and ruſhes by the river ſide, and weave or plat them into mats ſo cloſely, it is ſaid, that neither the weather or light can penetrate them.

The laſt artificer we ſhall mention is the rope-maker, who has no better materials than ſuch flags and ruſhes as the mats are made of; and yet they appear almoſt as ſtrong as thoſe made of hemp: the Dutch, at the Cape, buy and uſe them in plowing, and in draught-carriages.

As

As to the way of travelling here, the natives all travel on foot, except the aged and infirm; and theſe are carried on their baggage oxen. As there are no inns or places for refreſhment, the travelling Hottentot calls at the kraals in his way, where he meets with a hearty welcome from hiscountrymen, who endeavour to ſhew their hoſpitality toſtrangers, whether of their own country or of Europe. Such indeed is the general urbanity of theſe people, and their ſtrict integrity when any confidence is placed in them, that when the Hollanders travel either on foot or horſeback, if they cannot reach an European ſettlement, they alſo call at the kraals of the Hottentots, where they are complimented with a hut, and ſuch proviſions as they have; or they may lie in the area of the kraal, in the open air, if they pleaſe, and the weather be good; and here they are ſecure, both from robbers and wild beaſts; for the Buſhis banditti on the mountains are dangerous, as they give no quarter; but the Hottentot nations in general hold them in abhorrence, and unanimouſly concur in ſeizing and puniſhing them upon all occaſions.

Their language is very inarticulate and defective; one word ſignifies ſeveral things, the definitive meaning being determined by the manner of pronouncing; and the pronunciation is ſo harſh and confuſed, that they ſeem to ſtammer in all they ſpeak. Hence, though they are eaſily taught to underſtand other languages, they can ſeldom be brought to ſpeak them with any degree of intelligibility.

We ſhall here ſubjoin a ſmall Hottentot vocabulary, for the ſatisfaction of the curious; khauna, ſignifies a lamb; kgou, a gooſe; bunqvaa, trees; knomin, to hear; quaqua, a pheaſant; tkaka, a whale; horri, beaſts in general; knabou, a fowling-piece; qua-araho, a wild ox; ouncqua, the arms; quienkha, to fall; likhanee, a dog; konkequa, a captain; quas, the neck; quan, the heart; kgoyes, a buck or doe; tikquoa, a god; komma, a houſe; khoaa, a cat; kowkuri, iron; konkerey, a hen; thoukou, a dark night; tkoume, rice; ghoudie, a ſheep; toya, the wind; ttkaa, a valley;

ley ; tkaonoklau, gunpowder ; kamkamma ; the heart ; quaouw, thunder ; duckatere, a duck, kamma, water ; quayha, an aſs ; naew, the ears ; kirri, a ſtick ; nombha, the beard ; ka-a, to drink ; durieſa, an ox ; hek-kaa, an ox of burden ; ounvie, butter ; houteo, a ſea-dog ; bikgua, the head ; kamma, a ſtag ; konquil, a pigeon ; anthuri, to-morrow ; kou, a tooth ; khamouna, the devil ; hakqua, a horſe ; koo, a ſon ; kammo, a ſtream ; tika, graſs ; toqua, a wolf ; koanqua, the mouth ; khou, a peacock ; gona, a boy ; gois, a girl ; khoakamma, a baboon ; kerhanehou, a ſtar ; mu, an eye ; tquaſſouw, a tyger.

The Hottentots have only ten numerical terms, which they repeat twice to expreſs the multiplication of the firſt term, and three times to expreſs the re-multiplication of the latter. Their terms are : q'kui, one ; k'kam, two ; kouna, three ; kakka, four ; koo, five ; nanni, ſix ; kounko, ſeven ; khiſſi, eight ; khaſſi, nine ; ghiſſi, ten.

Thus have we given a circumſtantial and full account of the Cape, its inhabitants, productions, and adjacent country ; from whence the French at Mauritius, are ſupplied by the Dutch with ſalted beef, biſcuit, flour, and wine : the proviſions for which the French contracted this year were five hundred thouſand lb. weight of ſalt beef, four hundred thouſand lb. of flour, four hundred thouſand lb. of biſcuit, and one thouſand two hundred leagers of wine. We have only to add to this account a few obſervations on the bay and garriſon. The former is large, ſafe, and exceeding convenient. It is indeed open to the N. W. winds, but they ſeldom blow hard ; yet as they ſometimes occaſion a great ſea, the ſhips moor N. E. and S. W. The S. E. winds blow frequently with great fury, but their direction being right out of the bay, prevents them from being dangerous. For the convenience of landing and ſhipping goods, a wharf of wood is run out near the town, to a proper diſtance. Water is conveyed in pipes to this wharf, and many large boats and hoys are kept by the company to carry ſtores and proviſions to

and

and from the ſhipping in the harbour. This bay is covered by a ſmall fort on the E. ſide of the town, and cloſe to the beach; and is alſo defended by ſeveral outworks and batteries extending along the ſhore, as well on this ſide the town as the other; nevertheleſs they are by their ſituation expoſed to the ſhipping, and in a manner defenceleſs againſt an enemy of any force, by land. As to the garriſon, this conſiſts of eight hundred regular troops, beſides militia of the country, in which laſt is comprehended every man able to bear arms. By ſignals they can alarm the country in a very ſhort time, and when they are made, the militia is to repair immediately to their place of rendezvous in the town.

On the 14th of April, in the morning, we weighed, ſtood out of the bay, and anchored at five in the evening under Penguin, or Robin iſland. Here we lay all night, and being prevented from ſailing by the wind, the captain diſpatched a boat to the iſland for a few trifling articles, which we had omitted to take in at the Cape; when our people drew near the ſhore, they were warned by the Dutch not to land at their peril. At the ſame time ſix men armed with muſkets, paraded upon the beach. The commanding officer in the boat did not think it prudent to riſk the lives of the men on account of a few cabbages, and therefore returned without them to the ſhip.

To this iſland the Dutch at the Cape baniſh ſuch criminals as are not thought worthy of death, for a certain number of years, according to the nature of their crimes. They are employed as ſlaves in digging lime-ſtones, which, though ſcarce upon the continent, is here in great abundance. A Daniſh ſhip touched at this iſland, having been refuſed aſſiſtance at the Cape, and ſending her boat on ſhore, overpowered the guard, and then took as many of the criminals as were neceſſary to navigate her home; for ſhe had loſt great part of her crew by ſickneſs. To this incident we attributed our repulſe, concluding, that the Dutch, to prevent a ſimilar reſcue of their priſoners, had ordered their garriſon at this

this place, not to ſuffer any boat of foreign nations to land the crew, and come aſhore.

On the 25th, we put to ſea, and about four o'clock in the afternoon died our maſter, Mr. Robert Molineux, a youth of good parts, but unhappily for his own ſelf preſervation too much addicted to intemperance, a habit we would caution all thoſe who undertake long voyages to avoid, if they have any regard to perſonal ſafety. We now continued our voyage without any other remarkable incident, and on the 29th, we croſſed our firſt meridian, having circumnavigated the globe from E. to W. and conſequently loſt a day, for which, upon correcting our reckoning at Batavia, we made an allowance. On the 1ſt of May, we came to anchor at break of day, before James's fort, in the iſland of St. Helena, and as we propoſed to refreſh here, Mr. Banks employed his time in viſiting the moſt remarkable places, and in ſurveying every object worthy of notice.

St. Helena is ſituated in the Atlantic ocean, in 6 degrees W. long. and 16 S. lat. almoſt in the midway between Africa and America, being 1200 miles diſtant from the former, and 1800 from the latter. It was ſo named by the Portugueſe, who diſcovered it on St. Helen's-day. This iſland is thirty-ſix miles long, eighteen broad, and about ſixty-one in circumference. It is the ſummit of an immenſe mountain riſing out of the ſea, and of a depth unfathomable at a ſmall diſtance round it. It may be diſcerned at ſea, at above twenty leagues diſtance, and looks like a caſtle in the middle of the ocean, whoſe natural walls are of that height, that there is no ſcaling them. The ſmall valley called Chapel-valley, in a bay on the eaſt ſide of it, is defended by a battery of 40 or 50 great guns, planted even with the water, and the waves daſhing perpetually on the ſhore, make it difficult landing even here.

There is alſo another little creek, where two or three may land at a time, but this is defended by a attery of five or ſix guns, and rendered inacceſſible.

No anchorage is found any where about the iſland, but at Chapel-valley bay, and as the wind always ſets from the S. E. if a ſhip overſhoots the iſland ever ſo little, ſhe cannot recover it again. The ſeat of volcanoes has been found to be the higheſt part of the countries in which they are found. Hecla is the higheſt hill in Iceland, and the Peak of Teneriffe is known to be the covering of the ſubterraneous fire. Theſe are ſtill burning: but there are other mountains which bear evident marks of fire that is now extinct: among theſe is St. Helena, where the inequalities of the ground, and its external ſurface, are evidently the effects of the ſinking of the earth, and that this was cauſed by ſubterraneous fire, is equally manifeſt, from the ſtones, or ſome of them, eſpecially thoſe from the bottom of the vallies, are burnt almoſt to cinders.

This iſland, as the Endeavour approached it on the windward ſide, appeared like a rude heap of rocks, bounded by precipices of an amazing height, and conſiſting of a kind of ſtone, which ſhews not the leaſt ſign of vegetation. Sailing along ſhore, we came near the huge cliffs, that ſeemed to overhang the ſhip. At length we opened Chapel-valley, which reſembles a trench, and in this valley we diſcovered the town. The ſides of it are naked as the cliffs next the ſea, but the body is ſlightly cloathed with herbage. In its preſent cultivated ſtate, ſuch appeared the iſland to us, and the firſt hills muſt be paſſed, before the country diſplays its verdure, or any other marks of fertility.

In Chapel-valley, a little beyond the landing-place, is a fort where the governor reſides with the garriſon, and the town ſtands juſt by the ſea-ſide. The greater part of the houſes are ill built. The church, which was originally a mean ſtructure, is in ruins, and the market-place nearly in the ſame condition. The town conſiſts of about forty or fifty buildings, conſtructed after the Engliſh faſhion, whither the people of the iſland reſort when any ſhipping appears, as well

well to aſſiſt in the defence of the iſland, as to entertain the ſeamen if they are friends: for the governor has always ſentinels on the higheſt part of the iſland, to the windward, who give notice of the approach of all ſhipping, and guns are thereupon fired, that every man may reſort to his poſt. It is impoſſible for an enemy to approach by ſea in the night-time, and if diſcovered the day before, preparations are ſpeedily made for his reception.

Notwithſtanding the iſland appears a barren rock on every ſide, yet, on the top it is covered with a fine layer of earth, producing grain, fruits, and herbs of various kinds; and the country after we aſcended the rocks, is diverſified with riſing hills and plains, plantations of fruit trees and kitchen gardens, among which the houſes of the natives are interſperſed, and in the open fields are herds of cattle grazing, ſome of which are fatted to ſupply the ſhipping, and the reſt furniſh the dairies with milk, butter, and cheeſe. Hogs, goats, turkeys, and all manner of poultry, alſo abound, and the ſeas are well ſtored with fiſh. But amidſt all this affluence, the people have neither bread nor wine of their own growth; for though the ſoil is proper for wheat, yet the rats that harbour in the rocks, and cannot be deſtroyed, eat up all the ſeed before the grain is well out of the ground: and though their vines flouriſh and produce them grapes enough, yet the latitude is too hot for making wine. This they have therefore from the Canaries, the Madeiras, or the Cape, as well as their flour and malt. Their very houſes are ſome of them brought from Europe ready framed, there being no timber on the iſland, trees not taking deep root here, on account of the rock that lies ſo near the ſurface: however, they have underwood enough for neceſſary uſes. Beſides grapes, they have plantains, bananas, figs, lemons, and ſuch other fruits as hot countries uſually produce.

In the year 1701, there were upon the iſland about 200 families, moſt of them Engliſh, or deſcended from

Engliſh parents. Every family has a houſe and plantation on the higher part of the iſland, where they look after their cattle, fruits, and kitchen garden. They ſcarce ever come down to the town, unleſs it be to church, or when the ſhipping arrives, when moſt of the houſes in the valley, are converted into punch-houſes, or lodgings for their gueſts, to whom they ſell their poultry, and other commodities: but they are not ſuffered to purchaſe any merchandiſe of the ſhips that touch here.

Whatever they want of foreign growth or manufacture, they are obliged to buy in the company's warehouſe, where twice every month they may furniſh themſelves with brandy, European or Cape wines, Batavia arracks, malt, beer, ſugar, tea, coffee, china, and japan ware, linen, calicoes, chintz, muſlins, ribbands, woollen cloth, and ſtuffs, and all manner of cloathing, for which they are allowed ſix months credit. Among the very few native productions of this iſland muſt be reckoned ebony, though the trees are now nearly extinct. Pieces of this wood are frequently found in the vallies of a fine black colour, and hardneſs almoſt equal to iron; theſe pieces, however, are ſo ſhort and crooked, that no uſe can be made of them.

There are a few inſects here, but upon the tops of the higheſt ridges a ſpecies of ſnail is found, which has probably been there ſince the original creation of their kind. It is indeed very difficult to conceive how any thing not formed here, or brought hither by the diligence of man, could find its way to a place ſo ſevered from the reſt of the world, by ſeas of immenſe extent.

The Portugueſe, who diſcovered this iſland in 1502, ſtored it with hogs, goats, and poultry, and uſed to touch at it for water and freſh proviſions in their return from India, but we do not find they ever planted a colony here, or if they did, having deſerted it afterwards, the Engliſh Eaſt-India Company took poſſeſſion of the iſland A. D. 1600, and held it till 1673, without

out interruption, when the Dutch took it by ſurprize. However, the Engliſh, commanded by Captain Munden, recovered it again, within the ſpace of a year, and took three Dutch Eaſt India ſhips that lay in the road at the ſame time. The Hollanders had fortified the landing place, and placed batteries of great guns to prevent a deſcent: but the Engliſh being acquainted with a ſmall creek where only two men could go a-breaſt, climbed up to the top of the rocks in the night time, and appearing next morning at the backs of the Dutch, they threw down their arms, and ſurrendered the iſland without ſtriking a ſtroke: but as we have before obſerved, this creek has been ſince fortified: ſo that there is now no place where an enemy can make a deſcent with any probability of ſucceſs.

The affairs of the Eaſt-India Company are managed here by a governor, deputy-governor, and ſtore-houſe-keeper, who have certain ſettled ſalaries allowed, beſides a public table, well furniſhed, to which all commanders, maſters of ſhips, and eminent paſſengers are welcome.

The maſters of the plantations keep a great many blacks, who, upon ſevere treatment, hide themſelves for two or three months together, keeping among the rocks by day, and roving by night for proviſions: but they are generally diſcovered and taken.

The children and deſcendants of white people have not the leaſt red in their cheeks, in all other places near the tropics: but the natives of St. Helena are remarkable for their ruddy complexions and robuſt conſtitutions. Their healthfulneſs may, in general, be aſcribed to the following cauſes. They live on the top of a mountain always open to the ſea breezes that conſtantly blow here: they are uſually employed in the moſt healthful exerciſes of gardening and huſbandry: the iſland is frequently refreſhed with moderate cooling ſhowers, and no noxious fens nor ſalt marſhes annoy them.

As

As to the genius and temper of theſe people, they ſeemed to us the moſt honeſt, the moſt inoffenſive, and the moſt hoſpitable people we ever met with of Engliſh extraction, having ſcarce any tincture of avarice and ambition. We aſked ſome of them, if they had no curioſity to ſee the reſt of the world, and how they could confine themſelves to ſo ſmall a ſpot of earth, ſeparated at ſuch a diſtance from the reſt of mankind? They replied, that they enjoyed the neceſſaries of life in great plenty: they were neither parched with exceſſive heat, or pinched with cold: they lived in perfect ſecurity, in no danger of enemies, of robbers, wild beaſts, or rigorous ſeaſons; and were happy in the enjoyment of a continued ſtate of health: that as there were no rich men among them (ſcarce any planter being worth more than 1000 dollars) ſo there was no poor in the iſland, no man being worth leſs than 400 dollars, and conſequently not obliged to undergo more labour than was neceſſary to keep them in health.

Our thoughts were now employed on returning to our native ſhore; and having ſufficiently recruited our ſtores, on Saturday the 4th of May, we weighed, and ſailed out of the road in company with the Portland man of war, and his convoy, conſiſting of twelve ſail of Eaſt-Indiamen. With this fleet we continued our courſe for England until Friday the 10th, when when perceiving they outſailed us, and conſequently might make their port before us, Capt. Cook for this reaſon, made the ſignal to ſpeak to the Portland, upon which Capt. Elliot came on board the Endeavour; to whom a letter for the Admiralty was delivered, with a box, containing the common log books of the ſhip, and the journals of ſome of the officers. We did not loſe ſight of the fleet till the 23d, when they parted from us; and about one o'clock in the afternoon, we loſt our firſt lieutenant, Mr. Hicks, an active, ſkilful, judicious, and uſeful officer. He died of a conſumption, of which lingering diſorder he diſcovered

covered ſome ſymptoms when he left England; ſo that it may be truly ſaid, that he was dying the whole voyage. The whole ſhip's company attended the funeral rites, and in the evening we committed his body to the ſea with the uſual ceremonies. The next day the Captain appointed Mr. Charles Clerk, a young man, to act in the room of Mr. Hicks.

We now every day drew nearer our deſired haven; but what muſt be the condition of our once good ſhip, the Endeavour, may eaſily be imagined, from a ſlight recollection of the hardſhips ſhe had ſurmounted, and the dangers ſhe had providentially eſcaped. At this time our rigging and ſails were ſo weather-beaten, that every day ſomething was giving way. However we held on our courſe without any material occurrence that might endanger our ſafety, till Monday the 10th of June, when to our great joy, Nicholas Young, the boy who diſcovered New Zealand, called out land from the maſt-head, which proved to be the Lizard.

The next day, being Tueſday the 11th, we proceeded up the channel. On Wedneſday the 12th, with the pleaſing hopes of ſeeing our relatives and friends, exciting ſenſations not to be deſcribed by the pen of the moſt able writer, we paſſed Beachy Head. At noon, to our inexpreſſible joy we were a-breaſt of Dover; and about three o'clock, P. M. we came to an anchor in the Downs. When we landed at Deal, our ſhip's company indulged freely that mirth, and ſociable jollity, common to all Engliſh ſailors upon their return from a long voyage, who as readily forget hardſhips and dangers, as with alacrity and bravery they encounter them.

We cannot cloſe this book, without duly conſidering the wonderful protection of the Endeavour in caſes of danger the moſt imminent, particularly when encircled in the wide ocean, with rocks of coral, her ſheathing beaten off, and her falſe keel floating by her ſide, a hole in her bottom, and the men by turns

fainting

fainting at the pumps, cannot but acknowledge the exiſtence of particular Providence. This our countrymen experienced, and we have good authority to aſſert, that our company in the Endeavour do acknowledge, that the hand of ſuperior power was particularly concerned in their protection and deliverance. This omniſcient and omnipotent power is the incumbent duty of every chriſtian to believe, confide in, and adore.

END OF THE FIRST VOYAGE.

CAPTAIN COOK'S
SECOND VOYAGE
TOWARDS THE
South Pole and Round the World, &c.

Begun the 9th of April, 1772, and concluded on the 31ſt of July. 1775.

INTRODUCTION.

THE King's expectations were not wholly anſwered by former diſcoveries, which were ſo highly blazoned both at home and abroad, and therefore his majeſty projected this ſecond voyage of Capt. Cook, the navy-board was ordered to equip two ſuch ſhips as were moſt ſuitable to the ſervice. Accordingly two veſſels were purchaſed; the largeſt of the two named the Reſolution, burthen 462 tons, and ſent to Deptford to be fitted out; and the Adventure 336 tons, equipped at Woolwich.

On the 28 of Nov. 1771, Captain Cook was appointed to the command of the Reſolution; and Tobias Furneaux, who had been ſecond lieutenant with Captain Wallis, was promoted to the command of the Adventure. The Reſolution had 112 hands on board, officers included: and the Adventure 81. In the former, James Cook was captain, Robert P. Cooper, Charles Clerke, and Richard Pickerſgill, were appointed lieutenants. Joſeph Gilbert was maſter; James Grey, boatſwain; James Wallis, Carpenter; Robert Anderſon, gunner; and James Patten, ſurgeon. In the Adventure, Tobias Furneaux was captain, Joſeph Shank, and Arthur Kemp, lieutenants; Peter Fannin was appointed maſter, Edward

Johns, boatſwain, William Offerd, carpenter, Andrew Gloag, gunner, Thomas Andrews, ſurgeon.

The two ſhips were got in readineſs with the utmoſt expedition, and both the navy and victualling boards paid an uncommon attention to their equipment. Indeed Captain Cook ſailed with greater advantages in this expedition, than any of his predeceſſors who had gone out before on diſcoveries. He had the frame of a veſſel of 21 tons, one for each ſhip, to ſerve occaſionally, or upon any emergency, to ſerve as tenders: he had on board fiſhing nets, lines and hooks of every kind; he was ſupplied with innumerable articles of ſmall value, adapted to the commerce of the tropical iſlands. The two ſhips were victualled and provided with all manner of neceſſaries for a three years voyage.

A propoſed voyage attended with ſuch extraordinary preparations, patronized by parliament, as well as royal bounty, and the execution of which being ſuperintended by the firſt officers of the admiralty, the navy, and by Captain Cook himſelf, we do not heſitate to pronounce one of the moſt important that ever was performed in any age, or by any country; and we may alſo with truth aſſert, that the able navigator made choice of by his majeſty, was equal to the taſk in which he was embarked. Every thinking perſon cannot but admire his ſkill, his fortitude, his care of his men, his vigilance in attending to the minuteſt intimations of former navigators, his perſeverance amidſt the dangers and hardſhips of rigorous ſeaſons, his proweſs in leading his company juſt ſo far as they were capable of proceeding; in ſhort his conduct throughout, which, while he kept every man ſingly in ſtrict obedience to his duty, he conciliated the affections of all, and ſecured their eſteem.

The hiſtory of his ſecond voyage, which we are now about to ſubmit to the judgment of our numerous ſubſcribers, will, we are perſuaded, confirm the truth of this opinion.

CHAP. I.

CHAP. I.

The Reſolution and Adventure take their departure from Deptford—Touch at the iſland of St Jago—Purſue their voyage to the Cape of Good Hope—Departure from the Cape—Continue their voyage in ſearch of a Southern Continent—Sequel of this ſearch—Separation of the ſhips, and the arrival of the Reſolution in Duſky Bay.

THE Reſolution and Adventure dropped down the river as far as Woolwich, on the 9th of April, at which place ſhe was detained by contrary winds; but on the 22d ſailed from thence to Long Reach, where ſhe was joined by her companion the Adventure, and both ſhips took in their marines, guns, and ammunition. May the 10th we ſailed for Plymouth, but before we got out of the river, the Reſolution was found to be very crank, on which account we put into Sheerneſs. While ſome alterations were making in her upper works, Lord Sandwich and Sir Hugh Palliſer paid us a viſit, in order to ſee they were executed in a proper manner. The Reſolution being again ready for ſea, we departed from Sheerneſs. On the 2d of July we met Lord Sandwich, in the Auguſta Yacht, whom we ſaluted with ſeventeen guns, and his Lordſhip accompanied with Sir Hugh Palliſer, honoured us with their preſence on board, which was the laſt inſtance of that very great attention they had paid to a variety of particulars that might tend to promote the ſucceſs of our undertaking.

About this time Capt. Cook received from the Board of Admiralty his inſtructions, dated the 25th of June, the tenor and ſubſtance of which were, that the

the Adventure was to be under his command: that the two ſhips were to proceed to the iſland of Madeira, from thence to the Cape of Good Hope: that having at this place refreſhed the ſhips companies, and ſupplied them with proviſions and other neceſſaries, they were to make the beſt of their way to the ſouthward, in ſearch of Cape Circumciſion, which, by M. Bouvet, is ſaid to be in lat. 54 deg. S. and in about 11 deg. 20 min. E. long. from the Royal Obſervatory in the park at Greenwich; that if they fell in with this Cape, Captain Cook was to endeavour, by all means in his power, to diſcover whether the ſame was part of the ſuppoſed continent which had ſo much employed the national attention of different European powers, or only the promontory of an iſland: that, in either caſe, the gentlemen on board the two ſhips were diligently to explore the ſame, to the utmoſt extent poſſible; and to make ſuch obſervations of various kinds, as might correſpond with the grand object in view, and be in any reſpect uſeful to either navigation or commerce; not omitting at the ſame time, proper remarks on the genius and temper of the inhabitants, whoſe friendſhip and alliance they were directed to conciliate, by all probable motives, and prudential means in their power: that they were to proceed on new diſcoveries to the eaſtward or weſtward, as the captains might judge moſt eligible, endeavouring only to run into as high a latitude, and as near the South Pole as poſſible; that whatever might be the reſult of their inveſtigations with reſpect to Cape Circumciſion, they were to continue their ſurveys to the ſouthward, and then to the eaſtward, either in ſearch of the ſaid continent, ſhould it not have been aſcertained, or to make diſcoveries of ſuch iſlands as might be ſeated in the hitherto unexplored and unknown parts of the ſouthern latitudes: that, having circumnavigated the globe, they were to return to Spithead by the way of the Cape of Good Hope: and that to anſwer the intentions of government in this voyage as fully

fully as poſſible, when the ſeaſon of the year rendered it unſafe to continue in high latitudes, they were to repair to ſome known port to the northward; and after having refitted, &c. they were to return again, at the proper ſeaſon, to the ſouthward, in proſecution of new diſcoveries there.

It may not be amiſs here to obſerve, that theſe orders were not intended in any reſpect to cramp Captain Cook, who was allowed, in caſe the Reſolution ſhould be loſt, to continue his voyage in the Adventure: he had to this end aſſiſtants out of number: his ſtay was not even hinted at: he was not obliged to return at any limited time; in ſhort, he had ample power, full authority, and, in all unforeſeen caſes, he was to proceed according to his own diſcretion, and act entirely as he pleaſed.

A copy of the above inſtructions were tranſmitted to Captain Furneux, incloſed with Captain Cook's orders, in which he appointed, ſhould the two ſhips be ſeparated, the iſland of Madeira for the firſt place of rendezvous, Port Praya for the ſecond, the Cape of Good Hope for the third, and New Zealand for the fourth.

While we remained at Plymouth, our aſtronomers, Mr. Wales and Mr. Bayley, made obſervations on Drake's iſland; when the lat. was found to be 50 deg. 21 min. 30 ſec. N. and the long. 4 deg. 20 min. W. of Greenwich; whereby the true time for putting the time pieces and watches in motion was aſcertained. This was done on the 13th of July, and they were ſet a going in the preſence of the two aſtronomers, Captain Furneaux, Captain Cook, and the two firſt lieutenants of the ſhips. They had each of them keys of the boxes which contained the watches, and were always to be preſent at the winding them up, and comparing the one with the other, unleſs prevented by indiſpoſition.

On the 12th of July, the Reſolution broke from her moorings in the ſound, and was adrift, together with the tranſport buoy to which ſhe was faſtened.

All

All hands were on deck inſtantly, the cables were cleared, and the ſails ſpread. We paſſed the Adventure, and came to an anchor, after having eſcaped the very apparent danger of being daſhed againſt the rocks which are under the fort. This favourable event was looked upon by our ſeamen as an omen to the good ſucceſs of the voyage.

On the 13th, the two ſhips ſailed from Plymouth Sound, in company, and paſſed the Edyſtone, which is a lofty well contrived tower, of the utmoſt advantage to navigation and commerce. As we ſtood off ſhore, the wind increaſed, and the billows rolled higher and higher. On the 20th, we fell in with Cape Ortegal, on the coaſt of Golicia. The ſea now grew perfectly calm, and the proſpect which ſurrounded us was very delightful. When in ſight of Cape Finiſterre, bearing W. S. W. ſeven or eight leagues, we were met by a ſmall French Tartan from Marſeilles, freighted with flour from Ferrol and Corunna. We obtained from them a ſmall ſupply of freſh water, which we much wanted, having been obliged to ſubſiſt on bread and ſour wine.

On the 22d, in the afternoon, we paſſed two Spaniſh men of war, one of which fired a ſhot at the Adventure to bring her to; but on hailing her, and being told we were king's ſhips, made a proper apology, and very politely took leave, wiſhing us a good voyage.

On the 29th, about nine at night, we anchored in Funchiale road, in the iſland of Madeira. After having ſaluted the garriſon with eleven guns, and they had returned the compliment, we went on ſhore, accompanied by Mr. Sills, a gentleman from the vice-conſul, to the houſe of Mr. Loughnans, a conſiderable Engliſh merchant, who aſſiſted us with every accommodation the iſland and houſe afforded, during our ſtay. Here the officers and private men furniſhed themſelves with ſuch ſtocks of wine as they could conveniently purchaſe.

On

On the 1ſt of Auguſt, having ſtowed on board a ſupply of water, wine, and other neceſſaries, we ſet ſail, loſt ſight of Madeira, and ſtood to the ſouthward, with a gentle gale at N. E. On the 4th, we ſaw the pleaſant iſland of Palma, bearing S. S. W. diſtant about three or four leagues. And on Wedneſday the 5th, we paſſed the iſle of Ferro, at the diſtance of fourteen leagues.

Having departed from Madeira on the 1ſt of Auguſt, on the 9th we croſſed the Tropic of Cancer, and at nine in the morning came in ſight of Bonaviſta, bearing S. W. by W. about ten leagues.

On the 10th, we paſſed the iſland of Mayo, on our ſtarboard ſide, and at two P. M. came to an anchor, eighteen fathom water, in Port Praya, in the iſle of St. Jago, one of the Cape de Verds. An officer was ſent on ſhore for leave to procure what refreſhments we wanted, which was readily granted; and on his return, we ſaluted the fort with eleven guns. Here both ſhips were ſupplied with plenty of good water. We alſo recruited our live ſtock, ſuch as hogs, goats, and poultry, ſome of which continued alive during the remainder of the voyage.

On the 14th, both ſhips having got on board a ſupply of refreſhments and proviſions, we weighed anchor, put to ſea, and continued our voyage to the Cape of Good Hope. On the 16th, in the evening, a luminous fiery meteor made its appearance; it was of a bluiſh colour, an oblong ſhape, and had a quick deſcending motion. After a momentary duration, it diſappeared in the horizon. Its courſe was N. N. W.

On the 19th, one of the carpenter's mates fell overboard, and was drowned. He was ſitting on one of the ſcuttles, from whence it was ſuppoſed he fell. All our endeavours to ſave him were in vain, for he was not ſeen till the inſtant he ſunk under the ſhip's ſtern. We felt his loſs very ſenſibly, he being a ſober man, as well as a good workman; and he was much regretted even by his ſhipmates.

On

On the 20th, the rain deſcended not in drops, but in ſtreams, and, at the ſame time, the wind was ſqually and variable, ſo that the people were obliged to keep deck, and of courſe had all wet jackets, an inconvenience very common, and often experienced by ſeamen. However, this diſagreeable circumſtance was attended with good, as it gave us an opportunity of ſpreading our awnings, and filling ſeven empty puncheons with freſh water.

On the 27th, one of Captain Furneaux's petty officers died on board the Adventure; but on board the Reſolution, we had not one man ſick, although a deal of rain fell, which, in ſuch hot climates, is a great promoter of ſickneſs. Captain Cook took every neceſſary precaution for the preſervation of our health, by airing and drying the ſhip with fires made between decks, and by making the crew air their bedding, and waſh their cloaths, at every opportunity. Two men were puniſhed on board the Adventure; one a private marine for quarrelling with the quarter-maſter; the other a common ſailor, for theft. Each of them receiving one dozen. This we mention to ſhew what ſtrict diſcipline it was neceſſary to preſerve on board, in order to eſtabliſh a regular and peaceable behaviour in ſuch hazardous voyages, when men, unaccuſtomed to controul, are apt to prove mutinous.

On Tueſday, September the 8th, we croſſed the line in longitude 8 deg. W. Some of the crew, who had never paſſed the line before, were obliged to undergo the uſual ceremony of ducking; but ſome bought themſelves off, by paying the required forfeit of brandy. Thoſe who ſubmitted to an immerſion, found it very ſalutary, as it cannot well be done too often in warm weather, and a frequent change of linen and cloaths is exceeding refreſhing. On the 14th, a flying fiſh fell on our deck; we caught ſeveral dolphins; ſaw ſome aquatic birds; and, at various intervals, obſerved the ſea covered with numberleſs animals. On Sunday the 27th, a ſail was diſcovered

vered to the W. ſtanding after us; ſhe appeared to be a ſnow, and ſhewed either Portugueſe colours, or St. George's enſign. We did not chuſe to wait till ſhe approached nearer, or to ſpeak to her.

On Monday the 12th, the weather being calm, we amuſed ourſelves with ſhooting ſea-fowl. We were now accompanied by ſheerwaters, pintadoes, &c. and by a ſmall grey peterel. This laſt is leſs than a pigeon, has a grey back, whitiſh belly, and a black ſtroke acroſs from the tip of the wing to that of the other. Theſe are ſouthern birds, and, we believe, never ſeen within the tropics, or north of the line. They viſited us in great flights; and about the ſame time we ſaw ſeveral animals of the moluſca kind, within our reach, together with a violet coloured ſhell, of a remarkable thin texture, and therefore ſeems calculated to keep the open ſea, and not to come near rocky places, it being eaſily broken. Saturday the 17th, we diſcovered a ſail to the N. W. which hoiſted Dutch colours. She kept us company two days, but on the third we out-ſailed her. From the 12th to this day, we had the wind between the N. and E. a gentle gale. On Wedneſday the 21ſt, our latitude was 35 deg. 20 min. S. and our longitude 8 deg. 4 min. 30 ſec. E. From this time to the 23d, the wind continued eaſterly, when it veered to the N. and N. W. After ſome hours calm, we ſaw a ſeal, or as ſome thought, a ſea lion. The wind now fixed at N. W. which carried us to our intended port. As we drew near to the land, the ſea fowl, which had accompanied us hitherto, began to leave us: at leaſt, they did not appear in ſuch numbers; nor did we ſee gannets, or the black bird, commonly called the Cape hen, till we were nearly within ſight of the Cape. On Thurſday the 29th, at two o'clock P. M. we made the land of the Cape of Good Hope, a particular deſcription of which is given in the firſt voyage. The Table Mountain, over the Cape Town, bore E. S. E. diſtant twelve or fourteen leagues: had

it not been obſcured by clouds, it might, from its height, have been ſeen at a much greater diſtance.

Friday the 30th, we ſtood into Table Bay, with the Adventure in company, and anchored in five fathom water. We were now viſited by the maſter-attendant of the fort, ſome other officers belonging to the company, and Mr. Brandt. This laſt gentleman brought off to us many articles that were very acceptable; and the maſter attendant, as is cuſtomary, took an account of the two ſhips, enquiring particularly if the ſmall-pox was on board, a diſorder dreaded above all others by the inhabitants of the Cape; for which reaſon a ſurgeon always attends on theſe viſits.

This day, Captain Cook ſent an officer to wait upon Baron Plettenberg, the governor, to inform him of our arrival, to which he returned a polite anſwer; and on the return of our officer, we ſaluted the fort with eleven guns, which compliment was acknowledged by the ſame number.

Having viſited the governor and ſome of the principal inhabitants, we took up our abode at Mr. Brandt's, the uſual reſidence of moſt officers belonging to Engliſh ſhips. With reſpect to accommodation, this gentleman ſpares neither pains nor expence, in order to favour him with their company. We concerted meaſures with Mr. Brandt for ſupplying us with proviſions, &c. all which he procured without delay, while our men on board were employed in overhauling the rigging, and the carpenters in caulking the ſhips ſides, &c. At the ſame time, Mr. Wales and Mr. Bayley made obſervations for regulating the watches, and other purpoſes. The reſult of theſe was that Mr. Kendal's watch had anſwered beyond our expectations, by determining the longitude of this place to within one minute of time to what it was obſerved in 1761, by Meſſ. Maſon and Dickſon.

During our ſtay here, Mr. Forſter, who employed his time wholly in the purſuit of natural hiſtory and botany,

botany, met with one Mr. Sparman, a Swediſh gentleman, who had ſtudied under Linnæus. Mr. Forſter importuned ſtrongly Capt. Cook to take him aboard; and Mr. Sparman being willing to embark, the captain conſented; and he was engaged under Mr. Forſter, who bore his expences on board, and allowed him a yearly ſtipend beſides.

On the 18th, we had got every thing on board; but it was the 22d before we could put to ſea. In this interval the crews of both ſhips were ſerved every day with freſh beef, or mutton, new baked bread, and what quantity of greens they thought ſufficient; and the two ſhips in every reſpect, were put in as good condition as when they left England. At this time, ſome removes took place in the Adventure. The firſt lieutenant, Mr. Shanks, deſired leave ro reſign, in order to return to England for the recovery of his health, which was granted. Mr. Kemp was appointed firſt lieutenant, and Mr. Burney, one of our midſhipmen, was made ſecond lieutenant, in the room of Mr. Kemp.

On the 22d, we repaired on board, having firſt taken leave of the governor and other officers who, in a moſt obliging manner, had afforded us all the neceſſary aſſiſtance we required. At three o'clock P. M. we weighed, and ſaluted the fort with fifteen guns, which compliment was inſtantly returned. We now ſtood all night to the weſtward, to get clear of the land, during which time, we directed our courſe, as ordered, to Cape Circumciſion. We had a moderate gale from the N. W. point until the 24th, when the wind ſhifted to the eaſtward.

This day, by obſervation at noon, we found ourſelves to be in 35 deg. 25 min. S. lat. and 29 min. W. of the Cape of Good Hope. As we were now directing our courſe towards the antarctic circle, and expected to encounter ſoon with cold weather, the captain ordered a waſte of freſh water to be as much as poſſible prevented; at the ſame time, he ſupplied each man with a fearnought jacket and trowſers, al-

lowed by the Admiralty, and alſo ſlops to ſuch who wanted them. On the 29th, a heavy ſtorm came from the N. N. W. with a few intervals of moderate weather, for nearly a week.

On Sunday, December the 6th, we were in lat. 48 deg. 41 min. S. and in 18 deg. 24 min. E. long. The ſtorm continued, and the roaring of the waves, together with hail, rain, and a great agitation of the veſſel, were circumſtances that rendered our ſituation diſagreeable. A boy in the fore part of the ſhip, hearing a noiſe of water running among the cheſts, turned out, and found himſelf half way up the leg in water; upon which all hands worked at the pumps, but the water increaſed upon us. This was at laſt diſcovered to come through a ſcuttle in the boatſwain's ſtore-room. This gale, attended with hail and rain, continued till the 8th with ſuch fury, that we could carry no ſails; and being driven by this means far to the eaſtward of our intended courſe, not the leaſt hope remained of our reaching Cape Circumciſion. Our diſtreſs was augmented by the loſs of a great part of our live ſtock we had brought from the Cape. Every man felt the effects of the ſudden tranſition from warm to extreme cold weather; for which reaſon an addition was made to the men's allowance of brandy in both ſhips.

On the morning of the 7th, the ſun gave us a flattering proſpect of ſerene weather; but our expectations ſoon vaniſhed; the barometer was unuſually low; and by one o'clock P. M. the wind, which was at N. W. blew with ſuch violence, as obliged us to ſtrike our top-gallant-maſts. On the 8th, the gale was ſomewhat abated; but the ſea ran too high for us to carry more than the fore-top-maſt ſtay-ſail.

On the 9th, at three A. M. we wore ſhip to the ſouthward, ſhowers of ſnow fell, with ſqually weather. At eight, made ſignal for the Adventure to make ſail. On the 10th, made another ſignal for her to lead, and ſaw an iceland to the weſtward of us, in 50 deg. 40 min. S. lat. and 2 deg. E. long. of the

the Cape of Good Hope. The weather being hazy, Captain Cook, by ſignal, called the Adventure under our ſtern; a fortunate circumſtance this; for the fog increaſed ſo much, that we could not diſcern an iſland of ice, for which we were ſteering, till we were leſs than a mile from it. The ſea broke very high againſt this iſland of ice, which Captain Furneaux took for land, and therefore hauled off from it, till he was called back by ſignal. We cannot determine with preciſion on the height or circumference of this ice iſland; but in our opinion, ſuch large bodies muſt drift very ſlowly, for, as the greateſt part of them are under water, they can be little affected either by the winds or waves. It being neceſſary to proceed with great circumſpection, we reefed our top-ſails, and upon ſounding, found no ground with 150 fathoms.

On the 11th, in 51 deg. 50 min. S. lat. and 21 deg. 3 min. E. long. ſaw ſome white birds, and paſſed another large iſland of ice. The birds were about the ſize of pigeons, with blackiſh bills and feet. Captain Cook thought them of the petrel kind, and natives of theſe frozen ſeas. The diſmal ſcene in view, to which we were unaccuſtomed, was varied as well by theſe birds, as ſeveral whales, which made their appearance among the ice, and afforded us ſome idea of a ſouthern Greenland. But though the appearance of the ice, with the waves breaking over it, might afford a few moments pleaſure to the eye, yet could not fail filling us with horror, when we reflected on our danger; for the ſhip would be daſhed to pieces in a moment, were ſhe to get againſt the weather ſide of one of theſe iſlands, when the ſea runs high.

On the 14th, a boat was hoiſted out for two gentlemen to make ſome obſervations and experiments. While they were thus engaged, the fog increaſed ſo much, that they entirely loſt ſight of both of the ſhips. Their ſituation was truly terrific and alarming, as they were only in a ſmall four-oared boat, in an immenſe ocean, ſurrounded with ice, utterly deſtitute

of

of proviſions, and far from any habitable ſhore. They made various efforts to be heard, and rowed about for ſome time, without effect; they could not ſee the length of their boat, nor hear any ſound. They had neither maſt nor ſail, only two oars. They determined to lie ſtill, as the weather was calm, and hoped that the ſhips would not ſwim out of ſight. A bell ſounded at a diſtance, which was heavenly muſic to their ears. They were at laſt taken up by the Adventure, and thus narrowly eſcaped thoſe extreme dangers.

We ſtood to the South on the 17th, when the weather was clear and ſerene, and ſaw ſeveral ſorts of birds, which we were unacquainted with. The ſkirts of the ice ſeemed to be more broken than uſual, and we ſailed among it moſt part of the day; but were obliged to ſtand to the northward, in order to avoid it.

On the 18th we got clear of the ice, but was carried among the ice iſlands, which it was difficult to keep clear of. In the Greenland ſeas, ſuch ice is found all the ſummer long, and it cannot be colder there in ſummer time than it is here. Upon the ſuppoſition that this ice which we have been ſpeaking of is generally formed in bays and rivers, we imagined that land was not far from us, and the ice alone hindered our approaching it.

At laſt we determined to ſail to the eaſtward, and afterwards to the ſouth, and, if we met with no land or impediment, there to get behind the ice, that this matter might be put out of doubt. We found the weather much colder, and all the crew complained of it. Thoſe jackets which were too ſhort were lengthened with baize, and each of them had a cap made of the ſame ſtuff, which kept them as warm as the climate would admit. Scorbutic ſymptoms appearing on ſome of the people, the ſurgeons gave them freſh wort every day, made from the malt we took with us for that purpoſe.

We ſtood once more to the ſouthward on the 22d inſtant. On the 23d, we hoiſted out a boat to make ſuch experiments as were thought neceſſary. We examined

amined ſeveral ſpecies of birds, which we had ſhot as they hovered round us with ſeeming curioſity.

The 25th, being Chriſtmas-day, we were very chearful, and notwithſtanding the ſurrounding rocks of ice, the ſailors ſpent it in ſavage noiſe and drunkenneſs. On the 26th, we ſailed through large quantities of broken ice. We were ſtill ſurrounded with iſlands, which in the evening appeared very beautiful, the edges being tinged by the ſetting ſun. We were now in lat. 58 deg. 31 min. S.

On the 29th, the commanders came to a reſolution, provided they met with no impediment, to run as far weſt as Cape Circumciſion, ſince the ſea ſeemed to be pretty clear of ice, and the diſtance not more than eighty leagues. On this iſland we ſaw a great number of penguins. The ſight of theſe birds is ſaid to be an indication of the vicinity of land. This may hold good where there are no ice iſlands, but not ſo when there are any, for there they find a reſting-place. We will not determine whether there are any females among them at ſo great a diſtance from land, or whether they go on ſhore to breed.

On the 31ſt, we ſtood for this iſland again, but could not take up any of the looſe ice, for the wind increaſed ſo conſiderably, as to make it dangerous for the ſhips to remain among the ice; beſides which, we diſcovered an immenſe field of ice to the north, extending further than the eye could reach. We had no time to deliberate, as we were not above two or three miles from it.

On the 1ſt of January 1773, the gale abated, but there fell a good deal of ſnow and ſleet, which froze on the rigging of the ſhips. The wind continued moderate the next day, and were favoured with a ſight of the moon, whoſe face we had not ſeen ſince we left the Cape of Good Hope. We were now in 59 deg. 12 min. S. lat. and in 9 deg. 45 min. E. long.

On the 8th, we paſſed more ice iſlands, which became very familiar to us. In the evening, we came to one which had a vaſt quantity of looſe ice about it; and

as

as the weather was moderate, we brought to, and ſent the boats out to take up as much as they could. Large piles of it were packed upon the quarter deck, and put into caſks, from which, after it was melted, got water enough for thirty days. A very little ſalt water adhered to the ice, and the water which it produced was very freſh and good. Excepting the melting and taking away the ice, this is a moſt expeditious method of ſupplying the ſhips with water. We obſerved here ſeveral white whales, of an immenſe ſize.

On the 17th, we croſſed the antartic circle; and advanced into the ſouthern frigid zone, which to all former navigators had remained impenetrable. We could ſee ſeveral leagues around us, as the weather was tolerable clear. In the afternoon, we ſaw the whole ſea covered with ice, from S. E. to S. W. We ſaw a new ſpecies of the petrel, of a brown colour, with a white belly and rump, and a large white ſpot on the wings; we ſaw great flights of them, but never any of them fell into the ſhips. We called it antartict petrel, as ſuch numbers of them were ſeen thereabouts.

In the afternoon, we ſaw thirty-eight ice iſlands, large and ſmall. This immenſe field was compoſed of different kinds; ſuch as field-ice, as ſo called by the Greenlanders, and packed ice. Here we ſaw ſeveral whales playing about the ice, and ſtill large flocks of petrels. Our latitude was now 67 deg. 15 min. S.

We did not think it prudent to perſevere in a ſouthern direction, as that kind of ſummer which this part of the world produces was now half ſpent; and it would have taken much time to have gone round the ice, ſuppoſing it practicable; we therefore reſolved to go directly in ſearch of the land lately diſcovered by the French.

On the 29th, ſeveral porpoiſes paſſed up with amazing ſwiftneſs; they had a large white ſpot on their ſides, which came almoſt up to their backs. They went at leaſt three times as faſt as our veſſels, and we went

went at the rate of ſeven knots and a half an hour. On the 31ſt, we paſſed a large ice iſland, which, at the time of our ſailing by, was tumbling to pieces. The exploſion equalled that of a cannon.

On the 1ſt. of Feb. we ſaw large quantities of ſea weed floating by the ſhips. Capt. Furneaux acquainted Capt. Cook, that he had ſeen a number of divers, which very much reſembled thoſe in the Engliſh ſeas, and likewiſe a large bed of floating rock-weed. Theſe were certain ſigns of the vicinity of land; but could not tell whether it was to the E. or W. We imagined that no land of any extent lay to the W. becauſe the ſea ran ſo high from the N. E. N. N. W. and W. we therefore ſteered to the E. lay too in the night, and reſumed our courſe in the morning. We ſteered northward, and made ſignal for the Adventure to follow, as ſhe was rather thrown aſtern by her movement to the eaſtward. We could not find land in that direction, and we again ſteered ſouthward. There was an exceeding thick fog on the 4th, on which we loſt ſight of the Adventure. We fired ſeveral ſignals, but were not anſwered; on which account we had too much reaſon to think that a ſeparation had taken place, though we could not well tell what had been the cauſe of it. Capt. Cook had directed Capt. Furneaux, in caſe of a ſeparation, to cruize three days in that place he laſt ſaw the Reſolution. Capt. Cook accordingly made ſhort boards, and fired half hour guns till the afternoon of the 7th, when the weather cleared up, and the Adventure was not to be ſeen in the limits of that horizon. We were obliged to lie too till the 10th, and notwithſtanding we kept firing guns, and burning falſe fires all night, we neither ſaw nor heard any thing of the Adventure, and were obliged to make ſail without her, which was but a diſmal proſpect, for we were now expoſed to the danger of the frozen climate without the company of our fellow voyagers, which before had relieved our ſpirits, when we conſidered that we were not entirely alone in caſe we loſt our own veſſel. The crew univerſally regretted the loſs of the

Adventure; and they ſeldom looked around the ocean without expreſſing ſome concern that we were alone on this unexplored expanſe.

Nothing material happened to us, but various changes of the weather and climate, till the 25th of March, when land was ſeen from the maſt-head, which greatly exhilerated the ſpirits of our ſailors. We ſteered in for the land with all the ſail we could carry, and had the advantage of good weather, and a freſh gale. The captain miſtook the bay before us for Duſky Bay, the iſland that lay at the mouth of it having deceived him.

We now proceeded for Duſky Bay, in New Zealand, but with much caution as we advanced nearer the land. We paſſed ſeveral iſlands, &c. and two leagues up the bay an officer was ſent out to look for anchorage, which he found, and ſignified it by ſignal. Here we anchored in 50 fathom water, and very near the ſhore. This joyful circumſtance happened on the 26th of March, after we had been 117 days at ſea, and ſailed 3660 leagues, without ſo much as once ſeeing land. We had much reaſon to be thankful to the Divine Providence, that no untoward accident had befallen us, and that our crew were in good health.

CHAP II.

A narrative of what happened in Duſky Bay—Interviews with the natives—Sails to Charlotte's Sound—Is there joined by the Adventure—Tranſactions in this place—Capt. Furneaux's narrative—The ſhips proceed to the iſland of Otaheite, and their arrival there—Are in a critical ſituation.

THE country appeared beautiful and pleaſant. The iſlands we paſſed, before our entrance into Duſky Bay, were ſhaded with evergreen, and covered with woods; the various ſhades of the autumnal yellow, intermixed

intermixed with evergreens, exhibited a delightful contraſt. As ſoon as we anchored we caught great numbers of fiſh, which eagerly took the bait laid for them. Our firſt meal upon fiſh here was looked upon as the moſt delightful we had ever made. Capt. Cook did not like the place in which we anchored, and ſent Lieut. Pickerſgill in ſearch of a better, which he ſoon found. The captain liked it, and called it Pickerſgill harbour. This we entered on the 27th of March, by a channel which was ſcarcely twice the width of the ſhip.

In this place we determined to ſtay ſome time, and examine it thoroughly, as no one had ever entered it before, or landed on any of the ſouthren parts of this country. Our ſituation was admirable for wood and water. Our yards were locked in the branches of trees, and near our ſtern ran a delightful ſtream of freſh water. We made preparations on ſhore for making all neceſſary obſervations, and perform neceſſary repairs, &c. &c.

We had not hitherto ſeen any appearance of inhabitants; but on the 28th, ſome of the officers went on a ſhooting party in a ſmall boat, and diſcovered them, and returned to acquaint Capt. Cook therewith. Very ſhortly a canoe came filled with them, within muſket ſhot of the ſhip. They ſtood looking at us for ſome time, and then returned; we could not prevail upon them to come any nearer, notwithſtanding we ſhewed them every token of peace and friendſhip. Capt. Cook with ſeveral officers and gentlemen, went in ſearch of them the ſame day. We found the canoe hauled upon the ſhore, where were ſeveral huts, with fire places and fiſhing-nets, but the people had probably retired into the woods. We made but a ſhort ſtay, and left in the canoe ſome medals, looking glaſſes, &c. not chuſing to ſearch any further. Two parties went out the next day, but returned without finding any thing worth noticing.

On

On the 6th of April we made a ſhooting party, and found a capacious cove, were we ſhot ſeveral ducks; on which account we called it Duck Cove. We had an interview with one man and two women, as we returned in the evening, who were natives, and the firſt that diſcovered themſelves; and had not the man hallooed to us, we ſhould have paſſed without ſeeing them. The man ſtood upon the point of a rock, with a club in his hand, and the women were behind him with ſpears. As we approached, the man diſcovered great ſigns of fear, but ſtood firm; nor would he move to take up ſome things that were thrown to him. His fears were all diſſipated by Capt. Cook's going up to embrace him; the captain gave him ſuch things as he had about him. The officers and ſeamen followed the captain, and talked ſome time to them; though they could not underſtand them. In this converſation, the youngeſt of the women bore the greateſt ſhare. A droll ſailor remarked, that the women did not want tongue in any part of the world. We were obliged to leave them on the approach of night; but before we parted, Mrs. Talkative gave us a dance.

On the 7th we made them another viſit, and preſented them with ſeveral things; but they beheld every thing with indifference, except hatchets and ſpike nails. We now ſaw all the man's family, as we ſuppoſed, which conſiſted of two wives, the young woman we mentioned before, a boy about fourteen years old, and three ſmall children. Excepting one woman (who had a large wen upon her upper lip) they were well favoured; on account of her diſagreeable appearance, ſhe ſeemed to be neglected by the man. We were conducted to their habitation, which conſiſted of two mean huts, ſituated near the ſkirts of a wood. Their canoe lay in a ſmall creek, near the huts, and was juſt large enough to tranſport the whole family from place to place. A gentleman of our party made ſketches of them, which occaſioned their calling him Toe Toe; which, it ſeems, is a word which ſignifies marking or painting. On taking leave, they preſented Captain

Cook

Cook with ſome trifles, and a piece of cloth of their own manufacture; and pointed to a boat cloak which he wiſhed to have. The hint was taken, and one was ordered to be made for him of red baize.

On the 9th we paid the natives another viſit, and ſignified our approach by hallooing to them; but they neither met us on ſhore, nor anſwered us as uſual; the reaſon of which was, that their time was fully occupied in dreſſing themſelves to receive us. They had their hair combed and oiled, ſtuck with white feathers, and tied upon the crowns of their heads, and had bunches of feathers ſtuck in their ears. We were received by them with great courteſy in their dreſs. The man was ſo well pleaſed with the preſent of the cloak, that he took his patta-patoe from his ſide, and gave it to Capt. Cook. We continued here a little time, and took leave, ſpending the reſt of the day in ſurveying the bay.

On Monday the 12th, this family paid us a viſit in their canoe, but proceeded with caution as they approached the ſhip. We could not by any means perſuade them to come on board, but put aſhore in a little creek near us. Capt. Cook ordered the bagpipes to play, and the drum to beat; the latter only they regarded. They converſed very familiarly (though not well underſtood) with ſuch officers and ſeamen as went to them, and paid a much greater regard to ſome than to others, we ſuppoſed that they took ſuch for women. One of the females ſhewed a remarkable fondneſs for one man in particular, until ſhe found out his ſex: after which ſhe would not let him approach her. We cannot tell whether ſhe had before taken him for a female, or whether, in diſcovering himſelf, he had taken ſome liberties with her.

In the evening, the natives of Duſky Bay took up their quarters very near our watering-place, which was a clear proof that they placed a great deal of confidence in us. We paſſed two or three days in examining the bay, in making neceſſary experiments and obſervations. We likewiſe ſhot great quantites of fowl.

On

On the 19th, the man and his daughter before mentioned ventured on board our ſhip, while the reſt of the family were fiſhing in the canoe. Before the man would come into the ſhip, he ſtruck the ſide of it with a green branch, and muttered ſome words, which we took for a prayer; after which he threw away the branch and came on board. They viewed every part of the cabin with apparent curioſity and ſurprize; but we could not fix the man's attention to any one thing for a moment. All we ſhewed him ſeemed beyond his comprehenſion, and the works of nature and art were alike regarded. The ſtrength and number of our decks and other parts of the ſhip, ſeemed to ſtrike him with ſurprize. The man was ſtill better pleaſed with hatches and ſpike-nails, than any thing our ſhip produced; when he had once got poſſeſſion of theſe, he would not quit them.

Capt. Cook and three other gentlemen left the ſhip as ſoon as they could diſengage themſelves from the viſitors, whom they left in the gun-room, and went out in two boats to examine the head of the bay; at which place they took up their night's lodging; the next day they continued their obſervations; and fired at ſome ducks. Upon the report of the gun, the natives, who had not diſcovered themſelves before, ſet up a moſt hideous roar in different places. The gentlemen hallooed in their turn, and retreated to their boats. The natives did not follow them, neither indeed could they, becauſe a branch of the river ſeparated them, but ſtill made a great noiſe. As they continued ſhooting and making their obſervations, they frequently heard the natives in the woods. A man and a woman appeared at laſt on the banks of the river, waving ſomething in their hands as a token of friendſhip. The gentlemen could not get near them, and the natives retreated into the woods. Two others appeared; but as the gentlemen advanced, they retreated likewiſe, and the woods afforded them thick cover. The captain and his party paſſed the next night in the ſame place, and after breakfaſt embarked to return on board; but ſaw two men

on

on the oppoſite ſhore, who hallooed to them, and they were induced to row over to them.

Captain Cook with two other gentlemen landed unarmed, and advanced all together, but the natives retreated, nor would they ſtand ſtill till Capt. Cook went up alone. It was with ſome difficulty that he prevailed with one of them to lay down his ſpear; at laſt he did it, and met the captain with a graſs plant in his hand, giving Capt. Cook one end to hold, whilſt he himſelf held the other. In this poſition they ſtood while the natives made a ſpeech, which the captain did not underſtand, but returned ſome ſort of anſwer; they then ſaluted each other, and the native took his coat from his back, and put it on the captain. He then preſented each of them with a hatchet and a knife, having nothing elſe with him. They invited the gentlemen to their habitation, and wanted them to eat, but the tide prevented their accepting of this invitation.

The two natives accompanied the gentlemen to their boats, but ſeemed very much agitated at the appearances of the muſquets, which they looked upon as inſtruments of death, on account of the ſlaughter they had obſerved among the fowls. It was neceſſary to watch them, for they laid their hands on every thing except the muſquets.

On the 24th, Capt. Cook took five geeſe and a gander, which were all that remained of thoſe brought from the Cape of Good Hope, and carried them to a cove, which on this account he called Gooſe-cove; this was a convenient place, for they were not likely to be diſturbed by the inhabitants, there was plenty of food for them, and they were likely here to breed and ſpread the country with their ſpecies. We had now ſeveral days fair weather, which gave us a fine opportunity of making neceſſary preparations for departure.

On the 27th we found an arm of the ſea more convenient than that by which we entered the bay. All we now waited for was wind to carry us out of the harbour by the new paſſage we had diſcovered. The rubbiſh we had made on ſhore, which chiefly conſiſted of

pieces

pieces of wood, &c. we ſet on fire, in order to dry the ground, which being done, Capt. Cook ſowed the ſpot with various ſorts of garden ſeeds. We made ſeveral efforts to ſail, but the wind proving contrary, we made but little way, and were obliged to anchor on the firſt of May on the north ſide of Long Iſland. Before we leave Duſky Bay, we think it neceſſary to give our readers ſome deſcription of it.

There are two entrances to this bay, which are by no means dangerous; and there are numerous anchoring places, which are at once ſafe and commodious. The country is very mountainous, and the proſpect is rude and craggy. The land bordering on the ſea-coaſt, and all its lands, are covered with wood. There are trees of various kinds, which are common in other countries, the timber of which is remarkably fine. Here are likewiſe a great number of aromatic plants, and the woods are ſo over-run with ſupple jacks, that it is difficult to make way through them. The ſoil is undoubtedly compoſed of decayed vegetables, which make a deep black mould; it is very looſe, and ſinks at every ſtep. Except flax and hemp, there is little herbage.

The inhabitants of Duſky Bay are the ſame with thoſe in other parts of New Zealand; they ſpeak the ſame language, and adopt the ſame cuſtoms. It is not eaſy to divine what could induce theſe few families to ſeparate themſelves from the ſociety of the reſt of their fellow-creatures. It ſeems probable that there are people ſcattered all over this ſouthern iſland, by our meeting with inhabitants in this place. They appeared to lead a wandering life, and don't ſeem to be in perfect amity with each other.

On the 11th of May, we again made ſail, but met with more obſtructions. We obſerved on a ſudden a whitiſh ſpot on the ſea, out of which a column aroſe which looked like a glaſs tube. It appeared that another of the ſame ſort came down from the clouds to meet this, and they made a coalition and formed what

is

is called a water-ſpout; ſeveral others were formed in the ſame manner ſoon after.

As we were not very well acquainted with the nature and cauſes of theſe ſpouts, we were very curious in examining them. Their baſe was a broad ſpot, which looked bright and yellowiſh when the ſun ſhone upon it; this appeared when the ſea was violently agitated, and vapours roſe in a ſpiral form. The columns were like a cylinder, and moved forward on the ſurface of the ſea, and frequently appeared croſſing each other, they at laſt broke one after another, this was owing to the clouds not following them with equal rapidity. The ſea appeared more and more covered with ſhort broken waves as the clouds came nearer to us; the wind veered about, and did not fix in any one point. Within 200 yards of us, we ſaw a ſpot in the ſea in violent agitation; the water aſcended in a ſpiral form towards the clouds; the clouds looked black and louring, and ſome hail ſtones fell on board. A cloud gradually tapered into a long ſlender tube directly over the agitated ſpot, and ſeemed deſcended to meet the riſing ſpiral, and ſoon united with it. The laſt water ſpout broke like the others, no exploſion was heard, but a flaſh of lightning attended this disjunction.

On the 18th of May, at five o'clock in the morning, we opened Queen Charlotte's Sound, and ſaw three flaſhes ariſing from a ſtrong hold of the natives. We imagined them to be ſignals of the Europeans, and probably of our old friends in the Adventure; when we fired ſome guns, we were anſwered, and in a ſhort time ſaw the Adventure at anchor. We were ſaluted by Capt. Furneaux with 13 guns, which we very chearfully returned; none can deſcribe the joy we felt at this moſt happy meeting.

The following is a narrative of Capt. Furneaux's proceedings, and of the various incidents that happened during the ſeparation of the two ſhips, to their joining again in Queen Charlotte's Sound.

THE Adventure, on the 4th of February, 1773, after having loſt ſight of the Reſolution, in a very thick fog, had no other means of again meeting with her, but by cruizing in the place where they parted company, or by repairing to Charlotte-Bay, the firſt appointed place of rendezvous, in caſe ſuch a misfortune ſhould happen. Soon after their ſeparation, the people of the Adventure heard a gun, the report of which they judged to be on the larboard beam; upon which they hauled up S. E. and fired a four-pounder every half-hour, but receiving no return, nor ſight of their companions, they kept the courſe they had ſteered before the fog came on. In the evening it began to blow hard. The ſtorm was attended with a prodigious fall of rain, every drop the ſize of a common pea; and the ſea broke over the ſhip's bows to the height of the yard arms; yet, at intervals, the weather was more clear. They then ſtood on the weſtward, to cruize in the latitude they laſt ſaw her in, according to agreement, in caſe of ſeparation; but the ſtorm returned with renewed fury, and the weather being again exceeding hazy, they were again compelled to bring to, which untoward circumſtance prevented them from reaching the intended place; however, they cruized as near the ſame as they could for three days, when, after having kept beating about the ſeas, in the moſt terrible weather that any ſhip could poſſibly endure, and giving all hopes over of joining their loſt companion, they bore away for winter quarters, 1400 leagues diſtant from them; and, having to traverſe a ſea entirely unknown, they took every precaution for their ſafety, and reduced the allowance of water to one quart per day for each ſeaman.

On

On the 8th, they kept between the lat. 52 and 53 deg. S. and reached to 95 deg. E. long. They had here hard gales from the W. attended with ſnow, ſleet, and a long hollow ſea from the S. W. And what is more remarkable, after our ſeparation from the Reſolution to our making land, we ſaw but one of the ice iſlands, though in the moſt part of our long run, we were 2 or 3 deg. S. of the lat. in which we firſt met with them.

On the 24th of March, we ſhipped many waves, one of which ſtove the large cutter, and with difficulty we prevented the ſmall one from being waſhed overboard. After this heavy gale, we had more temperate weather, accompanied with calms. At length we made the coaſt of New Zealand, in 40 deg. 30 min. S. lat. having 24 deg. of long. from Adventure Bay, in a paſſage of 15 days.

On the 5th of April, we worked up to windward under Point Jackſon. We fired ſeveral guns while ſtanding off and on, but ſaw not any inhabitants. At half paſt two anchored in thirty-nine fathoms water. At eight, weighed and made ſail. On the 6th, at eight o'clock, had the Sound open, and worked up under the weſtern ſhore, and anchored in Ship Cove, in ten fathoms water, and moored the beſt bower to the N. N. E. In the night heard the howling of dogs, and people hallooing on the eaſt ſhore.

Capt. Furneaux ordered the large cutter to be manned, and ſent her with a proper guard, to examine, whether there were any ſigns of the Reſolution having arrived at that harbour. The boat returned, without the leaſt diſcovery. Upon this, we inſtantly prepared to ſend the tents aſhore, for the accommodation of thoſe who were ſick of the ſcurvy; while ſuch who enjoyed health were very alert in catching fiſh, which proved of great ſervice in recovering our ſick, to whom freſh proviſions were both food and phyſic.

On the 9th, three canoes came along ſide the Adventure, having 15 Indians of both ſexes, armed with battle axes, and with other offenſive weapons, made of

hard wood, in the form of our officers ſpontoons, and about four feet in length; but they had neither bows nor arrows. A kind of mat was wrapt round their ſhoulders, and tied about their waiſts with a girdle made of graſs. Both men and women exhibited a moſt ſavage appearance, and were very unwilling to come on board. The captain made them preſents, and by ſigns invited them to trade. They accepted the preſents, and ſome of them aſſumed courage enough to truſt themſelves on deck.

One of our gentlemen, ſeeing ſomething wrapt up, had the curioſity to examine what it was, when, to his great ſurpriſe, he found it to be the head of a man, which, by its bleeding, ſeemed to be freſh cut off. As Captain Cook had expreſſed his abhorrence of ſuch unnatural acts, the Indians were very apprehenſive of its being forced from them, and the man, to whom it belonged, trembled for fear of being puniſhed. They therefore, with ſurpriſing dexterity, in order to conceal the head, ſhifted it from one to another, till it was conveyed out of ſight; endeavouring at the ſame time, to convince us by ſigns, that no ſuch thing was in their poſſeſſion.

Soon after they left the ſhip, and went on ſhore, not without ſome viſible ſigns of diſpleaſure. In this viſit they often mentioned the name of Tupia, and upon being informed that he died at Batavia, ſome of them with much concern, enquired whether we killed him, or he died a natural death. By theſe queſtions, we concluded theſe Indians were ſome of the ſame tribe who had viſited the Endeavour. They returned in the afternoon with fiſh, and fern roots, which they bartered for nails, to them the moſt valuable articles; but the man and woman who had the head, were not among them. Having a catalogue of words in their language, we called ſeveral things by name, at which they ſeemed much ſurpriſed, and offered a quantity of fiſh for the catalogue.

On the 10th, about eight in the morning, five double canoes came along-ſide the Adventure, with about

about fifty Indians, at the head of whom was their chief. We purchaſed of them, for nails and bottles, their implements of war, ſtone hatchets, cloth, &c. upon which they ſet a high price. Several of their head men came on board, nor would they quit the ſhip by fair means; but upon preſenting a muſket with a bayonet fixed, they quickly took leave of us, ſeemingly in great good humour; and afterwards they viſited us daily, bringing with them fiſh in abundance, which they exchanged for nails, beads, and other trifles. They behaved peaceably, and, having diſpoſed of their cargoes, departed at all times ſeemingly well pleaſed.

We now placed a guard on a little iſland, which, at low water, is joining to Mortuara, called the Hippah, at which place was an old fortified town, that had been abandoned by the natives. We took poſſeſſion of their houſes, and, by ſinking a fort within ſide, made them very comfortable. Here our aſtronomer erected his obſervatory; at the ſame time we ſtruck our tents on Mortuara; and having run further into the cove with the ſhip, we moored her for the winter, on the weſt ſhore, and gave her a winter coat to preſerve her hull; then after ſending aſhore the ſpars and lumber of the decks to be caulked, we pitched our tents near the river, at the watering-place.

On the 12th, the weather continuing fair, and the Indians friendly, the captain and officers were preparing to go aſhore, when about nine A. M. no leſs than ten canoes came paddling down the ſound. We counted 120 natives all armed. When along ſide of the ſhip, they expreſſed a deſire to be admitted on board; but Captain Furneaux, not liking their looks and geſtures, gave orders that a few only ſhould be admitted at a time. Theſe behaved ſo diſorderly, that the ſailors were obliged to turn them out, and it now appeared plainly that the intentions of our new viſitors, were to make themſelves maſters of the ſhip: however, finding the crew to be upon their guard, they became more civil, but not before a great gun was diſcharged over their heads, which alone intimidated them. Being thus

thus reduced to order, the people on board produced ſeveral articles, ſuch as beads, claſp knives, ſciſſars, cloth, paper, and other trifles, which they bartered for battle-axes, ſpears, weapons of various ſorts, fiſh-hooks, and other curioſities, the manufacture of the country.

Three months were now elapſed ſince the Adventure loſt ſight of the Reſolution; but on the 17th, ſhe was ſeen at Jackſon Point. We immediately ſent out boats to her aſſiſtance, it being calm, to tow her into the ſound. In the evening, ſhe anchored about a mile without us, and next morning weighed and warped within us.

Having thus related the progreſs of the Adventure, we now come to record the tranſactions of both ſhips after their junction. It were little more than a repetition of the Adventure's diſtreſſes to recapitulate the effects of the boiſterous weather that were felt by the crew of the Reſolution; being ſometimes ſurrounded with iſlands of ice, out of which they could not extricate themſelves by the utmoſt exertion of their ſkill in ſeamanſhip, ſometimes involved in ſheets of ſleet and ſnow, and in miſts ſo dark, that a man on the forecaſtle could not be ſeen from the quarter-deck; ſometimes the ſea rolling mountains high, while the running tackle, made brittle by the ſeverity of the froſt, was frequently ſnapping, and ſometimes rendered immoveable. Amidſt the hardſhips of ſuch a traverſe, there is nothing more aſtoniſhing, than that the crew ſhould continue in perfect health, ſcarce a man being ſo ill as to be incapable of duty. Nothing can redound more to the honour of Captain Cook, than his paying particular attention to the preſervation of health among his company. By obſerving the ſtricteſt diſcipline from the higheſt to the loweſt, his commands were duly obſerved, and punctually executed. When the ſervice was hard, he tempered the ſeverity thereof by frequently relieving thoſe employed in the performance, and having all hands at command, he was never under the neceſſity of continuing the

the labour of any ſet of men beyond what their ſtrength and their ſpirits could bear.

Having by this means left no ſpare time for gaming, quarrelling, or rioting, he kept them in action, and puniſhed drunkenneſs with the utmoſt ſeverity; and thus by perſevering in a ſteady line of conduct, he was enabled to keep the ſea till reduced to a very ſcanty portion of water; and when he deſpaired of finding any new land, and had fully ſatisfied himſelf of the non-exiſtence of any continent in the quarter he laſt traverſed, he directed his courſe to Charlotte's Sound, the place appointed for both ſhips to rendezvous in caſe of ſeparation, and appeared off the ſame, (as has been already related) on Tueſday, the 18th of May, 1773; and here we diſcovered our conſort the Adventure, by the ſignals ſhe made to us, an event every one in both ſhips felt with inexpreſſible ſatisfaction.

The next morning after our arrival, being Wedneſday the 19th, Captain Cook went off in the boat, at day-break, to gather ſcurvy-graſs, celery, and other vegetables. At breakfaſt time he returned with a boat load, enough for the crew of both ſhips; and knowing their ſalutary efficacy in removing ſcorbutic complaints, he ordered that they ſhould be boiled with wheat and portable broth, every morning for breakfaſt, and with peaſe and broth for dinner, and thus dreſſed they are extremely beneficial.

On the 20th, we viſited the fortifications of the natives where the obſervatory was fixed. It is only acceſſible in one place, and there by a narrow, difficult path, being ſituated on a ſteep rock. The huts of the natives ſtood promiſcuouſly, within an incloſure of palliſadoes; they conſiſted only of a roof, and had no walls. About noon we were viſited by two ſmall canoes, in which were five men. They dined with us, and it was not a little they devoured. In the evening they were diſmiſſed with preſents.

On the 24th, the Reſolution received another viſit from a family, who came with no other intent than to partake of our food, and to get ſome of our iron work.

We

We wanted to know their names, but it was a long time before we could make them underſtand us. At laſt we found that the oldeſt was called Towahanga, and the others Kotugha-a, Koghoaa, Khoaa, Kollakh, and Taupuaperua. This laſt was a boy about twelve years of age, very lively and intelligent. He dined with us, eat voraciouſly, and was very fond of the cruſt of a pie made of wild fowl. He did not much reliſh Madeira wine which the captain gave him, but was very fond of ſome ſweet Cape wine, which elevated his ſpirits, and his tongue was perpetually going.

On the 29th, a great number of natives ſurrounded us with canoes, who brought goods to exchange, for which they got good returns, owing to the eagerneſs with which our ſailors outbid each other, all of them being deſirous of having ſome of the productions of this country. Among theſe Indians, we ſaw many women whoſe lips were of a blackiſh hue, and their cheeks were painted with a lively red. They had large knees, and ſlender bandy legs, owing to want of exerciſe, and ſitting in their canoes croſs legged. The ladies were very agreeable to our crews, who had no opportunity of indulging an intercourſe with other women ſince our departure from England; and they ſoon found out that chaſtity was not a diſtinguiſhing part of their character. Their conſent was eaſily purchaſed: a ſpike nail, or an old ſhirt, was a ſufficient bribe. The New Zealanders, encouraged by the gain of this diſgraceful commerce, went through both the ſhips, offering their daughters and ſiſters to the promiſcuous embraces of every one, for iron, tools, &c.

On the 30th inſtant, we went over to Long iſland, to collect ſome hay which the crews had made, and to bring ſome vegetables on board. In this trip, we found ſeveral new plants, and ſhot ſome ſmall birds, which we had not ſeen before. In the afternoon, leave was given to ſome of our ſailors to go on ſhore, where they again purchaſed the embraces of the women.

men. Theſe fellows muſt have been very keen indeed, or they would have been diſguſted with the uncleanlineſs of their doxies, all of whom had a diſagreeable ſmell, which might be ſcented at a conſiderable diſtance; and their clothes as well as hair ſwarmed with vermin to a very great degree, which they occaſionally cracked between their teeth. It is ſurprizing how men, who had received a civilized education, could gratify the animal appetite with ſuch loathſome creatures. While this party were on ſhore, a young woman on board ſtole one of the ſeamen's jackets, and gave it a young man of her own tribe; upon the ſailor's taking it from the Indian, he received ſeveral blows on the face by the young fellow's fiſt. At firſt the ſailor took this as in joke, but upon perceiving the aſſailant to be in earneſt, he gave him a hearty Engliſh drubbing, and made him cry out for quarters. At this time Captain Cook continued his employment of ſowing, in different ſpots cleared for the purpoſe, all ſorts of vegetables that he thought would grow in this country, ſuch as potatoes, beans, peas, corn, &c.

On Tueſday the 1ſt of June, we were viſited by ſeveral natives whom we had not ſeen before, and who brought with them ſundry new articles of commerce; among theſe were dogs, ſome of which we purchaſed. Of theſe people we ſaw a few oddly marked in their faces, by ſpiral lines deeply cut in them. Such kind of marks were very regular in the face of a middle-aged man, named Tringho Waya, who appeared to be a perſon of note, and to have authority over his brethren. This company ſeemed to underſtand perfectly well how to traffic, and did not like we ſhould make hard bargains. Some of them entertained us with a dance on the quarter-deck, previous to which they parted with their upper garments, and ſtood in a row. They ſang a ſong, and its chorus all together, making during the performance many frantic geſtures. Muſic accom-

panied this ſong and dance, but it was not very harmonious.

Early in the morning of the 7th, we ſailed from this place, in company with the Adventure, but had frequent hindrances from contrary winds. On the 22d, we were in lat. 32 deg. 30 min. long. 133 deg. 40 min. W. Now the weather was ſo warm, that we were obliged to put on lighter cloaths. Captain Cook having heard that the crew of the Adventure were ſickly, went on board the 29th of July, when he found the cook dead, and twenty men ill of the ſcurvy and flux. Only three men were on the ſick liſt on board the Reſolution, which was certainly owing to the Captain's abſolutely enforcing the eating celery and ſcurvy-graſs with the food, though at firſt the crew did not like it.

On the 6th of Auguſt, Captain Furneaux came on board the Reſolution to dinner, and reported, that his people were much better, that the flux had quite left them, and that the ſcurvy was at a ſtand. The ſcorbutic people had been well ſupplied with cyder, which in a great meaſure contributed to this happy change. On the 14th, we ſaw Oſnaburg iſland; and on the 15th, at five in the morning, acquainted Captain Furneaux, that it was our intention to put into Oatipiha Bay, near the ſouth end of Otaheite, and get what refreſhments we could in that part of the iſland, before we went to Matavai.

On the 18th, we were within a league of the reef. On account of the breeze failing us, we hoiſted out our boats to tow the ſhips off, but they could not keep us from being carried too near the reef. Many inhabitants came on board from different parts, who brought fruits, &c. to exchange; they moſt of them knew Captain Cook again, and enquired for Mr. Banks, and others, but none of them aſked for Tupia. Our ſituation became ſtill more dangerous as the calm continued. On ſending to examine the weſtern point of the reef, in order to get round that way into the bay, we found that there was not ſufficient

cient depth of water. Both ſhips were carried with great impetuoſity towards the reef, and all the horrors of ſhipwreck now ſtared us in the face. The breakers were not two cables length from us, and we could find no bottom to anchor. The Reſolution came at three fathoms water, and ſtruck at every fall of the ſea, the Adventure brought up under our bow without ſtriking. The dreadful ſurf which broke under our ſtern, threatened our ſhipwreck every moment. At length we found ground a little without the baſon, and got the ſhip afloat by cutting away the bower anchor, and the tide ceaſed to act in the ſame direction. We happily towed off the Reſolution, and all the boats were ordered to aſſiſt the Adventure. We happily got once more ſafe at ſea, after narrowly eſcaping ſhipwreck.

We anchored in Oatipiha Bay, very near the ſhore, and were viſited by a great number of the natives, who brought roots, fruit, &c. Several of theſe people aſked for Mr. Banks, and other people who were at Otaheite with Captain Cook before. We were informed by theſe people, that there had been a battle fought between the two kingdoms; that Toutaha, the regent of the greater peninſula, was ſlain, and that Otoo reigned in his ſtead. In this battle Tubourai Tamaide, and ſeveral of our old friends, fell. A peace was now fully eſtabliſhed.

On the 19th, the two commanders made an excurſion along the coaſt, and were entertained by a chief (whom they met) with ſome excellent fiſh, &c. to whom in return they made ſeveral preſents. On the 20th, one of the natives ſtole a gun from the people on ſhore. Some of the natives purſued him of their own accord, who knocked him down, and brought back the muſquet. We imagine that fear operated more with them in this buſineſs than any other motive. On the 21ſt, a chief came to viſit us, who brought in a preſent of fruit, which proved to be ſome coca-nuts that we had drawn the water from and thrown overboard. He had ſo artfully tied them

up, that we did not ſoon diſcover the deceit. He did not betray the leaſt emotion when we told him of it, and opened two or three of them himſelf, as if he knew nothing of the matter; he then pretended to be ſatisfied that it was really ſo, and went on ſhore, from whence he ſent ſome bananoes and plantains. We were informed that Waheatow was come into the neighbourhood, and wiſhed to ſee Capt. Cook, who accordingly went in company with Capt. Furneaux, and ſome gentlemen: they were likewiſe attended by ſome natives. About a mile from the landing place they met the chief, advancing to meet them with a numerous train. When the prince perceived the company, he halted. He knew Capt. Cook very well, as they had ſeen each other ſeveral times in 1769. He went at that time by the name of Terące, and took his father's name at his death. We found him ſitting on a ſtool; and as ſoon as the uſual ſalutation was over, he ſeated Capt. Cook on the ſame ſtool with himſelf; the reſt ſat on the ground. He inquired after ſeveral who had been on the former voyage, and ſeemed ſorry when we told him we muſt ſail the next day, offering the captain that if he would ſtay he ſhould have hogs in plenty. Capt. Cook made him many preſents, and ſtaid with him the whole morning. This party teturned on board of ſhip to dinner, and made this chief another viſit in the afternoon, made him more preſents, and he gave us two hogs. At the different trading places, ſome others were got, ſo that a meal's freſh pork ſerved for the crews of both ſhips.

Early in the morning of the 24th, we put to ſea, and were accompanied by ſeveral canoes, who brought cargoes of fruit for ſale; neither did they return till they had diſpoſed of them. The ſick people on board the Adventure got much relief from theſe fruits. We left a lieutenant on ſhore, in order to bring ſome hogs, which they promiſed to ſend by him. He returned on the 25th, and brought eight pigs with him. We arrived at Matavai Bay in the evening,

evening, and our decks were crowded with natives before we could get to anchor, almoſt all of them were acquainted with Captain Cook. Otoo their king, and a great crowd were got together on ſhore. Capt. Cook was going on ſhore to pay him a viſit, but was told that he was gone to Oparee in a fright; which ſeemed very extraordinary to the captain, as all others were much pleaſed to ſee him. Maritata, a chief, was on board, and adviſed the captain to defer his viſit till next morning.

Next morning the captain ſet out for Oparee, after having given directions to fetch tents for the reception of the ſick. Capt. Furneaux, Maritata and his wife, and ſome others went with the captain. They were conducted to Otoo as ſoon as they landed, who ſat on the ground under a ſhady tree, with a great number of people around him. Capt. Cook made him ſeveral preſents, after the uſual compliments had paſſed, being very well perſuaded that it was much to his intereſt to eſtabliſh a friendſhip with this man. Otoo inquired for all the gentlemen who had been there before, as well as for Tupia, and promiſed to ſend ſome hogs on board, but was very backward in ſaying he would come on board himſelf, being, as he ſaid, much afraid of the great guns. He was certainly the moſt timid prince, as all his actions demonſtrated. He was a perſonable well made man, ſix feet high, and about thirty years of age. His father and all his ſubjects were uncovered before him, that is, their heads and ſhoulders were made bare.

On the 27th, the king Otoo came to pay us a viſit, attended by a numerous train; he ſent before two large fiſh, a hog, ſome fruits, and a large quantity of cloth. After much perſuaſion he came on board himſelf, accompanied by his ſiſters, a younger brother, &c. with many attendants, who all received preſents; and when they had breakfaſted, carried them home to Oparee. Upon landing, an old lady, the mother of Toutaha, met Capt. Cook, ſeized

ſeized him by both hands, and, weeping bitterly, told him that her ſon and his friend Toutaha were dead. Had not the king taken her from Capt. Cook, he muſt have joined her lamentations. The next day the king promiſed to viſit us again, but ſaid we muſt firſt wait upon him.

On the 29th, the commanders took a trip to Oparee, attended by ſome officers and gentlemen, and made the king ſuch preſents as he had not before ſeen. One of them was a broad ſword; at the ſight of which he was very much intimidated, and deſired it might be taken out of his ſight. With a vaſt deal of argument, he was prevailed upon to ſuffer it to be put on his ſide, where it remained a very ſhort time. We received an invitation to the theatre, where they entertained us with a dramatic piece, conſiſting of a comedy and dance. The performers were one woman, which was no leſs a perſonage than the king's ſiſter, and five men, and their muſic conſiſted of only three drums. The whole entertainment was well conducted, and laſted about two hours. When this diverſion was over, the king deſired us to depart, and loaded us with fruit and fiſh. The king ſent more fruit and fiſh the next morning.

On the 1ſt of Sept. we determined to depart, as the ſick were nearly recovered, the neceſſary repairs of the ſhip were compleated, and plenty of water provided. Moſt of the day was employed in unmooring the ſhips; and in the afternoon, the lieut. returned, who had ben ſent for the hogs promiſed. With him came Potatou (the chief of the diſtrict of Attahounou), with his wife, to pay Captain Cook a viſit, and made him a preſent of two hogs and ſome fiſh. The lieutenant got likewiſe two more hogs. As the wind was weſterly, we were obliged to diſmiſs our friends ſooner than they wiſhed; but they were very well ſatisfied with the reception they met with.

A young man, named Peoro, came on board ſome hours before we got under ſail, and deſired to go with

us,

us, to which we conſented; and at the ſame time he aſked for an axe and a ſpike nail for his father, who came with him on board. They were accordingly given him, and they parted with great indifference, which ſeemed to indicate that they had deceived us, and no other conſanguinity ſubſiſted. Preſently a canoe, conducted by two men, came along-ſide, and demanded Peoro in the name of Otoo. We informed them that we would part with him if they would return the hatchet and ſpike nail, but they ſaid they were aſhore; ſo the young gentleman ſailed along with us, though he wept when he ſaw the land at our ſtern.

On the 2d, we ſteered our courſe for the iſland of Huaheine, and the Reſolution anchored in twenty-four fathoms water on the 3d inſt. but the Adventure got aſhore on the north ſide of the channel, but ſhe was happily got off again without receiving any damage. The natives received us with the utmoſt cordiality, ſeveral of whom came on board before our commanders went on ſhore. Some preſents were diſtributed among them, which were gratefully returned by a plentiful ſupply of hogs, fruit, &c. Here we had a fine proſpect of being plentifully ſupplied with freſh pork and fowls, which was to us very pleaſing.

On the 4th, two trading parties went on ſhore, which were very well conducted. Captain Cook was informed that Oree was ſtill alive, and waited to ſee him. The commanders, with Mr. Forſter, went to the place appointed for the interview, accompanied by one of the natives. The boat was landed before the chief's houſe, and were deſired to remain in it till the neceſſary ceremony was gone through. There ſtood cloſe to the ſhore five young plantain trees, which are their emblems of peace: theſe were, with ſome ceremony, brought on ſeparately. The firſt three, were each accompanied by a young pig, whoſe ears were ornamented with cocoa-nut fibres; the fourth plantain tree was accompanied by a dog. All theſe had particular names and meanings, which we could not underſtand. This part of the ceremony being over, we were deſired by our guide to decorate

decorate three young plantain trees with nails, looking-glaſſes, beads, &c. &c. With theſe in our hands we landed, and were conducted through the multitude. We were directed to ſit down a few paces before the chief, and the plantains were laid one by one before him. This being done, the king came to Capt. Cook, fell on his neck, and kiſſed him. A great effuſion of tears fell down the cheeks of this venerable old man; and if ever tears ſpoke the language of the heart, ſurely theſe did. Captain Cook regarded him as a father, and therefore preſented him with the moſt valuable articles he had. Soon after we returned on board, fourteen hogs were ſent us, with fowls and fruit in abundance.

In the morning of the 5th inſt. we were again viſited by this good old man, who brought a hog and ſome fruit; indeed he ſent the captain every day, ready dreſſed, fruit and roots in great plenty. This morning the lieutenant went on ſhore in ſearch of more hogs, and returned in the evening with 28, and about 70 more were purchaſed on ſhore.

When we went to take leave of Oree, while the ſhips were unmooring, we preſented him with things both valuable and uſeful. We left him a copper-plate, with this inſcription, "Anchored here, his Britannic Majeſty's ſhips Reſolution and Adventure, September 1773."

After we had traded for ſuch things as we wanted, we took our leave, which was a very affectionate one. On returning to the ſhips, they were crouded, as on our arrival, with canoes filled with hogs, fowls, &c. Soon after we were on board, the king came, and ſtaid with us, till we were near two miles out at ſea, and then after taking another affectionate leave, parted. During our ſtay here, we procured upwards of 300 hogs, beſides fowls and fruit in great abundance.

While at this iſland, Captain Furneaux engaged a young man, named Omai, a native of Ulitea, who had been diſpoſſeſſed of his property by the people of Bolobola, to accompany him on his voyage. This young man had a good underſtanding, honeſt principles, and a natural good behaviour.

On

On the 8th, we entered the harbour of Ohamaneno; the natives crouded about us with hogs and fruit as ſoon as we anchored. We refuſed the hogs, as we had already more than we could manage; but ſeveral of the principal people obliged us to take them whether or no. We made a viſit on the 9th to Oreo, who is the chief of this part of the iſland of Ulitea. He expreſſed great ſatisfaction on ſeeing Captain Cook again, and deſired him to exchange names with him, which the latter agreed to: this is a diſtinguiſhing mark of friendſhip. Here we traded as uſual, but the balance of trade was much in our favour.

On the 10th, the chief entertained us with a comedy: a very entertaining part of which was a theft, committed with amazing dexterity, by a man and his accomplice. Before the thief has time to carry off the prize, he is diſcovered, and a ſcuffle enſues: the diſcoverers are vanquiſhed, and the thieves go off in triumph. We returned to dinner after the play was over, and as we were walking on ſhore in the evening, one of the natives informed us that there were nine uninhabited iſlands to the weſtward.

Oreo and his ſon paid us a viſit early in the morning of the 11th of September, and brought, as uſual, hogs and fruit with them. We dreſſed the youth in a ſhirt, and ſome other articles, of which he was not a little proud. After ſtaying ſome hours, they went aſhore, and ſo did Captain Cook ſoon after, but to another part of the ſhore. When the chief heard he was landed, he went of his own accord, and put a hog and ſome fruit in the boat, and returned without ſaying any thing of it to any other perſon. He afterwards came with ſome friends to dinner. After dinner, Poorau, who is the moſt eminent chief of the iſland, paid us a viſit. He was introduced by Oreo, and brought a preſent with him; for which he received a handſome return. We promiſed to viſit theſe two chiefs the next morning; which we accordingly did, in company with ſeveral gentlemen. Another play was acted, and two very pretty young women performed, other-

wiſe this piece was not ſo entertaining as the one we ſaw before.

On the 14th, Oreo and ſome friends paid us a pretty early viſit, when we informed him, that we ſhould dine with him on ſhore, and deſired he would let us have two pigs for dinner, dreſſed in their faſhion. We found the floor of the chief's houſe ſtrewed with leaves, and we were ſoon ſeated round them. Soon after the pigs came tumbling over our heads upon the leaves; and they were both ſo hot as ſcarcely to be touched. The table was ornamented with hot bread and plantains: we had likewiſe a quantity of cocoa-nuts to drink. We never ſaw victuals dreſſed cleaner nor better in our lives, and it had a moſt exquiſite flavour, much ſuperior to victuals dreſſed in our mode; how they contrived it we cannot tell, but though one of them weighed fifty pounds at leaſt, it was well done in every part, and not too much in any. We had a great number of attendants, and people came to ſee us dine in public, to whom pieces of pork were handed. The chief did not refuſe his glaſs of Madeira whenever it came to his turn, and we never at this, or any other time, ſaw him affected by it. The boat's crew took the remainder when we had dined. In the afternoon, we were again entertained with a play.

On the 15th, we had a ſufficient proof of the timorous diſpoſition of theſe people. We rather wondered that none of them came to the ſhips as uſual. We were afraid that as two men of the Adventure's crew ſtaid out all night, that the natives had ſtripped them, or done them ſome other injury, and were afraid we ſhould revenge their conduct. We went aſhore, and found the neighbourhood nearly deſerted. Preſently the two men made their appearance, and reported they had been very civilly treated. We could get no account of the cauſe of their flight, and could only learn from a few perſons who ventured near us, that ſeveral were killed and wounded, and pointed to their bodies where the balls of the guns went in and out. Captain Cook was very uneaſy at this relation, fearing for the ſafety of the people

gone

gone to Otaha. In order to get the beſt information, the captain determined to go to the chief himſelf, whom, after much ſearching for, he found ſeated under the ſhade of a houſe, with a great many people round him. There was a great lamentation as ſoon as Captain Cook approached, the chief and all his company burſting into tears. After all this piece of work, it was found that the cauſe of their alarm was on account of our boats being abſent, ſuppoſing that the people in them had deſerted us, and that we ſhould adopt violent methods to recover them. They were ſatisfied, when Captain Cook aſſured them that there was no cauſe for alarm, and that the boats would certainly return. On the morning of the 16th, we paid the chief a viſit, who was in his own houſe in perfect tranquillity. At this time Poreo left us.

CHAP III.

State of the iſland—Cuſtoms of the natives—Paſſage from Ulitea to the Friendly Iſles—Hervey's Iſland diſcovered—Incidents at Middleburgh—The two ſhips arrive at Amſterdam—Incidents that happened during their ſtay at that iſland.

ON the 17th of September, we determined to put to ſea, having a good ſupply of all kinds of refreſhments. Before we ſailed, Oreo and his ſon paid us a viſit. Several canoes, filled with fruit and hogs, ſurrounded us; of the latter we could receive no more, our decks being ſo crouded with them that we could ſcarcely move. In both ſhips were about three hundred and fifty. Oreo and his friends did not leave us till we were under ſail, and earneſtly importuned us to tell when we ſhould return. Captain Cook, as many young men offered to come away with us, took one on board, about 18 years of age, named Oedidee, a native of Bolobola. When we were out of the harbour and had made ſail, a canoe was obſerved following us, conducted by two men; whereupon we brought to,

and when along-ſide, they delivered to Captain Cook a preſent of roaſted fruit and roots, from Oreo. The captain, after having made them a proper return, ſet ſail to the weſt, with the Adventure in company. We ſhall here give ſome further account of theſe iſlands, ſome things which are rather intereſting having been omitted in the relation of daily tranſactions and incidents.

In the years 1767, 1768, the iſland of Otaheite, as it were, ſwarmed with hogs and fowls; but at this time it was ſo ill ſupplied with theſe animals, that hardly any thing could tempt the owners to part with them: and the little ſtock they had ſeemed to be at the diſpoſal of their kings.

When we lay at Oaiti-piha Bay, in the kingdom of Tirrabou, or leſſer Peninſula, we were given to underſtand, that every hog and fowl belonged to Waheatoua; and that all in the kingdom of Opoureonu, or the greater Peninſula, belonged to Otoo. While at this iſland, we only got twenty-four hogs in ſeventeen days; half of which came from the kings themſelves, and the other half we were inclined to think were ſold us by their permiſſion. But with reſpect to all the fruits produced in the iſland, with theſe we were abundantly ſupplied, except bread-fruit, which was not in ſeaſon. Cocoa-nuts and plantains we got the moſt of; the latter, with a few yams and other roots, ſupplied the place of bread.

We attributed the ſcarcity of hogs to two cauſes: firſt, to the great number of theſe animals which have been conſumed, and carried away for ſtock, by the ſhips that have touched here of late years; ſecondly, to the frequent wars between the two kingdoms. Two we have known have commenced ſince the year 1767; but at preſent peace reigns among them, though they do not ſeem to entertain a cordial friendſhip for each other.

After our departure, it was our intention to get into the lat. of the iſlands of Middleburgh and Amſterdam, to which end, on the 17th of September we ſteered to the weſt, inclining to the ſouth, with a view of getting clear

clear of the tracts of former navigators. We proceeded at night with great circumspection, frequently laying to, lest we should pass any land unobserved. On the 21st, and the whole of the 22d, we had rain, thunder, lightning, a large swell from the S. and the wind blew from the N. W. for several days; a sign to us, that, in that direction, no land was near us. This was discovered from the mast-head, on Thursday the 23d, stretching from S. by W. to S. W. by S. We hauled up with the wind at S. E. and found it to consist of two or three small islots, united by breakers, as are most of the low isles in the sea; the whole being in a triangular form, and about six leagues in circuit. This island is in lat. 19 deg. 18 min. S. and in 158 deg. 54 min. W. lon.

Each of the small connected isles are cloathed with wood, particularly of the cocoa-nut kind; but we saw no traces of inhabitants, and had reason to believe there were none. To these islots we gave the name of Hervey's Island, in honour of Captain Hervey of the navy, one of the lords of the admiralty, and now earl of Bristol. As the landing on this isle would have occasioned a delay, we resumed our course to the west, in which we saw some men of war, tropic birds, and flying fish. On the 25th, we again began to use our sea biscuit, the fruit being all consumed; but of fresh pork each man had every day a necessary allowance. On the 29th, in lat. 21 deg. 26 min. S. we altered our course at noon W. half S.

On the 1st of October, at two o'clock P. M. we made the island of Middleburgh, and the next morning bore up for the west side thereof, passing between the same and a small island that lay off it, where we found a clear channel two miles broad. After running about two thirds of its length, half a mile from the shore, we observed it assumed another aspect, and offered a prospect both of anchorage and landing. Upon this we plied in under the island. We were now visited by two canoes, which came boldly along-side of us, and several of the Indians entered the Resolution without hesitation; which mark of confidence determined us to visit them if possible.

poſſible. After making a few trips, we found good anchorage, and came to in 25 fathoms water, at three cables length from the ſhore. We had ſcarcely anchored, when we were ſurrounded with Indians, ſome in canoes, and ſome ſwimming; ſeveral came on board, and among them a chief, named Tioony, to whom Captain Cook preſented a hatchet, ſpike nails, and other articles, with which he was highly pleaſed.

A party of our people, in company with Tioony, went on ſhore, who were conducted to a little creek formed by the rocks, right abreaſt of the ſhips, where landing was very eaſy, and the boats ſecure againſt the ſurf. Here we were ſaluted with loud acclamations, by an immenſe croud of people, who ſhewed the moſt evident ſigns of pacific intentions, not one of them having ſo much as a ſtick, or any weapon in their hands. They thronged ſo thick round the boats with cloth, matting, &c. that it was ſome time before we could make good our landing. Many of them, who could not get near the boats, threw over the others heads whole bales of cloth, and retired immediately, without either aſking or waiting to get any thing in return. At length, the chief cauſed them to open to the right and left, and make room for us to land. We were then conducted up to his houſe, which was ſituated about 300 yards from the ſea, at the end of a fine lawn, and under ſome ſhaddock trees. In the front was the proſpect of the ſea, and the ſhips at anchor. Plantations abounding with the richeſt productions of nature, were placed behind, and on each ſide. We were ſeated on mats, laid on the floor, and the natives placed themſelves in a circle round on the outſide. Having with us bag-pipes, Captain Cook ordered them to be played, and in return, the chief directed three young women to ſing a ſong, which they did with exceeding good grace; and a few preſents being diſtributed among theſe young women, ſet all the reſt in the circle a ſinging, who did not ſit down unrewarded. Their ſongs were in no wiſe harſh, but on the contrary muſical and harmonious.

Having

Having continued here ſome time, at our own requeſt, we were conducted to another plantation, where the chief had a houſe, into which we were introduced. Bananoes and cocoa-nuts were ſet before us, and a bowl of liquor, prepared in our preſence, of the juice of ava, in the manner already related; the latter of which was preſented to each of us in cups made by the folding of green leaves, containing near half a pint each cup; but Capt. Cook was the only perſon who taſted the liquor: however, the bowl was ſoon emptied by the natives, of which both men and women partook; but we obſerved that the ſame cup was never filled twice, nor did two perſons drink out of it; each had a freſh cup and freſh liquor.

The houſe we were now entertained in was ſituated at one angle of the plantation, abounding with fruit and trees, whoſe fragrance diffuſed a pleaſant odour, and the ſpreading branches made an agreeable ſhade. Before the houſe was an area, on which we were ſeated. It being now noon, we returned on board to dinner, with the chief Tioony in our company. We had on the table freſh pork, but he eat nothing, which we thought ſomewhat extraordinary. After dinner we again went on ſhore, and were received as before.

Mr. Forſter, with his botanical party, and ſome other gentlemen, took a walk into the country. Our two captains were conducted to the chief's houſe, where fruit, and ſome greens were ſet before us. Having juſt dined, we could not eat much, but Oedidee and Omai did honour to the deſert. We now intimated a deſire of ſeeing the country, and Tioony very readily gratified our wiſhes. He led through ſeveral plantations, laid out with great judgment, and incloſed with fences made of reeds. Moſt of them belonged to our hoſpitable chief, and were all in very good order, and planted with fruit trees. Hogs and very large fowls, the only domeſtic animals we ſaw, were running near the houſes, and in the lanes that ſeparated the plantations. Every perſon was very much pleaſed with this delightful country and the friendly reception we met with; and we much

much regretted, that the ſeaſon of the year and other circumſtances, would not permit our longer ſtay. In the evening we returned on board, and on Saturday the 2d of October, the ſhips were crouded with people the whole day, trafficking in perfect good order.

On the 3d, early in the morning, while the ſhips were preparing to get under ſail, Captains Cook and Furneaux, accompanied by Mr. Forſter, went off in the boat to take leave of our hoſpitable chief. He met us at the landing-place, and had we not excuſed ourſelves, he would have entertained us at his houſe. We therefore ſpent half an hour with him, ſeated on the graſs, in the midſt of a vaſt croud of the natives, who ſeemed to vie with each other in doing what they thought would give us pleaſure. Having made the chief a preſent, conſiſting of various articles, he was given to underſtand that we were going away, at which he ſeemed not at all affected. He went with us into our boat, with two of his friends, intending to accompany us aboard, but when he ſaw the Reſolution under ſail, he and his companions went into a canoe, and returned on ſhore. It is remarkable, that on ſhore this friendly Indian never made the leaſt exchange; but now, during his ſtay in the boat, he bartered fiſh-hooks for nails, and engroſſed the trade in a manner wholly to himſelf.

On the 3d, as ſoon as Captain Cook came on board, we departed from Middleburgh, and made ſail down to Amſterdam. When we were about half way between the two iſles, we were met by three canoes, and the people made ſeveral attempts to come aboard, but without effect, as the rope we threw out to them broke, and we did not ſhorten ſail. They were likewiſe unſucceſsful in boarding the Adventure.

We ran along the ſouth-weſt coaſt of Amſterdam, at the diſtance of half a mile from the ſhore, whereon the ſea broke in a great ſurf. By the help of glaſſes, we ſaw the face of the whole iſland, which, in every part that came under our obſervation, appeared covered with plantations. Along the ſhore we perceived the natives running in great numbers, and diſplaying ſmall white

white flags, the emblems of peace, which ſignals we anſwered by hoiſting a St. George's enſign. At this time three of the natives of Middleburgh, who had continued too long on board the Adventure to return, quitted her, and ſwam to the ſhore, from whence we concluded they had no ſtrong inclination to accompany us in our voyage.

We had no ſooner opened the weſt ſide of the iſle, than ſeveral canoes, having four men in each, came boldly along-ſide, and, when they had preſented us with ſome ava root, came on board without the leaſt ceremony. Having got into Van Diemen's Road, we anchored in 18 fathoms water, little more than a cable's length from the breakers; and our coaſting anchor, to keep the ſhip from tailing on the rocks, lay in 47 fathom water. By this time we were ſurrounded with people, and our ſeamen were ſo eager in purchaſing their curioſities, even at the expence of cloaths, that Captain Cook found it abſolutely neceſſary to prohibit any farther commerce of this ſort. The good effect of this order was, that on the 4th, the natives brought us fowls, pigs, bananoes, and cocoa-nuts in abundance, for which we exchanged ſmall nails and pieces of cloth, even old rags would purchaſe pigs and fowls.

A trading party was now ſettled, and our commanders went on ſhore, attended by Mr. Forſter, and other officers, in company with a chief named Attago, who had attached himſelf to Captain Cook the firſt moment of his coming aboard, which was before the ſhips came to anchor. This perſon of ſome note preſented the captain with ſeveral articles, and as a greater teſtimony of friendſhip, exchanged names with him; a cuſtom, which, as we have obſerved, is practiſed at Otaheite, and the Soeinian Iſles. We were received on ſhore with the ſame demonſtrations of joy as at Middleburgh, and the gentlemen ſet out into the country, except the two commanders, who diſtributed preſents to ſuch of the natives as Attago pointed out, who were afterwards diſcovered to be

of ſuperior rank to himſelf; though at this time, by the attention paid to him, he appeared to be the principal perſon. Having complained of the heat, Attago ſhewed and ſeated us under the ſhade of a large tree; and the people, who were ordered to form a circle, never attempted to paſs the preſcribed bounds, and croud upon us, as did thoſe of Otaheite.

After having been here ſome time, we hinted our deſire to ſee the country; whereupon Attago immediately conducted us along a lane that terminated in an open green, on one ſide of which we ſaw a place of worſhip, built on a mount about eighteen feet high. It was an oblong ſquare, incloſed by a ſtone parapet wall, about three feet in height; from which the mount, covered with green turf, roſe to the building with a gradual ſlope. The building was twenty by fourteen feet. When we had advanced within fifty yards of its front, every one ſat down on the green. Three elderly men, whom we took for prieſts, begun a prayer, having their faces to the houſe, which laſted about ten minutes, and this being ended, they came and ſeated themſelves by us. We made them preſents of what we had about us, and then proceeded to view the premiſes, to which they did not ſhew the leaſt reluctance. The houſe was built in every reſpect like their common dwellings, with poſts and rafters, covered with palm thatch. The eaves came within three feet of the ground, and the open ſpace was filled up with ſtrong matting made up of palm-leaves as a wall. In the front, leading to the top of this, were two ſtone ſteps; and round the houſe was a gravel walk: the floor was alſo laid with fine gravel, in the centre whereof was an oblong ſquare of blue pebbles, raiſed ſix inches higher. In one angle of the building ſtood an image roughly carved in wood, and another lay on one ſide. This image was turned over and over by Attago, as he would have done any other log of wood, which convinced us, that they were not conſidered by the natives as objects of worſhip. We put ſeveral queſtions

to

to Attago concerning this matter, but did not underſtand his anſwers; for our readers are to be informed, that, at our laſt arrival, we hardly could underſtand a word the people ſaid. We thought proper to leave an offering, and therefore laid down upon the platform ſome medals, nails, and other things, which our friend immediately took up and put in his pocket. We could not conceive how they could cut ſuch large ſtones out of the coral rocks, with which the walls were made that incloſed the mount, ſome of them being ten feet by four, and near ſix inches thick. The mount, which ſtood in a kind of grove, was open only to view on that ſide which fronted the green, and here five rocks met, moſt of which appeared to the public. Among the various trees that compoſed the groves, we found the Etoa tree, of which are made clubs, and a ſort of low palm, very common in the northern parts of Holland. This place of worſhip, in the language of Amſterdam, is called A-ſia-tou-ca.

On our return to the water ſide, we turned off to a road leading into the country, about ſixteen feet broad, and as level as a bowling-green, ſeveral other roads interſected it, all incloſed on each ſide with neat reed-fences, and ſhaded by fruit-trees. The country hereabouts is ſurprizingly fertile, inſomuch, that we might eaſily have imagined ourſelves in the moſt pleaſant ſituation that Europe could afford. Here are various delightful walks, and not an inch of uncultivated ground. Nature, aſſiſted by art, no where appears to more advantage than in this fertile ſpot. The roads, even the high public one, which was about ſixteen feet broad, occupied no more ſpace than was abſolutely neceſſary, nor did the boundaries and fences take up above four inches each, and in many places of theſe were planted uſeful trees and plants.

On the 5th, early in the morning, the captain's friend Attago, brought him a hog and ſome fruit, for which, in return, he received a hatchet. The pin-

nace having been ſent on ſhore to trade as uſual, ſoon returned, and we were informed that the natives in many reſpects, were exceeding troubleſome. The day before they had ſtole the boat's grapling, and at this time they were for taking every thing out of the pinnace. It was therefore judged neceſſary to have on ſhore a guard, and accordingly the marines were ſent, under the command of Lieutenant Edgcumbe.

On the 6th, our friend Attago viſited us again as uſual, brought with him a hog, and aſſiſted us in purchaſing many more. We went afterwards on ſhore, viſited the old chief, with whom we ſtayed till noon, and returned on board to dinner, accompanied by Attago, who never one day left Captain Cook. Being about to depart from this iſland, a preſent was made for the old king, and carried on ſhore in the evening. Attago very ſtrongly importuned us to call again at this iſle on our return, and requeſted of the captain more than once, to bring him a ſuit of clothes like thoſe he had on, which was his uniform.

The ſupplies which we procured from this iſland were about 150 pigs, double that number of fowls, as many bananas, &c. as we could find room for; and, had we continued longer, we might have had more than our wants required. We were now about to depart, when, in heaving the coaſting cable, it broke, by being chaffed by the rocks; by which accident we loſt nearly half the cable, together with the anchor, which lay in forty fathoms water, without any buoy to it; from whence a judgment may be formed of this anchorage.

About ten o'clock P. M. we got under ſail, but our decks being encumbered with fruit, fowls, &c. we kept plying under the land till they were cleared. As to the natives of theſe iſlands, both ſexes are of a common ſize with Europeans; but with reſpect to complexion, their colour is that of a lightiſh copper, and more uniformly ſo than among thoſe of Otaheite and the Society iſles. Of our gentlemen, ſome thought

theſe

theſe people were a much handſomer race; others were of a contrary opinion. It is certain that they have in general regular features, with a good ſhape; they are alſo active, briſk, and lively. The women are eſpeceially very merry and ſociable, and would chat with us, without being invited, or if we ſeemed attentive, without conſidering whether we underſtood them or not. They appeared in general to be modeſt: yet inſtances of thoſe of a different character were not wanting; and having ſome venereal complaints, Captain Cook took all poſſible care, that the diſorder ſhould not be communicated to them. Whenever opportunity ſerved, they diſcovered a ſtrong propenſity to pilfering, and in the art of thieving are full as knowing and dexterous as the Otaheiteans. Their hair, particularly of the females, is black, but ſome of the men have a method of ſtaining their hair with various colours, as white, red, and blue, which we ſaw upon the ſame head. It is wore cut ſhort, and we met with only two exceptions to this cuſtom. The boys have only a ſingle lock on the top of the head, combed upwards, and a ſmall quantity on each ſide. The beards of the men are ſhaved quite cloſe with two ſhells: and even thoſe of an advanced age have fine eyes, and in general good teeth.

The dreſs of the natives conſiſts of a piece of cloth or matting, hanging below the knees, but from the waiſt upwards they are generally naked. We were entertained frequently with ſongs from the women, in an agreeable ſtyle, and the muſic they accompanied by ſnapping their fingers, ſo as to keep time to it. Both this and their voices are very harmonious; and they have a conſiderable compaſs in their notes.

The government of this country is much like that of Otaheite, that is, in a king or prime chief (called Areeke) with other ſubordinate chiefs, who are lords of certain diſtricts, perhaps ſole proprietors, to whom the people ſeem to pay great obedience. We alſo perceived a third rank, one of whom was our friend

Attago,

Attago, who ſeemed to have not a little influence over the common people. It was the opinion of Captain Cook, that all the land is private property, and that here, as at Otaheite, are a ſet of ſervants or ſlaves, who have no property in land. Indeed, we cannot ſuppoſe every thing to be in common, in a country ſo richly cultivated. Few would toil if they did not expect to reap, and enjoy the fruits of their labour as their own. Parties of ſix, eight, or ten people, would frequently bring fruit down to the landing-place; but we always ſaw one man or woman, ſuperintend the ſale of the whole, without whoſe conſent no exchanges could be made; and the things they bartered for were always given them, all which plainly ſhews they were the owners, and the others only their ſervants.

CHAP. IV.

The Reſolution and Adventure continue their voyage from Amſterdam—Proceed for Queen Charlotte's Sound—An interview with the inhabitants—The final ſeparation of the two ſhips—Tranſactions and incidents in Queen Charlotte's Sound—The inhabitants diſcovered to be cannibals—The Reſolution departs from the Sound, and proceeds in ſearch after her conſort—Courſe of the Reſolution in ſearch of the ſuppoſed continent; and the methods purſued to explore the Southern Pacific Ocean—Arrives at Eaſter-iſland, and tranſactions there, &c.

ON the 7th of October, we made ſail to the ſouthward, and our route determined was, to make for Queen Charlotte's Sound, there to take in a ſupply of wood and water, and then to proceed on farther diſcoveries to the S. and E. We now after a few hours calm, ſtretched with a S. W. wind to the S. E. but on Sunday the 10th, it veered round to the

S. E.

S. E. and E. S. E. upon which we resumed our course to the S. S. W.

On the 21st, at five o'clock A. M. we made the land of New Zealand, extending from N. W. by N. to W. S. W. We stood in shore till we were abreast of Table Cape and Portland Island, which is joined to it by a ledge of rocks. We advanced to the Black Cape on the 22d, and several inhabitants took courage and boarded us, amongst whom was a chief; he was cloathed elegantly, and his hair was dressed in the high fashion of the country. We entertained him in the cabin, and his companions sold us some fish. These people were very fond of nails, and the chief received them with much greater eagerness than when the captain gave him hogs, fowls, seeds, and roots. We obtained a promise from him not to kill any, and if he keeps his word, there are enough to stock the whole island; the present consisted of two sows, two boars, four hens, and two cocks; we likewise gave him several useful seeds, and instructed him in the manner of setting them. The Adventure was now a good way to leeward, and we were obliged to tack, she was consequently separated from us; but we were joined by her on the 24th.

The wind was now very high, so that we could carry hardly any sail; we endeavoured to make Cape Pallisser, but we had such a hard gale for two days, that drove us off the land just as we were in sight of port. This was very mortifying; but two favourable circumstances attended it, for we were in no danger of a lee-shore, and it was fair over head. In the evening of the 25th, we endeavoured to find the Adventure, which the storm had separated, but without effect, the weather being so hazy, that we could not see a mile round us.

On the 28th, we saw the Adventure about five miles to leeward, and we kept company with her till the night of the 29th, when she disappeared, nor did we see her at day-light. Charlotte Sound was the appointed place of rendezvous; and as we had separated

rated from the Adventure, we were obliged to make for it, otherwiſe Captain Cook would have ſought a ſupply of wood and water further ſouth. We ſtood to the eaſtward, in hopes of meeting with the Adventure.

On the 2d of November, the morning was clear, and we kept a ſharp look-out for the Adventure; but as we could not ſee her, we judged ſhe was got into the Sound. We accordingly made for the ſhore, and anchored in twelve fathoms water, when ſeveral of the inhabitants came on board, who were extravagantly fond of nails. We ran up into Ship Cove on the 3d, where we expected to find the Adventure, but were diſappointed. Here we were obliged to unbend the ſails, which had been very much damaged in the late ſtorms. Several people came on board, who remembered the Endeavour when on this coaſt. The empty caſks were ordered on ſhore, and the neceſſary repairs both to them and the ſhip were ordered to be made.

On the 5th, one of the natives took an opportunity of ſtealing one of the ſeamen's bag of cloaths, which with ſome difficulty we recovered. This made our people more cautious in future. Several ſtrangers came to viſit us in five canoes, they took up their quarters in a cave near us, and decamped the next morning with ſix of our ſmall water caſks. All the people whom we found on our arrival likewiſe went with them.

On the 22d, our officers viſited the dwelling-places of ſeveral of the natives, found ſome human bones, from which the fleſh appeared to be lately taken; and on the 23d, they being on ſhore, ſaw the head and bowels of a youth, lately killed, lying on the beach; his heart was ſtuck on a fork, and fixed at the fore-part of one of the largeſt canoes. It is certain that the New Zealanders are cannibals, which this circumſtance fully proves; but from all we could learn, they only eat the fleſh of thoſe ſlain in battle.

Before

Before we quitted the Sound, we left a memorandum, ſetting forth the day of our departure, what courſe we intended ſteering, &c. and buried it in a bottle, where it muſt be diſcovered, ſhould Captain Furneaux touch here, though we did not place any great expectation in ſuch an event. We ſailed from hence on the 25th of November, and ſought the Adventure in ſeveral harbours, but without effect. All hopes of ſeeing her again were now vaniſhed, and we ſet about our intended diſcoveries by ourſelves.

On the 21ſt, we came the ſecond time within the antartic circle; and on a ſudden got among a great quantity of looſe ice, and a cluſter of ice iſlands, which it was very difficult to ſteer clear of, as the fog was very thick. On the 24th, they increaſed ſo faſt upon us, that we could ſee near one hundred round us, beſides an aſtoniſhing quantity of ſmall pieces. Here we ſpent the 25th, being Chriſtmas-day, in much the ſame manner as we did the preceding one.

On the 2d of January, 1774, we ſteered N. W. in order to explore great part of the ſea between us and our track to the ſouth; but were obliged to ſteer north-eaſterly the next day, and could not accompliſh our deſign. On the 25th, we found ourſelves in a pleaſant climate, and no ice in view; and on the 26th, came a third time within the antartic circle.

On the 30th, we ſaw a very extenſive field of ice, and within the field, we diſtinctly enumerated ninety-ſeven ice hills, of various ſizes; it is probable that ſuch mountains of ice were never ſeen in the Greenland ſeas. On this account, the attempt to get farther to the ſouth, though not abſolutely impoſſible, was yet both raſh and dangerous. The majority of us were of opinion that ice extended to the pole, as it might poſſibly join ſome land to which it had been contiguous ſince the earlieſt times. Should there be land to the ſouth behind this ice, it certainly can afford no better retreat for man, beaſt, or birds, than the ice itſelf, with which it muſt certainly be covered. As we could not go any farther to the ſouth, we

thought it adviſeable to tack, and ſtand back to the north, being at this time in lat. 71 deg. 10 min. S. and 106 deg. 54 min. W. Happily for us we tacked in good time; for we had no ſooner done it, than a thick fog came on, which would have been highly dangerous when we fell in with the ice.

On the 1ſt of February, we were able to take in ſome more ice, which, though it was cold work to collect, ſerved us for preſent conſumption when melted. Captain Cook was now well ſatisfied that no continent was to be found in this ocean, but that which is totally inacceſſible; he therefore determined to paſs the enſuing winter within the tropic, if he met with no other object worth purſuing. It was determined to ſteer for Eaſter Iſland, or Davis's Land, which we knew very little about; and we were happy at the thoughts of getting into a warmer climate. We had continual gales from the 8th to the 12th inſtant, when it fell a dead calm. The weather varied every day conſiderably till the 25th. The ſame day, Captain Cook was taken ſo ill as to be obliged to keep his bed, and recovered very ſlowly. It is ſomething very extraordinary, that when he could eat nothing elſe, he had a mind to a dog of Mr. Forſter's, which was killed, and he reliſhed both the fleſh and the broth made of it. This ſeems very odd kind of food for a ſick man; and, in the opinion of many people, would create much greater ſickneſs than it was likely to be of any means of removing.

On the 11th of March, land was ſeen from the maſt-head, which proved to be Eaſter Iſland: and on the 13th, we came to an anchor in 36 fathoms water, before the ſandy beach. One of the natives came on board the ſhip, where he ſtaid two nights. A party of us went aſhore on the 14th, and found a great number of the natives aſſembled, who were pacifically inclined, and ſeemed deſirous to ſee us. We very ſoon found out that theſe gentlemen were as expert thieves as any before met with; we could ſcarce keep any thing in our pockets, and it was with difficulty

culty we could keep our hats upon our heads. Theſe people ſeemed to underſtand the uſe of a muſket, and to be very much afraid of it. Here were ſeveral plantations of potatoes, ſugar-canes, and plantains; but otherwiſe the country appeared barren and without food. As the natives did not ſeem willing to part with theſe articles, and as we were in want of them, we determined to ſtay only a few days.

A party of officers and men were ſent up the country in order to examine it; and Captain Cook remained on ſhore among the natives. An advantageous trade for potatoes was opened, but ſoon put a ſtop to by the owners of the ſpot from whence they were dug. It ſeems that they had ſtolen theſe potatoes; for they all ran away at his approach. From this circumſtance it is pretty evident, that they are not more ſtrictly honeſt among themſelves than to ſtrangers. They found the greateſt part of the iſland barren, though in many places there were plantations of the roots before mentioned.

Travelling on, they found in ſome places a poor ſort of iron ore, and afterwards came to a fruitful part of the iſland on which were ſeveral plantations. They could get no good water in their journey; but were obliged to drink what they could get, on account of the extremity of their thirſt. They found the natives ſo addicted to theft, that they were obliged to fire ſome ſmall ſhot at a man who took from them their bag of proviſions and implements. The ſhot hit this fellow in the back, on which he dropped the bag and fell; but he ſoon afterwards got up and walked off. The man ran round them and repeated ſeveral words, which they could not underſtand; and afterwards they were good friends together, no one ever attempting to ſteal any more.

Many of our people gained the ſummit of an hill, but could not ſee any bay or creek, nor diſcover any ſigns of freſh water. They returned to the ſhip in the evening. No ſhrubs worth mentioning were

found in this excurſion, neither did they ſee an animal of any ſort, and but very few birds. They could not diſcover any thing in the whole iſland to induce ſhips in the utmoſt diſtreſs to touch at.

CHAP. V.

The Reſolution ſails from Eaſter Iſland to the Marqueſas—Departs from the Marqueſas, with an account of the inhabitants, &c.—The Reſolution leaves Otaheite—Her arrival at the iſland Huaheine—Various incidents related—The ſhip proceeds to Ulietea—Incidents during her ſtay, and the character of Oedidee.

ON the 16th of March, we took our departure from Eaſter Iſle, and ſteered for the Marqueſas iſlands, intending to make ſome ſtay there, if nothing material intervened. On the 6th of April, we diſcovered an iſland, when in lat. 9 deg. 20 min. and lon. 138 deg. 14 min. we were about nine leagues diſtance from it. We ſoon diſcovered another, afterwards a third and fourth; theſe were the Marqueſas, diſcovered in 1595. After various unſucceſsful trials to come to an anchor, we came at laſt before Mendana's port, and anchored in thirty-four fathoms water, at the entrance of the bay.

Several canoes appeared, filled with natives, but it was with ſome difficulty they were perſuaded to come along-ſide; they were at laſt induced by ſome ſpike nails and a hatchet. From theſe people we got ſome fiſh and fruit. Great numbers of them came along-ſide next morning, and brought with them one pig, ſome bread-fruit and plantains, for which they received nails. We often detected them in keeping our goods, and making no return; which practice was not put a ſtop to till Captain Cook fired a muſket ball over the head of one man, who had repeatedly ſerved us ſo.

When

When Captain Cook ſaw there were too many natives on board, he deſired that they might be well looked after, or they would certainly commit many thefts. Before the captain was well got into the boat, he was told that a canoe, with ſome men in her, were making off with one of the iron ſtanchions from the oppoſite gangway. The captain immediately ordered them to fire over the canoe, but not to kill any body. There was ſuch a noiſe on board, that his orders were not diſtinctly heard, and the poor thief was killed at the third ſhot. The reſt that were in the canoe leaped overboard, but got in again juſt as Captain Cook came up to them, and threw overboard the ſtanchion.

One of the men ſat laughing as he laded the blood and water out of the boat, but the other looked very ſerious and dejected. We afterwards had reaſon to think that the father of the latter had been ſhot. The natives retired with great precipitation at this unhappy accident; but their fears were in ſome meaſure allayed by the captain's following them into the bay, and making them preſents.

A man who had the appearance of a chief, came off to us with a pig upon his ſhoulder; he was preſented with a hatchet in return, and afterwards great numbers of the natives came along-ſide, and carried on ſome traffic. Peace being now eſtabliſhed, another party of men were ſent aſhore. The natives received us civilly, and we got a ſupply of water, as well as ſome hogs and fruit. On the 9th, we collected a good many pigs and other refreſhments, and returned on board in the evening. We alſo obtained ſeveral pigs from the different canoes that came along-ſide of us on the 10th, and by this time we had a ſufficient number to afford the crews a freſh meal.

We were now determined to remove our quarters, and make ſail for Otaheite, hoping to fall in with ſome of thoſe iſlands, where our wants might effectually be relieved. We had been nineteen weeks at ſea, living the whole time upon ſalt proviſions, and therefore

therefore could not but want ſome refreſhments; yet we muſt own, with grateful acknowledgments to goodneſs ſupreme, that on our arrival here, it could ſcarcely be ſaid we had one man ſick, and but a few who had the leaſt complaint.

On the 14th, we weighed from St. Chriſtina, and ſtood over for La Dominica, and the night was ſpent in plying between the two iſles. On the 12th, we ſteered to the S. and at five P. M. Reſolution Bay bore E. N. E. half E. diſtant five leagues, and the iſland of Magdalena about nine leagues, which was the only view we had of it.

On the 20th, hauling round the weſt end of the iſlands, we found a great ſwell, rolling in from the S. by which we knew we were clear of theſe low iſlands; and being not within ſight of land, made the beſt of our way to Otaheite, having a ſtrong gale at E. attended with ſhowers of rain. On the 21ſt, we made the high land of Otaheite; by ſun-ſet was in with Point Venus, and the next morning anchored in Matavai Bay, in ſeven fathoms water. Our arrival was no ſooner known to the natives, than they paid us a viſit, expreſſed the moſt lively congratulations, and ſupplied us with fiſh and fruit ſufficient for all the crew.

On the 24th, Otoo and other chiefs, with a train of attendants, brought us ten large hogs, beſides fruit, which made their viſit exceedingly agreeable. As the king's coming had been announced to us, and knowing how much it was our intereſt to keep this chief our friend, Captain Cook met him at the tents, and conducted his retinue, with himſelf, on board, where they ſtaid dinner, and appeared highly pleaſed with their reception. Next day, notwithſtanding we had much thunder, lightning, and rain, the king came again to ſee us, and brought with him another preſent. When at Amſterdam, we had collected, among other curioſities, ſome red parrot feathers. Theſe precious valuables procured us

hogs,

hogs, fruit, and every other thing the iſland afforded.

On the 26th, Captain Cook, accompanied by ſome of the officers and gentlemen, went down to Oparree, to viſit Otoo by appointment. When arrived, we ſaw a large number of canoes in motion, but were much ſurpriſed at perceiving more than 300 ranged along ſhore, all completely equipped and manned; beſides a vaſt number of armed men on the ſhore. We landed in the midſt of them, and were received by a vaſt multitude, ſome under arms, and ſome not. The cry of the former was Tiyono, and Towha, and the latter Tiyono Otoo. Towha was admiral, or commander of the fleet. Upon our landing, we were met by a chief, named Tee, uncle to the king, of whom we enquired for Otoo. Soon after we were met by Towha, who received us in a friendly manner. He took Captain Cook by the one hand, and Tee by the other, and dragged them, as it were, through the crowd that was divided into two parties, both of which proclaimed themſelves his friends. One party wanted him to go to Otoo, and the other to remain with Towha. When come to the uſual place of audience, Tee left us to go and bring the king. Towha inſiſted on the captain's going with him, but would not conſent. Tee being deſirous of conducting the captain to the king, Towha oppoſed, and he was obliged to deſire Tee to deſiſt, and to leave him to the admiral and his party, who conducted him to the fleet.

When we came to the fleet, we told 160 large double canoes, equipped, manned, and armed. The chiefs, and all thoſe on the fighting ſtages were habited in cloth, turbans, breaſt-plates, and helmets. Their veſſels were full dreſſed with flags, ſtreamers, &c. ſo that the fleet made ſuch a noble appearance, as we had never before ſeen in this ſea, and what no one could have expected. Their inſtruments of war were clubs, ſpears, and ſtones. We counted, excluſive of the veſſels of war, 170 ſail of ſmaller double canoes,

canoes, all rigged with maſt and ſail, which the war canoes had not. Theſe we judged were deſigned for tranſports, victuallers, &c. for in the war canoes were no ſorts of proviſions whatever.

We conjectured that in theſe 330 veſſels, there were no leſs than 7760 men; a number incredible, eſpecially as we are told they all belonged to the diſtricts of Attahourou and Ahopatea. Having viewed this fleet, it was our intention to have gone on board, could we have ſeen the admiral. At laſt Tee came, by whom we were informed, that he was gone to Matavai. When we got to Matavai, our friends told us, that this fleet was part of the armament intended to go againſt Eimeo, whoſe chief had thrown off the yoke of Otaheite.

On the 27th, in the morning, Towha ſent us by his ſervants, two large hogs and ſome fruit. The bearers of this preſent had orders not to receive any thing in return, nor would they when offered them. Some of our gentlemen went with the captain in his boat to Oparree, where we found Towha and the king; after a ſhort viſit, he brought them both on board, together with Tarevatoo, the king's younger brother. When they drew near the ſhip, the admiral, who had never ſeen one before, expreſſed ſtrong ſigns of ſurprize, and when on board, he was ſhewed, and beheld every part of it with great attention. When Towha retired after dinner, he put a hog on board without our knowledge, or waiting for a return; and ſoon after Otoo and his attendants departed alſo.

On the 1ſt of May, ſeveral chiefs ſupplied us with a large quantity of proviſions; and the day following our friend Towha ſent us a preſent of a hog, and a boat loaded with various ſorts of fruits and roots. On the 7th, in the morning, we found Otoo at the tents, of whom the captain aſked leave to cut down ſome trees for fuel. He took him to a growing near the ſea ſhore, the better to make him underſtand what ſort he wanted; and he ſeemed much pleaſed when he told him

him no trees ſhould be cut down that bore any kind of fruit. This aſſurance from us he repeated ſeveral times aloud to the people about us.

In the afternoon, when on board, we were honoured with a viſit from the royal family, conſiſting of Otoo, his father, brother, and two ſiſters: but this was properly the father's viſit, who brought the captain a complete mourning dreſs, a preſent he much valued; for which he had in return whatever he deſired, which was not a little; and to the reſt of the company were preſented red feathers. They were then conducted aſhore in the captain's boat. Otoo and his friends were ſo well pleaſed with the reception they met with, that, at parting, we were granted the liberty to cut down as many trees as we wanted, and what ſort we pleaſed.

On the 8th, our friendly connections with the natives were interrupted by the negligence of one of our centinels at the tents, who had his muſket carried away, he having ſlept or quitted his poſt. We received an imperfect account of this affair from Tee, but underſtood enough to know that ſomething had happened, which alarmed the king, who, Tee ſaid, was under great apprehenſions of being killed. We therefore loſt no time in going aſhore; and when landed, were informed of the tranſaction by the ſerjeant who commanded the party. Moſt of the natives had fled at our approaching the tents. Tarevatoo ſlipt from us in a moment, and a very few beſides Tee had courage to remain.

We went immediately in ſearch of Otoo, and in the way endeavoured to allay the fears of the people. Having advanced ſome diſtance from the ſhore in the country, Tee on a ſudden ſtopped, and adviſed our returning, ſaying, he would proceed to the mountains, whither Otoo had retired, and inform him that we were ſtill his friends. The captain thought it was to no purpoſe to go farther, we therefore took Tee's advice, and returned on board.

After this, Oedidee was diſpatched to the king, to let him know his fears were groundleſs, ſeeing the captain required of him only what was in his power, the return of the muſket. A ſhort time after, we ſaw ſix large canoes coming round Point Venus. Suſpecting that one belonged to theſe that had committed the theft, it was reſolved to intercept them, for which purpoſe a boat was put off, and another ordered to follow. One of the canoes was a-head of the reſt, and ſeemingly making for the ſhip. We put along-ſide of her, and found three women that we knew. They ſaid they were going aboard the ſhip with a preſent to the captain, and that the other canoes were laden with fruit, hogs, &c. Satisfied with this intelligence, the captain recalled his orders for intercepting them, thinking they alſo, as well as this one, were bound for the ſhip.

We therefore left the ſingle canoe, and proceeded to ſhore, to ſpeak with Otoo; but upon landing, found he had not been there. Looking behind us, we ſaw all the canoes, the one we had left near the ſhip not excepted, making off in the greateſt haſte. Vexed at being thus deceived, we reſolved to purſue them, and as we paſſed the ſhip, Captain Cook gave orders to ſend out another boat for the ſame purpoſe. We overtook and brought five out of the ſix along-ſide, but the one by which we were outwitted got clear off.

In one of the prizes was a friend of Mr. Forſter's, who had hitherto called himſelf an Earee, alſo three women, his wife, daughter, and the mother of the late Toutaha. At this time Tee and Oedidee came on board, and aſſured us, that the man who had ſtole the muſket was from Tiarabou; and that we might credit their declaration, they deſired us to ſend a boat to Waheatoua, the king of Tiarabou, offering to go themſelves in her, and recover the muſket. This ſtory, though not altogether ſatisfactory, carried with it an air of probability; and thinking it better to drop the

the affair altogether, the captain ſuffered Mr. Foſter's friend to depart with his canoes.

The captain then deſired Tee to tell Otoo, that he ſhould give himſelf no farther concern about the muſket, being ſatisfied none of his people had committed the theft. We had now given it up, concluding it to be irrecoverably loſt, but in the duſk of the evening, it was brought to the tents, together with other things we had not miſſed, by three men, who, as well as ſome other people preſent, affirmed, that it was by one belonging to Maritata, by whom the things had been ſtolen; but we concluded both Tee and Oedidee had intentionally deceived us.

On the 9th, Tee came again aboard to inform us, that Otoo was at Oparree, and requeſted of the captain to ſend a perſon, to let him underſtand if he was ſtill his friend. He was aſked why he did not do this himſelf as he was deſired; he made a trifling excuſe, but we thought he had not ſeen Otoo. As the natives brought not any thing to market, and a ſtop was conſequently put to our trade with them, it was judged time ill ſpent to ſend any more fruitleſs meſſages; a party therefore ſet out, with Tee in our company, and having reached the utmoſt boundaries of Oparree, the king at laſt made his appearance.

The firſt ſalutations being over, and having taken our ſeats under the ſhade of ſome trees, Otoo deſired the captain to ſpeak. He began with blaming the king for giving way to groundleſs alarms, he having always profeſſed himſelf his friend, and was diſpleaſed only with thoſe of Tiarabou, who were the thieves. The captain was then aſked, how he came to fire at the canoes? By way of excuſe, he told him they belonged to Maritata, one of thoſe people who had ſtolen the muſket, and, added the captain, "If I had them in my power, I would deſtroy them, or any other belonging to the diſtrict of Tiarabou." We knew this declaration would pleaſe them, from the natural averſion the one kingdom has to the other; and it was enforced by preſents, which we believe were

the ſtrongeſt arguments in favour of a reconciliation: for after theſe weighty reaſons, things were ſoon reſtored to their former ſtate, by Otoo's promiſing, on the word of a king, that we ſhould be ſupplied the next day with proviſions and fruit as uſual.

Peace and amity being now once more eſtabliſhed, we accompanied him to his proper reſidence at Oparree, where he obliged us with a view of ſome of his dock-yards, where we ſaw ſeveral large canoes, ſome building, and others lately built, ſome of which were the largeſt we had ever ſeen. Having gratified our curioſity, we repaired on board with Tee in our company, who, after he had dined with us, went to acquaint Happi, the king's father, that all differences were brought to a happy concluſion.

In the afternoon, Otoo himſelf brought us a large ſupply of proviſions, and preſently after, more fruit was brought us than we knew what to do with: for the natives, we believe, thought themſelves injured equally with ourſelves; and we knew they had every thing ready for our market, when they were permitted to bring them. Otoo deſiring to ſee ſome of our great guns fired, his wiſh was complied with, but the ſight, being entirely new, gave him as much pain as pleaſure; but in the evening, when we entertained him with a ſhew of fire-works, he expreſſed much greater ſatisfaction.

On the 11th, a large ſupply of fruit came to market, and among the reſt a preſent from Towha, the admiral; for which the captain made a ſuitable return. At this time all the neceſſary repairs of the ſhip being nearly finiſhed, it was reſolved to leave Otaheite in a few days; to this end every thing was ordered off from the ſhore, that the natives might not ſee we were about to leave. And next day, Oberea, whom we had not ſeen ſince 1769, paid us a viſit, bringing with her hogs and fruit. Otoo alſo came ſoon after, with a number of attendants and a large quantity of proviſions. [illegible]

nerous in his returns of preſents, and in the evening entertained them with fire-works, thinking it might be the laſt time we might ſee theſe friendly people, who had ſo liberally relieved our wants.

On the 13th, we were not ready to ſail, but the wind was favourable, and the weather fair. Oedidee was not yet returned from Attahourou, and various reports were circulated concerning him. Some ſaid he was at Matavai; others that he intended not to return; and there were thoſe who affirmed he was at Oparree. With a view of diſcovering the truth, a party of us repaired to Oparree, where we found him. Towha was alſo here, who, notwithſtanding he was afflicted with a ſwelling in his feet and legs, nevertheleſs, reſolved to ſee the captain before he ſailed, and had advanced with this intent thus far on his journey. The day being far ſpent, we were obliged to ſhorten our ſtay, and after having ſeen Otoo, we returned on board with Oedidee.

This youth, we found, was deſirous of remaining at Otaheite; the captain, therefore, told him he was at liberty to remain there, or to quit us at Ulietea, or go with us to England. That if the latter was his choice, he muſt look upon him as his father, as it was very probable he would never return to his own country. The youth threw his arms about his neck, wept much, and ſaid, many of his friends perſuaded him to remain at Otaheite. Oedidee was well beloved in the ſhip, on which account every one was perſuading him to go with us.

On the 14th, early in the morning, Oedidee came on board, and Mr. Forſter prevailed upon him to go with us to Ulietea. Towha, Potatou, Oamo, Happi, Oberea, and many more of our friends, paid us a viſit. The wife of Towha was with him; this chief was hoiſted in, and placed on a chair on the quarter-deck. Among other preſents, we gave the admiral an Engliſh pendant, which, after he had been inſtructed in the uſe of it, pleaſed him more than all the reſt. The ſame day the king, and Tee, his prime miniſter, came

came on board, and brought with them a hog, and a turtle of about ſixty pounds weight, who, after remaining on board ſome time, took an affectionate farewel.

On Sunday the 15th, we put to ſea, with a fine breeze in our favour, and purſued our voyage to the N. W. and N. W. by W. The ſame night we made the iſland of Huaheine, and anchored in the north entrance of O'Wharre harbour. Oree, the chief, and ſeveral of the natives paid us viſits. Oree, among other articles, brought with him a hog; and the next day, Captain Cook returned Oree's viſit, preſenting to him ſome red feathers, which he held in his hand, and muttered over them a prayer. This morning the people began to bring us fruit. The chief ſent us two hogs, which were followed by himſelf and friends, who came to dine with us. Oree aſked for axes and nails, which were readily given him.

After dinner, Mr. Forſter, and a party with him, went up the country to examine its productions; which he continued as a daily taſk during the ſhip's continuance in this harbour. As a ſervant of Mr. Forſter's was walking along the ſhore, without a companion, he was beſet by ſeveral ſtout fellows, who would have ſtripped him, had not ſome of our people arrived to his aſſiſtance. One of the men made off with a hatchet. This day the number of natives that came about the ſhip was ſo great, that it was found neceſſary to place centinels in the gangways to prevent the men from coming on board; but no oppoſition was made to the women, ſo that the ſhip was crouded with them.

On the 17th, we found Oree, and a great number of the principal people, aſſembled in a houſe conſulting together. We heard the late robbery mentioned by them ſeveral times; but the chief aſſured us, neither himſelf nor his friends had any hand in the ſame, and deſired Captain Cook to kill with his guns thoſe that had. We could not learn where the robbers were gone, and therefore, at preſent, took no more notice

notice of the affair. In the evening a dramatic entertainment was exhibited. The ſubject of the piece was that of a girl running away with us from Otaheite. This was not wholly a fiction, for a girl had taken her paſſage with us from Ulietea, and was at this time preſent when her own adventures were repreſented: ſhe could hardly refrain from tears while the play was acting; and it was with much difficulty we perſuaded her to ſtay out the entertainment. At the concluſion of the piece, the girl's return to her friends was repreſented; and the reception ſhe met with was not a favourable one. It is very probable that this part of the comedy was deſigned to deter others from going away with us.

On the 18th, king Oree came on board and dined, and the captain, at his deſire, ordered the great guns to be ſhotted, and fired into the water, by way of a ſalute at his arrival and departure; indeed he had by Oedidee given us to underſtand, that he expected the ſame honours to be paid to him, as had been ſhewn to the chiefs of Otaheite.

A party of petty officers having obtained leave to amuſe themſelves in the country, they took with them ſome hatchets, nails, &c. in bags, which were carried by two natives, who went with them as their guides. Theſe fellows made off with the truſt repoſed in them, and artfully enough effected their eſcape. The party had with them two muſkets; and after it had rained ſome time, the natives pointed out ſome birds for them to ſhoot. One of the guns went off, and the other miſſed fire ſeveral times. At this inſtant, when the fellows ſaw themſelves ſecure from both, they took the opportunity to run away, and not one of the party, being all much ſurpriſed, had preſence of mind enough to purſue them.

On the 19th, a report was current, that the natives intended to riſe and attack the ſhip. The captain, though he did not think them ſerious in ſuch an attempt, yet was unwilling totally to diſregard the intimation: he therefore ordered twenty ſtand of arms to be in readineſs, in caſe any commotion ſhould be obſerved

ſerved among them; but though the rumour increaſed throughout the day, yet no preparations could be perceived to countenance ſuch a report; and the king continued his viſits as uſual, never coming empty handed.

On the 20th, the firſt and ſecond lieutenants, with one of the mates, being out on a ſhooting party, they were beſet by more than fifty of the natives, who firſt took from them their arms, and then robbed them of what articles they had carried with them to trade. In the ſcuffle, the firſt lieutenant loſt the ſkirt of his coat, and one of the other gentlemen received a ſevere blow. When the robbers had ſtripped them of their merchandizes, they reſtored to them their fowling pieces. When this tranſaction came to the knowledge of Captain Cook, he went immediately with a boat's crew on ſhore, and entered a large houſe wherein were two chiefs. This, with all their effects, he took poſſeſſion of, and remained there till he heard that the gentlemen had got ſafe on board, and had all their things reſtored to them. Oedidee informed us, Oree was ſo much affected with the relation of this, that he wept much. When on board, we learnt from the officers themſelves, that a ſmall inſult on their part was the occaſion of the affray; but ſome chiefs interfering, took the officers out of the croud, and cauſed every thing which had been taken from them to be reſtored.

On the 21ſt, we ſaw upwards of ſixty canoes, moſt of the people in them being Eareeoies, ſteering for Ulietea, and we heard they were going to viſit their brethren in the neighbouring iſlands. It ſeems theſe people have cuſtoms among them peculiar to themſelves; and aſſiſt each other when neceſſity requires: we may therefore call them the Free Maſons of Huaheine. This day Oree ſent a meſſage to Captain Cook, deſiring he would come on ſhore, and bring twenty-two men with him, in order to chaſtiſe the robbers. Oedidee brought with him twenty-two pieces of leaves to aſſiſt his memory, a cuſtom very common among theſe people.

people. This meſſage ſeemed to be an extraordinary one, and therefore the captain went to the chief for better information. Oree informed him that theſe fellows were a ſet of banditti, who had formed themſelves into a body, and had reſolved to rob all they met, for which purpoſe they were now aſſembled and armed. Theſe robbers Oree wanted us to attack, the captain ſaid they would fly to the mountains; but he aſſured us to the contrary, and deſired we would deſtroy both them and their habitations, only ſparing their canoes. This requeſt ſeemed extraordinary, but the captain was reſolved to comply with it in part, leſt theſe fellows ſhould make more head, and become formidable; and alſo with a view of preventing the report from gaining ground in Ulietea, where we intended going, and we were apprehenſive aſſociations might be formed in like manner, and the people might treat us in the ſame way, or worſe, they being more numerous.

Captain Cook and his officers made ready to accompany king Oree in the expedition againſt the robbers; and having ordered fifty marines, with ſome ſailors, to be well armed, they landed near the palace of the king, and having required him to conduct them according to his promiſe, he very readily conſented, and they all ſet out together in very good order. The party increaſed as we proceeded; and Oedidee told us, that ſeveral of the banditti had joined us, with a view of decoying us into a place where they might attack us to advantage. As we could place no confidence in any other perſon, we took his advice, and proceeded with caution.

We marched ſeveral miles, when Captain Cook declared he would proceed no farther; beſides, we were informed that the men had fled to the mountains. At this time we were about to croſs a deep valley, with ſteep rocks on each ſide, where our retreat might have been rendered difficult, by a few men aſſaulting us with ſtones. Oedidee perſiſted in his opinion; and we marched back in the ſame order as we came.

As we went along, we obſerved ſeveral people coming down the ſides of the hills with clubs, which they immediately hid when they found we ſaw them. This was ſome confirmation of Oedidee's ſuſpicions; but we could not perſuade ourſelves that the chief had any ſuch intention, whatever might be the deſigns of his people. In our return we halted in a convenient place, and wanting ſome refreſhments, they were immediately brought us.

When we arrived at the landing-place, we diſcharged ſeveral volleys, to convince the natives, that we could ſupport a continual fire; after which we returned on board, and the chief dined with us, having brought with him a hog ready dreſſed. After dinner we received a great number of preſents as peace-offerings. Two chiefs brought each of them a pig, a dog, and ſome young plantain trees, and with due ceremony preſented them ſingly to the captain. Another brought a very large hog, with which he had followed us to the ſhip. A quantity of fruit was brought us by others; ſo that we were likely to make more by this little excurſion, than by all the preſents we had made them; and the expedition had one good effect at leaſt, for the people were convinced that muſkets were more terrible things than they at firſt imagined.

We were promiſed a larger ſupply of hogs and fruit the next day; but the chief was not ſo good as his word. We went aſhore in the afternoon, and found him ſitting down to dinner. The people about him immediately began chewing the pepper root; a cup of the juice was preſented to Captain Cook, but he did not like the method of brewing it. Oedidee was not ſo nice, and immediately ſwallowed what the captain refuſed. The chief waſhed his mouth with cocoa-nut water after he had taken the juice of the pepper-root, and ate a large quantity of plantain, repe, and mahee, and finiſhed his dinner by eating and drinking a compoſition of plantains, bread-fruit, mahee, &c. of the conſiſtence of a cuſtard; of this he took about three pints. He dined in the open air, at the outſide of his houſe, and

during

during dinner time a play was performing within the houſe.

On the 23d, we put to ſea. The chief and Captain Cook took an affectionate leave of each other. When Oree heard that we never intended coming there any more, he ſaid, "Let your ſons come, we will treat them well." We did not get a ſufficient ſupply of hogs at this iſland, though they did not appear to be ſcarce; but we obtained more fruit than we well knew what to do with. Our ſtock in trade being nearly exhauſted, we found it neceſſary to ſet the ſmiths to work, in making different ſorts of iron tools, that an influence might be kept up at the other iſlands, and to enable us to procure refreſhments.

On the 24th, we anchored in Ulietea, and was viſited by Oreo the chief, who brought with him a handſome preſent. A party of us went aſhore to make the chief a preſent, and as we entered his houſe we were met by five old women, who lamented very bitterly, and cut their faces in a ſhocking manner. This was not the worſt part of the ſtory, for we were obliged to ſubmit to their amiable embraces, and get ourſelves covered with blood. After this ceremony was over, they waſhed themſelves, and appeared as chearful as any other perſon.

On the 27th, Oreo paid us a viſit, in company with his wife, ſon, and daughter, and brought with them a very handſome preſent of all kinds of refreſhments. We accompanied them on ſhore after dinner, and were entertained with a play, which concluded with the repreſentation of a woman in labour, performed by a ſet of brawny fellows; the child that was brought forth was at leaſt ſix feet high. As ſoon as the child was delivered, they preſſed his noſe, which ſeemed to indicate that they really take this method with all their children, which occaſions that flatneſs which their noſes generally have.

On the 29th, ſeveral things were ſtolen out of our boats, which lay at the buoy; but on application to the chief, we had them all returned, except an iron

tiller, and in lieu of that they brought us two large hogs. On the 30th, a party of us ſet out for Oedidee's eſtate, accompanied by the chief and his family. When we arrived there, we found that Oedidee could not command any thing, though he had promiſed us hogs and fruit in abundance; they were now in poſſeſſion of his brother. We had here an opportunity of ſeeing them kill and dreſs a pig, which was done in the following manner: three men firſt ſtrangled the hog; the hog was laid on his back, two men laid a ſtick acroſs his throat, preſſing at each end, the third man ſtuffed up his fundament with graſs, and held his hind legs. The hog was kept in this poſition for ten minutes, before he was dead. An oven, which was cloſe by, was heated. They laid the hog on the fire as ſoon as he was dead, and ſinged off his hair; he was then carried to the ſea-ſide and waſhed. The carcaſe was then laid on clean green leaves, that it might be opened. They firſt took out the lard, and laid it on a green leaf, the entrails were then taken out and carried away in a baſket; the blood was put into a large leaf. The hog was then waſhed quite clean, and ſeveral hot ſtones were put into his body; it was then placed in the oven on his belly, the lard and fat were put into a veſſel, with two or three hot ſtones, and placed along-ſide the hog; the blood was tied up in a leaf, with a hot ſtone, and put into the oven; they covered the whole with leaves, on which they placed the remainder of the hot ſtones; they afterwards threw a great deal of rubbiſh in, and covered the whole with earth. A table was ſpread with green leaves, while the hog was baking, which took up little more than two hours. We ſat down at one end of the table, and the natives, who dined with us, at the other; the fat and blood were placed before them, and the hog before us. We thought the pork exceeding good indeed, and every part of it was well done. The natives chiefly dined off the fat and blood, and ſaid it was very good victuals. The whole of this cookery was conducted with remarkable cleanlineſs. This eſtate of Oedidee was ſmall, but very pleaſant; and the houſes formed

formed a pretty village. After we had dined, we returned to the ſhip. In our way we ſaw four wooden images, each two feet long. They ſtood on a ſhelf, had a large piece of cloth round the middle, a turban on their heads, ſtuck with cocks feathers. They told us theſe were their ſervants gods.

On the 4th of June, the chief and his family came on board to take leave, bringing a handſome preſent with them. We were very much importuned to return to this place; when we told them we could not, their grief was bitter, and we believed it to be real. They deſired Captain Cook to acquaint them with his burial place, and ſaid they would be buried with him. A ſtrong proof of affection and attachment. We left Oedidee here, as we could not promiſe that more ſhips would be ſent from England to thoſe iſlands: he left us with infinite regret. Oedidee did not leave us till we were out of the harbour, and ſtaid to fire ſome guns, it being his Majeſty's birth-day. This youth was of a gentle, docile, humane diſpoſition, and would have been a better ſpecimen of the natives than Omiah.

CHAP. VI.

Departure of the Reſolution from Ulietea—Incidents at Savage Iſland—Paſſage from Savage Iſland to Rotterdam—Tranſactions at this place, and the inſolence of the natives—An account of the people in Turtle Iſland—Tranſactions while here, and ferocious behaviour of the inhabitants—The Reſolution continues her courſe from Port Sandwich—Steers in a direction for Sandwich Iſland, in order to diſcover the Southern extremity of the Archipelago—Hoſtile behaviour of the natives of Sandwich Iſle—More new iſlands diſcovered.

ON the 20th, we diſcovered land, and the inhabitants appearing upon the ſhore, we equipped two boats, and as we approached, the inhabitants retired into the woods. When we landed, we took poſt on a high

high rock to prevent a ſurpriſe, and the botaniſing party began collecting plants, with which the country ſeemed covered. Captain Cook took two men with him and entered the woods, but on hearing the inhabitants approach, they returned. We made every friendly ſign in our power, but were anſwered by menaces; and one of the natives threw a ſtone, which ſtruck one of our party. Two muſkets were fired indiſcriminately, and they all retreated into the woods.

Having embarked, we proceeded along the coaſt till we came to a place where four canoes lay. Captain Cook and only four gentlemen with him, went to look at the canoes. Very ſoon after the natives ruſhed out of the wood upon us, and we endeavoured, to no purpoſe, to bring them to a parley; they threw their darts, and appeared very ferocious. We diſcharged ſome muſkets in the air, but this did not intimidate them, for they ſtill threw darts and ſtones. Captain Cook's muſket miſſed fire, otherwiſe he would certainly have killed the ring-leader of them. The men drawn upon the rock fired at ſome who appeared on the heights, which allayed the ardour of our antagoniſts, and we had an opportunity to join the marines. We do not think of any the natives were hurt, but they all retreated into the woods: and ſeeing we could make nothing of them, returned to the ſhip.

Captain Cook named this place Savage Iſland, from the conduct and aſpect of the iſlanders; its ſituation is ſouth latitude 19 deg. 1 min. weſt longitude, 169 deg. 37 min. its form is circular, and is about eleven leagues in circumference. The country appears entirely covered with trees and ſhrubs. Nothing but coral rocks were to be ſeen along the ſhore.

We ſteered for Rotterdam, and as we drew near it, ſeveral canoes laden with fruit came along-ſide of us, but we did not ſhorten ſail. The people on board them wanted us much to go towards their coaſt, telling us, as well as they were able, we might ſafely anchor there. We came to anchor on the north ſide of the iſland on the 26th. The inhabitants brought us great quantities of

of yams and haddocks, for which we gave them old rags and nails. We got a plentiful ſupply of fruit and water, but it was rather brackiſh. Happening to leave the ſurgeon on ſhore, he got a canoe to bring him off; but juſt as he was getting into it, one of the natives ſnatched away his muſket and ran off with it, after which no perſon would bring him on board. He certainly would have been ſtripped, had he not preſented a tooth-pick caſe to them, which they took for a little gun. Captain Cook hearing of this tranſaction, went on ſhore, but the natives fled at his approach. A boat was ſent aſhore on the 28th for ſome water, when the people behaved in a rude and daring manner: it was with difficulty they got their water-caſks filled, and into the boats again. The lieutenant who commanded this party had his gun ſnatched from him, and moſt of the people had ſomething or other taken away from them. This was the effect of ill-timed lenity. Captain Cook landed ſoon after, and reſolved to have the gun reſtored. All the marines were ordered aſhore armed. As the botaniſing party were in the country, three guns were fired from the ſhip to alarm them, as we did not know how the natives might behave to them. The natives knew well enough what we intended, and brought the muſket long before the marines got aſhore.

An old woman preſented a young girl to Captain Cook, giving him to underſtand that ſhe was at his ſervice. The girl was artful enough, and wanted to bargain for a ſhirt and a ſpike nail, neither of which the captain had with him. He was then told that he might retire with her upon credit, which he refuſed. The old procureſs then abuſed him, ſaying he was inſenſible to her charms; the girl was very pretty, and wanted to go aboard the ſhip with the captain; but he would not take her, as he had given orders no women ſhould be admitted there.

On the 29th, we ſailed, and a great many canoes came up with us, laden with fruit, &c. which were exchanged for the uſual commodities. The paſſion of our people for curioſities was as great as ever, and they

were

were ſtripped of moſt of the clothes the ladies of Otaheite had left them. We ſtretched out for Amattafoa on the 30th, and ſeveral canoes came to us from all parts with the common articles; out of one of them we got two pigs, which in this part of the world are a ſcarce commodity.

On the 1ſt of July, we diſcovered land: the maſter and the boat were ſent into the ſound to find anchorage; four or five people were diſcovered on the ſhore, who retreated as the boat advanced, and they all fled to the woods when the boat landed. The maſter returned, and brought word there was no ſounding without the reef. This iſland is ſituated S. latitude, 19 deg. 48 min. W. longitude, 178 deg. 2 min. We called it Turtle Iſland.

After a good deal of ſtormy weather, we ſaw an iſland, called by the natives Ambrym, on the 21ſt of July. We diſcovered a creek as we drew nearer the ſhore, which had the appearance of a good harbour; many people were aſſembled, who invited us on ſhore, but we did not chuſe to go, as they were armed with bows and arrows. We ſent out two armed boats to diſcover a port about a league more to the ſouth, where we anchored in eleven fathoms water. Several of the natives came off to us, but acted with great caution; at laſt they truſted themſelves along-ſide, and exchanged arrows for pieces of cloth. Preſents were made to two men who ventured on board, and others came at night for the ſame purpoſe, but they were not admitted.

On the 22d, in the morning, we landed, in the face of 500 men, armed with bows, arrows, ſpears, and clubs, but they made no oppoſition. Captain Cook advanced alone, with nothing but a green branch in his hand; on ſeeing this, a perſon who ſeemed to be a chief, gave his bow and arrows to another, and came to meet him in the water, took the captain by the hand, and led him up to the croud. The marines were at this time drawn up on the beach. Captain Cook diſtributed ſeveral preſents among them. We made ſigns that we

wanted

wanted wood, and in return they made ſigns for us to cut down the trees. They brought a pig for a peace offering, and we flattered ourſelves with the hopes of procuring more, but theſe were vain and deluſive; for we only got a ſmall quantity of water, and about half a dozen cocoa-nuts. They parted freely with their arrows, but we could not purchaſe of them any bows without a great deal of difficulty. They called this iſland Mallicolæ, another near it Apee, and a third Paoon.

Continuing our courſe from hence on the 24th, we diſcovered ſeveral ſmall iſlands, one of which we came very near. It is about twelve miles in circumference, and has three high peaked hills upon it. We then paſſed a group of ſmall iſlands, which we called the Shepherds' Iſles, and diſcerned people on every one of theſe iſlands; but there were no ſoundings near them at 180 fathoms. We found the ſouthern lands to conſiſt of one large iſland, the extremities of which we could not ſee. On the north ſide of this extenſive iſland we ſaw three our four ſmaller ones. One of theſe we called Montague, another Hinchinbrook, and the largeſt Sandwich iſland. Several people came down as we paſſed Montague iſland, and ſeemed to invite us in a friendly manner on ſhore. As we could not approach it at this time, we ſteered more to the weſt, as there appeared a bay to run up in that quarter, and a good ſhelter from the winds. But as this was not ſo much our object as to diſcover the ſouthern extremity of the Archipelago, we ſteered E. S. E. which was the direction of Sandwich iſland.

On the 1ſt of Auguſt, we gained the N. W. ſide of the iſland, and ſaw ſeveral inhabitants, who invited us aſhore by various ſigns. Here we ſhould have anchored, but the wind obliged us to alter our deſign. Beſides, we wanted to explore the land to the S. E. therefore ranged along the coaſt. As we continued our courſe, we ſaw a light a-head, and it being near

evening, did not chuſe to proceed any farther, but ſtood off and on all night.

On the 3d, we ſent a boat on ſhore to get ſome wood if poſſible, being much in want of that article; but our people could not land on account of a high ſurf of the ſea; and they ſaw not any natives on that part of the iſle. Having anchored in ſeventeen fathoms water, under the N. W. ſide of the head of the land, we ſaw ſeveral people on the ſhore, ſome endeavouring to ſwim off to us; but they all retired when they perceived our boat approach towards them.

On the 14th, a party went out armed to find a proper landing-place, and where we might gain a ſupply of wood and water. We gave the inhabitants ſome medals, &c. with which they appeared much pleaſed, and directed us to a bay fit for our purpoſe. As we went along the ſhore, their numbers increaſed prodigiouſly. We tried ſeveral places to land, but did not approve of their ſituation. At length we came to a fine ſandy beach, where Captain Cook ſtepped out without wetting his foot. The inhabitants received him with great politeneſs. One of them, who appeared to be a chief, made the natives form a ſemicircle round the head of the boat, and chaſtiſed ſuch as attempted to prevent it. Their behaviour was in every reſpect agreeable, yet we did not much like their appearance, as they were all armed with bows, arrows, ſpears, and darts. On this account we kept a good look out, and watched particularly the motions of the chief, who wanted us to haul the boat on ſhore. He renewed his ſigns for this to be done, and then held a conference with ſome of the natives. One circumſtance appeared rather ſuſpicious, he refuſed ſome ſpike nails that we offered him. Captain Cook immediately returned to the boat, upon which they attempted by force to detain us. Very fortunately the gang-board happened to be laid out for the captain to return into the boat; this ſome of the natives unhooked from the ſtern as we were putting off;

they

they hooked it to the head of the boat, and attempted to haul her on ſhore. Some of them were daring enough to take the oars out of the hands of our people. They in ſome meaſure deſiſted on Capt. Cook's preſenting a muſket, but went on again in an inſtant, ſeemingly determined to haul the boat on ſhore, and to detain us. The chief was at the head of this party, and others ſtood at a ſmall diſtance behind, with ſtones, darts, and other miſſile weapons, ready to ſupport them. Our own ſafety was now become our only conſideration, for ſigns and threats had not the effect we expected. The captain therefore reſolved to make the chief ſuffer alone, a victim to his own treachery; but at this critical moment his piece did not go off. This increaſed their inſolence, and they began to aſſault us with ſtones, darts, and arrows. We were now ordered to fire. The firſt diſcharge threw them into confuſion, but they were very reluctantly driven off the beach with the ſecond. After this they continued a kind of buſh-fighting, by throwing ſtones from behind trees, and ſometimes a dart or two. Four of them lay to all appearance dead on the ſhore, but two of them afterwards crawled in among the buſhes. That they might underſtand the effect of our great guns, we fired a four-pound ſhot at them, which, though it fell ſhort, terrified them ſo much, that we ſaw no more of them.

On the 5th of Auguſt, we weighed anchor, and got clear of the bay, and ſteered for the S. end of the iſland. We diſcovered on the S. W. ſide of the head, a pretty deep bay; its ſhores low, and the land appeared to be fertile; but being expoſed to the S. E. winds, until better known, we thought the N. W. ſide preferable.

At ſun-ſet we came in ſight of an iſland, being high table land, being E. by S. and alſo diſcovered another little iſle, which we had paſſed in the night. We now ſteered for the iſland, and diſcovered a ſmall inlet which had the appearance of a good harbour. Two armed boats, under the command of Lieutenant

Cooper, were ſent off in order to ſound, while the ſhip ſtood on and off, to be ready to follow, or to afford any aſſiſtance that might be required. We obſerved a number of natives on the ſhore, alſo ſeveral canoes; and when our boats entered the harbour they launched ſome, but came not near. At this time the lieutenant made ſignal for anchorage, and we ſtood in with the ſhip, the wind having left us when we were within the entrance.

The boats were now ſent out to find a better anchorage; and while we were thus employed, many of the natives came in parties to the ſea-ſide, all armed; ſome ſwam off to us, others came in canoes. At firſt they ſeemed afraid of us, and kept at a diſtance, but by degrees waxed bolder, and at length came under our ſtern, and made ſome exchanges. Thoſe in one of the firſt canoes threw towards us ſome cocoa-nuts. The captain went out in a boat, picked them up, and in return gave them ſeveral articles. Others were induced by this to come along-ſide, who behaved in a moſt inſolent manner. They attempted to tear our flag from the ſtaff, would have knocked the rings from the rudder, and we had no ſooner thrown out the buoys of the boats than they caught hold of them. We fired a few muſkets in the air, of which they took no notice, but a four-pounder alarmed them ſo much, that they quitted their canoes, and took to the water. But finding themſelves unhurt, they got again into their canoes, flouriſhed their weapons, hallooed in defiance, and went again to the buoys, but a few muſquetoon ſhot ſoon diſperſed them. They all retired in haſte to the ſhore, and we ſat down to dinner unmoleſted. In the interval of thoſe tranſactions, an old man, who ſeemed to be amicably diſpoſed, came ſeveral times, in a ſmall canoe between us and the ſhore, bringing off each time cocoa-nuts and yams, for which he took in exchange whatever we offered him. Another was in the gangway when the great gun was fired, after which we could not prevail with him to ſtay. In the evening

evening we landed at the head of the harbour, with a party of men well armed. The natives made not the leaſt oppoſition, though we had one body on our right, and another on our left, all armed. We diſtributed among the old people ſome preſents of cloth and medals, and filled two caſks with freſh water. We got in return plenty of cocoa-nuts, but could not prevail on them to part with their weapons, which they held conſtantly in a poſture of defence. The old man was one of theſe parties, but by his behaviour we judged him to be pacific. We thought by their preſſing ſo much, in ſpite of all our endeavours to keep them at a diſtance, that little would be wanting to induce them to attack us; but we re-embarked very ſoon, and thus, probably their ſcheme was diſconcerted.

On the 6th, we brought the ſhip as near the landing-place as poſſible, that we might overawe the natives, and cover the party on ſhore, who were to get a ſupply of wood and water, which we much wanted. While we were upon this buſineſs, we obſerved the natives aſſembling from all parts, all armed, to the amount of ſome thouſands, who formed themſelves into two diviſions, as they did the preceding evening, on each ſide the landing-place. At intervals a canoe came off, at times conducted by one, two, or three men, bringing us cocoa-nuts, &c. for which they did not require any thing in return, though we took care they ſhould always have ſomething: but their principal intention ſeemed to be, to invite us aſhore. The old man before mentioned, came off to us ſeveral times, and the captain, with a view of making him underſtand that he wanted to eſtabliſh a friendly intercourſe, took his weapons that were in the canoe, and threw them overboard, and made him a preſent of a piece of cloth. He underſtood the meaning of this, for we ſaw him frequently in converſation with his countrymen, to whom he made our requeſt known, going firſt to one party, then to another, nor did we afterwards ſee him with his weapons, or in a warlike manner. Soon after a canoe, in which were three men,

men, came under our ſtern, one of whom behaved very outrageouſly, brandiſhing his club, and ſtriking with it the ſhip's ſide; at laſt he offered to exchange his weapon for a ſtring of beads, and other trifles; theſe we ſent down to him by a line, of which he had no ſooner got poſſeſſion, than he made off, without delivering his club. We were not ſorry for this, as it afforded us an opportunity of ſhewing the people on ſhore the effects of our fire-arms. We therefore, without heſitation, complimented this fellow with the contents of a fowling-piece, loaded with ſmall ſhot, and when the others were out of the reach of muſket ſhot, we fired ſome muſquetoons, or wall pieces, at them, which made them take to the water. But all this ſeemed to make very little impreſſion on the people aſhore, who began to halloo, and ſeemingly make a joke of it. Having moored the ſhip, with her broad-ſide to the landing-place, and ſcarcely muſket-ſhot off, we planted our artillery in ſuch a manner as to command the whole harbour, and then embarked with a party of ſeamen, ſupported by the marines, and rowed to the landing-place, where the natives were drawn up in two diviſions. The intermediate ſpace between them was about forty yards, in which were laid a few plaintains, tree roots, and a yam. We made ſigns for the diviſions to retire back, but to theſe they paid not the leaſt regard; their number every moment was augmented, and, except three old men, not one unarmed. We thought it better to frighten them into a more peaceable behaviour, and therefore a muſket was fired over their heads, which for a minute had the deſired effect, but they ſoon returned to their daring behaviour. The ſhip was then ordered, by ſignal, to fire a few great guns, which preſently diſperſed them. We landed, and cut down ſome trees, which we put into our boats, and a few ſmall caſks of water, to let the natives ſee what we chiefly wanted. Thus far matters were pretty well ſettled: we returned on board to dinner, and they all diſperſed.

On

On the 7th, the natives began to aſſemble again, with their weapons, as before, but not in ſuch numbers: notwithſtanding this, we landed in order to get water, and cut wood. We found moſt of the old people diſpoſed to be our friends, but the younger being daring and inſolent, obliged us to ſtand to our arms; but as ſoon as our people had filled their boats with wood and water, and embarked on board, they all retired in a peaceable manner.

On the 13th, an old man came on board, (whoſe name was Paowang) to dine with us. We took this opportunity of ſhewing him every part of the ſhip, and a variety of trading articles, hoping he might ſee ſomething that he liked, and ſo a traffic be carried on with the natives for refreſhments. But Paowang obſerved every thing with indifference, except a ſand-box, of which he took ſome notice, and immediately went aſhore.

On the 15th, preparations were made on board to ſet ſail. This day one of the botanical party ſhot a pigeon, in the craw of which was a nutmeg. Mr. Forſter endeavoured, without ſucceſs, to find the tree. During their ſtay on ſhore, they obſerved in moſt of their ſugar plantations deep holes dug, four feet deep, and five in diameter, which, on enquiry, we found were deſigned as traps to catch rats in. Theſe animals, ſo deſtructive to ſugar canes, are here in great plenty. Round the edge of theſe pits, as a decoy, and that the rats may be more liable to tumble in, the canes are planted as thick as poſſible.

On the 16th, we found our tiller much damaged, and by neglect, we had not a ſpare one aboard. We knew of but one tree in the neighbourhood that would do for our purpoſe. The carpenter was ſent aſhore to examine it, and upon his report a party of men were directed to cut it down, after the conſent of the natives had been obtained. They did not make the leaſt objection, and our men went inſtantly to work. Much time was neceſſary to cut it down, as the tree was large; and before they had finiſhed their work,

work, word was brought to the captain, that our friend Paowang was not pleaſed. Paowang was ſent for, and our neceſſity explained to him. We then made him a preſent of a piece of cloth and a dog, which obtained his conſent, and the voices of thoſe that were with him in our favour.

Having thus obtained our point, we conducted our friend on board to dinner; after which we went with him aſhore, to pay a viſit to an old chief, who was ſaid to be the king of the iſland; though, as Paowang took little notice of him, we doubted the fact. His name was Geogy. He had a chearful open countenance, though he was old, and had round his waiſt a broad red and white chequered belt. His ſon was with him, who could not be leſs than 50 years old. At this time a vaſt concourſe of people were aſſembled near the watering-place. The behaviour of many was friendly; of others daring and inſolent; which we did not think prudent to reſent, as our ſtay was nearly at an end.

On the 19th, we prepared for ſailing, as the tiller was finiſhed; but the wind being unfavourable, the guard and a party of men were ſent aſhore, to bring off the remainder of the tree from which we had cut the tiller. The captain went with them, and found a number of the natives collected together near the landing-place, among whom various articles were diſtributed. At the time our people were getting ſome large logs into the boat, the centry preſented his piece at one of the natives, and, without the leaſt apparent cauſe, fired at, and killed him. A few of the natives had juſt before advanced within the limits, to ſee what we were about, but upon being ordered back, they readily obeyed. A fellow of the centry pretended, that a man had laid his arrow acroſs his bow, ſo that he apprehended himſelf in danger; but this had been frequently done out of a bravado, to ſhew they were armed, and prepared equally with ourſelves. Captain Cook was highly exaſperated at this raſcal's raſh conduct; and moſt of the people fled with

with the utmoſt precipitation. The natives were thrown into ſuch conſternation, that they brought abundance of fruit, which they laid down at our feet. They all retired when we returned aboard to dinner, and only a few appeared in the afternoon, among whom were Pao-wang and Wha-a-gou.

On the 20th, the wind was favourable for getting out of harbour; we began to unmoor, and having weighed, put to ſea. The Reſolution being the firſt ſhip that ever entered this harbour, Captain Cook named it Port Reſolution. Its lat. is 19 deg. 32 min. 25 ſec. and half ſouth, and in 169 deg. 44 min. 35 ſec. eaſt lon. The landing place is exceeding convenient for taking in wood and water, both of theſe neceſſary articles being near the ſhore. On the 23d, we came in ſight of Mallicollo. We were agreeably ſurpriſed with the beauty of the foreſt, from whence we ſaw ſmoke aſcend in various places, a plain indication of their being inhabited; the circumjacent land appeared fertile and populous. We obſerved troops of natives on ſeveral parts of the ſhore, and two canoes put off to us, but as we did not ſhorten ſail, they did not overtake the ſhip.

On the 24th, we advanced nearly to the middle of the paſſage, and the N. W. end of Mallicollo extended from S. 30 deg. E. to S. 58 deg. We now ſteered N. by E. then N. along the eaſt coaſt of the northern land. At firſt this coaſt appeared continued, but we found it was compoſed of ſeveral low woody iſles, moſt of them of ſmall extent, except the ſouthermoſt, which was named St. Bartholomew. We continued our courſe N. N. W. along a fine coaſt covered with trees. On the 25th, at day-break, we were on the north ſide of the iſland, and ſteered W. along the low land under it, for the bluff-head; beyond which at ſun-riſe, we ſaw an elevated coaſt, ſtretching to the N. as far as N. W. by W. Having doubled the head, we perceived the land to trend S. a little eaſterly, and to form a large deep bay, bounded on the W. by the above-mentioned coaſt. At half paſt four o'clock P. M.

we were only two miles from the W. ſhore, to which we had been drove by a N. E. ſwell. Here we ſaw large bodies of the natives collected together. Some ventured off in canoes; but they took ſudden fright at ſomething, nor could all our ſigns of friendſhip induce them to come along-ſide.

On the 26th, we were about eight miles from the head of the bay, that is terminated by a low beach; behind which is an extenſive flat covered with wood, and bounded on each ſide by a ridge of mountains. We found our lat. at noon to be 15 deg. 5 min. S. and at one o'clock, having a breeze at N. by W. we ſteered up to within two miles of the head of the bay. Mr. Cooper and Mr. Gilbert were ſent out to reconnoitre, while we ſtood off and on with the ſhip. By this, time and opportunity were afforded for three ſailing canoes to come up, which had been following us. They would not come along-ſide, but advanced near enough to receive ſuch things as were thrown out to them, faſtened to a rope. On the return of the boats, we were informed by Mr. Cooper and others, that they had landed at the head of the bay, near a fine ſtream of freſh water. We ſteered down the bay, being not in want of any thing, and the wind having ſhifted to S. S. E. Throughout the forepart of the night, on the weſt ſide of the ſhore, the country was illuminated with fires, from the ſea-ſhore to the ſummit of the mountains.

On Saturday the 27th, at day-break, we found ourſelves two thirds down the bay, and at noon we were the length of the N. W. point, which bore N. 82 deg. W. diſtant five miles; and by obſervation, our latitude was 14 deg. 39 min. 30 ſec. Some of our gentlemen were doubtful of this being the bay of St. Philip and St. Jago, becauſe no place anſwered to the port of Vera Cruz; but the captain gave very good reaſons for a contrary opinion. A point is a very vague term, like many others in geography; and what Quiros calls the port of Vera Cruz, might be the whole haven or harbour, or the anchorage at the head of the bay, which

in

in ſome places may extend farther off than where our boats landed. The river was probably one of thoſe mentioned by Quiros, and, if we were not deceived, we ſaw the other.

The bay is every where free from danger, and of an unfathomable depth, except near the ſhores, which are for the moſt part low. It hath ſixty miles ſea coaſt; eighteen on each ſide, which lies in the direction of S. half W. and N. half E. ſix at the head; and thirty-ſix on the weſt ſide, the directions of which is S. by E. and N. by W. from the head down to two-thirds of its length, and then N. W. by N. to the N. W. point. The two points which form the entrance of the bay, are in the direction of S. 53 deg. E. and N. 53 deg. W. diſtant from each other thirty miles. The bay, as well as the flat land at the head of it, is bounded by a ridge of hills: one to the weſt is very high, and extends the whole length of the iſland. Upon this appeared a luxuriant vegetation wherever the eye turned. Rich plantations adorned the ſides of the hills, foreſts reared their towering heads, and every valley was watered with a running ſtream; but of all the productions of nature the cocoa-nut trees were the moſt conſpicuous.

On the 28th and 29th, we took every opportunity when the horizon was clear, to look out for more land, but none was ſeen; it is probable there is none nearer than Queen Charlotte's Sound. But on the 30th, we plyed up the coaſt with a freſh breeze.

On the 31ſt, we weathered the S. W. point of the iſland. The coaſt, which trends eaſt-northerly, is low, and ſeemed to form ſome creeks or coves; and as we got farther into the paſſage, we perceived ſome low iſles lying along it, which ſeemed to extend behind St. Bartholomew's iſland. Having now explored the whole Archipelago, the ſeaſon of the year made it neceſſary to return to the ſouth; but we had yet ſome time left to make obſervations on any land we might diſcover between this and New Zealand; at which place the captain intended to touch, in order to recruit our ſtock

of wood and water, for another ſouthern courſe. To this end, at five o'clock P. M. we tacked, and hauled to the ſouthward, with a freſh gale at S. E. At this time the S. W. point of the iſland Tierra del Eſpiritu Santo bore north 82 deg. W. which Captain Cook named Cape Liſburne. It lies in lat. 15 deg. 40 min. and in 165 deg. 59 min. E. longitude.

CHAP VII.

New Caledonia diſcovered—The Reſolution is obliged to depart from Caledonia—Continues her voyage to New Zealand—She arrives at Queen Charlotte's Sound—An account of incidents while the ſhip lay there.

ON the 1ſt of September, we were out of ſight of land, and no more was to be ſeen. We continued our courſe to the S. W. and on the 3d, found ourſelves in 19 deg. 49 min. and in 165 deg. E. lon. On the 4th, we diſcovered land, which at noon extended from S. S. E. to W. by S. diſtant ſix leagues. At five P. M. we were ſix leagues off, when we were ſtopped by a calm. At this time the land extended from S. E. by S. to W. by N. round by the S. W. but as ſome openings were ſeen in the W. could not determine whether it was one connected land, or a cluſter of iſlands.

On the 5th, we obſerved the coaſt extended to the S. E. of Cape Colnet, and round by the S. W. to N. W. by W. We bore down to N. W. and came before an opening that had the appearance of a good channel. We deſired to enter it, in order to have an opportunity of obſerving an eclipſe of the ſun. We therefore ſent out two armed boats to ſound the channel; and at the ſame time ſaw twelve large ſailing canoes near us. All the morning we had obſerved them in motion, and coming off from different parts; but ſome were lying on the reef, fiſhing as we imagined. When we hoiſted out our boat, they were pretty near us; but upon ſeeing this,

this, they returned, and our boats followed them. We now were convinced that what we had taken for openings in the coaſt was low land, all connected, except the weſtern extremity, which, as we afterwards learnt, was an iſland called Balabea. The boats having made a ſignal for a channel, we ſtood in with the ſhip. The officer of the boats reported, that there was good anchorage, and the natives civil and obliging. We proceeded up the bay, and at length anchored in five fathoms water.

A great number of the natives ſurrounded us before we got to anchor, in 18 canoes, without any ſort of weapons, and we prevailed upon one boat to come near enough to receive ſome preſents. In return, they tied two fiſh to the rope, that ſtunk intolerably. An intercourſe being thus opened by mutual exchanges, two of the natives ventured on board the ſhip; preſently after ſhe was filled with them. Some dined with us, but they would not eat ſalt beef, pork, or peas ſoup.

After dinner time, a party of us went aſhore with armed boats, and landed amidſt a great number of people. They expreſſed a natural ſurpriſe at ſeeing men and things ſo new to them as we were. Preſents were made to ſuch, as a man, who had attached himſelf to Captain Cook, pointed out; but he would not ſuffer the captain to give the women who ſtood behind, any beads or medals. Having by ſigns enquired for freſh water, ſome pointed to the eaſt, others to the weſt; but our friend undertook to conduct us to it, and for that purpoſe embarked with us. We rowed near three miles to the E. and entered a narrow creek or river, which brought us to a little ſtraggling village, where he ſhewed us freſh water.

The tide not permitting us to ſtay any longer in the creek, we took leave of theſe amicable people, from whom we had nothing to expect but good nature, and the privilege of viſiting their country without moleſtation, as it was eaſy to ſee theſe were all they could beſtow. Though this did not ſatisfy our demands, it gave us much eaſe and ſatisfaction, for they certainly excelled

excelled all the natives we had hitherto met with in friendly civility.

On the 12th, early in the morning, the captain being desirous of stocking the country with hogs as well as dogs, he took with him a young boar and sow, and went up the creek, in search of his friend, the chief, in order to give them to him. The natives informed us that he lived at some distance, but they would send for him: but he not coming as soon as we expected, Capt. Cook resolved to give them to the first man of consequence he met with. In consequence of this determination, they were offered to a grave old man, who shook his head, and made signs for us to take them into the boat again. On our refusing to comply, they seemed to hold a consultation what was to be done.

After this, our guide conducted us to the chief, and he accordingly led us to a house, where eight or ten middle aged persons were seated in a circle. To these the captain and his pigs were formally introduced. They desired the captain, with great courtesy, to be seated, who began to expatiate on the merits of his pigs, explaining to them their nature and case, and how they would multiply: in short, he enhanced their value as much as possible, that they might take the more care of them. In return for our present, we had six yams brought us, after which we returned on board. In the afternoon we made a trip to the shore, and on a tree near the watering-place, an inscription was cut, setting forth the ship's name, date, &c. as a memorial and proof that we were the first discoverers of that country.

Having now fully satisfied our curiosity, we returned on board, when the captain ordered all the boats to be hoisted in, that we might be ready to sail, and put to sea.

The inhabitants of this country are strong, robust, active, friendly, courteous, and not addicted to pilfering, as all other nations are in this sea. They have in general good features; but in some we saw a resemblance of the negroes; having thick lips, flat noses, and full cheeks.

cheeks. Their hair and beards are black. The former is very rough and frizzled. Some have their hair tied up in clubs, and others, as well as the women, wear it cropped ſhort. They alſo wear their beards cropped in the ſame manner. The women in this iſland are very chaſte, and we never heard that any of our people ever obtained the leaſt favour from any one of them. Indeed their ladies would ſometimes divert themſelves by going a little aſide with our gentlemen, as if they meant to be kind, and then would in a moment run away laughing at them.

On the 13th of September, at ſun-riſe, we weighed, and ſtood off for the channel we came in by. At half paſt ſeven we were in the middle of it, when the iſle of Balabea bore W. N. W. At noon we loſt ſight of Balabea, and at three o'clock, we run by a low ſandy iſle. At ſun-ſet, we could juſt ſee the land, which bore S. W. by S. about ten leagues diſtant. No land was to be ſeen in this direction; ſo that every appearance flattered our expectations, and induced us to believe, that we ſhould ſoon get round the ſhoals.

On the 15th, ſeeing neither land nor breakers, we bore away W. N. W. but the ſhoals ſtill continuing, we plied up for a clear ſea to the S. E. by doing which, we did but juſt weather the point of the reef we had paſſed the preceding evening. To render our ſituation the more dangerous, the wind began to fail us; in the afternoon it fell a calm, and we were left to the mercy of a great ſwell, ſetting directly for the reef, which was not more than a league from us. The pinnace and cutter were hoiſted out to tow the ſhip, but they were of little ſervice. At ſeven o'clock, a light air at N. N. E. kept her head to the ſea; and on the 16th, at eleven o'clock A. M. we hoiſted in the boats, and made ſail to the S. E. A tide or current had been in our favour all night, and was the cauſe of our getting ſo unexpectedly clear of the ſhoals.

On the 20th, at noon, Cape Colnet bore N. 78 deg. W. diſtant ſix leagues. From hence the land extended round by the S. to E. S. E. till it was loſt

in

in the horizon, and the country appeared variegated with many hills and vallies. We ſtood in ſhore till ſun-ſet, when we were about three leagues off. Two ſmall iſlots lay diſtant from us five miles, and others lay between us and the ſhore. The country was very mountainous, and had much the ſame aſpect as about Balade.

On Friday the 30th, at three o'clock P. M. it fell calm, the ſwell, aſſiſted by the current, ſet us faſt towards the breakers, which were yet in ſight to the S. W. but at ten o'clock a breeze ſpringing up, we ſteered E. S. E. not venturing farther ſouth till day-light.

On the 1ſt of October, we had a very ſtrong wind at S. S. W. attended by a great ſea, ſo that we had reaſon to rejoice at having got clear of the ſhoals before this gale overtook us. We were now obliged to ſtretch to S. E. and at noon were out of ſight of land.

On the 2d, we had little wind, and a great ſwell; but at eleven, a freſh breeze ſpringing up, we ſtood to the S. We were now in the lat. of 23 deg. 18 min. and in 169 deg. 49 min. E. longitude.

On the 3d, we had a ſtrong gale, with ſqualls from the S. W. and the captain laid aſide all thoughts of returning to the land we had left. Nor could ſuch an attempt be thought a prudent one, when we conſider, that we had a vaſt ocean yet to explore to the ſouth; that the ſhip was already in want of neceſſary ſtores; that ſummer was approaching very faſt, and that any conſiderable accident might detain us from purſuing the great object of this voyage another year. Thus neceſſity compelled us to leave a coaſt, for the firſt time, which we had firſt diſcovered, but not fully explored. The captain named it New Caledonia, and in his opinion, it is next to New Zealand, the largeſt iſland in the South Pacific Ocean. The extent is from lat. 19 deg. 37 min. to 22 deg. 30 min. S. and from lon. 163 deg. 37 min. to 167 deg. 14 min. E. It lies nearly N. W. half W. and S. E. half E. and is about 87 leagues long,

long, but its breadth does not any where exceed ten leagues.

On the 7th, a breeze ſprung up, and fixed at S. E. by S. The day following, we had a gentle gale, attended with fine weather. On the 9th, we were in lat. 28 deg. 25 min. and in 170 deg. 26 min. E. lon. In the evening Mr. Cooper ſtruck a porpoiſe. It was ſix feet long, and differs from the common porpoiſe in the head and jaw, which are long and pointed. This had eighty-eight teeth in each jaw. It was firſt ſoaked in water, then roaſted, broiled, and fried. To us who had long ſubſiſted on ſalt-meat, it was more than palatable; and we thought the haſlet, and lean fleſh, a delicious feaſt.

On the 10th, we diſcovered land. Captain Cook called it Norfolk Iſland. We anchored here in twenty-two fathoms water, on a bank of coral ſand, mixed with broken ſhells. After dinner, a party of us embarked in the boats, and landed in the iſland behind ſome large rocks. It was uninhabited, and we were undoubtedly the firſt who ever ſet foot upon it. We found here many ſea and land fowl, of the ſame kind as in New Zealand: likewiſe cabbage-palm, wood-ſorrel, ſow-thiſtle, and ſamphire. The cabbage trees were not thicker than a man's leg, and from ten to twenty feet high. The cabbage, each tree producing but one, is at the top incloſed in the ſtem. This vegetable is not only wholeſome, but exceedingly palatable, and ſome excellent fiſh we caught made a luxurious entertainment.

On the 11th, we ſailed from Norfolk Iſland, which we weathered, having ſtretched up to S. S. W. We found the coaſt bounded with rocky cliffs and banks of coral ſand. On the ſouth ſide lie two iſles, which ſerve as rooſting and breeding places, for white boobies, gulls, tern, &c. A bank of coral ſand and ſhells, ſurround the iſle, and extends, eſpecially ſouthward, ſeven leagues off. Our intention at this time was to refreſh the crew, and repair the ſhip in Queen Charlotte's Sound.

On the 18th, we made a trip to the north, and bore away for the Sound. We hauled round Point Jackſon, at nine A. M. and at eleven o'clock anchored before Ship Cove, the tide not permitting us to get in. Captain Cook went aſhore, and looked for the bottle with the memorandum, which he left when laſt here, but it was taken away by ſome perſon or other. The ſeine was hauled twice, and only four fiſh caught; but ſeveral birds were ſhot, and the neſts of ſome ſhags were robbed of their young ones.

On the 19th, the ſhip was warped into the cove, and moored. The ſails were unbent, ſeveral of them having been much damaged in the late gale. The main and fore courſes were condemned, and the top-maſts ſtruck and unrigged. The forge was ſet up, and tents erected on ſhore for the reception of a guard, &c. Plenty of vegetables were gathered for the refreſhment of the crew, and boiled every morning with oatmeal and potable broth for breakfaſt. From ſome circumſtances, as cutting down trees with ſaws and axes, and a place found where an obſervatory had been ſet up in our abſence, we had no doubt but the Adventure had been in this cove ſince we left it.

On the 24th, we ſaw canoes coming down the ſound, which, when the ſhip was ſeen by the people, retired behind a point on the weſt ſide. After breakfaſt, we went in ſearch of them, and having fired at ſeveral birds, the report of our pieces gave notice of our being near, and they diſcovered themſelves by hallooing to us in Shag Cove; but when we landed, and drew near to their habitations, they all fled, except two or three men, who maintained their ground, with their weapons in their hands. The moment we landed they knew us, and their fears ſubſided. Thoſe who had returned from the woods, embraced us over and over again; but the men would not ſuffer ſome women we ſaw at a diſtance to come near us. We aſked them on what account they were afraid of us, and alſo what was become of our old friends? To theſe queſtions we got no ſatisfactory anſwer; but they

talked

talked much about killing, which was variouſly underſtood by us.

On the 26th, ſome of the natives went to the tents, and told our people, that a ſhip like ours had lately been loſt, that ſome of the men landed at Vanna Aroa, on the other ſide the ſtraight; that a diſpute happened between them and the natives; that ſeveral of the latter were ſhot, and that the natives got the better of them when they could fire no longer, and both killed and ate them. One of the relaters of this ſtrange ſtory, ſaid it was twenty or thirty days ago; but another ſaid it was two moons ſince.

The following day they told the ſame ſtory to others, which made the captain, and indeed all of us, very uneaſy about the Adventure, but when the captain enquired himſelf, and endeavoured to come at the truth of theſe reports, the very people who raiſed them, denied every ſyllable of what they had ſaid, and ſeemed wholly ignorant of the matter; ſo that we began to think the whole relation had reference only to their own people and boats.

On the 28th, we again went on ſhore, but found no appearance of the hogs and ſows we had left behind. Having been a ſhooting to the weſt bay, in our return we got ſome fiſh from the natives for a few trifling preſents. As we came back, ſome of the party thought they heard a pig ſqueak in the woods. We ſhot this day a good many wild fowl and ſmall birds. On the 31ſt, it was ſomewhat remarkable that all the natives left us.

On the 1ſt of November, we were viſited by a number of ſtrangers, who came from up the Sound. The principal articles of trade they brought with them was green ſtone, ſome of which were the largeſt pieces we had ever ſeen. On the 2d, a large black ſow was ſeen by the botaniſing party, which we diſcovered to be the ſame that Captain Furneaux left behind him. Suppoſing it to be a boar, we carried over to Long Iſland a ſow, but ſeeing our miſtake, we brought her back. This incident afforded us ſome hopes, that this iſland

in time will be ſtocked with ſuch uſeful animals. Lieut. Pickerſgill was told the ſame ſtory by one of the natives, of a ſhip having been loſt, but the man declared, though many were killed, it was not by them.

On the 6th, our friends returned, and took up their abode near the tents. An old man, named Pedero, made Capt. Cook a preſent of a ſtaff of honour, ſuch as the chiefs carry; and in return, the captain dreſſed him up in a ſuit of old cloaths, which made him very happy. He had a fine perſon, and his colour only diſtinguiſhed him from a European. We enquired of him and his companions, if the Adventure had been there during our abſence; and they gave us to underſtand that ſhe arrived a little time after our departure; that ſhe ſtaid about twenty days, and had been gone ten moons; and that neither ſhe, nor any other ſhip, had been ſtranded on the coaſt. This account made us eaſy reſpecting the Adventure.

This day we went with a number of hands to catch the ſow, and put her to the boar, but returned without ſeeing her. Pedero dined with us, partook heartily of every thing ſet before him, and drank more wine than any one at table, without being in the leaſt intoxicated. On the 8th, we put a boar, a ſow, and two pigs on ſhore, ſo that we hope all our endeavours to ſtock this country will not prove fruitleſs. We found a hen's egg a few days ago, and therefore believe, that ſome of the cocks and hens we left here are ſtill in being.

On the 9th, we unmoored, and ſhifted our ſtation farther out the cove, for the more ready getting to ſea; but at preſent, the caulkers had not finiſhed the ſides of the ſhip; and we could not ſail till this work was completed. Our friends brought us a large ſupply of fiſh, and in return, gave Pedero a large empty oil jar, with which he ſeemed highly delighted. We never ſaw any of our preſents after they received them, and cannot ſay whether they gave them away, or what they did with them; but we obſerved, every time we viſited them, they were as much in want of hatchets, nails,

nails, &c. as if we had not beſtowed any upon them. Notwithſtanding theſe people are cannibals, they are of a good diſpoſition, and have not a little humanity. The head of each tribe, or family, is reſpected; reſpect may command obedience; but we are inclined to think, not one among them has either a right or power to enforce it.

In the afternoon, we went into one of the coves; where, upon landing, we found two families employed in different manners: ſome were making mats, others ſleeping; ſome roaſting fiſh and roots: and one girl was employed in heating ſtones, which ſhe took out of the fire as ſoon as they were hot, and gave them to an old woman who ſat in the hut. The old woman placed them one upon another, laid over them ſome green celery, and over all a coarſe mat: ſhe then ſquatted herſelf down on the top of the heap, and ſat very cloſe. Probably this operation might be intended as a cure for ſome diſorder, to be effected by the ſteams ariſing from the green celery, and we perceived the woman ſeemed very ſickly.

CHAP. VIII.

The departure of the Reſolution from New Zealand—Her paſſage from thence to Terra del Fuego—The run from Cape Deſeada to Chriſtmas Sound—The Reſolution departs from Chriſtmas Sound—Doubles Cape Horn—Her paſſage through Strait Le Maire, and round Staten Iſland—Departs from Staten Iſland—The iſland of Georgia diſcovered, and a deſcriptive account of the ſame.

THURSDAY, November 10, at day-break, we weighed, and ſailed from Queen Charlotte's Sound, in New Zealand, having a fine breeze at N. N. W. All our ſails being ſet, we got round the Two Brothers, and ſtretched for Cape Campbell, at the S. W. entrance of the Strait. We paſſed this at four o'clock P. M. Cape Palliſer

Palliſer bore N. half W. diſtant five leagues, and then ſteered S. S. E. half E.

On the 13th, we hauled up towards a fog bank, which we took for land; after which we ſteered S. E. by S. and ſaw a ſeal. On the 14th, we ſaw another ſeal, in lat. 45 deg. 54 min. and 170 deg. 29 min. E. longitude. On the 15th, having paſſed the great meridian of 180 deg. E. which divides the globe into two equal parts, we began to reckon our longitude W. of Greenwich.

On the 27th, we ſteered E. having a ſteady freſh gale; and at noon were in lat. 35 deg. 6 min. S. and in 138 deg. 56 min. W. longitude. In this parallel, not a hope remained of finding any more land in the ſouthern Pacific Ocean. We reſolved therefore to ſteer for the W. entrance of the Straits of Magellan, with a view of coaſting the S. ſide of Terra del de Fuego, round Cape Horn to the Strait Le Maire. In the afternoon, we had ſqually weather, which carried away our top-gallant maſt.

On the 1ſt of December, it fell a calm, but about ſeven, we got a wind at S. E. which ſtood to N. E. On the 5th, a fine gale at S. enabled us to ſteer E. with very little deviation to the N. and the wind now altering to the S. W. and blowing a ſteady gale, we continued to ſteer E. inclining a little to S. On the 6th, we had ſome ſnow ſhowers; and on the 9th, a fine pleaſant gale, with ſhowers of rain.

On the 18th, we ſteered S. E. by E. along the coaſt. Near a league from the main is a high ragged iſle, which we called Landfall. We continued to range the coaſt, and at eleven o'clock, paſſed a projecting point having a round ſurface, and of conſiderable height, to which we gave the name of Cape Glouceſter. It has the appearance of an iſland, and is ſituated S. S. E. half E. ſeventeen leagues from the iſle of Landfall. Between theſe the coaſt forms two bays, ſtrewed with rocky iſlots, rocks, and breakers. The coaſt appeared unconnected, as if formed of a number of iſlands. The land is very mountainous, rocky, and barren, but in

ſome

ſome places, covered with tufts of wood and patches of ſnow.

On the 20th, we perceived the ſhip to drive off the ſhore out to ſea; for by the melting of the ſnow, the inland waters will occaſion a ſtream to run out of moſt of the inlets. In the evening, a breeze ſpringing up at E. by S. we ſtood in for the land, being deſirous of entering one of the many ports, in order to take a view of the country, and to recruit our ſtock of wood and water. In ſtanding in for an opening, apparently on the eaſt ſide, we ſounded in 40 and 60 fathoms. Our laſt ſoundings were nearly between the two points that form the entrance to the inlet. We ſtood for that to the eaſt, as being clear of iſlots; but, upon ſounding, found no bottom with a line of 120 fathoms. In this diſagreeable ſituation, a breeze ſpringing up, our captain reſolved to ſtand up the inlet; but night approaching, our ſafety depended on caſting anchor, therefore continued ſounding, but always, to our mortification, in an unfathomable depth: ſoon after we anchored in thirty fathoms, in a bottom of ſand and broken ſhells.

On the 22d, two parties were ſent out with boats to look for a more ſecure ſtation. They found a cove above the point under which the ſhip lay, in which was exceeding good anchorage. At the head of it was a ſtony beach, a valley covered with wood, and a ſtream of freſh water, conveniencies more favourable than we could expect would be found in ſuch a place. Here alſo they ſhot three geeſe out of four. Orders were diſpatched to remove the ſhip into this place. We returned on board, and found every thing in readineſs to weigh, which was done. We ſoon after got round, and anchored in twenty fathoms water.

On the 23d, Lieutenant Pickerſgill went out to examine the eaſt ſide of the ſound, while the captain proceeded in the pinnace to the weſt ſide, with a view of going round the iſland under which the ſhip lay, which he called Shag Iſland. This harbour lies in W. by W. a mile and a half. It hath wood and freſh water, and from

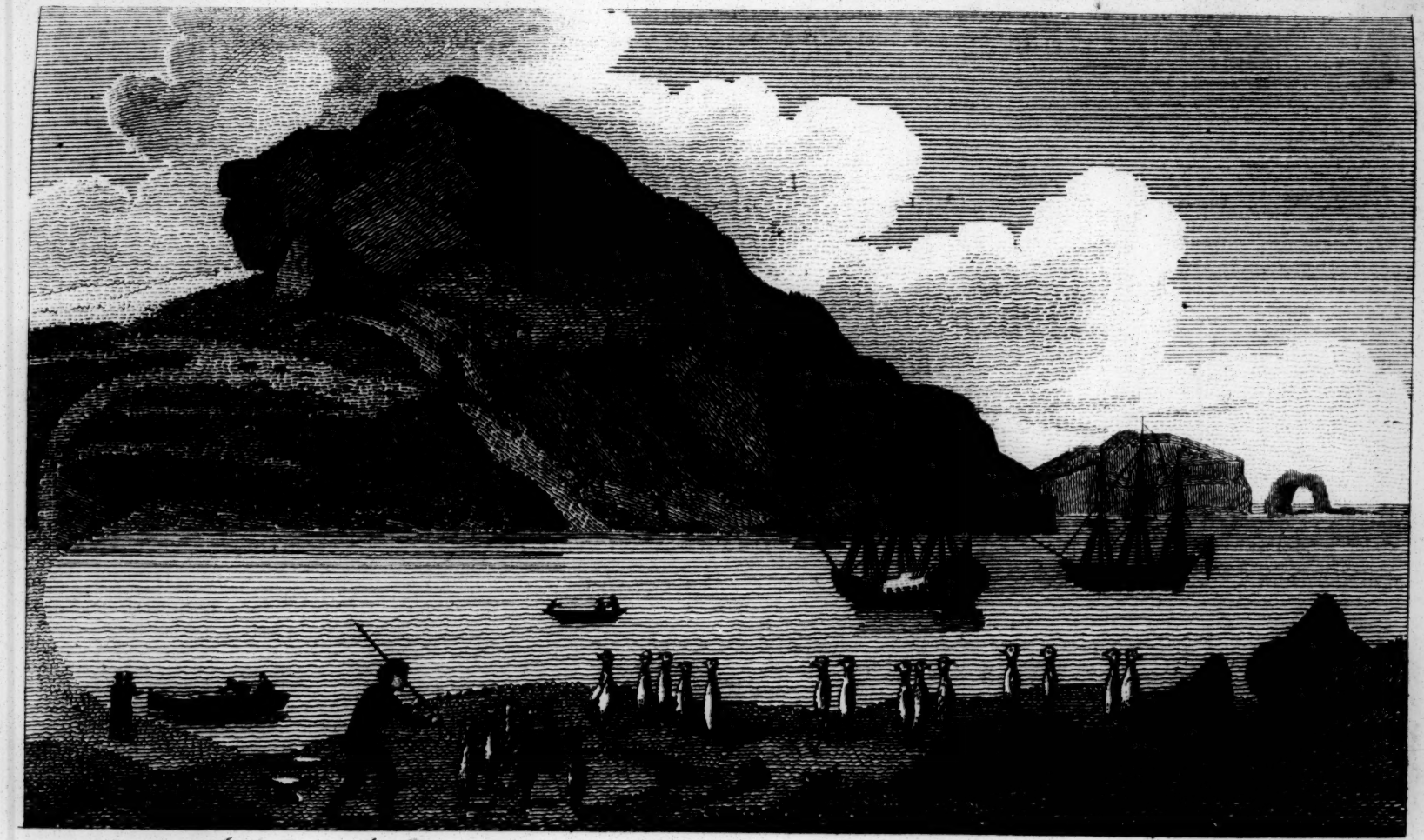
from twelve to twenty-four fathoms deep. At the ſouth end of Shag Iſland, the ſhags breed in vaſt numbers in the cliffs of the rocks. We ſhot ſome of the old ones, but could not come at the young ones, which are by much the beſt eating. We likewiſe brought down three wild geeſe, a valuable acquiſition at this time.

On the 24th, two ſporting parties went over one of the N. E. iſlands above mentioned, which was named Gooſe Iſland; and the other, accompanied by Captain Cook, went by the S. W. ſide. When under the iſland, we had plenty of ſport, having ſhot as many geeſe as ſerved for a Chriſtmas-meal for our men, which proved much more agreeable to them than ſalt beef and pork. In the ſouth of the iſland were abundance of geeſe, it being their moulting ſeaſon, when moſt of them come on ſhore, and are not diſpoſed to fly. Our party got ſixty-two, and Mr. Pickerſgill, with his party, fourteen.

We were informed by our people on board, that a number of natives, in nine canoes, had been along-ſide, and ſome of them in the ſhip: they ſeemed well acquainted with Europeans, and had ſeveral of their knives among them.

On the 25th, being Chriſtmas-day, we had another viſit from them. They are a diminutive, ugly, half-ſtarved, beardleſs race; almoſt naked, being only ſlightly covered with a ſeal-ſkin or two joined together, ſo as to make a cloak, which reached to their knees; but the greateſt part of them had but one ſkin, which ſcarcely covered their ſhoulders, and all their lower parts were quite naked. The women are cloathed no better than the men, except that they cover their nakedneſs with a ſeal-ſkin flap. They are inured from their infancy to cold and hardſhips, for we ſaw ſome young children at the breaſt, entirely naked. They remained all the time in their canoes, having their bows and arrows with them, and harpoons, made of bone, with which they ſtrike and kill fiſh.

They



A View of Christmas Harbour, in Kerguelens Land

They all departed before dinner, nor did we believe any one invited them to partake of our Chriſtmas cheer, which conſiſted of geeſe, roaſt and boiled, gooſe-pie, &c. a treat little known to us; and which was heightened by Madeira wine, the only article of our proviſions that was mended by keeping. We called this place Chriſtmas Sound, in honour of the day, and the joyful feſtival we had celebrated here.

On the 27th, every thing on ſhore was ordered on board. The weather being fine and pleaſant, a party of us went round by the ſouth ſide of Gooſe Iſland, and picked up thirty-one of theſe birds. When we returned on board, we found all the work done, and the launch in, ſo that we now only waited for a fair wind to put to ſea.

On the 28th, we ſailed from this ſound with a light breeze at N. W. At noon, Point Nativity, being the eaſt part of the Sound, bore N. half W. diſtant one league and a half. We ſteered S. E. by E. and E. S. E. when we hauled to the S. for the ſake of a view of St. Idenfonſo. At half paſt five o'clock, we had a good ſight of the iſles. They are ſituated about ſix leagues from the main, in lat. 55 deg. 53 min. S. and in 69 deg. 41 min. W. longitude.

On the 30th, we were driven by the current to Staten Land; but a breeze ſpringing up at N. N. W. we ſtood over for Succeſs Bay. We hoiſted our colours, and firing two guns, we perceived a ſmoke riſe out of the woods, made by the natives above the ſouth point of the bay. A party was ſent into Succeſs Bay, in order to diſcover if any traces of the Adventure were to be ſeen there; but they returned without having found any.

When Mr. Pickerſgill landed, the natives received him and his aſſociates with great courteſy. They were cloathed in ſeal-ſkins, had bracelets on their arms, and appeared to be the ſame kind of people we had ſeen in Chriſtmas Sound. The bracelets were made of ſilver wire, wrought ſomewhat like the hilt of a ſword, and, no doubt, the workmanſhip of an European. Accord-

ing to Mr. Pickerſgill's account, the bay was full of whales and ſeals, and we had obſerved the ſame in the ſtrait, particularly on the Terra del Fuego ſide, where the whales are exceeding numerous.

On the 31ſt, we bore up for the eaſt end of Staten Land. The weather being hazy, we could only now and then get ſight of the coaſt; but as we advanced to the eaſt, ſeveral iſlands were ſeen of unequal extent. As we continued our courſe, we ſaw on one of the iſlands a great number of ſeals and birds, a ſtrong temptation to our people, who were in want of freſh proviſions; and in hauling round it, we had a ſtrong race of a current, like unbroken water. At length, after fiſhing for the beſt ground, caſt anchor in twenty-one fathoms water, about a mile from the iſland.

In the afternoon, a large party of us landed, ſome to kill ſeals, and others birds or fiſh. The iſland was ſo ſtocked with the former, which made ſuch a continual bleating, that we might have thought ourſelves in Eſſex, or any other country where cows and calves are in abundance. Upon examination, we found theſe animals different from ſeals, though they reſembled them in ſhape and motion, The male having a great likeneſs to a lion, we called them on that account lions. We alſo found of the ſame kind as the New Zealand ſeals, and theſe we named ſea bears. We ſhot ſome of the large ones, not thinking it ſafe to go near them; though in general, they were ſo tame, that we knocked ſome down with our ſticks. Here were a few geeſe and ducks, and abundance of penguins and ſhags; the latter of which had young ones, almoſt fledged, conſequently juſt to our taſte. In the evening, our party returned, ſufficiently laden with proviſions of various ſorts.

On the 1ſt of January, 1775, Mr. Gilbert was ſent out to Staten Land, in ſearch of a good harbour, nothing more being wanting, in the opinion of the captain, to make this place a good port for ſhips to touch at for refreſhments. Another party went to bring on board the

the beaſts we had killed the preceding day. The old lions and bears were good for nothing but their blubber, of which we made oil; but the fleſh of the young ones was liked very well: even the fleſh of the old lioneſſes was not much amiſs; but that of the old males was abominable.

This day Captain Cook took an obſervation of the ſun's meridian altitude (his height at noon) at the N. E. end of this iſland, which determined its latitude at 44 deg. 40 min. 5 ſec. S. Having ſhot a few geeſe, ſome other birds, and ſupplied ourſelves plentifully with young ſhags, we returned on board in the evening.

About ten, the party returned from Staten Land, where they found a good port, in the direction of N. a little eaſterly, from the N. E. end of the eaſtern iſland, and diſtant three leagues to the weſtward of Cape St. John. The marks whereby it may be known, are ſome ſmall iſlands lying in the entrance. The channel, which is on the eaſt ſide of theſe iſlands, is half a mile broad. The courſe is in S. W. by S. turning gradually to W. by S. and W. The harbour is almoſt two miles long, and near one broad. The bottom is a mixture of mud and ſand, and hath in it from ten to fifty fathoms water. Here are ſeveral ſtreams of freſh water, with good wood for fuel.

On this iſland are an innumerable number of ſea-gulls, the air was quite darkened with them, upon being diſturbed by our people: and when they roſe up, we were almoſt ſuffocated with their dung, which they ſeemed to emit by way of defence; and it ſtunk worſe than what is vulgarly called devil's dung.

On the 3d, we weighed, and ſtood for Cape St. John, which in the evening bore N. by E. diſtant four miles. This point being the eaſtern point of Staten Land, is a rock of conſiderable height, ſituated in lat. 53 deg. 46 min. S. and in 64 deg. 7 min. W. lon. having a rocky iſlot lying cloſe under the north point of it. To the weſtward of the cape is an inlet, which ſeemed to communicate with the ſea to the ſouth; and between this and the cape is a bay. Having doubled the cape,

we hauled up along the ſouth coaſt. At noon Cape St. John bore N. 20 deg. E. diſtant about three leagues; Cape St. Bartholomew, or the S. W. point of Staten Land, S. 83 deg. W. two high detached rocks N. 80 deg. W. By obſervation our lat. was found to be 54 deg. 56 min. S. We now judged this land to have been ſufficiently explored; but before we leave it, think it neceſſary to make a few obſervations on this and its neighbouring iſlands.

The S. W. coaſt of Terra del Fuego, with reſpect to inlets and iſlands, may be compared to the coaſt of Norway; for we believe within the extent of three leagues there is an inlet or harbour, which will receive and ſhelter the firſt rate ſhips; but till theſe are better known, every navigator muſt fiſh for anchorage: add to this, there are ſeveral rocks on the coaſt; though as none lie far from land, the approach of them may be known by ſounding, if they cannot be ſeen; ſo that upon the whole, we cannot think this the dangerous coaſt it has been repreſented by other voyagers.

Staten Land is thirty miles in length, and near twelve broad. Its ſurface conſiſts of craggy hills, towering up to a vaſt height, eſpecialllly near the weſt end, and the coaſt is rocky. The greateſt part of the hills, their ſummits excepted, is covered with trees, ſhrubs, and herbage. We cannot ſay any thing, that navigators may depend on, concerning the tides and currents on theſe coaſts; but we obſerved that in Strait Le Maire, the ſoutherly tide, or current, begins to act at the new and full moon about four o'clock. It may alſo be of uſe to commanders to remark, that if bound round Cape Horn to the W. and not in want of any thing to oblige them to put into port, we would adviſe them not to come near land; as by keeping out to ſea, they would avoid the currents, which, we are convinced, loſe their force twelve leagues from land; and at a greater diſtance they would find none to impede their courſe.

All the animals of this iſland live in perfect harmony, and ſeem careful not to diſturb each other's tranquillity.

The

The ſea lions poſſeſs moſt of the coaſt; the bears take up their quarters within the iſle; the ſhags lodge in the higheſt cliffs; the penguins have their ſeparate abode where there is the moſt eaſy communication to and from the ſea; and the other birds have their places of retirement; yet we have obſerved them all, with mutual reconcilement, mix together, like domeſtic cattle and poultry in a farm yard: nay, we have ſeen the eagles and vultures ſitting together among the ſhags, on their hillocks, without the latter, either young or old, being diſturbed at their preſence.

We left Staten Iſland on the 3d, and this day being the 4th, we ſaw the land again; and at ſix o'clock in the afternoon, a heavy ſquall came ſo ſuddenly upon us, that it carried away a top-gallant-maſt, a ſtudding-ſail boom, and a fore ſtudding-ſail. This ended in a heavy ſhower of rain; and now ſteered S. W. in order to diſcover the Gulph of Sebaſtian, if ſuch a coaſt exiſted, in which the gulph has been repreſented, for of this we entertained a doubt: however, this appeared to be the beſt courſe to clear it up, and to explore the ſouthern part of this ocean.

On the 6th, we were in lat. 58 deg. 9 min. S. and 53 deg. 14 min. W. the ſituation nearly aſſigned for the S. W. point of the Gulph of St. Sebaſtian; but ſeeing no ſigns of land, were ſtill doubtful of its exiſtence; and being alſo fearful, that by keeping to the S. might miſs the land ſaid to be diſcovered by La Roche in 1675, and by the ſhip Lion, in 1756; for theſe reaſons, we hauled to the N. in order to get in to the parallel laid down by Dalrymple, as ſoon as poſſible. On the 7th, we were near midnight in the lat. of 56 deg. 4 min. S. lon. 53 deg. 36 min. W.

On the 13th, we ſtood to the S. till noon, when finding ourſelves in lat. 55 deg. 7 min. we ſtretched to the N. We ſaw ſeveral penguins, and a ſnow peterel, which we judged to denote the vicinity of ice. We found alſo the air much colder than we had felt it ſince we left New Zealand. On the 14th, we diſcovered land, in a manner wholly covered with ſnow. We ſounded in 175 fathoms, muddy

muddy bottom. On the 15th, the wind blew in ſqualls, attended with ſnow and ſleet, and we had a great ſea to encounter. At four, we ſtood to the S. W. under two courſes; but at midnight the ſtorm abated, ſo that we could carry our top-ſails double reefed.

On the 16th, at four o'clock A. M. we ſtood to the E. with a moderate breeze, and at eight ſaw the land extending from E. by N. to N. E. by N. It proved to be an iſland, and we called it Willis's Iſland, from the name of the perſon who firſt diſcovered it from the maſt-head. We bore to it with a view of exploring the northern coaſt; and as we advanced, perceived another iſle to the north, between that and the main. Obſerving a clear paſſage between both, we ſteered for the ſame, and in the midway found it to be two miles broad. Willis's Iſle is in the lat. of 54 deg. S. and in 38 deg. 23 min. W. longitude.

On the 17th, having got through the paſſage, we obſerved the N. coaſt trended E. by N. for about three leagues. We ranged the coaſt till near night, at one league diſtance, when, on ſounding, we found fifty fathoms, and a muddy bottom. On the 17th, we made for the land. We now ſteered along ſhore till ſeven, when ſeeing the appearance of an inlet, we hauled in for it. The captain, accompanied by Mr. Forſter and others, went off in a boat, to reconnoitre the bay before we ventured in with the ſhip. They landed in three different places, diſplayed our colours, and took poſſeſſion of the country in his Majeſty's name. The head of the bay was terminated by ice cliffs, of conſiderable height; pieces of which were continually breaking off, and made a noiſe like a cannon. Nor were the interior parts of the country leſs horrible. The ſavage rocks raiſed their lofty ſummits till loſt in the clouds, and vallies were covered with ſeemingly perpetual ſnow. Not a tree, nor a ſhrub of any ſize were to be ſeen. The only ſigns of vegetation were a ſtrong bladed graſs, growing in tufts, wild burnet, and a plant like moſs ſeen on the rocks. Sea bears, or ſeals, were numerous; the ſhores ſwarmed with young

young cubs. Here were alſo the largeſt penguins we had yet ſeen. Some we brought aboard weighed thirty pounds.

When the party returned aboard, they brought with them a quantity of ſeals and penguins; not that we wanted proviſions, but any kind of freſh meat was acceptable to the crew; and even Captain Cook acknowledged, that he was now, for the firſt time, heartily tired of ſalt diet of every kind; and that though the fleſh of penguins could ſcarcely be compared to bullocks liver, yet its being freſh was ſufficient to make it palatable. The captain named the bay he ſurveyed, Poſſeſſion Bay; though, according to his account of it, we think it to be no appendage to his majeſty's new poſſeſſions.

On the 18th, we made ſail to the eaſt, along the coaſt; the direction of which from Cape Buller, is 73 deg. 30 min. E. for the ſpace of twelve leagues, to a projecting point, which was named Cape Saunders. Beyond this is a pretty large bay, which obtained the name of Cumberland Bay. At the bottom of this, as alſo in ſome ſmaller ones, were vaſt tracts of frozen ice or ſnow, not yet broken looſe. But now juſt paſt Cumberland Bay, we hauled off the coaſt, from whence we were diſtant four miles.

On the 20th, we made ſail to the S. W. round Cooper's Iſland, which is one rock, conſiderably high, about five miles in circuit, and one diſtant from the main. Here the main coaſt takes a S. W. direction for five leagues, to a point which we called Cape Diſappointment, off which are three ſmall iſles. The moſt ſouthern one is a league from the cape, green, low, and flat. We now quitted this coaſt, and directed our courſe to the S. S. E. for the land we had ſeen the preceding day. A ſtrong gale overtook us, and we thought ourſelves very fortunate in having got clear of the land before this came on.

On

On the 21ſt, the ſtorm was ſucceeded by a thick fog, attended with rain; but having got a ſoutherly breeze, we ſtood to the eaſt till three in the afternoon; and then ſteered north in ſearch of the land. On the 22d, we had thick foggy weather; but in the evening it was ſo clear that we could ſee two leagues round us, and thinking we might be to the eaſt of the land, we ſteered weſt.

On the 23d, a thick fog at ſix o'clock, once more compelled us to haul the wind to the ſouth; but at eleven, we were favoured with a view of three or four rocky iſlots, extending from S. E. to E. N. E. about one league diſtant; and this, being the extent of our horizon, might be the reaſon we did not ſee the Sugar-loaf. We were well aſſured, this was the land we had ſeen before, and which we had now circumnavigated; conſiſting of only a few detached rocks, the receptacles for birds. They are ſituated in latitude 55 deg. S. This interval of clear weather was ſucceeded by as thick a fog as ever, on which we ſtood to the N. Thus we were continually involved in thick miſts, and the ſhags, with frequent ſoundings, were our beſt pilots; but on the 23d, we ſtood a few miles to the north, when we got clear of the rocks, out of ſoundings, and ſaw not any ſhags.

CHAP. IX.

The Reſolution continues her courſe—Newland and Saunders Iſles diſcovered—Conjectures, and ſome reaſons that there may be land about the ſouth pole—The Reſolution alters her courſe to the eaſt—Proceedings till her arrival at the Cape of Good Hope—Sails for the Iſle of Fayal, and returns to England—Captain Furneaux's narrative, from the time the Adventure was ſeparated from the Reſolution, to her arrival in England, including the report of Lieutenant Burney, concerning the untimely death of the boat's crew, who were murdered by ſome of the natives of Queen Charlotte's Sound.

ON the 25th, we ſteered E. S. E. We had a freſh gale at N. N. E. but the weather ſtill continued foggy, till towards the evening, at which time it cleared up. On the 26th, we held on our courſe with a fine gale from the N. N. W. but at day-light, ſeeing no land to the eaſt, and being in latitude 56 deg. 33 min. S. and in 31 deg. 10. min. weſt longitude, we ſteered to the ſouth.

On the 27th, we had ſo thick a fog, that we could not ſee a ſhip's length. We expected ſoon to fall in with the ice, and on this account, it being no longer ſafe to ſail before the wind, we hauled to the eaſt with a gentle gale. When the fog cleared away, we reſumed our courſe to the ſouth; but it returned again, which obliged us to haul upon a wind; and unleſs we ſoon diſcovered ſome certain ſigns of falling in with land, the captain determined to make this the limit of his voyage to the ſouth. Indeed it would not have been prudent to have ſquandered away time in ſeeking farther to the ſouth, when there was as great a probability of finding a large track of land near Cape Circumciſion.

Beſides, it was an irkſome taſk to traverſe in high ſouthern latitudes, where nothing was to be diſcovered but ice.

At this time a long hollow ſwell from the weſt, indicated that no land was to be expected in ſuch a direction; and upon the whole, we may venture to aſſert, that the extenſive coaſt laid down by Mr. Dalrymple, and his Gulph of St. Sebaſtian, do not exiſt. On the 28th, at eight o'clock A. M. we ſtood to the eaſt, with a gentle breeze at north. The weather cleared away, and we perceived the ſea ſtrewed with large and ſmall bodies of ice. Some whales, penguins, ſnow peterels, and other birds were ſeen. We had now ſun-ſhine, but the air was cold. At noon, by obſervation, we were in 60 deg. 4 min. S. and in 29 deg. 23 min. W. longitude. At half paſt two o'clock, having continued our courſe to the eaſt, we ſuddenly fell in with a vaſt number of large ice-iſlands, and a ſea ſtrewed with looſe ice, and the weather becoming hazy, made it dangerous to ſtand in among them. We therefore tacked, and ſtood back to the weſt, with the wind at north. We were now ſurrounded with ice-iſlands, all nearly of an equal height, with a flat ſurface, but of various extent.

On Sunday the 19th, having little wind, we were obliged to traverſe in ſuch courſes as were moſt likely to carry us clear of them, ſo that we hardly made any progreſs, one way or other, throughout the whole day. The weather was fair, but remarkably gloomy, and we were viſited by penguins and whales in abundance. On the 30th, we tacked and ſtood to the N. E. and almoſt throughout the day it was foggy, with either ſleet or ſnow. At noon we were in latitude 59 deg. 30 min. S. and in 29 deg. 24 min. W. At two o'clock, paſſed one of the largeſt ice-iſlands we had ſeen during our voyage; and ſome time after two ſmaller ones. On the 31ſt, we diſcovered land a-head, diſtant about one league. This land conſiſted of three rocky iſlots of conſiderable height. The outmoſt terminated in a lofty peak, like a ſugar-loaf, to which we gave the name of Freezland Peak, after

after the man who firſt diſcovered it. The latitude is 59 deg. S. and 27 deg. W. longitude. To the eaſt of this peak, was ſeen an elevated coaſt, whoſe ſnow-capp'd ſummits were above the clouds. We named it Cape Briſtol, in honour of the noble family of Hervey. Alſo in latitude 59 deg. 13 min. 30 ſec. S. and in 27 deg. 45 min. W. another elevated coaſt appeared in ſight, diſtant from four to eight leagues. This land we called Southern Thule, becauſe the moſt ſouthern that has yet been diſcovered. Its ſurface riſes high, and is every where covered with ſnow. There were thoſe of our company, who thought they ſaw land in the ſpace between Thule and Cape Briſtol. We judged it more than probable that theſe two lands are connected, and the ſpace is a deep bay, which, though theſe are mere ſuppoſitions, was called Forſter's Bay. Being not able to weather Southern Thule, we tacked and ſtood to the north, at one o'clock, and at four Freezland Peak was diſtant four leagues. Soon after the wind fell, and we were left to the mercy of a great weſterly ſwell, which ſet right upon the ſhore; but at eight o'clock, the weather clearing up, we ſaw Cape Briſtol, which bore E. S. E. ending in a point to the north, beyond which we could ſee no land. Thus we were relieved from the fear of being caſt away by the ſwell, and caſt on the moſt horrible coaſt in the world. We continued our courſe to the north all night, with a light breeze at weſt.

On Wedneſday the 1ſt of February, at four o'clock in the morning, we had a view of a new coaſt. At ſix it bore north 60 deg. E. and being a high promontory, we named it Cape Montague. It is ſituated in latitude 58 deg. 37 min. S. and in 26 deg. 44 min. W. longitude, eight leagues to the north of Cape Briſtol. We ſaw land in ſeveral places between them, whence we concluded the whole might be connected. We wiſh it had been in our power to have determined this with greater certainty, but prudence would not permit the attempt, nor to venture near a coaſt the dangers of which have been already ſufficiently pointed out. One ice-iſland, among many others on this coaſt, particularly attracted our

notice. It was level in ſurface, of great extent both in height and circuit, and its ſides were perpendicular, on which the waves of the ſea had not made the leaſt impreſſion. We thought it might have come out from ſome bay on the coaſt. At noon, by obſervation, we found our latitude to be 58 deg. 25 min. In the afternoon, at two o'clock, when ſtanding to the north we ſaw land, which bore north 25 deg. E. It extended from north 40 deg. to 52 deg. E. and it was imagined more land lay beyond it to the eaſt.

On the 2d, at ſix o'clock A. M. having ſteered to north during the night, land was diſcovered, bearing north 12 deg. E. diſtant ten leagues. We ſaw two hummocks juſt above the horizon, of which we ſoon loſt ſight. We now ſtood, having a freſh breeze at N. N. E. for the northermoſt land we had ſeen the preceding day, which, at this time, bore E. S. E. By ten o'clock we fetched in with it, but not having it in our power to weather the ſame, we tacked at three miles from the coaſt. This extended from E. by S. to S. E. and appeared to be an iſland of about ten leagues circuit. The ſurface was high, and its ſummit loſt in the clouds. Like all the neighbouring lands, it was covered with a ſheet of ſnow and ice, except on a point on the north ſide, and on two hills ſeen over it, which probably were two iſlands. Theſe were not only clear of ſnow, but ſeemed covered with green turf. We ſaw alſo large ice-iſlands to the ſouth, and others to the N. E. At noon we tacked for the land again, in order if poſſible to determine whether it was an iſland; but a thick fog ſoon prevented the diſcovery, by making it unſafe to ſtand for the ſhore; ſo that having returned, we tacked and ſtood to N. W. to make the land we had ſeen in the morning. We left the other under the ſuppoſition of its being an iſland, and named it Saunders Iſle, after Capt. Cook's honourable friend Sir Charles Saunders. It lies in latitude 57 deg. 49 min. S. and in 26 deg. 44 min. W. longitude, diſtant thirteen leagues from Cape Montague. The wind having ſhifted at ſix o'clock, we ſtood to the north; and at eight we ſaw Saunders Iſland, extending

tending from S. E. by S. to E. S. E. We were ſtill in doubt if it were an iſland, and could not at this time clear it up, as we found it neceſſary to take a view of the land to the north, before we proceeded any further to the eaſt. With this intent we ſtood to the north, and on the 3d, at two o'clock A. M. we came in ſight of the land we were ſearching after, which proved to be two iſles. On account of the day on which they were diſcovered, we called them Candlemas Iſles. They lie in latitude 57 deg. 11 min. S. and in 27 deg. 6 min. W. longitude. Between theſe we obſerved a ſmall rock: there may perhaps be others; for the weather being hazy occaſioned us to loſe ſight of the iſlands, and we did not ſee them again till noon, at which time they were three or four leagues off. We now ſtood to the N. E. and at midnight came ſuddenly into water uncommonly white, at which appearance the officer on watch was ſo much alarmed, that he immediately ordered the ſhip to put about, and we accordingly tacked inſtantly. There were various opinions aboard concerning this matter; probably it might be a ſhoal of fiſh; but ſome ſaid it was a ſhoal of ice; and others thought it was ſhallow water.

On Sunday the 4th, at noon, by obſervation, we found ourſelves in latitude 56 deg. 44 min. S. and in longitude 25 deg. 33 min. W. We now, having a breeze at breaſt, ſtood to the ſouth, intending to regain the coaſt we had loſt; but the wind at eight o'clock in the evening, obliged us to ſtand to the eaſt, in which run we ſaw many ice-iſlands and ſome looſe ice. As the formation of ice-iſlands has not been fully inveſtigated, we will here offer a few hints and obſervations reſpecting them.

We do not think, as ſome others do, that they are formed by the water at the mouths of great cataracts or large rivers, which, when accumulated, break off, owing to their ponderous weight; becauſe we never found any of the ice which we took up, in the leaſt incorporated, or connected with the earth, which muſt neceſſarily adhere to it, were this conjecture true. Furthermore,

therefore, we are not certain whether there are any rivers in theſe countries, as we ſaw neither rivers nor ſtreams of freſh water there. The ice-iſlands, at leaſt in thoſe parts, muſt be formed from ſnow and ſleet conſolidated, which gathers by degrees, and are drifted from the mountains. In winter, the ſeas or ice-cliffs muſt fill up the bays, if they are ever ſo large. The continual fall of ſnow occaſions the accumulation of theſe cliffs, till they can ſupport their weight no longer, and large pieces break off from theſe ice-iſlands. We are inclined to believe, that theſe ice-cliffs, where they are ſheltered from the violence of the winds, extend a great way into the ſea.

On the 5th, having ſeen no penguins, we thought that we were leaving land behind us, and that we had paſſed its northern extremity. On the 6th, we held on our courſe till the 7th at noon, when we found our latitude to be 58 deg. 15 min. S. and lon. 21 deg. 34 min. W. and not ſeeing any ſigns of land, we concluded, that what had been denominated Sandwich Land, was either a group of iſlands, or a point of the continent: for in Captain Cook's opinion, the ice that is ſpread over this vaſt ſouthern ocean, muſt originate in a track of land, which he firmly believes lies near the pole, and extends fartheſt to the north, oppoſite to the Southern Atlantic and Indian Oceans; for ice being found in theſe farther to the north, than any where elſe, induced the captain to conclude, that land of conſiderable extent muſt exiſt near the ſouth. Upon a contrary ſuppoſition it will follow, that we ought to ſee ice every where under the ſame parallel; but few ſhips have met with ice going round Cape Horn; and for our part, we ſaw but little below the ſixtieth degree of latitude in the Southern Pacific Ocean; on the other hand in this ſea, between the meridian of 40 deg. W. and fifty or ſixty degrees eaſt, we found ice as far north as 51 deg. Others have ſeen it in a much lower latitude. Let us now ſuppoſe there is a Southern Continent within the polar circle. The queſtion which readily occurs, will be, What end can be anſwered in diſcovering or exploring

ſuch

ſuch a coaſt? Or what uſe can the ſame be either to navigation, geography, or any other ſcience? and what benefits can reſult therefrom to a commercial ſtate? Conſider for a moment, what thick fogs, ſnow, ſtorms, intenſe cold, and every thing dangerous to navigation, muſt be encountered with by every hardy adventurer; behold the horrid aſpect of a country impenetrable by the animating heat of the ſun's rays; a country doomed to be immerſed in everlaſting ſnow. See the iſlands and floats on the coaſt, and the continual falls of the ice-cliffs in the ports: theſe difficulties, which might be heightened by others leſs dangerous, are ſufficient to deter every one from the raſh attempts of proceeding farther to the ſouth, than our expert and brave commander has done, in ſearch of an unknown country, which when diſcovered would anſwer no valuable purpoſe whatever.

By this time we had traverſed the Southern Ocean, in ſuch a manner, as to have no doubt in determining that there is no continent, unleſs near the pole, and out of the reach of navigation. We have made many new diſcoveries, and aſcertained the exact ſituation of ſeveral old ones. Thus was the end of our voyage fully anſwered, a ſouthern hemiſphere ſufficiently explored, and the neceſſity of a ſearch after a ſouthern continent put an end to. We ſhould have proceeded to farther diſcoveries, but our captain thought it cruel to detain the people who ſailed with him any longer without the neceſſary refreſhments, eſpecially, as their behaviour merited every indulgence; for neither officers nor men ever once repined at any hardſhip, nor expreſſed any uneaſineſs, or additional fear of danger, on account of our ſeparation from the Adventure. It was now high time to think of returning home; and could we have continued longer, we ſhould have been in great danger of the ſcurvy breaking out among us, and we do not know any good purpoſe farther diſcoveries would have anſwered: we therefore ſteered for the Cape of Good Hope, intending to look for Bouvet's diſcovery, Cape Circumciſion, and the iſles of Denia and Marſeveen.

On

On Tueſday the 7th, we reſumed our courſe to the eaſt, and this day only three ice iſlands were ſeen. At eight o'clock in the evening we hauled the wind to the S. E. for the night. On the 8th, at day-light, we continued our courſe to the eaſt. In the afternoon, paſſed three ice iſlands. On the 9th, we had a calm moſt part of the day; the weather fair, except at times a ſnow ſhower. We ſaw ſeveral ice iſlands, but not the leaſt intimation that could induce us to think that any land was near us. We ſtood now to the north eaſt with a breeze which ſprung up at S. E. On the 10th, we had ſhowers of ſleet and ſnow; the weather was piercing cold, inſomuch that the water on the deck was frozen. The ice iſlands were continually in ſight.

On the 11th, we continued to ſteer eaſt. In the morning we had heavy ſhowers of ſnow; but as the day advanced, we had clear and ſerene weather. At noon, we were in latitude 58 deg. 11 min. and in 7 deg. 55 min. W. longitude. On the 12th, we had ice iſlands continually in ſight, but moſt of them were ſmall and breaking to pieces. On the 13th, we had a heavy fall of ſnow; but the ſky clearing up, we had a fair night, and ſo ſharp a froſt, that the water in all our veſſels on deck, was next morning covered with a ſheet of ice.

On the 14th, we continued to ſteer eaſt, inclining to the north, and in the afternoon croſſed the firſt meridian, or that of Greenwich, in the latitude of 57 deg. 50 min. S. At eight o'clock we had a hard gale, at S. S. W. and a high ſea from the ſame quarter.

On the 15th, we ſteered E. N. E. till noon, when by obſervation, we were in the latitude of 56 deg. 37 min. S. and in 4 deg. 11 min. E. longitude. We now ſailed N. E. with a view of getting into the latitude of Cape Circumciſion. We had ſome large ice-iſlands in ſight, and the air was nearly as cold as the preceding day. The night was foggy, with ſnow ſhowers, and a ſmart froſt. On the 16th, we continued our courſe N. E. and at noon we obſerved in latitude 55 deg. 26 min. E. longitude, in which ſituation we had a great

ſwell

ſwell from the ſouth, but no ice in ſight. At one o'clock we ſtood to the ſouth-eaſt till ſix, when we tacked, and ſtood to the north. At this time we had a heavy fall of ſnow and ſleet, which fixed to the maſts and rigging as it fell, and coated the whole with ice. On the 17th, we had a great high ſea from the ſouth, and from whence we concluded no land was near in that direction. On the 18th, the weather was fair and clear.

We now kept a look out for Cape Circumciſion; for if the land had ever ſo little extent in direction of N. and S. we could not miſs ſeeing it, as the northern point is ſaid to lie in 54 deg. On the 19th, at eight o'clock in the morning, land appeared in the direction E. by S. but it proved a mere fog-bank. We now ſteered E. by S. till ſeven o'clock in the evening, when we were in latitude 54 deg. 42 min. S. and in 13 deg. 3 min. E. longitude. We now ſtood to N. W. having a very ſtrong gale, attended with ſnow ſhowers. On Monday the 20th, we tacked and ſtretched to the N. E. and had a freſh gale, attended with ſnow ſhowers and ſleet. At noon, our latitude was 54 deg. 8 min. S. lon. 12 deg. 59 min. E. but had not the leaſt ſign of land. On the 21ſt, we were 5 deg. to the eaſt of the longitude in which Cape Circumciſion is ſaid to lie, and continued our courſe eaſt, inclining a little to the ſouth, till the 22d. We had now meaſured in the latitude laid down for Bouvet's land, thirteen degrees of longitude; a courſe in which it is hardly poſſible we could have miſſed it; we therefore began to doubt its exiſtence; and concluded that what the Frenchman had ſeen, could be nothing more than a deception, or an iſland of ice: for after we had left the ſouthern iſles, to the preſent time, not the leaſt veſtige of land had been diſcovered. We ſaw, 'tis true, ſome ſeals and penguins; but theſe are to be found in all parts of the ſouthern ocean, and we believe ſhags, gannets, boobies, and men of war birds, are the moſt indubitable ſigns that denote the vicinity of land, as they ſeldom go very far out to ſea. Being at this time only two degrees of longitude from

our rout to the ſouth, when we took our departure from the Cape of Good Hope, it was in vain for us to continue our courſe to the eaſt under this parallel; but thinking we might have ſeen land farther to the ſouth, for this reaſon, and to clear up ſome doubts, we ſteered S. E. in order to get into the ſituation in which it was ſuppoſed to lie.

On the 23d, from obſervations on ſeveral diſtances of the ſun and moon, we found ourſelves in the latitude of 55 deg. 25 min. S. and in 23 deg. 22 min. E. longitude; and having run over the track in which the land was ſuppoſed to lie, without ſeeing any, we now were well aſſured the ice iſlands had deceived Mr. Bouvet, as at times they had deceived us. During the night, the wind had veered to N. W. which enabled us to ſteer more north; for we had now laid aſide all thoughts of ſearching farther after French diſcoveries, and were determined to direct our courſe for the Cape of Good Hope, intending only by the way to look for the iſles of Denia and Marſeveen, which by Dr. Halley are laid down in the latitude of 41 deg. 5 min. and 4 deg. E. longitude from the meridian of the Cape of Good Hope. On Friday the 25th, we ſteered N. E. and were at noon in latitude 52 deg. 52 min. S. longitude 26 deg. 31 min. E. This day we ſaw the laſt ice-iſland.

On Wedneſday the 1ſt of March, we were in the latitude of 46 deg. 44 min. S. and in 23 deg. 36 min. W. longitude; and we took notice, that the whole time the wind blew regular and conſtant northerly, which included ſeveral days, the weather was always cloudy and very hazy; but as ſoon as it came to the ſouth or weſt, it cleared up. We alſo obſerved, that the barometer began to riſe ſeveral days before this change happened. On the 3d, in the afternoon, we had intervals of clear weather, but at night the wind blew a heavy ſquall from S. W. whereby ſeveral of our ſails were ſplit, and a middle ſtay-ſail was wholly loſt. We were now in latitude 41 deg. 30 min. S. longitude 16 deg. 51 min. E. We had not yet ſeen any ſigns of land,

land, but albatroſſes, peterels, and other ſea-birds, were our daily viſitors. On the 11th, the wind ſhifted ſuddenly from N. W. to S. W. which occaſioned the mercury to fall as ſuddenly from 62 to 52 deg. ſo different was the ſtate of the air between a northerly and ſoutherly wind.

On Saturday the 12th, ſome albatroſſes and peterels we ſhot, which proved an acceptable treat. This day we were nearly in the ſituation in which the iſles of Denia and Marſeveen are ſaid to lie, and not the leaſt hope of finding them remained. On the 13th, we ſtood to N. N. W. and at noon, by obſervation, were in lat. 38 deg. 51 min. S. which was above thirty miles more than our log gave us; to what this difference was owing, we could not determine. The watch alſo ſhewed that we had been ſet to the eaſt. At this time we were two degrees north of the parallel in which the iſles are laid down, but found not any encouragement to perſevere in our endeavours to find them.

This muſt have conſumed more time, we think, in a fruitleſs ſearch; and every one, all having been confined a long time to ſtale and ſalt proviſions, was impatient to get into port. We therefore, in compliance with the general wiſh, reſolved to make the beſt of our way to the Cape of Good Hope. On Thurſday the 16th, at day-break, we deſcried in the N. W. quarter, ſtanding to the weſtward, two ſail, one of which ſhewed Dutch colours. About this time, a quarrel aroſe between three officers and the ſhip's cooks, which was not reconciled without ſerious conſequences. Thoſe three gentlemen, upon ſome occaſion or other, entered the cook-room with naked knives, and with oaths, unbecoming their character, ſwore they would take away the lives of the firſt who dared to affront them. It ſeems they had formerly met with ſome rebuffs for the much frequenting the cook's apartments, which had hitherto paſſed in a joke; but now a regular complaint was laid before the captain, of their unwarrantable behaviour, and of the danger the men were in of their lives; into which complaint the captain was under the neceſſity of en-

quiring; and upon finding it juſt, of confining the offenders in irons.

While they were in this ſituation, the articles of war being read, it was found that the offence was of ſuch a nature as hardly to be determined without a reference to a court-martial, in order to which, the two who appeared moſt culpable, were continued priſoners upon parole, and the third was cleared. After this buſineſs had engroſſed the captain's attention, he called the ſhip's company together, and after recounting the particulars of the voyage, the hardſhips they had met with, the fatigues they had undergone, and the chearfulneſs they had conſtantly ſhewn in the diſcharge of their duty, he gave them to underſtand, how much it would ſtill recommend them to the Lords of the Admiralty, if they would preſerve a profound ſilence in the ports they had yet to paſs and might enter, with regard to the courſes, the diſcoveries they had made, and every particular relating to this voyage; and likewiſe after their return home, till they had their Lordſhips' permiſſion to the contrary; requiring, at the ſame time, all the officers who had kept journals to deliver them into his cuſtody, to be ſealed up, and not to be opened till delivered to their lordſhips at the proper office. In the interim, they were to be locked up ſafely in a cheſt. This requeſt was chearfully complied with by every commiſſioned officer.

On Friday the 17th, we obſerved at noon in the latitude of 34 deg. 42 min. S. in the evening we ſaw land, about ſix leagues diſtant, in the direction of E. N. E. and there was a great fire or light upon it, throughout the firſt part of the night. On the 18th, at day-break, we ſaw, at the ſame diſtance, the land again, bearing N. N. W. At nine o'clock, we ſent out a boat to get up with one of the two ſhips before noticed; we were ſo deſirous of hearing news, that we paid no attention to the diſtance, though the ſhips were at leaſt two leagues from us. Soon after we ſtood to the ſouth, a breeze ſpringing up at weſt. At this time three more ſail were ſeen to windward, one of which ſhewed Eng-

liſh

liſh colours. The boat returned at one o'clock P. M. and our people in it had been on board a Dutch Indiaman coming home from Bengal; the ſhip was the Bownkirk Polder, the Captain Cornelius Boſch. The captain very politely made us a tender of ſugar, arrack, and of any thing that could be ſpared out of the ſhip.

By ſome Engliſh mariners on board her, our people were informed, that our conſort had arrived at the Cape of Good Hope twelve months ago; adding that a boat's crew had been murdered and eaten by the natives of New Zealand. This intelligence ſufficiently explained the myſterious accounts we had received from our old friends, in Queen Charlotte's Sound. On the 19th, at ten o'clock in the morning, the Engliſh ſhip bore down to us. She was the True Briton, Capt. Broadly, on her return from China. A letter to the ſecretary of the Admiralty was committed to the care of the captain, who generouſly ſent us freſh proviſions, tea, and other articles. In the afternoon the True Briton ſtood out to ſea, and we in for land. At ſix o'clock, we tacked within five miles of the ſhore, diſtant, as we conjectured, about ſix leagues from Cape Aquilas. On the 20th, we ſtood along ſhore to the weſt; and on the 21ſt, at noon, the Table Mountain, over the Cape Town, bore N. E. by E. diſtant ten leagues. The next morning we anchored in Table Bay; with us, in our reckoning, it was Wedneſday the 22d, but with the people here, Tueſday the 21ſt, we having gained a day by running to the eaſt. In the bay we found ſhips of different nations, among which was an Engliſh Eaſt Indiaman, from China, bound directly for England. In this ſhip Capt. Cook ſent a copy of his journal, together with ſome charts and drawings to the Admiralty. We ſaluted the garriſon with thirteen guns, and the compliment was returned with an equal number. We now heard the deplorable ſtory of the Adventure's boat's crew confirmed, with the addition of a falſe report, concerning the loſs of a French ſhip upon the ſame iſland, with the total deſtruction of the captain and his crew, propagated no doubt, by the Adventure's people, to render an act of ſavage barbari-

ty,

ty, that would ſcarcely admit of aggravation, ſtill more horrible. But that which gave us full ſatisfaction about this matter, was, Capt. Furneaux had left a letter for our commander, in which he mentions the loſs of the boat and ten of his men, in Queen Charlotte's Sound.

The day after our arrival at this place, Capt. Cook, accompanied by our gentlemen, waited on Baron Plettenberg, the Dutch Governor, by whom, and his principal officers, they were treated with the greateſt politeneſs; and as at this place refreſhments of all kinds may be procured in great abundance, we now, after the numerous fatigues of a long voyage, began to taſte and enjoy the ſweets of repoſe. It is a cuſtom here for all the officers to reſide on ſhore; in compliance with which, the captain, the two Forſters, and Mr. Sparman took up their abode with Mr. Brandt, well known to our countrymen for his obliging readineſs to ſerve them. Our people on board were not neglected; and being provided daily with freſh baked bread, freſh meat, greens, wine, &c. they were ſoon reſtored to their uſual ſtrength, and as ſoon forgot all paſt hardſhips and dangers.

All hands were employed now to ſupply all our defects, almoſt every thing except the ſtanding rigging was to be replaced anew; and it is well known the charges here for naval ſtores are moſt exorbitant; for the Dutch, both at the Cape and Batavia, take a ſcandalous advantage of the diſtreſs of foreigners. That our caſks, rigging, ſails, &c. ſhould be in a ſhattered condition, is eaſily accounted for. In circumnavigating the globe, we mean, from leaving this place till our return to it again, we had ſailed no leſs than ſixty thouſand miles, equal nearly to three times the equatorial circumference of the earth; but in all this run, which had been made in all latitudes, between 9 and 71 deg. we ſprung neither low-maſts nor top-maſts; nor broke ſo much as a lower or top-maſt ſhroud. At the Cape, the curioſity of all nations was excited, to learn the ſucceſs of our diſcoveries, and in proportion to the earneſtneſs of the ſolicitations, wherewith the common

common men were preſſed, by foreign inquiſitors, they took care to gratify them with wonderful relations. Hence many ſtrange ſtories were circulated abroad, before it was known by the people at large at home, whether the Reſolution had periſhed at ſea, or was upon her return to Europe.

During our ſtay here, ſeveral foreign ſhips put in and went out, bound to and from India, namely, Engliſh, French, Daniſh, and three Spaniſh ſhips, two going to, and one returning from Manilla. We believe it is but lately, that ſhips of this nation have touched here; and theſe were the firſt to whom were allowed the ſame privileges as other European ſtates. We now loſt no time in putting all things in readineſs to complete our voyage; but we were obliged to unhang our rudder, and were alſo delayed for want of caulkers; and it was abſolutely neceſſary to caulk the ſhip before we put to ſea.

On the 26th of April, this work was finiſhed, and having got on board a freſh ſupply of proviſions, and all neceſſary ſtores, we took leave of the governor, and his principal officers. On the 27th, we went on board, and ſoon after, the wind coming fair, we weighed and put to ſea. When under ſail we ſaluted the garriſon, as is cuſtomary, and they returned the compliment. When clear of the bay we parted company with ſome of the ſhips who ſailed out with us: the Daniſh ſhip ſteered for the Eaſt-Indies, the Spaniſh frigate, Juno, for Europe, and we and the Dutton Indiaman, for St. Helena. Depending on the goodneſs of Mr. Kendall's watch, we determined to attempt to make the iſland by a direct courſe. The wind, in general, blew faint all the paſſage, which made it longer than common.

On the 15th of May, at day-break, we ſaw the iſland, diſtant fourteen leagues, and anchored, at midnight, before the town, on the N. W. ſide of the iſland. Governor Skettowe, and the gentlemen of the iſland, treated us, while we continued here, with the greateſt courteſey. In our narrative of Capt. Cook's former voyage,

voyage, we have given a full deſcription of this iſland; to which we ſhall only add, that the inhabitants are far from exerciſing a wanton cruelty towards their ſlaves. We are informed alſo, that wheel carriages and porter knots have been in uſe among them for many years. Within theſe three years a new church has been built; ſome other new buildings are erecting, a commodious landing-place for boats has been made, and other improvements, which add both ſtrength and beauty to the place. Here we finiſhed ſome neceſſary repairs, which we had not time to complete during our ſtay at the Cape. Our empty water caſks were alſo filled, and the ſhip's company had freſh beef, at five-pence per pound. This article of refreſhment is very good, and the only one to be procured worth mentioning.

On the 21ſt, in the evening, we took leave of the governor, and then repaired on board. The Dutton Indiaman, in company with us, was ordered not to fall in with Aſcenſion, for which we ſteered, on account of an illicit trade, carried on between the Company's ſhips, and ſome veſſels from North America, who of late years, had viſited the iſland on pretence of fiſhing, when their real deſign was to wait the coming of the India ſhips. The Dutton was therefore ordered to ſteer N. W. by W. or N. W. till to the northward of Aſcenſion. With this ſhip we were in company till the 24th, when we parted. A packet for the Admiralty was put on board, and ſhe continued her courſe N. W.

On the 28th, he made the iſland of Aſcenſion; and on the evening anchored in Croſs Bay, in the N. W. ſide, half a mile from the ſhore, in ten fathoms water. The Croſs-hill, ſo called an account of a flag-ſtaff erected upon it in form of a croſs, bore S. 38 deg. E. and and the two extreme points of the bay extended from N. E. to S. W. We had ſeveral fiſhing parties out every night, and got about twenty-four turtles, weighing between four and five hundred weight each. This was our principal object, though we might have had a plentiful

plentiful ſupply of fiſh in general. We have no where ſeen old wives in ſuch abundance; alſo cavalies, congor eels, and various other ſorts.

This iſland lies in the direction N. W. and S. E and is ten miles broad, and five or ſix long. Its ſurface is very barren, and ſcarcely produces a ſhrub, plant, or any kind of vegetation, in the ſpace of many miles; inſtead of which we ſaw only ſtones and ſand; or rather flags and aſhes: hence from the general appearance of the face of this iſland, it is more than probable, that at ſome time, of which we have no account, it has been deſtroyed by a volcano. We met with in our excurſions a ſmooth even ſurface in the intervals between the heaps of ſtones; but as one of our people obſerved, you may as eaſily walk over broken glaſs bottles as over the ſtones; for if you ſlip, or make a falſe ſtep, you are ſure to be cut or lamed. At the S. E. end of the iſle is a high mountain, which ſeems to have been left in its original ſtate; for it is covered with a kind of white marl, producing purſlain, ſpurg, and one or two ſorts of graſs. On theſe the goats feed, which are to be found in this part of the iſle. Here are good land crabs, and the ſea abounds with turtle from January to June. They always come on ſhore to lay their eggs in the night, when they are caught by turning them on their backs, in which poſition they are left on the beach till the next morning, when the turtle-catchers fetch them away. We are inclined to think, that the turtles come to this iſland merely for the purpoſe of laying their eggs, as we found none but females; nor had thoſe we caught any food in their ſtomachs. We ſaw alſo near this place abundance of aquatic birds, ſuch as tropic birds, men of war, boobies, &c. On the N. E. ſide we found the remains of a wreck; ſhe ſeemed to have been a veſſel of one hundred and fifty tons burthen. We were informed, that there is a fine ſpring in a valley between two hills, on the top of the mountain above mentioned; beſides great quantities of freſh water in holes in the rocks. While the Reſolution lay in the road, a ſloop belonging to New-York anchored

by her. She had been to the coaſt of Guinea with a cargo of goods, and came here under a pretence to take in turtle; but her real intention was, we believe, to traffic with the officers of our homeward bound Eaſt-Indiamen; for ſhe had lain here near a week, and had got on board twenty turtles; whereas a ſloop from Bermuda, had ſailed but a few days before, with one hundred and five on board, which were as many as ſhe could take in; but having turned ſeveral more on different beaches, they inhumanly ripped open their bellies, for the ſake of the eggs, and left the carcaſes to putrefy. The center of this iſland of Aſcenſion is ſituated in the lat. of 8 deg. S. and in 14 deg. 28 min. 30 ſec. W. longitude.

On the 31ſt of May, we departed from the iſland of Aſcenſion, and ſteered with a fine gale at S. E. by E. for that of Fernando de Noronha, on the coaſt of Braſil, in order to determine its longitude. In our paſſage to this place, we had very good weather, and fine moon light nights, which afforded us many opportunities of making lunar obſervations. On the 9th of June we made the iſland, which had the appearance of ſeveral detached hills; the largeſt of which very much reſembled the ſteeple of a church. As we advanced and drew near it, we found the ſea broke in a violent ſurf on ſome ſunken rocks, which lay about a league from the ſhore. We now hoiſted Engliſh colours, and bore up round the north end of the iſle, which is a group of little iſlots; for we perceived plainly, that the land was unconnected and divided by narrow channels. On one of theſe, next the main, are ſeveral ſtrong forts, rendered ſo by the nature of their ſituation, which is ſuch, as to command all the anchoring and landing places about the iſland. We continued to ſail round the northern point, till the ſandy beaches, before which is the road for ſhipping, and the forts were open to the weſtward of the ſaid point. As the Reſolution advanced, a gun was fired, and immediately the Portugueze colours were diſplayed on all the forts: but not intending to ſtop here, we fired a gun to the leeward, and ſtood away to the

the northward, with a freſh breeze. The hill which appears like a church tower, bore S. 27 deg. W. 5 miles diſtant; and from our preſent point of view it appeared to lean, or over-hang to the E. Fernando de Noronha is in no part more than 6 leagues in extent, and exhibits an unequal ſurface, well cloathed with wood and herbage. Its latitude is 3 deg. 53 min. S. and its longitude carried on by the watch, from St. Helena, is 32 deg. 34 min. W. Don Antonio d'Ulloa, in his account of this iſland, ſays, "that it hath two harbours, capable of receiving ſhips of the greateſt burden; one is on the north ſide, and the other on the N. W. The former is, in every reſpect, the principal, both for ſhelter and capaciouſneſs, and the goodneſs of its bottom; but both are expoſed to the north and weſt, though theſe winds, particularly the north, are periodical, and of no long continuance. You anchor in the north harbour (which Capt. Cook called a road) in thirteen fathoms water, one third of a league from the ſhore, bottom of fine ſand; the peaked hill bearing S. W. 3 deg. ſoutherly." This road, or (as Ulloa terms it) harbour, is very ſecure for ſhipping, being ſheltered from the ſouth and eaſt winds.

On the 11th, at three o'clock P. M. in long. 32 deg. 14 min. we croſſed the line. We had ſqually weather from the E. S. E. with ſhowers of rain, which continued at times till the 12th, and on the 13th the wind became variable. At noon we were in lat. 3 deg. 49 min. N. and in 31 deg. 47 min. W. long. We had now for moſt part of the day, dark gloomy weather, till the evening of the 15th, at which time we were in lat. 5 deg. 47 min. N. and in 31 deg. W. long. After this we had three ſucceſſive calm days, in which we had fair weather, and rains alternately; and ſometimes the ſky was obſcured by denſe clouds, which broke in very heavy ſhowers of rain.

On the 18th, we had a breeze at E. which fixed at N. E. and we ſtretched to N. W. As we advanced to the N. the gale increaſed. On the 21ſt Capt. Cook ordered the ſtill to be ſet to work, with a view of making the greateſt

greateſt quantity poſſible of freſh water. To try this experiment the ſtill was fitted to the largeſt copper we had, which held about 64 gallons of ſalt water. At four o'clock, A. M. the fire was lighted, and at ſix the ſtill began to run. The operation was continued till ſix in the evening: at which time we had obtained 32 gallons of freſh water. At noon the next day, the mercury in the thermometer was 84 and an half, as high as it is generally found to riſe at ſea. Had it been lower, more water would have been procured; for it is well known, that the colder the air is, the cooler the ſtill may be kept, whereby the ſteam will be condenſed faſter. The invention upon the whole, is a uſeful one, but it would not be prudent for a navigator to truſt wholly to it; for tho' with plenty of fuel, and good coppers, as much water may be obtained, as will be neceſſary to ſupport life, yet the utmoſt efforts that can be employed in this work, will not procure a ſufficiency to ſupport health, eſpecially in hot climates, where freſh water is moſt wanted; and in the opinion of Captain Cook, founded on experience, the beſt judge of this matter, nothing can contribute more to the health of ſeamen, than their having plenty of ſweet freſh water.

On the 25th, we were in latitude 16 deg. 12 min. N. and in 37 deg. 20 min. W. longitude. Obſerving a ſhip to windward, bearing down upon us, we ſhortened ſail; but on her approaching, we found by her colours ſhe was Dutch; we therefore made ſail again, and left her to purſue her courſe. On the 28th, we obſerved in the latitude of 21 deg. 21 min. N. longitude 40 deg. 6 min. W. and our courſe made good was N. by W. On the 30th, a ſhip paſſed us within hale; but ſhe was preſently out of ſight, and we judged her to be Engliſh. We were now in the latitude of 24 deg. 20 min. N. longitude 40 deg. 47 min. W. In latitude 29 deg. 30 min. we ſaw ſome ſea-plants, commonly called gulph weed, becauſe it is ſuppoſed to come from the gulph of Florida; it may be ſo, and yet it certainly vegitates at ſea. We continued to ſee this plant in ſmall

pieces,

pieces, till in the latitude of 36 deg. N. beyond which parallel we ſaw no more of it.

On the 5th of July, the wind veered to the eaſt; and the next day it was calm. On the 7th and 8th we had variable light airs; but on the 9th, the wind fixed at S. S. W. after which we had a freſh gale, and ſteered at firſt N. E. and then E. N. E. our intention being to make ſome of the Azores, or Weſtern iſles. On the 11th, we were in lat. 60 deg. 45 min. N. and in 36 deg. 45 min. W. longitude, when we deſcried a ſail ſteering to the weſt; and on the 12th, came in ſight of three more.

On the 13th, we made the iſland of Fayal, and on the 14th, at day-break, we entered the bay of De Horta, and at eight o'clock anchored in 20 fathoms water, about half a mile from the ſhore. Our deſign in touching at this place, was to make obſervations, from whence might be determined with accuracy the longitude of the Azores. We were directed by the maſter, of the port, who came on board before we caſt anchor, to more N. E. and S. W. in this ſtation, the S. W. point of the bay bore S. 16 deg. W. and the N. E. point, N. 33 deg. E. The church at the N. E. end of the town N. 38 deg. W. the weſt point of St. George's iſland N. 42 deg. E. diſtant eight leagues; and the iſle of Pico extending from N. 74 deg. E. to S. 46 deg. E. diſtant five miles. In the bay we found the Pourvoyer, a large French frigate, an American ſloop, and a brig belonging to Fayal.

On the 14th, the captain ſent to the conſul, and notified our arrival to the governor, begging his permiſſion to grant Mr. Wales an opportunity to make his obſervations on ſhore. This was readily granted, and Mr. Dent who acted as conſul in the abſence of Mr. Gathorne, not only procured this permiſſion, but accommodated Mr. Wales with a convenient place in his garden to ſet up his inſtruments; and in ſeveral other particulars, this gentlemen diſcovered a friendly readineſs to oblige us: even his houſe was always at our command both night and day; and the entertainment we met with there, was liberal

liberal and hoſpitable. All the time we ſtaid at this place, the crew of our ſhip were ſupplied with plenty of freſh beef, and we purchaſed about 50 tons of water, at the rate of about three ſhillings per ton. To hire ſhore boats is the moſt general cuſtom here, though ſhips are allowed, if they prefer many inconveniencies to a trifling expence, to water with their own boats. Freſh proviſions may be got, and hogs, ſheep and poultry, for ſea-ſtock, at reaſonable rates. The ſheep are not only ſmall, they are alſo very poor; but the bullocks and hogs are exceeding good. Here is plenty of wine to be had.

Before we proceed with our own obſervations, made during our abode at Fayal, it may be agreeable to our readers, to give them a brief account and deſcription of all the Azores, or Weſtern Iſlands. Theſe have by different geographers, been variouſly deemed parts of America, Africa, and Europe, as they are almoſt in a central point; but we apprehend they may with more propriety be conſidered as belonging to the latter. They are a group of iſlands, ſituated in the Atlantic ocean, between 25 and 32 deg. of W. long, and between 37 and 40 N. lat. 900 miles W. of Portugal, and as many eaſt of Newfoundland. They are nine in number, viz. St. Taria, St. Miguel, or St. Michael, Terceira, St. George, Gracioſa, Fayal, Pico, Flores, and Corvo.

Theſe iſlands were firſt diſcovered by ſome Flemiſh ſhips in 1439, and afterwards by the Portugueſe in 1447, to whom they now belong. The two weſternmoſt were named Flores and Corvo, from the abundance of flowers on the one, and crows on the other. They are all fertile, and ſubject to a governor-general, who reſided at Angra in Terceira, which is alſo the ſeat of the biſhop, whoſe dioceſe extends over all the Azores. The income of the latter, which is paid in wheat, amounts to about 200l. ſterling per year. On every iſland there is a deputy governor, who directs the police, militia, and revenue; and a juiz or judge, is at the head of the law department, from whom lies an

appeal

appeal to a higher court at Terceira, and from thence to the ſupreme court at Liſbon. The natives of theſe iſlands are very litigious.

St. Miguel, the largeſt, is 100 miles in circumference, contains about 29,000 inhabitants, and is very fertile in wheat and flax. Its chief town is Panta del Gado. This iſland was twice ravaged by the Engliſh in the time of Queen Elizabeth.

Terceira is reckoned the chief iſland, on account of its having the beſt harbour; and its chief town, named Angra, being the reſidence of the governor-general and the biſhop. The town contains a cathedral, five other churches, eight convents, ſeveral courts of officers, &c. and is defended by two forts.

The iſland of Pico, ſo called from a mountain of vaſt height, produces excellent wine, cedar, and a valuable wood, called teixos. On the ſouth of the iſland is the principal harbour, called Villa das Lagens.

The inhabitants of Flores having been many years ago infected with the venereal diſeaſe by the crew of a Spaniſh man of war, that was wrecked upon their coaſt, the evil, it is ſaid, ſtill maintains its ground there, none of the inhabitants being free from it, as in Pera, and ſome parts of Siberia.

Travellers relate, that no poiſonous or venomous animal is to be found in the Azores, and that if carried thither, it will expire in a few hours. One tenth of all their productions belong to the king, and the article of tobacco brings in a conſiderable ſum. The wine called Fayal wine, is chiefly raiſed in the iſland of Pico, which lies oppoſite to Fayal. From eighteen to twenty thouſand pipes of that wine are made there yearly. All of theſe iſlands enjoy a ſalubrious air, but are expoſed to violent earthquakes, from which they have frequently ſuffered.

Villa de Horta, the chief town in Fayal, like all the towns belonging to the Portugueſe, is crowded with religious buildings; there being no leſs in this little city, than three convents for men, and two for women.

Here

Here are alſo eight churches, including thoſe belonging to the convents, and that in the Jeſuit's college. This college is a noble ſtructure, and ſeated on an elevation in the pleaſanteſt part of the city. Since the expulſion of that order, it has been ſuffered to go to decay, and, in a few years, by the all conſuming hand of time, may be reduced to a heap of ruins. The principal produce of Fayal is wheat and Indian corn, with which the inhabitants ſupply Pico, which in return ſends them wine more than ſufficient for their conſumption, great quantities being annually ſhipped from De Horta (for at Pica there is no road for ſhipping) for America, whence it has obtained the name of Fayal wine.

The villa de Horta is ſituated at the bottom of a bay, cloſe to the edge of the ſea. It is defended by two caſtles, one at each end of the town, and a ſtone work extending along the ſea ſhore from the one to the other. But theſe works ſerve more for ſhew than defence. Before this villa, at the eaſt end of the iſland, is the bay or road of Fayal, which faces the weſt end of Pico. It is a ſemi-circle, about two miles in diameter; and its depth, or ſemi-diameter, is better than three fourths of a mile.

Upon the whole, we by no means think this road of Fayal a bad one. We were informed, by a Portugueſe captain of the following particulars, which, if true, are not unworthy of notice. This Portugueſe told us, that in the direction of S. E. about half a league from the road, and in a line between that and the ſouth ſides of Pico, lies a concealed ſunken rock, covered with 22 fathoms water, and on which the ſea breaks from the ſouth. He alſo gave us to underſtand, that of all the ſhoals about theſe iſles that are laid down in our charts, and pilot books, only one has any exiſtence, which lies between the iſlands of St. Mary and St. Michael, called Hormingan. He further informed us, that the diſtance between Fayal and the iſland of Flores, is forty-five leagues; and that there runs a ſtrong tide between Fayal and Pico, the flood ſetting to the N. E. and

the

the ebb to the S. W. but out at ſea, the direction is eaſt and weſt. By various obſervations, the true longitude of this bay was found to be 28 deg. 39 min. 18 ſec. and a half.

On the 19th, at four o'clock A. M. we ſailed out of the bay, and ſteered for the weſt end of St. George's iſland. Having paſſed this, we ſhaped our courſe E. half S. for the iſland of Terceira; and after a run of fourteen leagues, we found ourſelves not more than one league from the weſt end. We now proceeded as expeditiouſly as the wind would permit for England; and on the 29th, we made the land near Plymouth.

On the 30th, we caſt anchor at Spithead, when Capt. Cook, in company with Meſſrs. Wales, Forſters, and Hodges, landed at Portſmouth, and from thence ſet out for London. The whole time of our abſence from England was three years and eighteen days; and owing to the unbounded goodneſs of an Almighty Preſerver, who indulgently favoured our attempt, and ſeconded our endeavours, notwithſtanding the various changes of climates (and they were as various as can be experienced) we loſt only one man by ſickneſs, and three by other cauſes. Even the ſingle circumſtance of keeping the ſhip's company in health, by means of the greateſt care and attention, will make this voyage remarkable in the opinion of every humane perſon; and we truſt the grand end of this expedition, and the purpoſes for which we were ſent into the ſouthern hemiſphere were diligently and ſufficiently purſued.

The Reſolution made the circuit of the ſouthern ocean in a high latitude, and Capt. Cook traverſed it in ſuch a manner, as to leave no room for a mere poſſibility of there being a continent, unleſs near the pole, and conſequently out of the reach of navigation. However, by having twice explored the tropical ſea, the ſituation of old diſcoveries were determined, and a number of new ones made; ſo that, we flatter ourſelves, upon the whole, the intention of the voyage has, though not in every reſpect, yet upon the whole, been ſufficiently anſwered; and by having explored ſo minutely

the ſouthern hemiſphere, a final end may, perhaps, be put, to ſearching after a continent, in that part of the globe, which has, of late years, and, indeed, at times, for the two laſt centuries, engroſſed the attention of ſome of the maritime powers, and been a favourite theory among geographers of all ages. The probability of there being a continent, or large tract of land, near the Pole, has been already granted; and we may have ſeen part of it. The extreme cold, the numberleſs iſlands, and the vaſt floats of ice, give ſtrength to this conjecture, and all tend to prove, that there muſt be main land to the ſouth; but that this muſt extend fartheſt to the north, oppoſite to the ſouthern Atlantic and Indian oceans, we have already aſſigned ſeveral reaſons; of which one is, the greater degree of cold in theſe ſeas, than in the ſouthern Pacific Ocean, under the ſame parallels of latitude; for in this laſt ocean, the mercury in the thermometer ſeldom fell ſo low as the freezing point, till we were in latitude 60 deg. and upwards; whereas in the other oceans, it fell as low in the latitude of 45 deg. the cauſe whereof we attributed to a greater quantity of ice, which extended farther north in the Atlantic and Indian oceans, than in the ſouth Pacific ſea; and ſuppoſing the ice to be firſt formed, at, or near land, of which we are fully perſuaded, it will be an undeniable conſequence, that the land extends farther north. But what benefit can accrue from lands thus ſituated, ſhould they be diſcovered? lands doomed to everlaſting frigidneſs; and whoſe horrible and ſavage aſpect no language or words can deſcribe. Will any one venture farther in ſearch after ſuch a country, than our brave and ſkilful commander has done? Let him proceed, and may the God of univerſal nature be his guide. We heartily wiſh him ſucceſs, nor will we envy him the honour of his diſcovery. We will venture to ſay, that this narrative is not defective in point of intelligence, that the facts are true, and that the whole is expreſſed in an eaſy ſtile, which, we flatter ourſelves will not be diſpleaſing to our numerous friends, whoſe favours we here take the opportunity of gratefully

gratefully acknowledging. It has been obſerved, that the principal officers of the Reſolution delivered their journals into the cuſtody of Capt. Cook; and, on his arrival in England, Capt. Furneaux alſo put into his hands a narrative of what happened in the Adventure after her final ſeparation from the Reſolution. But it is here neceſſary to remark further, that ſome officers in both ſhips reſerved their private journals, and certain ingenious memorials, to gratify the curioſity of their friends. From ſuch materials theſe ſheets are compoſed; nor have we had recourſe to any printed authorities, but from the ſole view of correcting errors in ſome places, and rendering this undertaking a full, comprehenſive and perfect work. This premiſed, we ſhall now lay before our readers a complete narrative of Capt. Furneaux's proceeding in the Adventure.

A new, accurate, full, and complete account of Capt. Furneaux's proceedings in the Adventure, from the time he was ſeparated from the Reſolution, to his arrival in England; wherein is compriſed a faithful relation reſpecting the boat's crew, who were murdered, and eaten by the Cannibals of Queen Charlotte's Sound, in New Zealand.

IN October, 1773, we made the coaſt of New Zealand, after a paſſage of fourteen days from Amſterdam, and ſtood along ſhore till we reached Cape Turnagain, when a heavy ſtorm blew us off the coaſt for three days ſucceſſively, in which time we were ſeparated from our conſort, the Reſolution, and ſaw her not afterwards in the courſe of her voyage.

On Thurſday, the 4th of November, we regained the ſhore, near to Cape Palliſer. Some of the natives brought us in their canoes abundance of cray fiſh and fruit, which they exchanged for our Otaheite cloth, nails, &c. On the 5th the ſtorm again returned, and we were driven off the ſhore a ſecond time by a vio-

lent gale of wind, accompanied by heavy falls of ſleet, which laſted two days; ſo that by this time our decks began to leak, our beds or bedding were wet, which gave many of our people colds; and now we were moſt of us complaining, and all began to deſpair of ever getting into the Sound, or, which we had moſt at heart, of joining the Reſolution. We combated the ſtorm till Saturday the 6th, when being to the north of the cape, and having a hard gale from S. W. we bore away for ſome bay, in order to complete our wood and water, of both which articles we were at preſent in great want. For ſome days paſt we had been at the allowance of one quart of water, and it was thought ſix or ſeven days more would deprive us even of that ſcanty pittance.

On the 9th, in lat. 38 deg. 21 min. S. and in 178 deg. 37 min. E. long. we came abreaſt of Tolaga Bay, and in the forenoon anchored in eleven fathoms water, ſtiff muddy ground, which lay acroſs the bay for about two miles. This harbour is open from N. N. E to E. S. E. nevertheleſs, it affords good riding with a weſterly wind; and here are regular ſoundings from five to twelve fathoms. Wood and water are eaſily procured, except when the winds blow hard eaſterly, and then, at ſuch times, which are but ſeldom, they throw in a great ſea.

The natives about this bay are the ſame as thoſe at Queen Charlotte's Sound, but more numerous, and have regular plantations of ſweet potatoes, and other roots. They have plenty of fiſh of all ſorts, which we purchaſed with nails, beads, and other trifles. In one of their canoes, we ſaw the head of a woman lying in ſtate, adorned with feathers, and other ornaments. It had all the appearance of life, but upon a nearer view, we found it had been dried; yet, every feature was in due preſervation and perfect. We judged it to be the head of ſome deceaſed relative, kept as a relic.

On the 12th, having taken on board ten tons of water and ſome wood, we ſet ſail for the Sound; but we were

were ſcarcely out when the wind began to blow dead hard on the ſhore, ſo that, not being able to clear the land on either tack, we were obliged to return to the bay, where we arrived the next morning of the 13th; and having anchored, we rode out a heavy gale of wind at E. by S. attended with a very great ſea. We now began to fear the weather had put it out of our power to join our conſort, having reaſon to believe ſhe was in Charlotte Sound, the appointed place of rendezvous, and by this time ready for ſea. Part of the crew were now employed in ſtopping leaks, and repairing our rigging, which was in a moſt ſhattered condition.

On the 14th and 15th, we hoiſted out our boats, and ſent them to increaſe our ſtock of wood and water; but on the laſt day, the ſurf roſe ſo high, that they could not make the land. On the 16th, having made the ſhip as ſnug as poſſible, we unmoored at three o'clock A. M. and before ſix got under way. From this time to the 28th, we had nothing but tempeſtuous weather, in which our rigging was almoſt blown to pieces, and our men quite worn down with fatigue.

On the 29th, our water being nearly expended, we were again reduced to the ſcanty allowance of a quart a man per day. We continued beating backward and forward till the 30th, when the weather became more moderate; and having a favourable wind, we were ſo happy at laſt as to gain with ſafety our deſired port. After getting through Cook's Streights, we caſt anchor at three o'clock, P. M. in Queen Charlotte's Sound. We ſaw nothing of the Reſolution, and began to doubt her ſafety; but upon having landed, we diſcovered the place where ſhe had pitched her tents; and upon further examination, on an old ſtump of a tree, we read theſe words cut out "Look underneath." We complied inſtantly with theſe inſtructions, and digging, ſoon found a bottle corked and waxed down, wherein was a letter from Capt. Cook, informing us of their arrival at this place on the 3d inſtant, and their departure on the 24th, and that they intended ſpending a few days in the entrance of the ſtraits to look for us.

We

We immediately ſet about the neceſſary repairs of the ſhip, with an intention of getting her to ſea as ſoon as poſſible.

On the 1ſt of December, the tents were carried on ſhore, the armourer's forge put up, and every preparation made for the recovery of the ſick. The coopers were diſpatched on ſhore to mend the caſks, and we began to unſtow the hold to get at the bread; but upon opening the caſks, we found a great quantity of it entirely ſpoiled, and moſt part ſo damaged, that we were obliged to bake it over again, which unavoidably delayed us ſome time. At intervals, during our ſtay here, the natives came on board as uſual with great familiarity. They generaly brought fiſh, or whatever they had to barter with us, and ſeemed to behave with great civility; though twice in one night they came to the tents with an intention of ſtealing, but were diſcovered before they had accompliſhed their deſign. A party alſo came down in the night of the 13th, and robbed the aſtronomer's tent of every thing they could carry away. This they did ſo quietly, that they were not ſo much as heard, or ſuſpected, till the aſtronomer getting up to make an obſervation, miſſed his inſtruments, and charged the centinal with the robbery. This brought on a pretty ſevere altercation, during which they ſpied an Indian creeping from the tent, at whom Mr. Bailey fired and wounded him; nevertheleſs he made a ſhift to retreat into the woods. The report of the gun had alarmed his confederates, who, inſtead of putting off from the ſhore, fled into the woods, leaving their canoe, with moſt of the things that had been ſtolen a-ground on the beach. This petty larceny, it is probable, laid the foundation of that dreadful cataſtrophe which ſoon after happened.

On the 17th, at which time we were preparing for our departure, we ſent out our large cutter, manned with 7 ſeamen, under the command of Mr. John Rowe, the firſt mate, accompanied by Mr. Woodhouſe, midſhipman, and James Tobias Swilley, the carpenter's ſervant. They were to proceed up the Sound to Graſs Cove

Cove, to gather greens and celery for the ſhip's company, with orders to return that evening; for the tents had been ſtruck at two in the afternoon, and the ſhip made ready for ſailing the next day. Night coming on, and no cutter appearing, the captain and others began to expreſs great uneaſineſs. They ſat up all night, in expectation of their arrival, but to no purpoſe. At day-break, therefore, the captain ordered the launch to be hoiſted out. She was double manned, and under the command of our ſecond lieutenant, Mr. Burney, accompanied by Mr. Freeman, maſter, the corporal of marines, with five private men, all well armed, and having plenty of ammunition, two wall pieces, and three days proviſions. They were ordered firſt to look into Eaſt bay, then to proceed to Graſs Cove, and if nothing was to be ſeen or heard of the cutter there, they were to go farther up the cove, and return by the weſt ſhore.

Mr. Rowe having left the ſhip an hour before the time propoſed for his departure, we thought his curioſity might have carried him into Eaſt bay, none of our people having been there, or that ſome accident might have happened to the boat; for not the leaſt ſuſpicion was entertained of the natives, our boats having been higher up, and worſe provided. Mr. Burney returned about eleven o'clock the ſame night, and gave us a pointed deſcription of a moſt horrible ſcene indeed; the ſubſtance, and every material particular of whoſe reports, are contained in the following relation, which includes the remarks of thoſe who attended Mr. Burney.

On the 18th, purſuant to our orders, we left the ſhip, about nine o'clock in the morning. Having a light breeze in our favour, we ſoon got round Long Iſland, and Long Point. We continued ſailing and rowing for Eaſt Bay, keeping cloſe in ſhore, and examining with our glaſſes every cove on the larboard ſide, till near two o'clock in the afternoon, at which time we ſtopped at a beach on our left, going up Eaſt Bay, to dreſs our dinner. While we were cooking, we ſaw

an

an Indian on the oppoſite ſhore, running along a beach to the head of a bay; and when our meat was juſt done, we perceived a company of the natives ſeemingly very buſy; upon ſeeing which, we got immediately into the boat, put off, and rowed quickly to the place where the ſavages were aſſembled, which was at the head of the beach; and here, while approaching, we diſcerned one of their ſettlements. As we drew near ſome of the Indians came down upon the rocks, and waved for us to depart; but perceiving we diſregarded them, they altered their geſtures and wild notes. At this place we obſerved ſix large canoes hauled upon the beach, moſt of them, being double ones; but the number of people were in proportion neither to the ſize of theſe canoes, nor the number of houſes.

Our little company, conſiſting of the corporal and his five marines, headed by Mr. Burney, now landed, leaving the boat's crew to guard it. Upon our approach the natives fled with great precipitation. We followed them cloſely to a little town, which we found deſerted; but, while we were employed in ſearching their huts, the natives returned, making a ſhew of reſiſtence; but ſome trifling preſents being made to their chiefs, they were very ſoon appeaſed. However, on our return to the boat, the ſavages again followed us, and ſome of them threw ſtones. As we came down to the beach, one of the Indians had brought a bundle of hepatoos, or long ſpears, but ſeeing Mr. Burney looked very earneſtly at him, he walked about with ſeeming unconcern. Some of his companions appeared to be terrified, a few trifles were given to each of them.

From the place where we now landed, the bay ſeemed to run a full mile N. N. W. where it ended in a long ſandy beach. After dinner we took a view of the country near the coaſt with our glaſſes, but ſaw not a canoe, or ſigns of inhabitants, after which we fired the wall pieces, as ſignals to the cutter, if any of the people ſhould be within hearing. We now renewed our ſearch along the eaſt ſhore; and came to another ſettlement where the Indians invited us aſhore. We inquired

quired of them about the cutter, but they pretended ignorance. They ſeemed very friendly, and ſold us ſome fiſh.

About five o'clock in the afternoon, and within an hour after he had left this place, we opened a ſmall bay adjoining to Graſs Cove, and here we ſaw a large double canoe, juſt hauled upon the beach, with two men and a dog. The two ſavages, on ſeeing us approach, inſtantly fled, which made us ſuſpect, it was here we ſhould have ſome tidings of the cutter. On landing, and examining the canoe, the firſt thing we ſaw therein, were one of cutter's rullock ports, and ſome ſhoes, one of which among the latter, was known to belong to Mr. Woodhouſe.

A piece of fleſh was found by one of our people, which at firſt was thought to be ſome of the ſalt meat belonging to the cutter's men, but upon examination, we ſuppoſed it to be dog's fleſh; a moſt horrid and undeniable proof ſoon cleared up our doubts, and convinced us we were among no other than cannibals; for, advancing farther on the beach, we ſaw about twenty baſkets tied up, and a dog eating a piece of broiled fleſh, which, upon examining, we ſuſpected to be human. We cut open the baſkets, ſome of which were full of roaſted fleſh, and others of fern root, which ſerves them for bread. Searching others we found more ſhoes, and a hand, which was immediately known to have belonged to Thomas Hill, one of our fore caſtle men, it having been tatowed with the initials of his name.

We now proceeded a little way in the woods, but ſaw nothing elſe. Our next deſign was to launch the canoe, intending to deſtroy her; but ſeeing a great ſmoke aſcending over the neareſt hill, we made all poſſible haſte to be with them before ſun-ſet.

At half paſt ſix we opened Graſs Cove, where we ſaw one ſingle, and three double canoes, and a great many natives aſſembled on the beach, who retreated to a ſmall hill, within a ſhip's length of the water-ſide, where they ſtood talking to us. On the top of the

high land, beyond the woods, was a large fire, from whence all the way down the hill, the place was thronged like a fair. When we entered the cove, a muſquetoon was fired at one of the canoes, as we imagined they might be full of men lying down; for they were all afloat, but no one was ſeen in them. Being doubtful whether their retreat proceeded from fear, or a deſire to decoy us into an ambuſcade, we were determined not to be ſurprized, and therefore running cloſe in ſhore, we dropped the grappling near enough to reach them with our guns; but at too great a diſtance to be under any apprehenſions from their treachery. The ſavages on the little hill kept their ground, hallooing, and making ſigns for us to land. At theſe we now took aim, reſolving to kill as many of them as our bullets would reach; yet it was ſome time before we could diſlodge them. The firſt volley did not ſeem to affect them much; but on the ſecond, they began to ſcramble away as faſt as they could, ſome howling and others limping. We continued to fire as long as we could ſee the leaſt glimpſe of any of them through the buſhes. Among theſe were two very robuſt men, who maintained their ground, without moving an inch, till they found themſelves forſaken by their companions, and then, diſdaining to run, they marched off with great compoſure and deliberation. One of them, however, got a fall, and lay there, or crawled away on his hands and feet; but the other eſcaped without any apparent hurt. Mr. Burney now improved their panic, and ſupported by the marines, leapt on ſhore, and purſued the fugitives.

We had not advanced far from the water-ſide, on the beach, before we met with two bundles of celery, which had been gathered by the cutter's crew. A broken oar was ſtuck upright in the ground, to which the natives had tied their canoes; whereby we were convinced this was the ſpot where the attack had been made. We now ſearched all along at the back of the beach, to ſee if the cutter was there, but inſtead of her, the moſt horrible ſcene was preſented to our view that was ever beheld by

by any European; for here lay the hearts, heads, and lungs of ſeveral of our people, with hands and limbs, in a mangled condition, ſome broiled and ſome raw; but no other parts of their bodies, which made us ſuſpect, that the cannibals had feaſted upon, and devoured the reſt.

To complete this ſhocking view of carnage and barbarity, at a little diſtance, we ſaw the dogs gnawing their entrails. We obſerved a large body of the natives collected together on a hill about two miles off; but as night drew on a-pace, we could not advance to ſuch a diſtance; neither did we think it ſafe to attack them, or even to quit the ſhore, to take an account of the number killed, our troop being a very ſmall one, and the ſavages were both numerous and much irritated. While we remained almoſt ſtupified on the ſpot, Mr. Fannen ſaid, that he heard the cannibals aſſembling in the woods; on which we returned to the boat, and having hauled alongſide the canoes, we demoliſhed three of them. During this tranſaction, the fire on the top of the hill diſappeared, and we could hear the ſavages in the woods at high words; quarreling perhaps, on account of their different opinions, whether they ſhould attack us, and try to ſave their canoes.

They were armed with long lances, and weapons not unlike a ſerjeant's halbert in ſhape, made of hard wood, and mounted with bone inſtead of iron. We ſuſpected that the dead bodies of our people had been divided among thoſe different parties of cannibals, who had been concerned in the maſſacre; and it was not improbable, that the group we ſaw at a diſtance by the fire, were feaſting upon ſome of them, as thoſe on ſhore had been, where the remains were found, before they had been diſturbed by our unexpected viſit: be that as it may, we could diſcover no traces of more than four of our friends bodies, nor could we find the place where the cutter was concealed. It now grew dark, on which account, we collected carefully the remains of our mangled friends, and putting off, made the beſt of our

way from this polluted place, not without a few execrations beſtowed on the blood-thirſty inhabitants. When we opened the upper part of the Sound, we ſaw a very large fire about three or four miles higher up, which formed a complete oval, reaching from the top of a hill down almoſt to the water-ſide; the middle ſpace being incloſed all round by the fire, like a hedge. Mr. Burney and Mr. Fannen having conſulted together, they were both of opinion, that we could, by an attempt, reap no advantage than the poor ſatisfaction of killing more of the ſavages.

Upon leaving Graſs Cove, we had fired a volley towards where we had heard the Indians talking; but by going in and out of the boat, our pieces had got wet, and four of them miſſed fire. What rendered our ſituation more critical was, it began to rain, and our ammunition was more than half expended. We, for theſe reaſons, without ſpending time were nothing could be hoped for but revenge, proceeded for the ſhip, and arrived ſafe aboard about midnight. Such is the account of this tragical event; the poor victims were far enough out of hearing, and in all probability every man of them muſt have been butchered on the ſpot.

It may be proper here to mention, that the whole number of men in the cutter were ten, namely, Mr. Rowe, our firſt mate, Mr. Woodhouſe, a midſhipman, Francis Murphy, quarter-maſter, James Sevilley, the captain's ſervant, John Lavenaugh, and Thomas Milton, belonging to the after-guard; William Facey, Thomas Hill, Michael Bell, and Edward Jones, forecaſtle men. Moſt of theſe were the ſtouteſt and moſt healthy people in the ſhip, having been ſelected from our beſt ſeamen. Mr. Burney's party brought on board the head of the captain's ſervant, with two hands, one belonging to Mr. Rowe, known by a hurt it had received; and the other to Thomas Hill, being marked with T. H. as before mentioned. Theſe with other mangled remains, were incloſed in a hammock, and with the uſual ceremony obſerved on board ſhips, where committed

committed to the ſea. Not any of their arms were found; nor any of their clothes, except ſix ſhoes, no two of which were fellows, a frock, and a pair of trowſers. We do not think this melancholy cataſtrophe was the effect of a premeditated plan, formed by the ſavages; for two canoes came down, and continued all the forenoon in Ship Cove, and theſe Mr. Rowe met, and bartered with the natives for ſome fiſh. We are rather inclined to believe, that the bloody tranſaction originated in a quarrel with ſome of the Indians, which was decided on the ſpot; or, our people rambling about too ſecure, and incautious, the fairneſs of the opportunity might tempt them to commit the bloody deed; and what might encourage them was, they had found out, that our guns were not infallible; they had ſeen them miſs fire, and they knew, that when diſcharged, they muſt be loaded before they could again do any execution, which interval of time they could take proper advantage of it. From thoſe circumſtances we concluded, that after their ſucceſs, there was a general meeting on the eaſt ſide of the Sound. We know the Indians of Shag Cove were there, by a long ſingle canoe, which ſome of our people with Mr. Rowe had ſeen before in Shag Cove.

After this ſhocking affair, we were detained four days in the Sound by contrary winds, in which time we ſaw none of the inhabitants. It is a little remarkable, that Capt. Furneaux had been ſeveral times up Graſs Cove with Capt. Cook, where they ſaw no inhabitants, and no other ſigns of any, but a few deſerted villages which appeared as if they had not been occupied for many years; and yet, in Mr. Burney's opinion, when he entered the ſame cove, there could not be leſs than fifteen hundred or two thouſand people. Had they been appriſed of his coming, we doubt not, they would have attacked him; and ſeeing not a probability remained of any of our people being alive, from theſe conſiderations, we thought it would be imprudent to renew the ſearch, and ſend a boat up again.

On

On Thurſday the 23d of December, we departed from, and made ſail out of the Sound, heartily vexed at the unavoidable delays we had experienced, ſo contrary to our ſanguine wiſhes. We ſtood to the eaſtward to clear the Straits, which we happily effected the ſame evening, but we were baffled for two or three days with light winds before we could clear the coaſt. In this interval of time, the cheſts and effects of the ten men who had been murdered, were ſold before the maſt, according to an old ſea cuſtom. We now ſteered S. S. E. till we got into the latitude of 56 deg. S. At this time we had a great ſwell from the ſouthward, the winds blew ſtrong from S. W. the weather began to be very cold; the ſea made a continual breach over the ſhip, which was low and deep laden, and by her continual ſtraining, very few of our ſeamen were dry either on deck or in bed. In the latitude of 58 deg. S. and in 213 deg. E. long. we fell in with ſome ice, and ſtanding to the eaſt, ſaw every day more or leſs. We ſaw alſo the birds common in this vaſt ocean, our only companions, and at times we met with a whale or porpoiſe, a ſeal or two, and a few penguins.

On the 10th of January, 1774, we arrived a-breaſt of Cape Horn, in the lat. of 61 deg. S. and in the run from Cape Palliſer in New Zealand to this cape, we were little more than a month, which 121 deg. of long. in that ſhort time. The winds were continually weſterly, with a great ſea. Having opened ſome caſks of peas and flour, we found them very much damaged; for which reaſon we thought it moſt prudent to make for the Cape of Good Hope, intending firſt to get into the lat. and long. of Cape Circumciſion. When to the eaſtward of Cape Horn, we found the winds came more from the north, and not ſo ſtrong and frequent for the weſtward, as uſual, which brought on thick foggy weather; ſo that for ſeveral days together, we were not able to make an obſervation, the ſun all the time not being viſible. This weather laſted above a month, in which time we were among a great many iſlands of ice, which keptus conſtantly on the look out, for fear of running

ning foul of them. Our people now began to complain of colds, and pains in their limbs, on accout of which we hauled to the norward, making the latitude of 54 deg. S. We then ſteered to the eaſt, with an intention of finding the land laid down by M. Bouvet. As we advanced to the eaſt, the nights began to be dark, and the iſlands of ice became more numerous and dangerous.

On the 3d of March, we were in the lat. of Bouvet's diſcovery, and half a league to eaſtward of it; but not perceiving the leaſt ſign of land, either now, or ſince we attained this parallel, we gave over a further ſearch after it, and hauled away to the northward.

In our laſt tract to the ſouthward, we were within a few degrees of the longitude aſſigned for Bouvet's diſcovery, and about three degrees to the ſouthward; if therefore they ſhould be any land thereabouts, it muſt be a very conſiderable iſland; or rather, we are inclined to think, a mere deception from the ice; for, in our firſt ſetting out, we concluded we had made diſcoveries of land ſeveral times, which proved to be only high iſlands of ice, at the back of large fields, which M. Bouvet might eaſily miſtake for land, eſpecially as it was thick foggy weather.

On the 17th, in the latitude 48 deg. 30. min. S. and in 14 deg. 26. min. E. longitude, we ſaw two large iſlands of ice. On the 18th, we made the land of the Cape of Good Hope, and on the 19th, anchored in Table Bay. Here we found Commodore Sir Edward Hughes, with his majeſty's ſhips Saliſbury, and Sea-Horſe. We ſaluted the garriſon with thirteen guns, and the Commodore with an equal number; the latter returned the full compliment, and the former as uſual, ſaluted us with two guns leſs. At this place Capt. Furneaux left a letter for Capt. Cook; and here we remained to refit the ſhip, refreſh the people, &c. &c. till the 16th of April, when we hoiſted ſail for England; and on the 14th of July, to the great joy of all our ſailors, anchored at Spithead.

From

From a review of the whole, our readers muſt ſee, how much this nation is indebted to that able circumnavigator Capt. Cook. If they only compare the courſe the Reſolution ſteered, and the valuable diſcoveries ſhe made, with that purſued by the Adventure, after ſhe parted company, the contraſt will be ſufficiently ſtriking. How meretorious muſt alſo that perſon appear in our judgment, who hath not only diſcovered, but ſurveyed vaſt tracts of new coaſts; who has diſpelled the illuſion of a terra auſtralis incognita, and fixed the bounds of the habitable earth, as well as thoſe of the navigable ocean, in the ſouthern hemiſphere. No propoſition was ever more clearly demonſtrated, that there is no continent undiſcovered in the ſouthern hemiſphere, between the equator and the 50th deg. of ſouthern lat. in which ſpace all who have contended for its exiſtence have included, if not the whole, at leaſt the moſt conſiderable part, but at the ſame time that we declare ourſelves thus clearly convinced of the non exiſtence of a continent within the limits juſt mentioned, we cannot help acknowledging our ready belief, that the land our navigators have diſcovered to the S. E. of Staten-Land, is part of a continent, projecting from the north in a narrow neck, and expanding to the ſouthward and weſtward, more particularly towards the eaſt. In this belief we are ſtrengthened by the ſtrong repreſentation of land ſeen at a diſtance by our navigators, in lat. 72 deg. and 252 deg. long. and by the report of Theodore Gerrards, who, after paſſing the ſtraits of Magellan, being driven by tempeſts into the lat. of 64 deg. S. in that height came in ſight of a mountainous country, covered with ſnow, looking like Norway, and ſeemingly extending from E. to W.

The facts and the obſervations made by Capt. Cook, corroborates each other; and though they do not reduce the queſtion to an abſolute certainty, yet the probability is greatly in favour of the ſuppoſed diſcovery. To conclude theſe reflections, and to place the character of our judicious navigator in the moſt ſtriking point of view, he performed a voyage of three years and eighteen

teen days, with 118 men, throughout all the climates, from 52 deg. N. to 71 deg. S. with the loſs only of one man by ſickneſs; and even this one began ſo early to complain of a cough, and other conſumptive ſymptoms, which had never left him, that his lungs muſt have been affected before he came on board to go the voyage.

Did any, moſt converſant in the bills of mortality, whether in the moſt healthful climate, and in the beſt condition of life, ever find ſo ſmall a liſt of deaths, among ſuch a number of men within that ſpace? How agreeable then muſt our ſurprize be, to find, by the aſſiduity and unremitted exertions of a ſingle ſkilful navigator, the air of the ſea acquitted of all malignity, and that a voyage round the world has been undertaken with leſs danger perhaps to health, than a common tour in Europe. Surely diſtinguiſhed merit is here conſpicuous, though praiſe and glory belongs to God only.

May future navigators ſpring out of this bright example, not only to perpetuate his juſtly acquired fame, but to imitate his labours for the advancement of natural knowledge, the good of ſociety, and the true glory of Great-Britain.

END OF THE SECOND VOYAGE.

CAPTAIN COOK's

Third and last Voyage,

to the

PACIFIC OCEAN AND NORTHERN HEMISPHERE,

And performed under the direction of Captains Cook, Clerke, and Gore, in his Majeſty's ſhips the Reſolution and Diſcovery, in the years 1776, 1777, 1778, 1779, and 1780.

CHAP. I.

Captain Cook's departure from England—Junction with the Diſcovery at the Cape of Good Hope—Paſſage to Prince Edward's Iſland——Arrival at Van Diemen's Land--Interview with the natives—Arrival at Queen Charlotte's Sound—Particulars of the horrid maſſacre of the Adventure's boat's crew—Departure from Queen Charlotte's Sound.

CAPTAIN James Cook ſailed from Plymouth Sound, on the 19th of July, 1776, in the Reſolution ſloop of war: he was accompanied by Omai, whoſe behaviour, on his departure, was a mixture of regret and ſatisfaction. When the converſation turned on thoſe who had honoured him with their protection and friendſhip, during his ſtay in England, he could hardly refrain from tears. But the inſtant his own iſlands were mentioned, his eyes ſparkled with joy. He was deeply ſenſible of the good treatment he had met with here, and had the higheſt ideas of the country and people. But the pleaſing proſpect he now had of returning home, loaded with what, he well knew, would be eſteemed invaluable treaſures there, and the flattering hope which the

the poſſeſſion of theſe gave him, of attaining to a diſtinguiſhed ſuperiority among his countrymen, were conſiderations which operated, by degrees, to ſuppreſs every uneaſy ſenſation. On the 10th of October, arrived at the Cape of Good Hope. Here he was joined, on the 10th of November, by Capt. Clerke, in the Diſcovery, who had not been permitted to ſail after him till the 1ſt of Auguſt. In his paſſage to the Cape, Captain Cook took care to guard againſt the ill conſequences ariſing from the rains, and the cloſe ſultry weather accompanying them, by frequently purifying the air between decks by fire and ſmoke, and obliging the people to dry their clothes at every opportunity. By conſtantly continuing to obſerve theſe precautions, there were fewer ſick on board the Reſolution and Diſcovery, than in either of his former voyages.

On the 1ſt of December both ſhips left the Cape. On the 12th, they paſſed through two iſlands, the largeſt about 15 leagues in circuit, in the lat. of 46 deg. 53 min. S. and in the lon. of 37 deg. 46 min. E. The longitude is reckoned from the meridian of Greenwich, and after paſſing to the Eaſt, in the South Atlantic, is carried on eaſterly beyond the 180th degree, to the utmoſt extent of the voyage; and back to the ſame meridian. Theſe two iſlands, as well as four others, which lie from 9 to 12 degrees of longitude more to the E. and nearly in the ſame latitude, were diſcovered in 1772, by Captains Marion and Crozet, two French navigators. To the two firſt Capt. Cook gave the name of Prince Edward's Iſlands, and the latter he called Marion and Crozet's Iſlands. On the 24th he came in ſight of ſome high iſlands, which had been diſcovered in 1773, by Kerguelen, a French captain, who named them all. The northermoſt of theſe, called Bligh's Cap, is in lat. 48 deg. 29 min. S. and long. 68 deg. 40 min. E. They next approached a deſolate coaſt called Kerguelen's Land, which that navigator thought to be a continent, but which Capt. Cook found to an iſland. On the 25th, he entered a ſafe harbour, which he called Chriſtmas Harbour. Here they found plenty of water, but not a

bit of wood. The ſhore was covered with penguins and other birds, and ſeals. The latter were not numerous, but ſo inſenſible to fear, that they killed as many of them as they pleaſed, for the ſake of their fat or blubber, to make oil for their lamps and other uſes. On the 29th, they left this harbour, and ranging along the coaſt, to aſcertain its poſition and extent, they diſcovered ſeveral promontories and bays, with a peninſula, and a new harbour, to all which Capt. Cook gave names.

On the 31ſt, Capt. Cook left this coaſt, ſteering E. by N. and on the 24th of January 1777, ſaw Van Diemen's Land, which is the ſouthern point of new Holland. On the 26th they anchored in Adventure Bay, where they were employed in procuring wood and water. On the 28th, they were agreeably ſurprized with a viſit from ſome of the natives, eight men and a boy. They approached from the woods with the greateſt confidence imaginable. One of them had a ſtick in his hand about two feet long, pointed at one end. They were quite naked, and wore no ornaments, unleſs we conſider as ſuch, ſome large punctures or ridges on different parts of their bodies, ſome in ſtraight, and ſome in curved lines. They were of the common ſtature, but ſlender. Their ſkin was black, and alſo their hair, which was as woolly as that of any native of Guinea; but they had not remarkable thick lips nor flat noſes. On the contrary, their features were far from being diſagreeable. They had pretty good eyes, and their teeth were tolerably even, but very dirty. Moſt of them had their hair and beards ſmeared with a red ointment; with which ſome alſo had their faces painted.

Every preſent made to them they received without the leaſt appearance of ſatisfaction. When ſome bread was given, as ſoon as they underſtood it was to be eaten, they either returned it or threw it away, without even taſting it. They alſo refuſed ſome fiſh, both raw and dreſſed; but on giving ſome birds to them, their behaviour indicated a fondneſs for ſuch food. Capt. Cook had brought two pigs aſhore, with a view of leaving them in the woods; but the inſtant theſe came within reach

reach of the ſavages, they ſeized them, as a dog would have done, by the ears, and were for carrying them off immediately; with no other intention, as could be perceived, but to kill them.—Being deſirous of knowing the uſe of the ſtick before mentioned, Capt. Cook, by ſigns, prevailed upon one of them to ſhew him. This ſavage ſet up a piece of wood as a mark, and threw at it, at the diſtance of about 20 yards. On repeated trials, however, he was always wide from his object. Omai, to ſhew them the ſuperiority of our weapons, then fired his muſquet at it; which alarmed them ſo much, that they ran inſtantly into the woods.

Notwithſtanding their conſternation on this occaſion, on the 29th, about twenty of them, men and boys, viſited the crew again. One of this party was conſpicuouſly deformed; and not more diſtinguiſhable by the hump on his back, than by the drollery of his geſtures, and ſeeming humour of his ſpeeches; which were evidently exhibited for the entertainment of his ſtrange viſitors. His language, however, was wholly unintelligible.

Some of this group wore looſe round their necks, three or four folds of ſmall cords, made of the fur of ſome animal; and others had a ſlip of the kangooroo ſkin tied round their ancles. Capt. Cook gave to each of them a ſtring of beads and a medal, which they ſeemed to receive with ſatisfaction; but they ſet no value on iron or iron tools. They appeared not to know the uſe of fiſh-hooks, nor was any canoe or veſſel ſeen, in which they could go upon the water. Yet ſhell-fiſh made a part of their food, as was evident from heaps of muſcle-ſhells, that were ſeen in different parts near the ſhore. Their habitations were little ſheds or hovels built of ſticks, and covered with bark. Evident ſigns appeared of their ſometimes taking up their abode in the trunks of trees, which had been hollowed out by fire; and the marks of fire near theſe habitations, and near every heap of ſhells, were indubitable proofs that they did not eat of their fleſh raw.

Some

Some time after ſeveral women and children made their appearance, and (Capt. Cook having left his party of wood cutters) were introduced by the men who attended them to Lieutenant King, who preſented them all with ſuch trifles as he had about him. Theſe females wore a kangooroo ſkin (in the ſhape as it came from the animal) tied over their ſhoulders, and round their waſte. Its only uſe ſeemed to be, to ſupport their children when carried on their backs; for it did not cover thoſe parts which moſt nations conceal; being, in all other reſpects, as naked as the men, and as black, and their bodies marked with ſcars in the ſame manner. Some of them had their hair completely ſhorn or ſhaved, in others this operation had been performed only on one ſide; whilſt the reſt of them had all the upper part of the head ſhorn cloſe, having a circle of hair all round, ſomewhat like the tonſure of the Roman Eccleſiaſtics. Many of the children had fine features, and were thought pretty; but of the perſons of the women, eſpecially of thoſe advanced in years, a leſs favourable opinion was formed. However the gentlemen of the Diſcovery, Capt. Cook was told, paid their addreſſes, and made liberal offers of preſents, which were rejected with great diſdain; whether from a ſenſe of virtue, or a fear of diſpleaſing their men, he could not determine. That this gallantry was not agreeable to the latter, is certain; for an elderly man, as ſoon as he obſerved it, ordered all the women and children to retire, which they obeyed, though ſome of them ſhewed a little reluctance. —Capt. Cook's reflection on this circumſtance muſt not be omitted: "This conduct of Europeans amongſt Savages, to their women, is highly blameable; as it creates a jealouſy in their men, that may be attended with conſequences fatal to the ſucceſs of common enterprize, and to the whole body of the adventurers, without advancing the private purpoſe of the individual, or enabling him to gain the object of his wiſhes. I believe it has been generally found amongſt uncivilized people, that where the women are eaſy of acceſs, the men are the firſt to offer them to ſtrangers; and that where this

is



A Man and Woman of Van Diemans Land

Pyo fc

is not the caſe, neither the allurements of preſents, nor the opportunity of privacy, will be likely to have the deſired effect. This obſervation, I am ſure, will hold good, through all the parts of the South-Sea where I have been."

To Capt. Cook's account of Van Diemen's Land, Mr. Anderſon, his ſurgeon, has added many particulars reſpecting its natural hiſtory. Among its vegetable productions, he could not find one that afforded the ſmalleſt ſubſiſtence for man. There are two kinds of foreſt trees that are quite unknown to Europe. The only animal of the quadruped kind, which he could get, was a ſort of opoſſum, about twice the ſize of a large rat; and which is, moſt probably, the male of that ſpecies. It is of a duſky colour above, tinged with a brown or ruſty caſt, and whitiſh below. About a third of its tail, towards its top, is white, and bare underneath; by which it probably hangs on the branches of the trees, as it climbs theſe and lives on berries. Of the feathered race, the moſt ſingular was a ſmall bird, with a pretty long tail, and part of the head and neck of a beautiful azure colour, whence they named it Motacilla Cyanea.

With reſpect to the inhabitants, Mr. Anderſon (beſides what Capt. Cook has already obſerved) ſays, that they poſſeſs little activity; and that, as for genius, they ſeem to have leſs than even the half-animated natives of Tierra del Fuego, who have not invention ſufficient to make clothing to defend themſelves from the rigour of their climate, though furniſhed with the materials. The only thing in which they ſeemed to diſplay contrivance, was the manner of cutting their arms and bodies, in lines of different lengths and directions, raiſed conſiderably above the ſurface of the ſkin; for it is dificult to gueſs the method they uſe in this embroidery of their perſons. Their not expreſſing that ſurprize, which one might have expected, at ſeeing men ſo unlike themſelves, and things to which they had been hereunto utter ſtrangers, the indifference to the preſents made to them, and general inattention, were ſufficient proofs

proofs of their not poſſeſſing any acuteneſs of underſtanding.—What the ancient poets feigned of fawns ſatyrs, living in hollow trees is here realized. Many of their largeſt trees were converted into more comfortable habitations than the wretched conſtruction of ſticks mentioned before. Theſe had their trunks hollowed out by fire, to the height of ſix or ſeven feet; and that they take up their abode in them ſome times was evident from the hearths, made of clay, to confine the fire in the middle, leaving room for four or five perſons to ſit round it. At the ſame time, theſe places of ſhelter are durable; for they take care to leave one ſide of the tree ſound, which is ſufficient to keep it growing as luxuriantly as thoſe which remain untouched.

In the morning of the 30th of January, a light breeze ſpringing up at W. both ſhips put to ſea. Soon after the wind veered to the ſouthward, and increaſed to a perfect ſtorm. Its fury abated in the evening, when it veered to E. and N. E.

This gale was indicated by the barometer: for the wind no ſooner began to blow, than the mercury in the tube began to fall. Another remarkable thing attended the coming on of this wind, which was very faint at firſt. It brought with it a degree of heat that was almoſt intolerable. The mercury in the thermometer roſe as it were inſtantaneouſly, from about 70 to 90 deg. This heat was of ſo ſhort a continuance, that it ſeemed to be wafted away before the breeze that brought it; ſo that ſome on board did not perceive it.

On the 10th of February, they diſcovered the land of New Zealand; and, on the 12th, anchored at their old ſtation in Queen Charlotte's Sound. Here they were fully employed till the 25th, in procuring wood, water, and graſs for their cattle; in brewing ſpruce beer, as a preſervative from the ſcurvy; and in making the neceſſary obſervations to find the rate of the time-keeper, &c. &c.

The natives came along-ſide the ſhip in canoes, but ſhewed great reluctance when requeſted to come on board.

board. Captain Cook imputed this behaviour to their being apprehenſive, that he had reviſited their country, in order to revenge the death of Captain Furneaux's people, about ten of whom having landed from the boat, in a part of the Sound, were maſſacreed by the ſavages. In this idea, Captain Cook endeavoured to convince them of the continuance of his frendſhip, and that he ſhould not moleſt them on account of this melancholy tranſaction; and the natives ſoon returned to their former confidence and freedom of intercourſe.

Captain Cook, however, was ſo much on his guard, and all his workmen were under the protection of the marines, and no boat was ſent to any diſtance from the ſhips, without being well officered and armed; for he had not only the tragical fate of the Adventure's boat's crew in his mind, but that of Capt. Marion, and ſome of his people, in the Bay of Iſlands, in 1772.

Several of the natives erected a kind of temporary village of huts, cloſe to Captain Cook's encampment. Beſides theſe, he was occaſionally viſited by others, from different quarters. The articles of commerce produced by the natives, were curioſities, fiſh, and women. The two firſt always came to a good market; which the latter did not. The ſeamen had taken a kind of diſlike to theſe people; and were either unwilling, or afraid, to aſſociate with them; "which produced this good effect," ſays Captain Cook, "that I knew no inſtance of man's quitting his ſtation, to go to their habitations."

Among their occaſional viſitors was a chief, named Kahoora, who headed the party that cut off Captain Furneaux's people and had himſelf killed Mr. Rowe, the officer who commanded. Some of the natives, ſtrongly importuned the Captain to ſacrifice him to his vengeance; "Had I followed the advice of all our pretended friends," ſays Capt. Cook, "I might have extirpated the whole race; for the people of each hamlet or village, by turns, applied to me to deſtroy the other." and Omai joined in theſe ſolicitations. But Kahoora re-

poſed a perfect confidence in the good faith of Captain Cook, and had no reaſon to repent it.

Captain Cook, one day, made an excurſion to Graſs Cove, the memorable ſcene of the maſſacre. Here he met with his old friend Pedro; and from him, and ſome of the natives, who were entirely guiltleſs of the deed, they received the ſhocking particulars; which were as follows: "That while our people were ſitting at dinner, ſurrounded by ſeveral of the natives, ſome of the latter ſtole, or ſnatched from them, ſome bread and fiſh, for which they were beat. This being reſented, a quarrel enſued, and two New Zealanders were ſhot dead, by the only two muſquets that were fired: for before our people had time to diſcharge a third, or to load again thoſe that had been fired, the natives ruſhed in upon them, overpowered them with numbers, and put them all to death."

Capt. Cook was told, "that a black ſervant of Capt. Furneaux, who had been left in the boat to take care of her, was the cauſe of the quarrel: that one of the natives ſtealing ſomething out of the boat, the Negro gave him a ſevere blow with a ſtick: that the cries of the fellow being heard at a diſtance, they imagined he was killed, and immediately began the attack on our people; who before they had time to reach the boat, or to arm themſelves againſt the impending danger, fell a facrifice to the fury of the ſavages."

Capt. Cook thought it very probable that both theſe accounts were true; it being natural to ſuppoſe, that while ſome of the natives were ſtealing from the man left in the boat, others of them might be taking the ſame liberties with the property of our people, who were on ſhore. But all agreed, that there was no premeditated plan of bloodſhed; and that if the thefts had not been too haſtily reſented, no miſchief would have happened. Kahoora being queſtioned by Capt. Cook, ſaid, That one of his countrymen having brought a ſtone hatchet to barter, the man, to whom it was offered, took it, and would neither return it, nor give any thing for it;

it; on which the owner of it ſnatched up the bread as an equivalent, and thus the quarrel began.

On the 20th, there was a violent ſtorm from the N. W. The guſh of winds from the hills were very violent, inſomuch that they were obliged to ſtrike the yards and top-maſts to the utmoſt, and yet with difficulty rode it out. Theſe ſtorms are very frequent here. The neighbouring mountains, which at theſe times are always loaded with vapours, not only increaſe the force of the wind, but alter its direction in ſuch a manner, that no two blaſts follow each other from the ſame quarter; and the nearer the ſhore, the more their effects are felt. Great numbers of the natives continued to viſit the encampment, particularly while the crew were melting ſome blubber. No Greenlander ever ſeemed to be more fond of train oil. They reliſhed the very ſkimmings of the kettle, and dregs of the caſks; but a little of the pure ſtinking oil ſeemed to be a moſt delicious feaſt.

Among the moſt remarkable particulars in the natural hiſtory of this place, which are copiouſly deſcribed by Mr. Anderſon, we muſt not omit to take notice of the ſtriking contraſt, which the face of the country affords to that of Van Diemen's Land—It is uncommonly mountainous, riſing immediately from the ſea into large hills with blunted tops. At conſiderable diſtances are vallies, or rather impreſſions on the ſides of the hills, which are not deep, each terminating towards the ſea in a ſmall cove, with a pebbly or ſandy beach; behind which are ſmall flats, where the natives generally build their huts, at the ſame time hauling their canoes upon the beaches. This ſituation is the more convenient, as in every cove a brook of fine water empties itſelf into the ſea. The hills are one continued foreſt of lofty trees, flouriſhing with a vigour almoſt ſuperior to any thing that imagination can conceive, and affording an auguſt proſpect to thoſe who are delighted with the grand and beautiful works of nature.

The agreeable temperature of the climate, no doubt, contributes much to this uncommon ſtrength in vege-

tation: for, at this time, though anſwering to our month of Auguſt, the weather was never diſagreeably warm; nor did it raiſe the thermometer higher that 66 deg. The winter, alſo, ſeems equally mild with reſpect to cold: for in June 1773, which correſponds to our December, the mercury never fell lower than 48 degrees; and the trees, at that time, retained their verdure, as if in the ſummer ſeaſon; ſo that, in Mr. Anderſon's opinion, their foilage is never ſhed, till puſhed off with the ſucceeding leaves in ſpring. In ſhort, the only obſtacle to this being one of the fineſt countries upon earth, is its hilline ſs; which allowing its woods to be cleared away, would leave it leſs proper for paſturage than flat land; and ſtill more improper for cultivation, which could never be effected by the plough.

Among the plants one deſerves particular notice, as the natives make their garments of it, and it produces a fine ſilky flax, ſuperior in appearance to any thing we have, and probably as ſtrong. It grows in bunches of tufts, with ſedge-like leaves, bearing, on a long ſtalk, yelloviſh flowers, which are ſucceeded by a long roundiſh pod, filled with very thin ſhining black ſeeds.—Another plant, which bears a red berry, and which is much like the ſupple jack, growing about the trees, ſtretching from one to another, in ſuch a manner, as to render the woods almoſt wholly impaſſible.

Among the birds are ſeveral ſorts of cuckoos, one of which is not larger than a ſparrow, of a ſplendid green caſt above, and elegantly varied with waves of golden, green, brown, and white colours below. Another kind is of a black colour, with a greeniſh caſt, which is remarkable for having a tuft of white curled feathers hanging under the throat. This tuft of feathers reſembled the white flowers uſed as ornaments in the ears at Otaheite, and called Poowa, whence our ſailors called this the Poy Bird. There is alſo a ſmall greeniſh bird, which is almoſt the only muſical one here, but is ſufficient to fill the woods with a melody, that is not only ſweet, but ſo varied, that one would imagine he was ſurrounded by a hundred different ſorts of birds, when

the

the little warbler is near. Hence it was named the mocking bird.

With reſpect to quadrupeds, it is remarkable, that in this extenſive land, there is not even the trace of one, except only a few rats, and a ſort of fox-dog, which is a domeſtic animal with the natives. Neither is there any mineral worth notice but a green jaſper, or ſerpent-ſtone, of which the natives make their tools and ornaments.

Of the natives we can here only obſerve, that, contrary to the ſavages of Van Diemen's Land, they ſhew as much ingenuity, both in invention and execution, as any uncivilized nations under ſimilar circumſtances: for, without the uſe of any metal tools, they make every thing by which they procure their ſubſiſtence, clothing, and warlike-weapons, with a degree of neatneſs, ſtrength and convenience for accompliſhing their ſeveral purpoſes. Their chief mechanical tool is formed exactly after the manner of our adzes; and is made, as are alſo the chiſſel and gouge, of the green ſerpent-ſtone already mentioned. But their maſter-piece ſeems to be carving. The heads of their canoes are ſometimes ornamented with it, in ſuch a manner, as not only ſhews much deſign, but alſo is an example of great labour and patience in execution. Their cordage for fiſhing-lines is equal in ſtrength and evenneſs, to ours, and their nets not at all inferior. But what muſt coſt them the greateſt labour, is the making of the tools we have mentioned; for the ſtone is exceedingly hard, and the only method of faſhioning it, is by rubbing one ſtone upon another. Their ſubſtitute for a knife is a ſhell, a bit of flint, or jaſper. And, as an auger, to bore with, they fix a ſhark's tooth in the end of a ſmall piece of wood. It is true, they have a ſmall ſaw, made with ſome jagged fiſhes teeth, fixed on the convex edge of a piece of wood nicely carved. But this, they ſay, is only uſed to cut up the bodies of their enemies, whom they kill in battle.

From this country, Capt. Cook, at the requeſt of Omai, and with their own and relations conſent, took two young Zealanders. On the 25th of February, the

Captains

Captains Cook and Clerk left Queen Charlotte's Sound; and on the 29th of March following, came within ſight of the iſland of Mangea.

During Captain Cook's paſſage to the iſland of Mangea, the two adventurers from New Zealand, repented heartily of the ſtep they had taken, immediately after they had loſt ſight of their own country, the ſea ſickneſs they experienced giving a turn to their reflections. All the ſoothing encouragement that could be thought of availed but little. They wept both in public and private; and made their lamentations in a kind of ſong, which, as far as the meaning of the word could be underſtood, was expreſſive of the praiſes of their own country and people, from which they were to be ſeparated from them for ever. Thus they continued for many days, till their ſea-ſickneſs wore off, and the tumult of their mind began to ſubſide. Then theſe fits of lamentation became leſs and leſs frequent, and at length entirely ceaſed. Their native country and their friends, were, by degrees, forgotten; and they appeared to be as firmly attached to their new acquaintances, as if they had been born among them.

The iſland of Mangea, (which is the name the natives give it) lies in the latitude of 21 deg. 57 min. S. and 201 deg. 53 min. E. Capt. Cook pronounces it from its exterior appearance, to be a very fine iſland, capable of ſupplying all their wants; and he computes it to be about five leagues in circuit. But he found it impoſſible either to land here, or to find any anchorage for his ſhips; ſuch part of the coaſt as fell under his obſervation, being guarded by a reef of coral rock, on the out-ſide of which the ſea is of an unfathomable depth; and a great ſurf broke with violence againſt the ſhore or againſt the reef that ſurrounded it.

Early in the morning of the 30th of Feb. ſeveral of the natives were perceived upon a ſandy beach, all armed with long ſpears and clubs, which they brandiſhed in the air with ſigns of threatning, or as others interpreted their attitude, with invitations to land. Moſt of them were naked, except having a ſort of girdle, which, being

being brought up between the thighs, covered that part of the body. But ſome of them had pieces of cloth of different colours, white, ſtriped, or chequered; thrown about their ſhoulders; and almoſt all of them had a kind of white turban; and ſome others, a ſort of high conical cap. They were of tawny colour; and in general of a middling ſtature, but robuſt, and inclined to corpulence.

At this time, a ſmall canoe was launched in a great hurry from the farther end of the beach; and, a man getting into it, put off, as with a view to reach the ſhip. On this, the Captain brought to, that he might receive the viſit; but the man's reſolution failing, he ſoon returned towards the beach, where, after ſometime, another man joined him in the canoe; and then they both paddled towards the ſhip. They ſtopt ſhort, however, as if afraid to approach, until Omai, who addreſſed them in the Otaheite language, in ſome meaſure quieted their apprehenſions. They then came near enough to take ſome beads and nails, which were tied to a piece of wood, and thrown into the canoe. They ſeemed afraid to touch theſe things, and put the piece of wood aſide, without untying them. This, however, might ariſe from ſuperſtition; for Omai ſaid, that when they ſaw us offering them preſents, they aſked ſomething for their EATOOA, or God. He alſo perhaps improperly put the queſtion to them, whether they ever eat human fleſh? which they anſwered in the negative, with a mixture of indignation and abhorrence. One of them, whoſe name was Mourooa, being aſked how he came by a ſcar in his forehead, anſwered, that it was in conſequence of a wound he had got in fighting with the people of an iſland, which lies to the North-Eaſtward, who ſometimes came to invade them. They afterwards took hold of a rope. Still, however, they would not venture on board; but told Omai, that their countryman had given them this caution, at the ſame time directing them to inquire whence the ſhip came, and the name of the Captain.

Mourooa

Mouroua was luſty, but not very tall. His features were agreeable, and his diſpoſition ſeemingly no leſs ſo; for he made ſeveral droll geſticulations, which indicated both good-nature and a ſhare of humour. He alſo made others, which ſeemed of a ſerious kind, and repeated ſome words with a devout air, before he ventured to lay hold of the rope; which was probably to recommend himſelf to the protection of ſome Divinity. His colour was nearly of the ſame caſt with that common to the more ſouthern Europeans. The other was not ſo handſome. Both of them had ſtrong ſtraight hair, of a jet colour, tied together on the crown of the head with a bit of cloth. They wore girdles, which were a ſubſtance made from the Morus papyrifera, in the ſame manner as at the other iſlands in this ocean. It was glazed like the ſort uſed by the natives of the Friendly Iſlands; but the cloth on their heads was white, like that which was found at Otaheite. They had on a kind of ſandals, made of a graſſy ſubſtance, interwoven, and probably intended to defend their feet againſt the rough coral rock. Their beards were long; and the inſide of their arms, from the ſhoulders to the elbow, and ſome other parts were punctured or tatooed, after the manner of the natives of almoſt all the other iſlands in the South Sea. The lobe of the ears was pierced, or rather ſlit, and to ſuch a length, that one of them ſtuck there a knife and ſome beads, which had been given them; and the ſame perſon had two poliſhed pearl-ſhells, and a bunch of human hair, looſly twiſted, hanging round his neck. The canoe they came in was not above ten feet long, and very narrow, but both ſtrong and neatly made. The forepart had a flat board faſtened over it, and projecting out to prevent the ſea getting in on plunging.

About ten o'clock, the Captain went into a boat to ſound the ſhore. He had no ſooner put off, than the two men in the canoe paddled towards the boat, and having come along ſide, Mouroua ſtept into her, without being aſked, and without a moment's heſitation.

While

While thus employed in endeavouring to land (which was found impoſſible, unleſs at the riſk of having the boat filled with water, or even ſtaved to pieces) great numbers of the natives flocked down to the beach, all armed as above mentioned. Mourooa, probably thinking that this warlike appearance prevented their landing, ordered them to retire. As many of them complied, he was judged to be a perſon of ſome conſequence. So great was the curioſity of ſeveral, that they ſwam to the boat, and came on board without reſerve. It was even difficult to keep them out, and ſtill more difficult to prevent their carrying off every thing upon which they could lay their hands. At length, when they perceived the boat returning to the ſhip, they all jumped out, except Mourooa. He, though not without evident ſigns of fear, kept his place, and went on board the ſhip.

The cattle, and other objects, did not ſtrike him with ſo much ſurpriſe as one might have expected. But, in fact, he ſeemed very uneaſy; and as the ſhip, on his getting on board, happened to be ſtanding off ſhore, this circumſtance made him the more ſo. After a ſhort ſtay, the captain ordered a boat to carry him in towards land. As ſoon as he got out of the cabin, he ſtumbled over one of the goats. His curioſity now overcoming his fear, he ſtopt, looked at it, and aſked Omai, What bird this was? The boat having conveyed him pretty near the ſurf, he leaped into the ſea, and ſwam aſhore. He had no ſooner landed, than the multitude of his countrymen gathered round him, as if eager to learn what he had ſeen. As ſoon as the boat returned, the Captain made ſail from the land to the Northward. The natives of Mangea, as do all the New Zealanders, ſalute ſtrangers by joining noſes; adding, however, the additional ceremony of taking the hand of the perſon to whom they are paying civilities, and rubbing it, with a degree of force, upon their noſe and mouths.

On the 1ſt of April, Captain Cook, came in ſight of an iſland, nearly of the ſame appearance and extent as Mangea; and, at the ſame time, another land, but much

ſmaller, was ſeen right a-head. The firſt, as they afterwards learned from the natives, was called by them Wateeoo. It lies in the lat. of 20 deg. 1 min. S. and in the lon. 201 deg. 45 min. E. and appeared to be a beautiful ſpot, with a ſurface compoſed of hills and plains, and covered with verdure of many hues. The next day, two armed boats were ſent out, to look for anchoring ground and a landing place. In the mean time, the natives came off in canoes, to viſit the two ſhips, and to be quite free from the apprehenſions that had been ſo viſible in the inhabitants of Mangea. Preſents were reciprocally given and received. In one of theſe viſits, the natives, as they drew near the ſhip, recited ſome words in concert, by way of chorus, one of their number firſt ſtanding up, and giving the word before each repetition. When they had finiſhed their ſolemn chant, they came along ſide and aſked for the Chief. After giving ſome preſents, they were conducted into the cabin, and to other parts of the ſhip. Some objects ſeemed to ſtrike them with a degree of ſurpriſe; but nothing fixed their attention for a moment. They were afraid to come near the cows and horſes; nor did they form the leaſt conception of their nature. But the ſheep and goats did not ſurpaſs the limits of their ideas; for they gave us to underſtand, that they knew them to be birds. It will appear rather incredible, that human ignorance could ever make ſo ſtrange a miſtake; there not being the moſt diſtant likeneſs between a ſheep or a goat, and any winged animal. But theſe people ſeemed to know nothing of the exiſtence of any other land-animals, beſides hogs, dogs, and birds. The ſheep and goats, they could ſee, were very different creatures from the two firſt, and therefore they infered, that they muſt belong to the latter claſs, in which they knew there is a conſiderable variety of ſpecies.

The people in theſe canoes differed little from the natives of Mangea. Ornaments, compoſed of a ſort of graſs ſtained with red, and ſtrung with berries of the night-ſhade, were worn about their necks. Their ears were bored, but not ſlit; and they were punctured upon the legs,

legs, from the knee to the heel, which made them appear as if they wore a kind of boots.

Lieutenant Gore, with the two boats, returned in the afternoon, having found the ſame obſtructions both to landing and anchoring, which they had found at Mangea. But as the natives ſeemed very friendly, and to expreſs a degree of diſappointment, when they ſaw the boats crews fail in their attempt to land, Mr. Gore was of opinion, that by means of Omai, who could beſt explain the requeſt, they might be prevailed upon to bring off to the boats beyond the ſurf, ſuch articles as were moſt wanted, in particular the ſtems of plantain-trees, which were good food for the cattle.

Accordingly, about ten the next morning, Mr. Gore was diſpatched with three boats, to try the experiment. Two of the natives, who had been on board, accompanied him; and Omai went as Interpreter. In order to obſerve their motions, and to be ready to give them ſuch aſſiſtance as they might want, Captain Cook kept as near the ſhore as was prudent. He was ſenſible, however, that the reef was as effectual a barrier between him and his friends who had landed, and put them as much beyond his protection, as if half the circumference of the globe had intervened. But the iſlanders, it was probable, did not know this ſo well as he did. In the mean time, the occaſional viſits of the natives on board the ſhips, ſerved to leſſen his ſolicitude for his friends on ſhore. At length, a little before ſun-ſet, he had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing the boats put off. When they got on board, he found that Mr. Gore, Omai, Mr. Anderſon, and Mr. Burney, were the only perſons that had landed. Mr. Anderſon's narrative of the tranſactions of the day being extremely intereſting, we ſhall give it in his own words.

"We rowed," ſays Mr. Anderſon, "towards a ſmall ſandy beach, and came to an anchor within a hundred yards of the reef, which extends about as far, or a little further from the ſhore. Several of the natives ſwam off, bringing cocoa-nuts; and Omai, with their countrymen, whom we had with us in the boats, made them ſenſible

ſenſible of our wiſh to land. Soon after, two canoes came off; and to create a greater confidence in the iſlanders, we determined to go unarmed, and to run the hazard of being treated well or ill.

"Our conductors, watching attentively the motions of the ſurf, landed Mr. Burney and myſelf, who were in the firſt canoe, ſafely upon the reef. An iſlander took hold of each of us, obviouſly with an intention to ſupport us in walking over the rugged rock, to the beach, where ſeveral of the others met us, holding the green boughs, of a ſpecies of Mimoſa in their hands, and ſaluted us by joining their noſes to ours. Mr. Gore and Omai were landed from the ſecond canoe.

"A great croud flocked with eager curioſity to look at us; and would have prevented our proceeding, had not ſome, who ſeemed to have authority, dealt blows, with little diſtinction among them, to keep them off. We were then led up an avenue of cocoa palms; and ſoon came to a number of men, arranged in two rows, and armed with clubs, which they hold on their ſhoulders, much in the ſame manner as we reſt a muſket. After walking a little way among theſe, we found a perſon who ſeemed a Chief, ſitting on the ground croſs-legged, cooling himſelf with a ſort of a triangular fan, made from a leaf of the cocoa-palm, with a poliſhed handle of black wood, fixed to one corner. In his ears were large branches of beautiful red feathers, which pointed forward. But he had no other mark, or ornament, to diſtinguiſh him from the reſt of the people; though they all obeyed him with the greateſt alacrity. He either naturally had, or at this time put on, a ſerious, but not ſevere countenance; and we were deſired to ſalute him as he ſat, by ſome people who ſeemed of conſequence.

"We proceeded ſtill amongſt the men armed with clubs, and came to a ſecond Chief, who ſat fanning himſelf, and ornamented as the firſt. He was remarkable for his ſize, and common corpulence, though to appearance not above thirty. In the ſame manner, we were conducted to a third Chief, who ſeemed older than

the

the two former, and though not ſo fat as the ſecond, was of a large ſize. He alſo was ſitting and adorned with red feathers; and after ſaluting him as we had done the others, he deſired us both to ſit down, upon which we were very willing to do, being pretty well fatigued with walking up and down, and with the exceſſive heat we felt, amongſt the vaſt crowd that ſurrounded us.

"In a few minutes, the people were ordered to ſeparate; and we ſaw, at the diſtance of 30 yards, about 20 young women, ornamented as the chiefs, with red feathers, engaged in a dance, which they performed to a ſlow and ſerious air, ſung by them all. We got up, and went forward to ſee them; they continued their dance, without paying the leaſt attention to us. They ſeemed to be directed by a man who ſerved as a prompter, and mentioned each motion they were to make. But they never changed the ſpot, as we do in dancing, and though their feet were not at reſt, this exerciſe conſiſted more in moving their fingers very nimbly, at the ſame time holding their hands in a prone poſition near the face, and now and then alſo clapping them together. Their motions and ſong were performed in ſuch exact concert, that it ſhould ſeem they had been taught with great care; and probably they were ſelected for this ceremony, as few of thoſe whom we ſaw in the crowd equalled them in beauty. In general, they were rather ſtout than ſlender, with black hair flowing in ringlets down the neck, and of olive complexion. Their features were rather fuller than that we allow to perfect beauties, and much alike; but their eyes were of a deep black, and each countenance expreſſed a degree of complacency, and modeſty, peculiar to the ſex in every part of the world; but perhaps more conſpicuous here, where nature preſented us with her productions in the fulleſt perfection, unbiaſſed by ſentiment in cuſtom, or unreſtrained in manner by art. Their ſhape and limbs were elegantly formed.

"This dance was not finiſhed, when we heard a noiſe, as if ſome horſes had been galloping towards us;

us; and on looking aſide, we ſaw the people armed with clubs, who had been deſired, as we ſuppoſe, to entertain us with the ſight of their manner of fighting. This they now did, one party purſuing another, who fled.

"As we ſuppoſed the ceremony of being introduced to the chiefs was now at an end, we began to look about for Mr. Gore and Omai; and, though the crowd would hardly ſuffer us to move, we at length found them coming up, as much incommoded by the people as we had been, and introduced in the ſame manner to the three chiefs. Each of theſe expected a preſent; and Mr. Gore gave them ſuch things as he had brought with him from the ſhip, for that purpoſe. After this, making uſe of Omai as his interpreter, he informed the chiefs with what intention we had come aſhore; but was given to underſtand, that he muſt wait till the next day, and then he ſhould have what was wanted.

"They now ſeemed to take ſome pains to ſeparate us from each other; and every one of us had his will to ſurround and gaze at him. For my part, I was, at one time, above an hour apart from my friends; and when I told the chief, with whom I ſat, that I wanted to ſpeak to Omai, he peremptorily refuſed my requeſt. At the ſame time, I found the people began to ſteal ſeveral trifling things which I had in my pocket; and when I complained to the chief of this treatment, he juſtified it.

From the above circumſtances, I now entertained apprehenſions, that they had a deſign to detain us amongſt them. They did not, indeed, ſeem to be of a diſpoſition ſo ſavage, as to make us anxious for the ſafety of our perſons; but it was nevertheleſs, vexing to think, we had hazarded being detained by their curioſity. In this ſituation, I aſked for ſomething to eat; and they readily brought me ſome cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, and a ſort of ſour pudding, which was preſented by a woman. And, on my complaining much of the heat, occaſioned by the crowd, the chief himſelf condeſcended

deſcended to fan me, and gave me a ſmall piece of cloth, which he had round his waiſt.

" Mr. Burney happening to come to the place where I was, I mentioned my ſuſpicions to him; and to put it to the teſt, whether they were well founded, we attempted to get to the beach. But we were ſtopped when about half way, by ſome men, who told us, we muſt go back to the place we had left. On coming up, we found Omai entertaining the ſame apprehenſions, but he had, as he fancied, an additional reaſon for being afraid; for he had obſerved, that they had dug a hole in the ground for an oven, which they were heating; and he could aſſign no other reaſon for this, than that they meant to roaſt and eat us, as is practiſed by the New Zealanders. Nay, we went ſo far as to aſk the queſtion; at which they were greatly ſurpriſed, aſking in return, whether it was a cuſtom with us? Mr. Burney and I were rather angry that they ſhould be thus ſuſpected by him; there having, as yet, been no appearances, in their conduct towards us, of their being capable of ſuch brutality.

" In this manner we were detained the greateſt part of the day, being ſometimes together, and ſometimes ſeparated: but always in a crowd; who, not ſatisfied with gazing at us, frequently deſired us to uncover parts of our ſkin; the ſight of which generally produced a murmur of admiration. At the ſame time they did not omit theſe opportunities of rifling our pockets, and at laſt, one of them ſnatched a ſmall bayonet from Mr. Gore, which hung in a ſheath by his ſide. This was repreſented to the chief, who pretended to ſend ſome perſons in ſearch of it. But, in all probability, he countenanced the theft: for, ſoon after, Omai had a dagger ſtolen from his ſide, in the ſame manner, tho' he did not miſs it immediately.

" Whether they obſerved any ſigns of any uneaſineſs in us, or that they voluntarily repeated their emblems of friendſhip, when we expreſſed a deſire to go, I cannot tell; but, at this time, they brought ſome green boughs, and, ſticking their ends in the ground, deſired we would

would hold them as we ſat. Upon my urging our buſineſs again, they gave us to underſtand, that we muſt ſtay and eat with them; and a pig that we ſaw, ſoon after, lying near the oven, which they had prepared and heated, removed Omai's apprehenſions of being put into it himſelf; and made us think it was intended for our repaſt. The Chief alſo promiſed to ſend ſome people to procure proviſion for the cattle; but it was not till late in the afternoon, that we ſaw them return with a few plantain-trees, which they carried to our boats.

"In the mean time, Mr. Burney and I attempted again to go to the beach; but when we arrived, found ourſelves watched by the people, who ſeemed to have been planted there for that purpoſe: for, when I tried to wade in upon the reef, one of them took hold of my clothes, and dragged me back. I picked up ſome ſmall pieces of coral, which they required me to throw down again; and on my refuſal, they made no ſcruple to take them forcibly from me. I had gathered ſome ſmall plants; but theſe alſo I could not be permitted to retain; and they took a fan from Mr. Burney, which he had received as a preſent on coming aſhore. Omai ſaid, we had done wrong in taking up any thing; for it was not the cuſtom here to permit freedoms of that kind to ſtrangers, till they had, in ſome meaſure, naturalized them to the country, by entertaining them with feſtivity two or three days.

"Finding that the only method of procuring better treatment was to yield implicit obedience to their will, we went up again to the place we had left; and they now promiſed, that we ſhould have a canoe to carry us off to our boats, after we had eaten of a repaſt which had been prepared for us. Accordingly, the ſecond Chief before mentioned, having ſeated himſelf upon a low broad ſtool of blackiſh hard wood, tolerably poliſhed, and directing the multitude to make a pretty large ring, made us ſit down by him. A conſiderable number of cocoa-nuts were brought; and, ſhortly after, a long green baſket, with a ſufficient quantity of baked

plantains

plantains to have ſerved a dozen perſons. A piece of the young hog that had been dreſſed, was then ſet before each of us, of which we were deſired to eat. Our appetites, however had failed, from the fatigue of the day; and though we did eat a little to pleaſe them, it was without ſatisfaction to ourſelves.

"It being now near ſun-ſet, we told them it was time to go on board. This they allowed; and ſent down to the beach the remainder of the victuals that had been dreſſed, to be carried with us to the ſhip. We found a canoe ready to put us off to our boats; which the natives did with the ſame caution as when we landed. They put us on board the boats, with the cocoa-nuts, plantains, and other proviſions, which they had brought; and we rowed to the ſhips, very well pleaſed that we had at laſt got out of the hands of our troubleſome maſters.

It was mentioned, that Omai was ſent upon this expedition; and, perhaps, his being Mr. Gore's interpreter, was not the only ſervice he performed this day. He was aſked by the natives a great many queſtions concerning our people, our ſhips, and our country, and the ſort of arms we uſed: and, according to the account he gave to Captain Cook, his anſwers were not a little upon the marvelous. Our country, he told them, had ſhips as large as their iſland; on board which were inſtruments of war (deſcribing our guns) of ſuch dimenſions, that ſeveral people might ſit within them; and that one of them was ſufficient to cruſh the whole iſland at one ſhot. This led them to aſk what ſort of guns were on board Captain Cook's ſhips. He ſaid, that though they were but ſmall in compariſon with thoſe he had deſcribed, yet, with ſuch as they were, they could with the greateſt eaſe, and at the diſtance the ſhips were from the ſhore, deſtroy the iſland, and kill every ſoul in it. They then inquired by what means this could be done, and Omai explained it as well as he could. He happened luckily to have a few cartridges in his pocket. Theſe he produced: the balls, and the gunpowder that was to ſet them in motion, were ſub-

mitted to inſpection, and, to ſupply the defects of his deſcription, an appeal was made to the ſenſe of the ſpectators. The multitude had been formed, as beforementioned, into a circle. This furniſhed Omai with a convenient ſtage for his exhibition. In the centre of this, the ſmall quantity of gunpowder collected from his cartridges, was properly diſpoſed upon the ground, and ſet on fire by a bit of burning wood from the oven. The ſudden blaſt, and loud report, the mingled flame and ſmoke, that inſtantly ſucceeded, filled the whole aſſembly with aſtoniſhment. They no longer doubted the tremendous power of our weapons, and gave full credit to all Omai had ſaid.

If it had not been for the terrible idea they conceived of the ſhip's guns, from this ſpecimen of their mode of operation, it was thought they would have detained the gentlemen all night. For Omai aſſured them, that if he and his companions did not return on board the ſame day, they might expect that the captain would fire upon the iſland. And as the ſhips ſtood in nearer the land in the evening, than they had done any time before, of which they were obſerved to take great notice, they probably thought this formidable attack was meditating; and therefore they ſuffered their gueſts to depart; in the expectation however, of ſeeing them again on ſhore the next morning. But Capt. Cook was too ſenſible of the riſk they had already run, to think of repeating the experiment.

This iſland, though never before viſited by Europeans, had actually other ſtrangers reſiding in it. Omai, when he landed with Mr. Gore, found amongſt the crowd three of his own countrymen, natives of the Society Iſlands. At the diſtance of about 200 leagues from thoſe iſlands, an immenſe unknown ocean intervening, with ſuch wretched ſea-boats as their inhabitants are known to make uſe of, and fit only for a paſſage where ſight of land is ſcarcely ever loſt, ſuch a meeting, at ſuch a place, ſo accidently viſited by Captain Cook's people, may well be looked upon as one of thoſe unexpected ſituations with which the writers of feigned adventures love

to

to ſurprize their readers, and which, when they really happen in common life, deſerve to be recorded for their ſingularity.

It may be imagined, with what ſurprize and ſatisfaction Omai and his countrymen engaged in converſation. Their ſtory is very affecting. About twenty perſons, of both ſexes, had embarked on board a canoe at Otaheite, to croſs over to the neighbouring iſland Ulietea. A violent contrary wind ariſing, they could neither reach the latter, nor get back to the former. Their intended paſſage being a very ſhort one, their ſtock of proviſions was ſcanty, and ſoon exhauſted. The hardſhips they ſuffered, while driven by the ſtorm they knew not whither, are not to be conceived. They paſſed many days without any thing to eat or drink. Worn out by famine and fatigue, their numbers gradually diminiſhed. Four men only ſurvived, when the canoe overſet; and then the perdition of theſe ſeemed inevitable. However they kept hanging by its ſide, during ſome of the laſt days, till providence brought them within ſight of the people of this iſland, who immediately ſent out canoes, and brought them aſhore. Of the four thus ſaved, one was ſince dead. The other three, who lived to give this account of their moſt miraculous tranſplantation, ſpoke highly of the kind treatment they here met with; and they were ſo well ſatisfied with their preſent ſituation, that they refuſed the offer made to them at Omai's requeſt, of giving them a paſſage to their native iſlands. The familiarity of manners and language had more than naturalized them to this ſpot; and the freſh connections they had here formed, and which it would have been painful to have broken off, after ſuch a length of time, ſufficiently account for this refuſal. They had arrived at this iſland at leaſt twelve years ago.

"The landing, ſays Capt. Cook," of our gentlemen on this iſland, cannot but be conſidered as a very fortunate circumſtance. It has proved the means of bringing to our knowledge a fact, not only very curious, but very inſtructive. The application of the above narrative

is obvious. It will ſerve to explain, better than a thouſand conjectures of a thouſand ſpeculative reaſoners, how the detached parts of the earth, and, in particular, how the iſlands of the South Sea, may have been firſt peopled; eſpecially thoſe that lie remote from any inhabited continent, or from each other. Such accidents as this probably happen frequently in the Pacific Ocean. In 1696, two canoes, having on board thirty perſons of both ſexes, were driven, by violent contrary winds, to the iſle of Samal, one of the Philipines, after being toſt about at ſea 70 days, and having performed a voyage, from an iſland called by them Amorſot, 300 leagues to to the eaſt of Samal. Five of the number died of the hardſhips they ſuffered.

According to Omai's account of what he learned in converſation with his countrymen, the manners of thoſe iſlanders, the method of treating ſtrangers, and their general habits of life, are much like thoſe that prevail at Otaheite, and its neighbouring iſles. Their religious ceremonies and opinions are alſo nearly the ſame. From every circumſtance, indeed, it is indubitable, that the natives of Wateeoo ſprang, originally, from the ſame ſtock, which has ſpread itſelf ſo wonderfully all over the immenſe extent of the South Sea. One would ſuppoſe, however, that they put in their claim to a more illuſtrious extraction: for Omai ſaid, that they dignified their iſland with the appellation of Wenooa no te Eatooa, that is, a land of gods; eſteeming themſelves a ſort of Divinities, and poſſeſſed with the ſpirit of Eatooa. This wild enthuſiaſtic notion Omai ſeemed to approve of: obſerving, that there were inſtances of its being entertained at Otaheite; but that it was univerſally prevalent among the inhabitants of Mataia, or Oſnaburgh Iſland.

Capt. Cook left Wateeoo in the morning of the 4th of April, ſteering for the other iſland, which, as before mentioned, he had diſcovered its vicinity.

CHAP II.

Refreſhments obtained at Wenooa-ette.—Singularity in the Natives of Hervey's Iſland.—Rich ſubmarine Grotto at Palmerſton's Iſland.—Arrival at the Friendly Iſlands.—Amiable character of the Natives.—Deſcription of their Perſons.—Tranſactions with the Natives.—Captain's Clerk's expedient to prevent their Depredations.—Opinions of the Iſlanders of a Volcano.—Different entertainments exhibited by the Engliſh and Natives.—Curious mode of ſhaving.—Viſit of Poulaho, King of the Friendly Iſlands.—Poulaho's inanimate Viceroy.—Offering to their Deity to deprecate Death.—Departure from the Friendly Iſlands.

THIS iſland, at which they arrived the next morning, was uninhabited; but the natives of Wateeoo called it Wenooa-ette or Otakootaia. Here they obtained a ſupply of cocoa-nuts for themſelves; and for their cattle ſome graſs, and a quantity of the leaves and branches of young cocoa trees, and of the Wharra tree, as it is called at Otaheite, the Pandanus of the Eaſt-Indies. This latter being of a ſoft, ſpungy, juicy nature, the cattle eat it very well, when cut into ſmall pieces; ſo that it may be literally ſaid, that they were fed upon billet wood.

On the 6th of April, Captain Cook arrived at Hervey's Iſland, which he had diſcovered in 1773, and which he was now ſurprized to find inhabited. In his intercourſe with the natives, he obſerved that not one of them had adopted the mode of ornament, ſo generally prevalent among the natives of this ocean, of puncturing, or tatooing their bodies; although in other reſpects he had the moſt unequivocal proofs of their being of the ſame common race. Being diſappointed in the hopes of landing on this iſland, and the unfavourable winds, &c. having unavoidably retarded his progreſs ſo much

much, that it was impoſſible to think of doing any thing this year, in the high latitudes of the Northern Hemiſphere, Captain Cook now thought it neceſſary to bear away for the Friendly Iſlands. But he firſt reſolved to touch at Palmerſton's Iſland, which he had diſcovered in 1774, and where he arrived on the 14th of April. This iſland conſiſts of a group of about ten ſmall uninhabited iſlots, lying in a circular direction, and connected together by a reef of coral rocks.

While the captain employed his boats here to procure refreſhments for his crew, he himſelf explored whatever was curious in the external appearance of this iſland, which he obſerved to be ſcarcely a mile in circuit, and not above three feet higher than the level of the ſea. It appeared to be entirely compoſed of a coral ſand, with a ſmall mixture of blackiſh mould, produced from rotten vegetables. Notwithſtanding this poor ſoil, it is covered with a variety of trees and buſhes. At one part of the reef, which looks into, or bounds the lake within, there was a large bed of coral, almoſt even with the ſurface, which afforded, perhaps, one of the moſt enchanting proſpects that nature has any where produced. Its baſe was fixed to the ſhore, but reached ſo far in, that it could not be ſeen; ſo that it ſeemed to be ſuſpended in the water, which deepened ſo ſuddenly, that at the diſtance of a few yards, there might be ſeven or eight fathoms. The ſea was, at this time, quite unruffled; and the ſun, ſhining bright, expoſed the various ſorts of coral in the moſt beautiful order; ſome parts branching into the water with great luxuriance, others lying collected in round balls, and in various other figures; all which were greatly heightened by ſpangles of the richeſt colours, that glowed from a number of large clams, which were every where interſperſed. But the appearance of theſe was ſtill inferior to that of the multitude of fiſhes, that glided gently along, ſeemingly with the moſt perfect ſecurity. The colours of the different ſorts were the moſt beautiful that can be imagined; the yellow, blue, red, black, &c. far exceeding any thing that art can produce. Their

various

various forms, alſo, contributed to increaſe the richneſs of this ſubmarine grotto, which could not be ſurveyed without a pleaſing tranſport, mixed, however, with regret, that a work ſo ſtupendouſly eloquent, ſhould be concealed, in a place where mankind could ſeldom have an opportunity of rendering the praiſes juſtly due to ſo enchanting a ſcene. With reſpect to the animal creation, the moſt ſingular that Captain Cook obſerved, were ſome large eels, beautifully ſpotted, which when followed, would raiſe themſelves out of the water, with an open mouth, to bite their purſuers. There was alſo a brown-ſpotted fiſh, about the ſize of a haddock, ſo tame, that inſtead of ſwimming away, it would remain fixed, and gaze at them. Had they been in abſolute want, a ſufficient ſupply might have been had; for thouſands of clams already mentioned, ſtuck upon the reef, ſome of which weighed two or three pounds.

In the night between the 24th and 25th, Capt. Cook paſſed Savage Iſland, which he had likewiſe diſcovered in 1774; and, on the 28th, he got ſight of ſome of the Friendly Iſlands. It was not, however, till the 1ſt of May, that he could come to anchor, at the iſland of Annamooka, where he reſumed the very ſame ſtation, which he had occupied three years before; and, probably, almoſt in the ſame place where Taſman, the firſt diſcoverer of this, and ſome of the neighbouring iſlands, anchored in 1643.

The Friendly Iſlands form a very extenſive Archipelago. The natives reckoned up 150 of them, making uſe of bits of leaves to aſcertain their number. But only ſixty-one of theſe have their proper places and names marked in Captain Cook's chart of the Friendly Iſlands: for he was obliged to leave it to future navigators, to introduce into the geography of this part of the South Pacific Ocean, the exact ſituation and ſize of near an hundred others, which he had not an opportunity to explore. Among theſe iſlands he continued about two or three months; during which time he lived with the natives in the moſt cordial friendſhip. Some accidental differences it is true now and then happened, owing

owing to their propenſity to thieving. But theſe were never attended with any fatal conſequences: on the contrary, few on board the ſhips left their friends here without regret. Nor will this appear wonderful, when we learn the amiable character which Captain Cook has given of theſe people.

"Their countenances, ſays he, very remarkably expreſs the abundant mildneſs, or good nature, which they poſſeſs; and are entirely free from that ſavage keenneſs which marks nations in a barbarous ſtate. One would, indeed, be apt to fancy, that if they had been bred up under the ſevereſt reſtrictions, to acquire an aſpect ſo ſettled, and ſuch a command of their paſſions, as well as ſteadineſs in their conduct. But they are, at the ſame time, frank, cheerful, and good humoured; though ſometimes, in the preſence of their chiefs, they put on a degree of gravity, and ſuch a ſerious air, as becomes ſtiff and awkward, and has an appearance of reſerve.

"Their peaceable diſpoſition is ſufficiently evinced, from the friendly reception all ſtrangers have met with, who have viſited them. Inſtead of offering to attack them openly, or clandeſtinely, as has been the caſe with moſt of the inhabitants of theſe ſeas, they have never appeared, in the ſmalleſt degree, hoſtile; but, on the contrary, like the moſt civilized people, have courted an intercourſe with their viſitors, by bartering, which is the only medium that unites all nations in a ſort of friendſhip. Perhaps, no nation in the world traffic with more honeſty and leſs diſtruſt, we could always ſafely permit them to examine our goods, and to hand them about, one to another; and they put the ſame confidence in us. If either party repented of the bargain, the goods were re-exchanged with mutual conſent and good-humour. Upon the whole, they ſeem poſſeſſed of many of the moſt excellent qualities that adorn the human mind; ſuch as induſtry, ingenuity, perſeverance, affability, and, perhaps, other virtues which our ſhort ſtay with them might prevent our obſerving.

"The only defect ſullying their character, that we know of, is a propenſity to thieving; to which, we found,

found, thoſe of all ages, and both ſexes addicted; and to an uncommon degree. It ſhould, however, be conſidered, that this exceptionable part of their conduct ſeemed to exiſt merely with reſpect to us; for in their general intercourſe with one another, I had reaſon to think, that thefts do not happen more frequently (perhaps leſs ſo) than in other countries, the diſhoneſt practices of thoſe worthleſs individuals are not ſuppoſed to authorize any indiſcriminate cenſure on the whole body of the people. Great allowances ſhould be made for the foibles of theſe poor natives of the Pacific Ocean, whoſe minds were overpowered with the glare of objects, equally new to them, as they were captivating. Stealing, amongſt the civilized and enlightened nations of the world, may well be conſidered as denoting a character deeply ſtained with moral turpitude, with avarice unreſtrained by the known rules of right, and with profligacy producing extreme indigence, and neglecting the means of relieving it. But at the Friendly and other iſlands which we viſited, the thefts, ſo frequently committed by the natives, of what we had brought along with us, may be fairly traced to leſs culpable motives. They ſeemed to ariſe, ſolely, from an intenſe curioſity or deſire to poſſeſs ſomething which they had not been accuſtomed to before, and belonging to a ſort of people ſo different from themſelves. And, perhaps, if it were poſſible, that a ſet of beings, ſeemingly as ſuperior in our judgment, as we are in theirs, ſhould appear amongſt us, it might be doubted, whether our natural regard to juſtice would be to reſtrain many from falling into this error."

"The natives of the Friendly Iſlands, "ſays Capt. Cook," ſeldom exceed the common ſtature (though we have meaſured ſome, who were about ſix foot;) but are very ſtrong, and well made; eſpecially as to their limbs. They are generally broad about the ſhoulders; and though the muſcular diſpoſition of the men, which ſeems a conſequence of much action, rather conveys the appearance of ſtrength than of

beauty, there are ſeveral to be ſeen, who are really handſome. Their features are very various; inſomuch that it is ſcarcely poſſible to fix on any general likeneſs, by which to characterize them, unleſs it be a fullneſs at the point of the noſe, which is very common. But, on the other hand, we met with hundreds of truly European faces, and many genuine Roman noſes amongſt them. Their eyes and teeth were good; but the laſt neither ſo remarkably white, nor ſo well ſet as is often found among Indian nations; though, to balance that, few of them have any uncommon thickneſs about the lips, a defect as frequent as the other perfection.

"The women are not ſo much diſtinguiſhed from the men by their features, as by their general form, which is, for the moſt part, deſtitute of that ſtrong fleſhy firmneſs that appears in the latter. Though the features of ſome are ſo delicate, as not only to be a true index of their ſex, but to lay claim to a conſiderable ſhare of beauty and expreſſion, the rule is, by no means, ſo general as in other countries. But, at the ſame time, this is frequently the moſt exceptionable part; for the bodies and limbs of moſt of the females are well proportioned; and ſome, abſolutely, perfect models of a beautiful figure. But the moſt remarkable diſtinction in the women, is the uncommon ſmallneſs and delicacy of their fingers, which may be put in competition with the fineſt in Europe.

"Their general colour is a caſt deeper than the copper brown; but ſeveral of the men and women have a true olive complexion; and ſome of the laſt are even a great deal fairer; which is probably the effect of being leſs expoſed to the ſun; as a tendency to corpulence, in a few of the principal people, ſeems to be the conſequence of a more indolent life. It is alſo among the laſt, that a ſoft clear ſkin is moſt frequently obſerved. Amongſt the bulk of the people, the ſkin is, moſt commonly, of a dull hue, with ſome degree of roughneſs, eſpecially the parts that are not covered;

covered; which, perhaps, may be occaſioned by ſome cutaneous diſeaſe. We ſaw a man and a boy at Hapaee, and a child at Annamooka, perfectly white. Such have been found amongſt all black nations; but, I apprehend, that their colour is rather a diſeaſe, than a natural phænomenon."

Captain Cook firſt went on ſhore at Annamooka, the chief of which iſland, Toubou conducted him and Omai to his houſe, ſituated on a pleaſant ſpot, in the centre of his plantation. A fine graſs-plot ſurrounded it, which, he gave them to underſtand, was for the purpoſe of cleaning their feet, before they went within doors. The floor of this houſe was covered with mats; and no carpet in the moſt elegant Engliſh drawing-room could be kept neater. But Capt. Cook found a more ſtrenuous friend in Taipa, one of the chiefs, who had before viſited the ſhips in their firſt intercourſe with the canoes that came off from ſhore. He ſeemed to be the only active perſon about them; and, in order to be near the party that had landed, in the night as well as the day, had a houſe brought on men's ſhoulders, a full quarter of a mile, and placed cloſe to the ſhed which the party occupied.

Beſides the operations of making hay for the cattle, and filling the water-caſks, a party was employed in cutting wood. The greateſt plenty of this laſt article being a-breaſt of the ſhips, in a ſituation the moſt convenient for getting it on board, it was natural to make choice of this. The trees here were a ſpecies of pepper, called faitanoo by the natives, yielded a juice of a milky colour, of ſo corroſive a nature, that it raiſed bliſters in the ſkin, and injured the eyes of the workmen. They were, therefore, obliged to procure the wood from another quarter.

Soon after they were viſited by a great chief, from the principal iſland called Tongataboo. This chief, whoſe name was Feenau, Taipa was pleaſed to introduce as king of all the Friendly Iſlands, a character,

although really a man of great conſequence, he found it expedient to lay aſide. In the mean time, great mutual civilities paſſed between Feenou and Captain Cook.

We have already remarked the general propenſity to thieving in the natives of theſe iſlands. Even ſome of the chiefs did not think the profeſſion beneath them. One of them was detected carrying out of the ſhip, concealed under his clothes, the bolt belonging to the ſpun-yarn winch; for which Capt. Cook ſentenced him to receive a dozen laſhes, and keep him confined till he had paid a hog for his liberty. After this, he was not troubled with thieves of rank. Their ſervants, however, were ſtill employed in this dirty work; and upon them a flogging ſeemed to make no great impreſſion, than it would have done upon the main-maſt.

On the 14th of May, Capt. Cook left Annamooka, and ſteered along a cluſter of ſmall iſlands; moſt of them entirely clothed with trees, amongſt which were many coca-palms; and each forming a proſpect like a beautiful garden placed in the ſea. To heighten this, the ſerene weather they now had, contributed very much; and the whole might ſupply the imagination with the idea of ſome fairy land realized. After noticing Toofoa, a volcanic iſle, at the diſtance of two leagues, the ſmoke of which they ſaw ſeveral times, they arrived on the 17th, at the iſlands, called by the general name of Hepaee. The Friendly Iſlanders have ſome ſuperſtitious notions about the volcano upon Toofoa, which they ſay is an Otooa, or Divinity.

Capt. Cook's reception at Hapaee was the moſt honourable that can be imagined. The chiefs, not content with munificence, entertained their viſitors with a variety of diverſions; among which were ſingle combats with clubs, and wreſtling and boxing matches, in the latter of which, even the women ſignalized themſelves. Feenou having expreſſed a deſire to ſee the marines go through their military exerciſe, the

the Captain ordered them all aſhore; and, after they had performed various evolutions, and fired ſeveral vollies, with which the numerous ſpectators ſeemed well pleaſed, the chief, in his turn, entertained them with an exhibition, which was performed with a dexterity and exactneſs, far ſurpaſſing the ſpecimen juſt given of our military exerciſes. It was a kind of dance, ſo intirely different from any thing Captain Cook had ever ſeen, that, as he himſelf obſerves, no deſcription can give an adequate idea of it. It was performed by men; and 105 perſons bore their parts in it. Each had in his hand an inſtrument neatly made, ſhaped like a paddle, two feet and a half long, with a ſmall handle, and a thin blade; ſo that it was very light. With theſe inſtruments they made many and various flouriſhes, each of which was accompliſhed with a different attitude of the body, or a different movement. At firſt, the performers ranged themſelves in three lines, and, by various evolutions, each man changed his ſtation in ſuch a manner, that thoſe who had been in the rear, came in the front. Nor did they long remain in the ſame poſition, but theſe changes were made by pretty quick tranſitions. At one time they extended themſelves in one line; they then formed themſelves into a ſemi circle; and laſtly, into two ſquare columns. While this laſt movement was executing, one of them advanced, and performed an antic dance before the Captain, which terminated the whole

The muſical inſtruments conſiſted of two drums, or rather two hollow logs of wood, from which ſome varied notes were produced. The dancers, however, did not not ſeem to be much aſſiſted by theſe ſounds, but by a chorus of vocal muſic, in which all the performers joined at the ſame time. Their ſongs were not deſtitute of pleaſing melody; and all their correſponding motions were executed with ſuch ſkill that the numerous body of dancers ſeemed to act as if they were one great machine. "It was the opinion of every one of us," ſays Capt. Cook, "that ſuch a performance

performance would have met with univerſal applauſe on the European theatre; and it ſo far exceeded any attempt we made to entertain them, that they ſeemed to pique themſelves upon the ſuperiority they had over us. As to our muſical inſtruments, they held none of them in the leaſt eſteem, except the drum; and even that they did not think equal to their own. Our French-horns, in particular, ſeemed to be held in great contempt."

Captain Cook deſirous to give them a more favourable idea of the Engliſh amuſements, and to leave their minds fully impreſſed with a deep ſenſe of our attainments, played off ſome fire-works in the evening, moſt of which ſucceeded ſo perfectly, as to anſwer the end he had in view. The water and ſky-rockets in particular, pleaſed and aſtoniſhed them beyond all conception; and the ſcale was now turned in our favour.

This ſeemed only to furniſh them with an additional motive to proceed to freſh exertions of their ſingular dexterity; and our fire-works were no ſooner ended, than a ſucceſſion of dances, which Feenou had got ready for our entertainment, began. As a prelude to them, a band of muſic, or chorus of eighteen men, ſeated themſelves before us, in the centre of the circle, compoſed by the numerous ſpectators, the area of which was to be the ſcene of the exhibitions. Four or five of this band had pieces of large bamboo, from three to five or ſix feet long, each managed by one man, who held it nearly in a vertical poſition, the upper end open, but the other end cloſed by one of the joints. With this cloſe end, the performers kept conſtantly ſtriking the ground, though ſlowly, thus producing different notes, according to the different lengths of the inſtruments, but all of them of the hollow or baſe ſort; to counteract which, a perſon kept ſtriking quickly, and with two ſticks, a piece of the ſame ſubſtance, ſplit, and laid along the ground, and, by that means, furniſhing a tone, as acute, as thoſe produced by the others were grave. The reſt of the band, as well as thoſe who performed upon the bamboos, ſung a ſlow

and

and ſoft air, which ſo tempered the harſher notes of the above inſtruments, that no bye-ſtander, however accuſtomed to hear the moſt perfect and varied modulation of ſweet ſounds, could not avoid confeſſing the vaſt power, and pleaſing effect of this ſimple harmony.

The concert having continued about a quarter of an hour, twenty women entered the circle. Moſt of them had, upon their heads, garlands of the crimſon flowers of the Chineſe roſe, or others; and many of them had ornamented their perſons with leaves of trees, cut with a great deal of nicety about the edges. They made a circle round the chorus, turning their faces towards it, and began by ſinging a ſoft air, to which reſponſes were made by the chorus in the ſame tone, and theſe were repeated alernately. All this while, the women accompanied their ſong with ſeveral very graceful motions of their hands towards their faces, and in other directions at the ſame time, making conſtantly a ſtep forward, and then back again, with one leg, while the other was fixed. They then turned their faces to the aſſembly, ſung ſome time, and retreated ſlowly in a body, to that part of the circle which was oppoſite the hut where the principal ſpectators ſat. After this, one of them advances from each ſide, meeting and paſſing each other in the front, and continuing their progreſs round, till they came to the reſt. On which two advanced from each ſide, by intervals, till the whole number had again formed a circle about the chorus.

Their manner of dancing was now changed to a quicker meaſure, in which they made a kind of half turn by leaping, and clapping their hands, and ſnapped their fingers, repeating ſome words in conjunction with the chorus. Towards the end, as the quickneſs of the muſic increaſed, their geſtures and attitudes were varied with wonderful vigour and dexterity; and ſome of their motions, perhaps, would, with us, be reckoned rather indecent. Though this part of the performance, moſt probably, was not meant to convey any wanton ideas

ideas, but merely to diſplay the aſtoniſhing variety of their movements.

To this grand female ballet, ſucceeded a variety of other dances, in which the men bore a principal part. In ſome of theſe the dancers increaſed their motions to a prodigious quickneſs, ſhaking their heads from ſhoulder to ſhoulder, with ſuch force, that a ſpectator, unaccuſtomed to the ſight, would ſuppoſe they ran a riſk of diſlocating their necks. Their diſcipline was admirable; and, in no inſtance was it more remarkable than in the ſudden tranſitions they ſo dexterouſly made, from the ruder exertions and harſh ſounds, to the ſofteſt airs, and moſt gentle movements.

While Capt. Cook was at Hapaee, he obſerved a woman ſhaving a child's head, with a ſhark's tooth, ſtuck into the end of a piece of ſtick. She firſt wet the hair with a rag, dipped in water, applying the inſtrument to that part which ſhe had previouſly ſoaked. The operation ſeemed to give no pain to the child; although the hair was taken off as cloſe as if one of our razors had been employed. Capt. Cook tried one of theſe inſtruments upon himſelf, and found it a good ſuccedaneum. But the men have another contrivance when they ſhave their beards. They take two ſhells, one of which they placed under a ſmall part of the beard, and with the other applied above, they ſcrape that part off. In this manner they are able to ſhave very cloſe.

On the 27th of May, Capt. Cook had an opportunity of diſcovering that Feenou was not the king of the Friendly Iſlands, but only a ſubordinate chief; by a prudent regulation in their government, the natives have an officer over the police, or ſomething like it. This department, when we were amongſt them, was adminiſtered by Feenou; whoſe buſineſs it was to puniſh offenders, whether againſt the ſtate, or againſt individuals. He was alſo Generaliſſimo, and commanded the warriors, when called out upon ſervice. The king took ſome pains to inform us of Feenou's office, and among other things told us, that if he himſelf

ſhould

ſhould become a bad man, Feenou would kill him. What I underſtood of being a bad man, was, that if he did not govern according to law, Feenou would be ordered, by the other great men, or by the people at large, to put him to death.

The next morning the king came on board, and brought as a preſent to the captain, one of their caps, made, or at leaſt covered, with red feathers. Theſe caps were much ſought after by the ſhip's company; as they knew they would be highly valued at Otaheite. But though very large prices were offered, not one was ever brought for ſale; which ſhewed they were no leſs valuable in the eſtimation of the people here. Theſe caps, or rather bonnets, are compoſed of the tail feathers of the tropic bird, with the red feathers of the parroquets wrought upon them, or jointly with them. They are made ſo as to tie upon the forehead without any crown, and have the form of a ſemicircle, whoſe radius is 18 or 20 inches.

Some time after the Captain ſteered for Tongataboo. While he was plying up to the harbour, the king kept ſailing round them in his canoe. There were at the ſame time, a great many ſmall canoes about the ſhips. Two of theſe, which could not get out of the way of his royal veſſel, he ran quite over, with as little concern, as if they had been bits of wood. At Tongataboo Captain Cook's reception was no leſs hoſpitable than it had been at Hepaee; grand entertainments of ſongs and dances, with exhibitions of wreſtling and boxing being ſucceſſively given.

One day the king came on board the Reſolution, and brought with him his ſon, a youth about 12 years of age. The king dined with the captain, but the ſon, though preſent, was not allowed to ſit down with him. It was very convenient to have him for a gueſt; for when he was preſent, every other native was excluded; whereas, if neither he nor Feenou were on board, the inferior chiefs would be very importunate to be of our dining party. The king was very ſoon reconciled to our manner of cooking. But ſtill, we believe, he dined

with us more for the ſake of what we gave him to drink than for what we ſet before him to eat; for he had taken a liking to our wine, would empty his bottle as well as moſt men, and was cheerful over it. But notwithſtanding this friendly intercourſe, Capt. Cook once thought proper to put the king, his brother, Freenou, and ſome other chiefs, under arreſt, till a kid, two turkey cocks, and ſome other things, that had been ſtolen, were reſtored. This expedient was ſucceſsful; and though, at firſt, it made them ſhy, it did not diminiſh the friendſhip with which they ſtill deported themſelves.

On the 17th of July, Capt. Cook ſet ſail from Middleburgh or Eaoo, which was the laſt iſland he viſited, during his intercourſe with the natives of this Archipelago, and with a light breeze at S. E. he now ſteered for the Society Iſlands. The time employed among the natives of the Friendly Iſlands was not thrown away. We expended very little of our ſea proviſions; ſubſiſting in general, upon the produce of the iſlands, while we ſtaid; and carrying away with us a quantity of proviſions ſufficient to laſt till our arrival at another ſtation, where we could depend upon a freſh ſupply. We was not ſorry, beſides, to have an opportunity of bettering the condition of theſe good people, by leaving ſeveral very uſeful animals among them; and, at the ſame time, thoſe deſigned for Otaheite, received freſh ſtrength in the paſtures of Tongataboo. Upon the whole, therefore, the advantages we received, by touching here, were very great; and we had the additional ſatisfaction to reflect, that they were received without retarding one moment, the proſecution of the great object of our voyage; the ſeaſon for proceeding to the North, being, as has already been obſerved, loſt, before we took the reſolution of bearing away for theſe iſlands.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Iſland of Toobouai diſcovered—Arrival at Otaheite—Omai's reception—Interview with Waheladooa, the chief of Tiaraboo—Omai's imprudent conduct—Girls dreſſed to bring a preſent—Omai's war canoe—Otoo's preſent and meſſage to the king of Great Britain—Departure from Otaheite, and viſit to Eimeo—Concluſion of the hiſtory of Omai, and of the two New Zealand youths.

ON the 9th of Auguſt, 1777, Capt. Cook diſcovered the ſmall iſland Toobouai, lying in the lat. of 23 deg. 25 min. S. and in 210 deg. 37 min. E. long. But as the natives who approached the ſhips in their canoes, could not be perſuaded to come on board, and the Captain had no inducement to land there, he proceeded on his voyage.

On the 12th of Aug. he ſaw Maitea, one of the Society Iſlands, and ſoon after Otaheite. We ſhall now confine ourſelves chiefly to the reception which Omai met with amongſt his countrymen, to ſome of the moſt remarkable occurrences in Capt. Cook's intercourſe with the friendly natives.

When we firſt came near the iſland, ſeveral canoes came off to the ſhip, each conducted by two or three men. But, as they were common fellows, Omai took no particular notice of them, nor they of him. They did not, even ſeem to perceive, that he was one of their countrymen, altho' they converſed with him for ſome time. At length a chief, whom I had known before, named Ootee, and Omai's brother-in-law, who chanched to be at this corner of the iſland, and three or four more perſons, all of whom knew Omai, before he embarked with Capt. Furneaux, came on board. Yet there was nothing either tender or ſtriking in their meeting. On the contrary, there ſeemed to be a perfect indifference on both ſides, till Omai, having taken his

his brother down into the cabin, he opened the drawer where he kept his red feathers, and gave him a few. This being preſently known, amongſt the reſt of the natives upon deck, the face of affairs was entirely turned, and Ootee, who would hardly ſpeak to Omai before, now begged that they might be tayos (friends) and exchange names. Omai accepted of the honour, and confirmed it with a preſent of red feathers; and Ootee, by way of return, ſent aſhore for a hog. But it was evident to every one of us, that it was not the man, but his property, they were in love with. Had he not ſhewn to them his treaſure of red feathers, which is the commodity in greateſt eſtimation at the iſland, I queſtioned much whether they would have beſtowed even a cocoa-nut upon him. Such was Omai's reception amongſt his countrymen. I own, I never expected it would be otherwiſe; but ſtill, I was in hopes, that the valuable cargo of preſents, with which the liberality of his friends in England had loaded him, would be the means of raiſing him into conſequence, and of making him reſpected, and even courted by the firſt perſons throughout the extent of the Society Iſlands. This could not but have happened, had he conducted himſelf with any degree of prudence. But, inſtead of it, I am ſorry to ſay, that he paid too little regard to the repeated advice of thoſe who wiſhed him well, and ſuffered himſelf to be duped by every deſigning knave.

The important news, of red feathers being on board our ſhips, having been conveyed on ſhore by Omai's friends, day had no ſooner begun to break, next morning, then we were ſurrounded by a multitude of canoes, crowded with people, bringing hogs to market. At firſt, a quantity of feathers, not greater than what might be got from a tom-tit, would purchaſe a hog, of forty or fifty pounds weight. But as almoſt every body in the ſhips was poſſeſſed of ſome of this precious article of trade, it fell, in its value, above five hundred per cent. before night. However, even then, the balance was much in our favour; and red feathers continued

tinued to preſerve their ſuperiority over every other commodity. Some of the natives would not part with a hog, unleſs they received an ax in exchange; but nails, beads, and other trinkets, which, during our former voyages, had ſo great a run at this iſland, were now ſo much deſpiſed, that few would deign to look at them.

In the morning of the 13th, Captain Cook came to anchor in a bay called Oheitepeha. Soon after, Omai's ſiſter came on board to ſee him; and the Captain was happy to obſerve, that, much to the honour of each, their meeting was marked with expreſſions of the moſt tender affection. After this moving ſcene, Omai and the Captain went aſhore. Here, the attention of the former was ſoon drawn to an old woman, the ſiſter of his mother. She was already at his feet, and had bedewed them plentifully with tears of joy. The Captain left him with the old lady, encircled by a number of people, in order to go and take a view of a houſe and croſs erected by the Spaniards. When he returned, he found Omai holding forth to a large company; and it was with ſome difficulty he could be got away to accompany the Captain on board. Captain Cook, it ſeems, had found, from the natives, that two Spaniſh ſhips from Lima had twice put into Oheitepeha Bay, ſince his laſt viſit in 1774. They had left ſome hogs, dogs, goats, a bull, and a ram, on ſhore. The firſt time they came, they built a houſe, and left four men behind them, carrying away four of the natives. In about ten months, the ſame ſhips returned, bringing back two of the iſlanders, the other two having died at Lima. After a ſhort ſtay, they took away their own people, but left the houſe ſtanding. This was ſituated at a ſmall diſtance from the beach. The wooden materials, of which it was compoſed, ſeemed to have been brought, ready prepared, to ſet up occaſionally; for all the planks were numbered. It was divided into two ſmall rooms; and, in the inner one, were a bench, a table, a bedſtead, ſome old hats, and other trifles, of which the natives ſeemed to be very careful, as alſo of the houſe itſelf,

which

which had ſuffered no hurt from the weather, a ſhed having been built over it. There were ſcuttles all around, which ſerved as air-holes; and perhaps, they were alſo meant to fire from, with muſquets, if ever it ſhould have been found neceſſary. At ſome diſtance, ſtood a wooden croſs, on the tranſverſe part of which was cut,

CHRISTUS VINCIT.

And on the perpendicular part was,

CAROLUS III. IMPERAT. 1774.

On the other ſide of the poſt, Captain Cook took care to preſerve the memory of the prior viſits of the Engliſh, by inſcribing,

GEORGIUS TERTIUS REX,

Annis 1767, 1769, 1773, 1774, & 1777.

Near the foot of this croſs was the grave of the Commodore of the two ſhips, who died here, while they lay in the bay, the firſt time. The Spaniards ſeem to have taken great pains to ingratiate themſelves with the inhabitants, who, on every occaſion, mentioned them with the ſtrongeſt expreſſions of eſteem and veneration. The former, however, did not ſucceed in their attempts to depreciate the character of the Engliſh. One of the four perſons whom they left behind, and whom the natives called Mateema, made himſelf very popular. He took uncommon pains to ſtudy their language, that he might be enabled to impreſs their minds with the moſt exalted ideas of the greatneſs of the Spaniſh Monarchy, and make them think meanly of the Engliſh. He even went ſo far to as aſſure them, that we no longer exiſted as an independant nation; that Pretane was only a ſmall iſland which they, (the Spaniards) had entirely deſtroyed; and that as for Captain Cook, they had met with him at ſea, and, with a few ſhot, had ſent his ſhip, with every ſoul in her to the bottom. All this and many other improbable falſehoods, did the Spaniards make theſe people believe. But, if Spain had no other views,

in

in this expedition, than to depreciate the Engliſh, ſhe had better have kept her ſhips at home; for Captain Cook's return to the iſland (which, in courſe, was quite unexpected) was conſidered as a complete refutation of all that Mateema had ſaid.

Waheiadooa, the Sovereign of Tiaraboo, (which was the name of this part of the iſland) was now abſent. (This was not the ſame perſon, though of the ſame name, with the Chief, whom Captain Cook had ſeen here during his laſt voyage; but his brother, a boy about ten years old, who had ſucceeded on the death of the elder Waheiadoo, about twenty months before, and was now under the tutorage of a Chief named Etorea. The celebrated Queen Oberea was dead.) However, he ſoon after ſent a meſſage to notify his arrival, and to deſire that the Captain would viſit him aſhore. Accordingly Omai and the Captain prepared to make him a formal viſit. On this occaſion, Omai, aſſiſted by ſome of his friends, dreſſed himſelf; not after the Engliſh faſhion, nor that of Otaheite, nor that of Tongataboo, nor in the dreſs of any country upon earth; but in a ſtrange medley of all that he was poſſeſſed of. There was nothing remarkable in this interview, except the information that Captain Cook received, that the Spaniards, when they viſited the iſland, had deſired the Chiefs not to ſuffer him to enter Oheitepeha Bay, if he ſhould return again, for that the iſland belonged to them. But the perſon, who addreſſed me with this information, that they were ſo far from paying any regard to this requeſt, that he was authoriſed now to make a formal ſurrender of the province of Tiaraboo to me, and of every thing in it; which marks very plainly, that theſe people are no ſtrangers to the policy of accommodating themſelves to preſent circumſtances. At length, the young chief was directed, by his attendants to come and embrace me; and, by way of confirming this treaty of friendſhip, we exchanged names. The ceremony being cloſed, he and his friends accompanied me on board to dinner.

Omai had juſt prepared a maro, compoſed of red and

and yellow feathers, which he intended for Otoo, the king of the whole iſland, and conſidering where we were, it was a preſent of great value. I ſaid all that I could to perſuade him not to produce it now, wiſhing him to keep it on board till an opportunity ſhould offer of preſenting it to Otoo, with his own hands. But he had too good an opinion of the honeſty and fidelity of his countrymen to take my advice. Nothing would ſerve him, but to carry it aſhore on this occaſion, and to give it to Waheiadooa, to be by him forwarded to Otoo, in order to its being added to the royal Maro. He thought, by this management, that he ſhould oblige both chiefs; whereas, he highly diſobliged the one, whoſe favour was of the moſt conſequence to him, without gaining any reward from the other. For Waheiadooa kept the maro himſelf, and only ſent to Otoo a very ſmall piece of feathers; not the twentieth part of what belonged to the magnificent preſent.

On the 24th of Auguſt, Capt. Cook left the bay of Oheitepeha, and in the evening anchored in Matavai Bay, in another part of the iſland, whence he expected his principal ſupply. Here he and Omai had an interview with Otoo, the king of the whole iſland. Omai had prepared himſelf for this ceremony, by dreſſing himſelf in his very beſt clothes, and behaved with a great deal of modeſty. Nevertheleſs, very little notice was taken of him. Perhaps, envy had ſome ſhare in producing this cold reception. He made the chief a preſent of a large piece of red feathers, and about two or three yards of gold cloth; and I gave him a ſuit of fine linen, a gold-laced hat, ſome tools, and, what was of more value than all the other articles, a quantity of red feathers, and one of the bonnets in uſe at the Friendly Iſlands.

After the hurry of this viſit was over, the king, and the whole royal family, accompanied us on board, followed by ſeveral canoes, laden with all kind of proviſions, in quantity ſufficient to have ſerved the companies of both ſhips for a week. Each of the family owned, or pretended to own, a part; ſo that we had a

preſent

preſent from every one of them; and every one of them had a ſeparate preſent in return from me; which was the great object in view. Soon after, the king's mother, who had not been preſent at the firſt interview, came on board, bringing with her a quantity of proviſions and cloth, which ſhe divided between me and Omai. For, although he was but little noticed at firſt, by his countrymen, they no ſooner gained the knowledge of his riches, than they began to court his friendſhip. I encouraged this as much as I could; for it was my wiſh to fix him with Otoo. As I intended to leave all my European animals at this iſland, I thought he would be able to give ſome inſtructions about the management of them, and about their uſe. Beſides, I knew and ſaw, the farther he was from his native iſland, he would be the better reſpected. But, unfortunately, poor Omai rejected my advice, and conducted himſelf in ſo imprudent a manner, that he ſoon loſt the friendſhip of Otoo, and of every perſon of note in Otaheite. He aſſociated with none but vagabonds and ſtrangers, whoſe ſole views were to plunder him. And, if I had not interfered, they would not have left him a ſingle article worth carrying from the iſland. This neceſſarily drew upon him the ill-will of the principal chiefs; who found that they could not procure from any one in the ſhips, ſuch valuable articles of preſents, as Omai had beſtowed on the loweſt of the people, his companions.

Our friend Omai got one good thing at this iſland, for the many good things he gave away. This was a very fine double ſailing canoe, completely equipped, and fit for ſea. Some time before, I made up for him, a ſuit of Engliſh colours; but he thought theſe too valuable to be uſed at this time; and patched up a parcel of colours, ſuch as flags and pendants, to the number of ten or a dozen, which he ſpread on different parts of his veſſel, all at the ſame time; and drew together as many people to look at her, as a man of war would, dreſſed in an European port. Theſe ſtreamers of Omai's were a mixture of Engliſh, French, Spaniſh,

and Dutch, which were all the European colours that he had ſeen. When I was laſt at this iſland, I gave to Otoo an Engliſh jack and pendant, and to Towha a pendant; which I now found they had preſerved with the greateſt care.

Omai had alſo provided himſelf with a good ſtock of cloth and coco-nut oil, which are not only in great plenty, but much better at Otaheite, than at any of the Society Iſlands; inſomuch that they are articles of trade. Omai would not have behaved ſo inconſiſtently, and ſo much unlike himſelf, as he did, in many inſtances, but for his ſiſter and brother-in-law, who, together with a few more of their acquaintance, engroſſed him entirely to themſelves, with no other view than to ſtrip him of every thing he had got. And they would, undoubtedly, have ſucceeded in their ſcheme, if I had not put a ſtop to it in time, by taking the moſt uſeful articles of his property into my poſſeſſion. But even this would not have ſaved Omai from ruin, if I had ſuffered theſe relations of his to have gone with, or to have followed us to his intended place of ſettlement, Huaheime. This they had intended; but I diſappointed their farther views of plunder, by forbidding them to ſhew themſelves in that iſland, while I remained there; and they knew me too well not to comply.

On the 28th, Otoo came on board, and informed me, that he had got a canoe, which he deſired I would take with me, and carry home, as a preſent to the Earee rahie no Pretane; it being the only thing, he ſaid, that he could ſend worth his Majeſty's acceptance. I was not a little pleaſed with Otoo, for this mark of his gratitude. It was a thought entirely his own, not one of us having given him the leaſt hint about it; and it ſhewed, that he fully underſtood to whom he was indebted for the moſt valuable preſents he had received. As it was too large for me to take on board, I could only thank him for his good intention; but it would have pleaſed him much better, if his preſent could have been accepted.

The

The frequent viſits we have lately paid to this iſland, ſeem to have created a full perſuaſion, that the intercourſe will not be diſcontinued. It was ſtrictly enjoined to me by Otoo, to requeſt, in his name, the Earee rahie no Pretane, to ſend him, by the next ſhips, red feathers, and the birds that produce them; axes, half a dozen muſquets, with powder and ſhot; and, by no means to forget horſes.

In the morning of the 30th of September, Captain Cook left Otaheite; and, the ſame evening, arrived at Eimeo. Here, the loſs of a gnat, which was ſtolen, forced him into an hoſtile expedition acroſs the iſland; nor was this animal (at that conjuncture of great importance to him) given up, till ſome houſes and canoes were burnt. On the 11th of October, he ſteered for Huaheine, where it was his intention finally to ſettle Omai, and where he arrived the next morning. Our arrival here, brought all the principal people of the iſland to our ſhips. This was juſt what I wiſhed, as it was high time to think of ſettling Omai; and the preſence of theſe chiefs, I gueſſed, would enable me to do it in the moſt ſatisfactory manner. He now ſeemed to have an inclination to eſtabliſh himſelf at Ulietea; and if he and I could have agreed about the mode of bringing that plan to bear, I ſhould have had no objection to adopt it. His father had been diſpoſſeſſed by the men of Bolabola, when they conquered Ulietea, of ſome land in that iſland; and I made no doubt of getting it reſtored to the ſon in an amicable manner. For that purpoſe it was neceſſary, that he ſhould be of good terms with thoſe who now were maſters of the iſland; but he was too great a patriot to liſten to any ſuch thing; and was vain enough to ſuppoſe, that I would reinſtate him in his forfeited lands by force. This made it impoſſible to fix him at Ulietea, and pointed out to me Huaheine as the proper place. I, therefore, reſolved to avail myſelf of the preſence of the chief men of the iſland, and to make this propoſal to them.

After the hurry of the morning was over, we got ready to pay a formal viſit to Taireetareea, meaning

then to introduce this buſineſs. Omai dreſſed himſelf very properly on the occaſion; and prepared a handſome preſent for the chief himſelf and another for his Eatooa. Indeed, after he had got clear of the gang that ſurrounded him at Otaheite, he behaved with ſuch prudence as to gain reſpect. Our landing drew moſt of our viſitors from the ſhips; and they, as well as thoſe that were on ſhore, aſſembled in a large houſe. The concourſe of people, on this occaſion, was very great; and, amongſt them, there appeared to be a greater proportion of perſonable men and women than we had ever ſeen in one aſſembly at any one of theſe iſlands. Not only the bulk of the people ſeemed, in general, much ſtouter and fairer than thoſe of Otaheite, but there was alſo a much greater number of men who appeared to be of conſequence, in poportion to the extent of the iſland; moſt of whom had exactly the corpulent appearance of the chiefs of Wateeo. We waited ſome time for Tareetareea, as I would do nothing till the Earee rahie came; but when he appeared, I found that his preſence might have been diſpenſed with, as he was not above eight or ten years of age. Omai, who ſtood at a little diſtance from this circle of great men, began with making his offering to the gods, conſiſting of red feathers, cloth, &c. Then followed another offering, which was to be given to the gods by the chiefs; and after that, ſeveral other ſmall pieces and tufts of red feathers were preſented. Each article was laid before one of the company, who, I underſtood, was a prieſt, and was delivered with a ſet ſpeech or prayer, ſpoken by one of Omai's friends, who ſat by him, but moſtly dictated by himſelf. In theſe prayers, he did not forget his friends in England, nor thoſe who had brought him ſave back. The Earee rahie no Pretane, Lord Sandwich, Toote, Tatee, Cook and Clerk, were mentioned in every one of them. When Omai's offerings and prayers were finiſhed, the prieſt took each article, in the ſame order in which it had been laid before him, and after repeating a prayer, ſent it to the morai; which, as Omai told us,

us, was at a great diſtance, otherwiſe the offerings would have been made there.

Theſe religious ceremonies having been performed, Omai ſat down by me, and we entered upon buſineſs, by giving the young chief my preſent, and receiving his in return; and, all things conſidered, they were liberal enough on both ſides. Some arrangements were next agreed upon, as to the manner of carrying on the intercourſe betwixt us; and I pointed out the miſchievous conſequences that would attend their robbing us, as they had done during my former viſits. Omai's eſtabliſhment was then propoſed to the aſſembled chiefs.

He acquainted them, that he had been carried to our country, where he was well received by the great king and his earees, and treated with every mark of regard and affection, while he ſtaid amongſt us; that he had been brought back again, enriched by our liberality, with a variety of articles, which would prove very uſeful to his countrymen; and that, beſides the two horſes which were to remain with him, ſeveral other new and valuable animals had been left at Otaheite, which will ſoon multiply, and furniſh a ſufficient number for the uſe of the iſlands in the neighbourhood. He then ſignified to them my earneſt requeſt, in return for all my friendly offices, that they would give him a piece of land, to build a houſe upon, and to raiſe proviſions for himſelf and ſervants; adding, that, if this could not be obtained for him in Huaheine, either by gift or by purchaſe, I was determined to carry him to Ulietea, and fix him there.

Perhaps I have here made a better ſpeech for my friend, than he actually delivered; but theſe were the topics I dictated to him. I obſerved, that what he concluded with, about carrying him to Ulietea, ſeemed to meet the approbation of all the chiefs; and I inſtantly ſaw the reaſon. Omai had, as I have already mentioned, vainly flattered himſelf, that I meant to uſe force in reſtoring him to his father's lands in Ulietea, and he had talked idly, and without any authority from me, on this ſubject, to ſome of the preſent aſſembly; who

dreamed

dreamed of nothing leſs than a hoſtile invaſion of Ulietea, and of being aſſiſted by me to drive the Bolabola men out of that iſland. It was of conſequence, therefore, that I ſhould undeceive them; and, in order to this, I ſignified, in the moſt peremptory manner, that I neither would aſſiſt them in ſuch an enterprize, nor ſuffer it to be put in execution, while I was in their ſeas; and that, if Omai fixed himſelf in Ulietea, he muſt be introduced as a friend, and not forced upon the Bolabola men as their conqueror.

This declaration gave a new turn to the ſentiments of the council. One of the chiefs immediately expreſſed himſelf to this effect: That the whole iſland of Huaheine, and every thing in it, were mine; and that, therefore, I might give what portion of it I pleaſed to my friend. Omai, who, like the reſt of his countrymen, ſeldom ſees things beyond the preſent moment, was greatly pleaſed to hear this; thinking, no doubt, that I ſhould be very liberal, and give him enough. But to offer what it would have been improper to accept, I conſidered as offering nothing at all, and therefore, I now deſired, that they would not only aſſign the particular ſpot, but alſo the exact quantity of land, which they would allot for the ſettlement. Upon this, ſome chiefs, who had already left the aſſembly, were ſent for; and, after a ſhort conſultation among themſelves, my requeſt was granted by general conſent, and the ground immediately pitched upon, adjoining to the houſe where our meeting was held. The extent along the ſhore of the harbour, was about 200 yards; and its depth to the foot of the hill, ſomewhat more; but a proportionable part of the hill was included in the grant.

This buſineſs being ſettled to the ſatisfaction of all parties, I ſet up a tent aſhore, eſtabliſhed a poſt, and erected the obſervatories. The carpenters of both ſhips were ſet to work, to build a houſe for Omai, in which he might ſecure the European commodities that were his property. At the ſame time ſome hands were employed in making a garden for his uſe, planting ſhaddocks, vines, pine-apples, melons, and the ſeeds of

of ſeveral other vegetable articles; all of which I had the ſatisfaction of obſerving to be in a flouriſhing ſtate before I left the iſland.

Omai now began ſeriouſly to attend to his own affairs, and repented heartily of his ill-judged prodigality while at Otaheite. He found at Huaheine, a brother, a ſiſter, and a brother-in-law, the ſiſter being married. But theſe did not plunder him, as he had lately been by his other relations. I was ſorry, however, to diſcover that, though they were too honeſt to do him any injury, they were of too little conſequence in the iſland to do him any good.

A man who is richer than his neighbour, is ſure to be envied, by numbers who wiſh to ſee him brought down to their own level. And what was his principal danger, he was to be placed in the very ſingular ſituation of being the only rich man in the community to which he was to belong. And having by a fortunate connection with us, got into his poſſeſſion an accumulated quantity of a ſpecies of treaſure which none of his countrymen could create by any art or induſtry of his own; while all coveted a ſhare of this envied wealth, as it was natural to apprehend, that all would be ready to join in attempting to ſtrip its ſole proprietor.

To prevent this, if poſſible, I adviſed him to make a proper diſtribution of ſome of his movables, to two or three of the principal chiefs; who, being thus gratified themſelves, might be induced to take him under their patronage, and protect him from the injuries of others. He promiſed to follow my advice, and I heard, with ſatisfaction, before I ſailed, that this prudent ſtep had been taken. I took every opportunity of notifying to the inhabitants, that it was my intention to return to this iſland again, after being abſent the uſual time; and that if I did not find Omai in the ſame ſtate of ſecurity in which I now left him, all thoſe whom I ſhould then diſcover, to have been his enemies, might expect to feel the weight of my reſentment.

Omai's

Omai's houſe being nearly finiſhed, many of his movables were carried aſhore on the 26th. Amongſt a variety of other uſeleſs articles, was a box of toys, which, when expoſed to public view, ſeemed greatly to pleaſe the gazing multitude. But as to pots, kettles, plates, diſhes, drinking-mugs, glaſſes, and the whole train of our domeſtic accommodations, hardly one of his countrymen would ſo much as look at them. Omai himſelf now began to think that they were of no manner of uſe to him; and therefore he very wiſely diſpoſed of as many of theſe articles of Engliſh furniture for the kitchen and pantry as he could find purchaſers for, amongſt the people of the ſhips, receiving from them, in return, hatchets, and other tools, which had a more intrinſic value in this part of the world, and added more to his diſtinguiſhing ſuperiority over thoſe with whom he was to paſs the remainder of his days.

As ſoon as Omai was ſettled in his new habitation, I began to think of leaving the iſland; and got every thing off from the ſhore, this evening, except the horſe and mare, and a goat big with kid; which were left in the poſſeſſion of our friend, with whom we were now finally to part. I alſo gave him a boar and two ſows of the Engliſh breed; and he had got two ſows of his own.

The hiſtory of Omai will, perhaps, intereſt a very numerous claſs of readers, more than any other occurrence of a voyage, the objects of which do not, in general, promiſe much entertainment. Every circumſtance, therefore, which may ſerve to convey a ſatisfactory account of the exact ſituation in which he was left, will be thought worth preſerving; and the following particulars are added, to complete the view of his domeſtic eſtabliſhment. He had picked up at Otaheite four or five Toutous; the two Zealand youths remained with him; and his brother, and ſome others, joined him at Huaheine: ſo that his family conſiſted already, of eight or ten perſons; if that can be called a family, to which not a ſingle female, as yet, belonged;

nor

nor, I doubt, was likely to belong, unleſs its maſter became leſs volatile.

The houſe which we erected for him was 24 feet by 18; and 10 feet high. It was compoſed of boards, the ſpoils of our military operations at Eimeo; and, in building it, as few nails as poſſible were uſed, that there might be no inducement, from the love of iron, to pull it down.

His European weapons conſiſted of a muſquet, bayonet, and cartouch-box, a fowling-piece, two pair of piſtols, and two or three ſwords or cutlaſſes. The poſſeſſion of theſe made him quite happy; which was my only view in giving him ſuch preſents. For I was always of opinion, that he would have been happier without fire-arms, and other European weapons, than with them; as ſuch implements of war, in the hands of one, whoſe prudent uſe of them I had ſome grounds for miſtruſting, would rather increaſe his dangers, than eſtabliſh his ſuperiority. After he had got on ſhore every thing that belonged to him, and was ſettled in his new habitation, he had moſt of the officers of both ſhips, two or three times, to dinner, and his table was always well ſupplied with the very beſt proviſions that the iſland produced.

Before I ſailed, I had the following inſcription cut upon the outſide of his houſe:

Georgius Tertius, Rex, 2 Novembris, 1777.

Naves { Reſolution, Jac. Cook, Pr.
Diſcovery, Car. Clerke, Pr.

On the 2d of November, at four o'clock in the afternoon, I took the advantage of a breeze, which then ſprung up at E. and ſailed out of the harbour. Moſt of our friends remained on board till the ſhips were under ſail; when, to gratify their curioſity, I ordered five guns to be fired. The men all took their leave, except Omai, who remained till we were at ſea. We had come to ſail by a hawſer faſtened to the ſhore. In caſting the ſhip, it parted, being cut

by the rocks, and the outer end was left behind; as thoſe who caſt it off, did not perceive that it was broken; ſo that it became neceſſary to ſend a boat to bring it on board. In this boat Omai went on aſhore, after taking a very affectionate farewel of all the officers. He ſuſtained himſelf with a manly reſolution, till he came to me. Then his utmoſt effort to conceal his tears failed; and Mr. King, who went in the boat, told me, that he wept all the time in going aſhore.

It was no ſmall ſatisfaction to reflect, that we had brought him ſafe back to the very ſpot from which he was taken. And, yet, ſuch is the ſtrange nature of human affairs, that we left him in a leſs deſirable ſituation, than he was in before his connection with us. I do not, by this, mean, that, becauſe he has taſted the ſweets of civiliſed life, he muſt become more miſerable from being obliged to abandon all thoughts of continuing them. I confine myſelf to this ſingle diſagreeable circumſtance, that the advantages he received from us, have placed him in a more hazardous ſituation, with reſpect to his perſonal ſafety. Omai, from being much careſſed in England, loſt ſight of his original condition; and never conſidered in what manner his acquiſitions, either of knowledge or of riches, would be eſteemed by his countrymen, at his return; which were the only things he could have to recommend him to them now, more than before, and on which he could build either his future greatneſs or happineſs. He ſeemed even to have miſtaken their genius in this reſpect; and, in ſome meaſure, to have forgotten their cuſtoms; otherwiſe he muſt have known the extreme difficulty there would be in getting himſelf admitted as a perſon of rank, where there is, perhaps, no inſtance of a man's being raiſed from an inferior ſtation by the greateſt merit. Rank ſeems to be the very foundation of all diſtinction here, and, of its attendant, power; and ſo pertinaciouſly, or rather blindly adhered to, that unleſs a perſon has ſome degree of it, he will certainly be deſpiſed and hated, if he aſſumes the appearance of exerciſing any authority. This was really the caſe, in

ſome

ſome meaſure, with Omai; though his countrymen were pretty cautions of expreſſing their ſentiments while we remained among them.

Omai's father was a man of conſiderable property in Ulietea, when that iſland was conquered by thoſe of Bolabola; and, with many others, ſought refuge in Huaheine, where he died, and left Omai, with ſome other children; who, by that means, became totally dependant. In this ſituation he was taken up by Captain Furneaux, and carried to England. Whether he really expected from his treatment there, that any aſſiſtance could be given him againſt the enemies of his father and his country; or whether he imagined that his own perſonal courage, and ſuperiority of knowledge would be ſufficient to diſpoſſeſs the conquerors of Ulietea, is uncertain; but from the beginning of the voyage, this was his conſtant theme. He would not liſten to our remonſtrances on ſo wild a determination, but flew into a paſſion, if more moderate and reaſonable counſels were propoſed for his advantage. Nay, ſo infatuated and attached to his favourite ſcheme was he, that he affected to believe theſe people would certainly quit the conquered iſland, as ſoon as they ſhould hear of his arrival in Otaheite. As we advanced, however, on our voyage, he became more ſenſible of his error; and, by the time we reached the Friendly Iſland, had, even ſuch apprehenſions of his reception at home, that he would fain have ſtaid behind at Tongataboo, under Feenou's protection. At theſe iſlands, he ſquandered away much of his European treaſure very unneceſſarily; and he was equally imprudent at Tiaraboo, where he could have no view of making friends, as he had not any intention of remaining there.

Whatever faults belonged to Omai's character, they were more than over-balanced by his good-nature and docile diſpoſition. During the whole time he was with me, I very ſeldom had reaſon to be ſeriouſly diſpleaſed with his general conduct. His grateful heart always retained the higheſt ſenſe of the favours he had received in England; nor will he ever forget thoſe who honoured

him with their protection and friendſhip, during his ſtay there.

Omai's return, and the ſubſtantial proofs he brought back with him of our liberality, encouraged many to offer themſelves as volunteers to attend me to Pretane. I took every opportunity of expreſſing my determination to reject all ſuch applications. But, notwithſtanding this, Omai, who was very ambitious of remaining the only great traveller, being afraid leſt I might be prevailed upon to put others in a ſituation of rivalling him, frequently put me in mind, that Lord Sandwich had told him, no other of his countrymen were to come to England.

If there had been the moſt diſtant probability of any ſhip being again ſent to New Zealand, I would have brought the two youths of that country home with me, as both of them were very deſirous of continuing with us. Tiarooa, the eldeſt, was an exceeding well diſpoſed young man, with ſtrong natural ſenſe, and capable of receiving any inſtruction. He ſeemed to be very ſenſible of the inferiority of his own country to theſe iſlands, and reſigned himſelf, though perhaps with reluctance, to end his days in eaſe and plenty, at Huaheine. But the other was ſo ſtrongly attached to us, that he was taken out of the ſhip, and carried aſhore by force. He was a witty, ſmart boy, and on that account, much noticed on board.

CHAP. IV.

Arrival at Ulietea—Intelligence from Omai—Deſertion from the ſhips—The chief's family confined on that account—Conſpiracy to ſeize the Captains Cook and Clerke—Deſerters brought back—Chriſtmas Iſland and the Sandwich Iſlands diſcovered, &c. &c.

THE next iſland which Captain Cook viſited was that of Ulietea, where he arrived on the 30th of Nov. 1777. Here he remained upwards of a month. He was ſtill near enough to Omai, to have intelligence

intelligence of his proceedings; and, having desired to hear from him, the latter, about a fortnight after the Captain's departure from Huaheine, sent two of his people in a canoe, who brought the satisfactory intelligence, that he remained undisturbed by the people of the island, and that every thing went well with him, except that his goat had died in kidding. This intelligence was accompanied by a request, that the Captain would send him another goat, and two axes. The messengers were accordingly sent back with the axes, and two kids, male and female.

In the night, between the 12th and 13th, a marine deserted from his post at the observatory, carrying with him his musket and accoutrements. Captain Cook went, with a strong party, in pursuit of him, and found him in a house sitting between two women, who instantly rose to plead in his behalf. The Captain, in order to discountenance such proceedings, frowned on them, and bid them be gone: upon which they burst into tears, and walked off. The fellow had nothing to say in his defence, but that the natives had enticed him away.

On the 24th, the desertion of a midshipman and a seaman had like to have been attended with more serious consequences. As the natives were evidently desirous of concealing the deserters, the difficulty of recovering them was great. The pursuit after the fugitives was ineffectual: they had escaped to the island of Bolabola.

On the 26th, Oreo, the chief of Ulietea, with his son, daughter, and son-in-law, went on board the Resolution. The three last being invited by Captain Clerke to go on board the Discovery, were immediately confined in the cabin. The chief, who still remained on board the Resolution, was informed that he had liberty to depart, and if he recovered the two deserters, his family should be released, but that, otherwise, they should be carried away when the ships sailed. This expedient proved successful, although very dangerous: for a scheme had been formed

formed to ſeize the perſon of Captain Cook, as he went to his uſual bathing-place; and alſo Captain Clerke and Lieutenant Gore, as they were walking on ſhore; but Captain Cook did not judge it ſafe in ſuch critical circumſtances, to repeat his bathing; and a piſtol in Captain Clerke's hand had intimidated the natives. The conſpiracy was firſt diſcovered by a girl, whom one of the officers had brought from Huaheine: On the 28th, Oreo brought back the two deſerters, who had been taken on the ſmall iſland of Toobaee; and the family of Oreo was immediately releaſed.

On the 8th of December, Captain Cook viſited Bolabola, where he ſtayed no longer than to purchaſe of Opoony, the chief of that iſland, the anchor which had been left there by M. Bougainville.

Leaving the iſland of Bolabola, we ſteered to the Northward; and in the night between the 22d and 23d, croſſed the line in the long. of 203 deg. 15 min. E. On the 24th they diſcovered an iſland, which they called Chriſtmas Iſland, a ſmall, barren, and uninhabited ſpot. Having weighed anchor on the 2d of Jan. 1778, they reſumed their courſe to the Northward, and on the 18th, diſcovered ſeveral ſmall iſlands in the lat. of 21 deg. 12 min. N. and long. 200 deg. 41 min. E. for one of theſe they ſteered; and, at firſt, were in ſome doubt whether or no it was inhabited. However, they ſoon ſaw ſeveral canoes coming off from the ſhore towards the ſhips, which were immediately brought to, to give them time to join. They had from three to ſix men each; and on their approach, it was an agreeable ſurpriſe to find that they ſpoke the language of Otaheite. It required but little addreſs to get them to come along-ſide; but no entreaties could prevail on any of them to come on board. Their behaviour ſeemed perfectly inoffenſive, and they had no arms of any kind, except ſome ſmall ſtones, which they had evidently brought for their defence, and which

which they threw away when they found they were not wanted.

Captain Cook proceeded to coaſt along the iſland, in ſearch of anchoring ground, theſe canoes left him; but others came off, bringing with them roaſted pigs, and ſome fine potatoes, which they exchanged for whatever was offered them. Several pigs were purchaſed for a ſix-penny nail. The next morning we met with ſeveral more canoes filled with people, ſome of whom took courage and ventured on board.

In the courſe of our voyages, we never before met with the natives of any place ſo much aſtoniſhed, as theſe people were upon entering a ſhip. Their eyes were continually flying from object to object; the wildneſs of their looks and geſtures fully expreſſing their intire ignorance about every thing they ſaw, and ſtrongly marking to us, that, till now, they had never been viſited by Europeans, nor been acquainted with any of our commodities, except iron; which, however, it was plain, they had only heard of, or had known it in ſome ſmall quantity, brought to them at ſome diſtant period. Plates of earthen-ware, china cups, and other ſuch things, they were ſo new to them, that they aſked if they were made of wood, and wiſhed to have ſome, that they might carry them to be looked at on ſhore. They were in ſome reſpect naturally well bred, or at leaſt, fearful of giving offence, aſking where they ſhould ſit down, whether they might ſpit upon the deck, and the like. One of the natives having ſtolen a butcher's cleaver, leaped overboard, got into his canoe, and haſtened to the ſhore, the boats purſued him in vain.

Having ſent three armed boats under the command of Mr. Williamſon, to look for a landing place, and for freſh water, about noon, Mr. Williamſon came back, and reported, that he had ſeen a large pond behind a beach near one of the villages, which the natives told him contained freſh water; and

and that there was anchoring ground before it. He alſo reported, that he attempted to land in another place, but was prevented by the natives, who, coming down to the boats in great numbers, attempted to take away the oars, muſquets, and in ſhort, every thing they could lay hold of; preſſed ſo thick upon him, that he was obliged to fire, by which one man was killed. But this unhappy circumſtance I did not know till after we had left the iſland; ſo that all my meaſures were directed as if nothing of the kind had happened. Mr. Williamſon told me, that after the man fell, his countrymen took him up, carried him off, and then retired from the boat, but ſtill they made ſignals for our people to land, which he declined. It did not appear to Mr. Williamſon, that the natives had any deſign to kill, or even to hurt, any of his party; but they ſeemed excited by mere curioſity, to get from them what they had, being at the ſame time, ready to give, in return, any thing of their own.

In the afternoon of the 20th, I went aſhore with three armed boats, and twelve marines, to examine the water, and to try the diſpoſition of the inhabitants, ſeveral hundreds of whom were aſſembled on a ſandy beach before the village; behind it was a narrow valley, the bottom of which was occupied by the piece of water.

The very inſtant I leaped on ſhore, the collected body of the natives all fell flat upon their faces, and remained in that very humble poſture, till, by expreſſive ſigns, I prevailed upon them to riſe. They then brought a great many ſmall pigs, which they preſented to me, with plantain-trees, uſing much the ſame ceremonies that we had ſeen practiſed on ſuch occaſions, at the Society and other iſlands; and a long prayer being ſpoken by a ſingle perſon, in which others of the aſſembly ſometimes joined. I expreſſed my acceptance of their proffered friendſhip, by giving them, in return, ſuch preſents as I had brought with me from the ſhip for that purpoſe. When this introductory

introductory buſineſs was finiſhed, I ſtationed a guard upon the beach, and got ſome of the natives to conduct me to the water, which proved to be very good, and in a proper ſituation for our purpoſe. It was ſo conſiderable, that it may be called a lake; and it extended farther up the country than we could ſee. Having ſatisfied myſelf about this eſſential point, and about the peaceable diſpoſition of the natives, I returned on board; and then gave orders that every thing ſhould be in readineſs for landing and filling our water-caſks in the morning (the 21ſt) when I went aſhore with the people employed in this ſervice, having a party of marines with us for a guard, who were ſtationed on the beach.

As ſoon as we landed, a trade was ſet on foot for hogs and potatoes, which the people of the iſland gave us in exchange for nails and pieces of iron, formed into ſomething like chiſſels. We met with no obſtruction in watering; on the contrary, the natives aſſiſted our men in rolling the caſks to and from the pool; and readily performed whatever we required. Every thing thus going on to my ſatisfaction, and conſidering my preſence on the ſpot as unneceſſary, I left the command to Mr. Williamſon, and made an excurſion into the country, up the valley, accompanied by Mr. Anderſon and Mr. Webber. A numerous train of natives followed us; and one of them, whom I had diſtinguiſhed for his activity in keeping the reſt in order, I made choice of as our guide. This man, for ſome time, proclaimed our approach; and every one whom we met, fell proſtrate upon the ground, and remained in that poſition till we had paſſed. This, as I afterwards underſtood, is the mode of paying their reſpect to their own great chiefs.

At ſun-ſet, I brought ſome of the natives on board, having procured in the courſe of the day 9 tons of water; we exchanged nails for 80 pigs and a few fowls. Theſe people merited our beſt commendations, in this commercial intercourſe, never once attempting to cheat us. Some of them, indeed, as already mentioned, at firſt, betrayed a thieveiſh diſpoſition; but they ſoon

laid aſide their conduct, which, we convinced them, they could not perſevere in with impunity.

Amongſt the articles which they brought to barter, this day, we could not help taking notice of a particular ſort of cloak and cap, which, even in countries were dreſs is more particularly attended to, might be reckoned elegant. The firſt, are nearly of the ſize and ſhape of the ſhort cloaks worn by the women in England, and the men in Spain, reaching to the middle of the back, and tied looſely before. The ground of them is a net-work, upon which the moſt beautiful red and yellow feathers are ſo cloſely fixed, that the ſurface might be compared to the thickeſt and richeſt velvet, which they reſemble, both as to the feel, and the gloſſy appearance. The means of varying the mixture is very different; ſome having triangular ſpaces of red and yellow alternately; others a kind of creſſent; and ſome that were entirely red, had a broad yellow border, which made them appear, at ſome diſtance, exactly like a ſcarlet cloak edged with gold lace. The brilliant colours of the feathers, in thoſe that happened to be new, added not a little to their fine appearance; and we found, that they were in high eſtimation with their owners; for they would not, at firſt, part with one of them, for any thing that we offered, aſking no leſs a price than a muſquet; but ſome were afterwards purchaſed for large nails.

The cap is made almoſt exactly like a helmet, with the middle part, or creſt, ſometimes of a hand's breadth, and it ſits very cloſe upon the head, having notches to admit the ears. It is a frame of twigs and oſiers, covered with net-work into which are wrought feathers, in the ſame manner as upon the cloaks, though rather cloſer, and leſs diverſified; the greater part being red, with ſome black, yellow, or green ſtripes, on the ſides, following the curve direction of the creſt. Theſe, probably, complete the dreſs, with the cloaks, for the natives ſometimes, appeared with both on together.

On the 29th, Capt. Cook left Atooi, being driven from the road by ſtreſs of weather, and ſoon arrived off

off the iſland of Oneeheow. Here they were viſited as before by the natives in their canoes. Many of them came readily on board, crouching down upon the deck, and not quitting that humble poſture, till they were deſired to get up. They had brought ſeveral females with them, who remained along-ſide in their canoes, behaving with far leſs modeſty than their country women of Atooi; and, at times, all joining in a ſong, not remarkable for its melody, though performed in very exact concert, by beating time upon their breaſts with their hands. The men who had come on board, did not ſtay long; and before they departed, ſome of them requeſted our permiſſion to lay down on the deck, locks of their hair.

On Sunday, Feb. 1, I went aſhore in the pinnace, taking with me a ram-goat and two ewes, a boar and ſow-pig of the Engliſh breed; and the ſeeds of melons, pumkins, and onions; being very deſirous of benefiting theſe poor people, by furniſhing them with ſome additional articles of food. To one of them, whom Mr. Gore had obſerved aſſuming ſome command over the reſt, I gave the goats, pigs, and ſeeds. I ſhould have left theſe well-intended preſents at Atooi, had we not been ſo unexpectedly driven from that iſland.

While the people were engaged in filling four water caſks, I walked a little way up the country, attended by the man above-mentioned, and followed by two others carrying the two pigs. As ſoon as we got upon a riſing ground, I ſtopped to look round me; and obſerved a woman, on the oppoſite ſide of the valley where I landed, calling to her country women who attended me. Upon this, the chief began to mutter ſomething which I ſuppoſed was a prayer; and the two men, who carried the pigs, continued to walk round me all the time, making, at leaſt, a dozen circuits before the other had finiſhed his crayſon. This ceremony being performed, we proceeded; and, preſently, met people coming from all parts, who, on being called to by my attendants, threw themſelves proſtrate on their faces, till I was out of ſight. The ground, which I paſſed, was in a ſtate of nature,

nature, very ſtony, and the ſoil ſeemed poor. It was, however, covered with ſhrubs and plants, ſome of which perfumed the air with more delicious fragrancy than I had met with at any of the other iſlands viſited by us in this part of the ocean.

Theſe two iſlands of Atooi and Oheeheow, were part of a cluſter of iſlands, now firſt diſcovered, to which Capt. Cook gave the name of Sandwich iſlands. It is worthy of obſervation, that the iſlands in the Pacific Ocean, which our late voyages have added to the geography of the globe, have been generally found lying in groups or cluſters; the ſingle intermediate iſlands, as yet diſcovered, being few in proportion to the others; though, probably, there are many more of them ſtill unknown, which ſerve as ſteps between the ſeveral cluſters. Of this newly diſcovered Archipelago. Capt. Cook now ſaw five, whoſe names, as given by the natives, are Woahoo, Atooi, Oneeheow, Oreehoua, and Tahoora. Of Atooi, which is the largeſt, we ſhall proceed to give the moſt intereſting particulars.

The inhabitants are of a middling ſtature, firmly made, with ſome exceptions, neither remarkable for a beautiful ſhape, nor for ſtriking features, which rather expreſs an openneſs and good-nature, than a keen intelligent diſpoſition. Their viſage, eſpecially amongſt the women, is ſometimes round, but others have it long; nor can we ſay, that they are diſtinguiſhed, as a nation, by any general caſt of countenance. Their colour is nearly of a nut brown, and it may be difficult to make a nearer compariſon. The women are a little more delicate than the men, in their formation; but I may ſay, that, with a very few exceptions, they have little claim to thoſe peculiarities that diſtinguiſh the ſex in other countries. However, upon the whole, they are far from being ugly, and appear to have few natural deformities of any kind.

They are vigorous, active, and expert ſwimmers; leaving their canoes upon the moſt trifling occaſion, diving under them, and ſwimming to others, though at a great diſtance. It was very common to ſee women, with

with infants at the breaſt, when the ſurf was ſo high, that they could not land in the canoes, leap overboard, and without endangering their little ones, ſwim to the ſhore, through a ſea that looked dreadful.

From the number which we ſaw collected at every village, as we ſailed paſt, it may be ſuppoſed, that the inhabitants of this iſland are pretty numerous. Any computation, that we make, can be only conjectural. But, that ſome notion may be formed, which ſhall not greatly err on either ſide, I would ſuppoſe, that, including the ſtragling houſes, there might be, upon the whole iſland, ſixty ſuch villages, as that before which we anchored; and that, allowing five perſons to each houſe, there would be, in every village, five hundred; or thirty thouſand upon the iſland. This number is, certainly, not exaggerated; for we had ſometimes three thouſand perſons, at leaſt, upon the beach; when it could not be ſuppoſed, that above a tenth part of the inhabitants were preſent.

The women have large pieces of cloth wrapped round them, reaching from juſt below the breaſt to the hams, or lower; and ſeveral were ſeen with pieces thrown looſely about the ſhoulders, which covered the greateſt part of the body; but the children, when very young, are quite naked. They wear nothing upon the head; but the hair, in both ſexes, is cut in different forms; and the general faſhion, eſpecially among the women, is, to have it long before, and ſhort behind. The men often have it cut, or ſhaved, on each ſide, in ſuch a manner, that the remaining part, in ſome meaſure, reſembles the creſt of their caps or helmets, formerly deſcribed. Both ſexes, however, ſeem very careleſs about their hair, and have nothing like combs to dreſs it with. Inſtances of wearing it, in a ſingular manner, were ſometimes met with among the men, who twiſt it into a number of ſeparate parcels, like the tails of a wig, each about the thickneſs of a finger; though the greateſt part of theſe, which are ſo long that they reach far down the back, we obſerved, were artificially fixed upon the head, over their own hair. It is remarkable, that contrary

trary to the general practice of the iſlands we had hitherto diſcovered in the Pacific Ocean, the people of the Sandwich Iſlands have not their ears perforated; nor have they the leaſt idea of wearing ornaments in them. Both ſexes, nevertheleſs, adorn themſelves with necklaces made of bunches of ſmall black cord, like our hat-ſtring, often above an hundred-fold; exactly like thoſe of Wateeoo; only, that, inſtead of the two little balls, on the middle before, they fix a ſmall bit of wood, ſtone, or ſhell, about two inches long, with a broad hook, turning forward at its lower part, well poliſhed. They have, likewiſe, necklaces of many ſtrings of very ſmall ſhells, or of the dried flowers of the Indian mallow. And ſometimes, a ſmall human image of bone, about three inches long neatly poliſhed, is hung round the neck. The women alſo wear bracelets of a ſingle ſhell, pieces of black wood, with bits of ivory interſperſed, and well poliſhed, fixed by a ſtring drawn very cloſely through them; or others of hogs teeth, laid parallel to each other, with the concave part outward, and the points cut off, faſtened together as the former; ſome of which made only of large boars' tuſks, are very elegant. The men, ſometimes wear plumes of the tropic birds feathers, ſtuck in their heads; or thoſe of cocks, faſtened round neat poliſhed ſticks, two feet long, commonly decorated, at the lower part, with oora; and, for the ſame purpoſe, the ſkin of a white dog's tail is ſewed over a ſtick, with its tuft at the end. They alſo, frequently, wear on the head a kind of ornament, of a finger's thickneſs, or more, covered with red and yellow feathers, curiouſly varied, and tied behind, and on the arm, above the elbow, a kind of broad ſhell-work, grounded upon net-work.

The men are frequently punctured, though not in any particular part, as the Otaheitans, and thoſe of Tongataboo. Sometimes there are a few marks upon their hands, or arms, and near the groin; but frequently we could obſerve none at all; though a few individuals had more of this ſort of ornament, than we had uſually ſeen at other places, and ingeniouſly executed

in

in a great variety of lines and figures, on the arms and fore part of the belly; on which latter, ſome of them had the figure of the taame, or breaſt-plate, of Otaheite, though we did not meet with the thing itſelf amongſt them.

Though they ſeem to have adopted the mode of living in villages, there is no appearance of defence or fortification, near any of them: and the houſes are ſcattered about, without any order, either with reſpect to the diſtances from each other, or their poſition in any particular direction. Neither is there any proportion as to their ſize; ſome being large and commodious, from forty to fifty feet long, and twenty or thirty broad, while others of them are mere hovels. Their figure is not unlike oblong corn, or hay-ſtacks; or, perhaps, a better idea may be conceived of them, if we ſuppoſe the roof a barn placed on the ground, in ſuch a manner, as to form a high, acute ridge, with two very low ſides, hardly diſcernable at a diſtance. The gable, at each end, correſponding to the ſides, make theſe habitations perfectly cloſe all round; and they are well thatched with long graſs, which is laid on ſlender poles, diſpoſed with ſome regularity. The entrance is made differently in the end or ſide, and is an oblong hole, ſo low, that one muſt rather creep than walk in; and is often ſhut up by a board of planks, faſtened together, which ſerves as a door, but having no hinges, muſt be removed occaſionally. No light enters the houſe, but by this opening; and though ſuch cloſe habitations may afford a comfortable retreat in bad weather, they ſeem but ill adapted to the warmth of the climate. They are however, kept remarkably clean; and their floors are covered with a large quantity of dried graſs, over which they ſpread mats to ſit and ſleep upon. At one end ſtands a kind of a bench, about three feet high, on which their houſehold utenſils are placed. The catalogue is not long. It conſiſts of gourd-ſhells, which they convert into veſſels that ſerve as bottles to hold water, and as baſkets to contain their victuals, and other things, with covers of the ſame; and a few wooden bowls

bowls and trenchers, of different ſizes. Judging from what we ſaw growing, and from what we brought to market, there can be no doubt, that the greateſt part of their vegetable food conſiſts of ſweet potatoes, taro, and plantains; and that bread-fruit and yams are rather to be eſteemed rarities. Of animal food, they can be in no want; as they have abundance of hogs, which run, without reſtraint, about the houſes; and if they eat dogs, which is not improbable, their ſtock of theſe ſeemed to be very conſiderable. The great-number of fiſhing-hooks found among them, ſhewed that they derive no inconſiderable ſupply of animal food from the ſea. But it ſhould ſeem, from their practice of ſalting fiſh, that the openneſs of their coaſt often interupts the buſineſs of catching them; as may be naturally ſuppoſed, that no ſet of people would ever think of preſerving quantities of food artificially, if they could depend upon a daily, regular ſupply of it, in its freſh ſtate. This ſort of reaſoning however, will not account for their cuſtom of ſalting their pork, as well as their fiſh, which are preſerved in gourd-ſhells. The ſalt, of which they uſe a great quantity for this purpoſe, is of a red colour, not very courſe. It has its colour, doubtleſs, from a mixture of the mud, at the bottom of the part where it is formed, for ſome of it, that had adhered into lumps was of a ſufficient whiteneſs and purity.

They bake their vegetable food with heated ſtones, as at the Southern Iſlands; and from the vaſt quantity which we ſaw dreſſed at one time, we ſuſpected that the whole village, or, at leaſt, a conſiderable number of people, joined in the uſe of a common oven. The only artificial diſh that we met with, was a taro pudding; which though a diſagreeable meſs from its ſourneſs, was greedily devoured by the natives. They eat off a kind of wooden plate, or trenchers; and the women, as far as we could judge from one inſtance, if reſtrained from feeding at the ſame diſh with the men, as at Otaheite, are, at leaſt, permitted to eat in the ſame place near them.

Their

Their amuſements ſeemed pretty various; for, during our ſhort ſtay, ſeveral were diſcovered. The dances, at which they uſe the feathered cloaks and caps, were not ſeen; but from the motions which they made with their hands, on other occaſions, when they ſung, we could form ſome judgment that they are, in ſome degree at leaſt, ſimilar to thoſe we met with at the Southern Iſlands, though not executed ſo ſkilfully. Neither had they amongſt them either flutes or reeds; and the only two muſical inſtruments which we obſerved, were of an exceeding rude kind. One of them does not produce a melody exceeding that of a child's rattle. It conſiſts of what may be called a conic cap inverted, but ſcarcely hollowed at the baſe above a foot high, made of a coarſe, ſedge-like plant; the upper part of which, and the edges, are ornamented with beautiful red feathers; and to the point, or lower part, is fixed a gourd-ſhell, larger than the firſt. Into this is put ſomething to rattle; which is done by holding the inſtrument by the ſmall part, and ſhaking, or rather moving it, from place to place briſkly, either to different ſides, or backward and forward, juſt before the face, ſtriking the breaſt with the other hand at the ſame time. The other muſical inſtrument (if either of them deſerve that name) was a hollow veſſel of wood, like a platter, combined with the uſe of two ſticks, on which one of our gentlemen ſaw a man performing. He held one of the ſticks, about two feet long, as we do a fiddle with one hand, and ſtruck it with the other, which was ſmaller, and reſembled a drum-ſtick, in a quicker or ſlower meaſure; at the ſame time beating with his foot upon the hollow veſſel, that lay inverted upon the ground, and thus producing a tune, that was by no means diſagreeable. This muſic was accompanied by the vocal performance of ſome women, whoſe ſong had a pleaſing and tender effect.

We obſerved great numbers of ſmall poliſhed rods, about four or five feet long, ſomewhat thicker than the rammer of a muſket, with a tuft of long, white dog's hair fixed on the ſmall end. Theſe are, probably, uſed

in their diverſions. We ſaw a perſon take one of them in his hand, and, holding up, give a ſmall ſtroke, till he brought it into an horizontal poſition, ſtriking with the foot on the ſame ſide, upon the ground, and with his other hand, beating his breaſt at the ſame time. They play at bowls, with pieces of whet-ſtone, of about a pound weight, ſhaped ſomewhat like a ſmall cheeſe, but rounded at the ſides and edges, which are very nicely poliſhed; and they have other bowls of the ſame ſort, made of a heavy, reddiſh brown clay, neatly glazed over with a compoſition of the ſame colour, or of a coarſe, dark grey ſlate. They alſo uſe, in the ſame manner that we throw quoits, ſmall, flat, rounded pieces of writing ſlate, of the diameter of the bowls, but ſcarcely a quarter of an inch thick, alſo well poliſhed. From theſe circumſtances, one would be induced to think, that their games are rather trials of ſkill than of ſtrength.

Had the Sandwich Iſlands been diſcovered at an early period, by the Spaniards, there is little doubt that they would have taken advantage of ſo excellent a ſituation, and made uſe of Atooi, or ſome other of the iſlands, as a refreſhing-place to the ſhips, that ſail annually from Acapulco to Manilla. How happy would Lord Anſon have been, and what hardſhips would he have avoided, if he had known that there was a group of iſlands, half way between America and Tinian, where all his wants could have been effectually ſupplied.

CHAP. V.

Curious marine phænomena—Arrival at Nootka Sound—Intercourſe with the natives—Deſcription of their perſons—Their general diſpoſitions, and their eagerneſs to poſſeſs iron and other metals.

IN purſuing his voyage northward, one of the moſt curious circumſtances which the Captain obſerved was, during a calm on the 2d of March, 1778, when ſome parts of the ſea ſeemed covered with a kind of ſlime

ſlime, and ſome ſmall ſea animals were ſwimming about. The moſt conſpicuous of which, were of the gelatinous, or meduſa kind, almoſt globular; and another ſort ſmaller, that had a white, or ſhining appearance, and were very numerous. Some of theſe laſt were taken up, and put into a glaſs cup, with ſome ſalt water, in which they appeared like ſmall ſcales, or bits of ſilver when at reſt in a prone ſituation. When they began to ſwim about, which they did, with equal eaſe, upon their backs, ſides, or belly, they emitted the brigheſt colours of the moſt precious gems, according to their poſition with reſpect to the light. Sometimes they appeared quite pellucid, at other times aſſuming various tints of blue, from a pale ſapphirine, to a deep violet colour, which were frequently mixed with a ruby, or opaline redneſs; and glowed with ſtrength ſufficient to illuminate the veſſel and water. They proved to be a new ſpecies of oniſcus, and, from their properties, were by Mr Anderſon called oniſcus fulgens; being, probably, an animal which has a ſhare in producing ſome ſorts of that lucid appearance, often obſerved near ſhips at ſea, in the night.

The coaſt of New Albion, in North America, was firſt deſcried on the 7th; but being much obſtructed by adverſe and tempeſtuous winds, it was not till the 29th that the Captain came to anchor in a ſound, to which he gave the name of King George's Sound, but which the natives called Nootka. It is ſituated on the E. corner of Hope Bay, in the lat. of 49 deg. 33 min. N. and in the long. of 233 deg. 12 min. E. Various reparations of the ſhips, and a very friendly intercourſe with the natives, employed his time till the 26th of April, when he put to ſea in the further purſuit of his voyage.

When the Captain firſt entered this Sound, three canoes came off to the ſhip. In one of theſe were two men, in another ſix, and in the third ten. Having come pretty near, a perſon in one of the two laſt ſtood up, and made a long harangue, inviting them to land, as was gueſſed, by his geſtures. At the ſame time, he

in their diverſions. We ſaw a perſon take one of them in his hand, and, holding up, give a ſmall ſtroke, till he brought it into an horizontal poſition, ſtriking with the foot on the ſame ſide, upon the ground, and with his other hand, beating his breaſt at the ſame time. They play at bowls, with pieces of whet-ſtone, of about a pound weight, ſhaped ſomewhat like a ſmall cheeſe, but rounded at the ſides and edges, which are very nicely poliſhed; and they have other bowls of the ſame ſort, made of a heavy, reddiſh brown clay, neatly glazed over with a compoſition of the ſame colour, or of a coarſe, dark grey ſlate. They alſo uſe, in the ſame manner that we throw quoits, ſmall, flat, rounded pieces of writing ſlate, of the diameter of the bowls, but ſcarcely a quarter of an inch thick, alſo well poliſhed. From theſe circumſtances, one would be induced to think, that their games are rather trials of ſkill than of ſtrength.

Had the Sandwich Iſlands been diſcovered at an early period, by the Spaniards, there is little doubt that they would have taken advantage of ſo excellent a ſituation, and made uſe of Atooi, or ſome other of the iſlands, as a refreſhing-place to the ſhips, that ſail annually from Acapulco to Manilla. How happy would Lord Anſon have been, and what hardſhips would he have avoided, if he had known that there was a group of iſlands, half way between America and Tinian, where all his wants could have been effectually ſupplied.

CHAP. V.

Curious marine phænomena—Arrival at Nootka Sound—Intercourſe with the natives—Deſcription of their perſons—Their general diſpoſitions, and their eagerneſs to poſſeſs iron and other metals.

IN purſuing his voyage northward, one of the moſt curious circumſtances which the Captain obſerved was, during a calm on the 2d of March, 1778, when ſome parts of the ſea ſeemed covered with a kind of ſlime

ſlime, and ſome ſmall ſea animals were ſwimming about. The moſt conſpicuous of which, were of the gelatinous, or meduſa kind, almoſt globular; and another ſort ſmaller, that had a white, or ſhining appearance, and were very numerous. Some of theſe laſt were taken up, and put into a glaſs cup, with ſome ſalt water, in which they appeared like ſmall ſcales, or bits of ſilver when at reſt in a prone ſituation. When they began to ſwim about, which they did, with equal eaſe, upon their backs, ſides, or belly, they emitted the brigheſt colours of the moſt precious gems, according to their poſition with reſpect to the light. Sometimes they appeared quite pellucid, at other times aſſuming various tints of blue, from a pale ſapphirine, to a deep violet colour, which were frequently mixed with a ruby, or opaline redneſs; and glowed with ſtrength ſufficient to illuminate the veſſel and water. They proved to be a new ſpecies of oniſcus, and, from their properties, were by Mr Anderſon called oniſcus fulgens; being, probably, an animal which has a ſhare in producing ſome ſorts of that lucid appearance, often obſerved near ſhips at ſea, in the night.

The coaſt of New Albion, in North America, was firſt deſcried on the 7th; but being much obſtructed by adverſe and tempeſtuous winds, it was not till the 29th that the Captain came to anchor in a ſound, to which he gave the name of King George's Sound, but which the natives called Nootka. It is ſituated on the E. corner of Hope Bay, in the lat. of 49 deg. 33 min. N. and in the long. of 233 deg. 12 min. E. Various reparations of the ſhips, and a very friendly intercourſe with the natives, employed his time till the 26th of April, when he put to ſea in the further purſuit of his voyage.

When the Captain firſt entered this Sound, three canoes came off to the ſhip. In one of theſe were two men, in another ſix, and in the third ten. Having come pretty near, a perſon in one of the two laſt ſtood up, and made a long harangue, inviting them to land, as was gueſſed, by his geſtures. At the ſame time, he

kept ſtrewing handfuls of feathers towards them; and ſome of his companions threw handfuls of a red duſt in the ſame manner. The perſon who played the orator, wore the ſkin of ſome animal, and held, in each hand, ſomething which rattled as he kept ſhaking it. After the tumultuous noiſe had ceaſed, they lay at a little diſtance from the ſhip, and converſed with each other in a very eaſy manner; nor did they ſeem to ſhew the leaſt ſurprize or miſtruſt. Soon after, the canoes began to come off in great numbers, and at one time, there was 32 of them, carrying 3 to 8 perſons each, both men and women. But tho' theſe viſitors behaved very peaceably, they could not be prevailed upon to come on board. They ſhewed great readineſs however, to part with any thing they had, and took whatever was offered them in exchange; but were more deſirous of iron, than of any other article of commerce. The moſt extraordinary of all articles they brought for ſale, were human ſkulls, and hands, not yet quite ſtripped of the fleſh, which they made us plainly underſtand they had eaten. We had but two much reaſon to ſuſpect, from this circumſtance, that the horrid practice of feeding on their enemies is as prevalent here, as we had found it to be at New Zealand, &c.

The perſons of the natives are, in general, under the common ſtature, but not ſlender in proportion, being commonly pretty full or plump. The viſage of moſt of them is round and full; the forehead rather low; the eyes black, and rather languiſhing than ſparkling. They have either no beards at all, which was moſt commonly the caſe, or a ſmall thin one upon the point of the chin, which does not ariſe from any natural defect of hair on that part, but from plucking it out more or leſs; for ſome of them, and particularly the old men, have not only conſiderable beards all over the chin, but whiſkers, or muſtachios, but on the upper lip, and and running thence toward the lower jaw obliquely downward.

Their colour we could not poſitively determine, as their bodies were incruſted with paint and dirt; though

in particular caſes, when theſe were well rubbed off, the whiteneſs of the ſkin appeared to equal that of Europeans. Their children, whoſe ſkins had never been ſtained with paint, alſo equalled ours in whiteneſs.

The women are nearly of the ſame ſize, colour, and form with the men; from whom it is not eaſy to diſtinguiſh them, as they poſſeſs no natural delicacies ſufficient to render their perſons agreeable; and hardly any one was ſeen, even thoſe who were in the prime of life, who had the leaſt pretenſions to be called handſome.

The chief employment of the natives ſeems to be that of fiſhing, and killing land or ſea animals, for the ſuſtenance of their families; for we ſaw few of them doing any thing in their houſes: whereas the women are occupied in manufacturing their flaxen or woollen garments, and in prepairing the fiſh called ſardine, for drying; which they carry up from the beach in twig baſkets, after the men have brought them in their canoes. The women are alſo ſent in the ſmall canoes to gather muſcles, and other ſhell-fiſh; and perhaps on ſome other occaſions.

We were much better enabled to form ſome judgment of their diſpoſition, and, in ſome meaſure, even of their method of living, from the frequent viſits ſo many of them paid us at our ſhips, in their canoes; in which, it ſhould ſeem, they ſpend a great deal of time at leaſt in the ſummer ſeaſon. For we obſerved that they not only eat and ſleep frequently in them, but ſtrip off their clothes, and lay themſelves along to baſk in the ſun, in the ſame manner as we had ſeen practiſed at their village. Their canoes of the larger ſort, are, indeed, ſufficiently ſpacious for that purpoſe, and perfectly dry; ſo that, under ſhelter of a ſkin, they are, except in rainy weather, much more comfortable habitations than their houſe.

With reſpect to food, their greateſt reliance ſeems to be upon the ſea, as affording fiſh, muſcles, and ſmaller ſhell-fiſh, and ſea-animals. Of the firſt, the principal are herrings, ſardines, two ſpecies of bream, and

and ſmall cod. But the herrings and ſardines are not only eaten freſh, in their ſeaſon, but likewiſe ſerve as ſtores, which after being dried and ſmoaked, are preſerved by being ſewed up in mats, ſo as to form large bales, three or four feet ſquare. The herrings alſo ſupply them with another grand reſource, which is a vaſt quantity of roe, very curiouſly prepared. It is ſtrewed upon, or as it were, incruſtated about, ſmall branches of the Canadian pine. They alſo prepare it upon a long narrow ſeagraſs, which grows plentifully upon the rocks, under water. It may be conſidered as the winter bread of theſe people, and has no diſagreeable taſte. They alſo roaſt the large kind of muſcle, then ſtick them upon long wooden ſkewers, and taking them off occaſionally, eat them without any other preparation, though they often dip them in oil, as a ſauce.

Of the ſea-animals, the moſt common in uſe amongſt them as food, is the porpoiſe, the fat or rind of which, as well as the fleſh, they cut in large pieces, and having dried them, as they do the herrings, eat them without any farther preparation. They alſo prepare a ſort of broth from this animal, in its freſh ſtate, in a ſingular manner, putting pieces of it in a ſquare wooden veſſel or bucket, with water, and then throwing heated ſtones into it. This operation they repeat till they think the contents are ſufficiently ſtewed or ſeethed. They put in the freſh, and take out the other ſtones, with a cleft ſtick, which ſerves as tongs; the veſſel being always placed near the fire, for that purpoſe. This is a pretty common diſh among them, and from its appearance, ſeems to be ſtrong nouriſhing food.

Their manufactures, and mechanic arts, are far more ingenious, both in deſign and execution, than could have been expected from the natural diſpoſition of the people, and the little progreſs that civilization has made amongſt them in other reſpects. Their flaxen garments are made of the bark of the pine-tree, beat into a hempen ſtate. It is not ſpun, but, after being properly prepared, is ſpread upon a ſtick, which is faſtened acroſs two others that ſtand upright. It is diſpoſed

diſpoſed in ſuch a manner, that the manufacturer, who ſits on her hams at this ſimple machine, knots it acroſs with ſmall plaited threads, at the diſtance of half an inch from each other. Though, by this method, it be not ſo cloſe or firm as cloth that is woven, the bunches between the knots make it ſufficiently impervious to the air, by filling the interſtices; and it has the additional anvantage of being ſofter and more pliable. Their woollen garments, though probably manufactured in the ſame manner, have the ſtrongeſt reſemblance to woven cloth. But the various figures which are very artificially inſerted in them, deſtroy the ſuppoſition of their being wrought in a loom; it being extremely unlikely, that theſe people ſhould be ſo dexterous as to be able to finiſh ſuch a complex work, unleſs immediately by their hands. They are of different degrees of fineneſs; ſome reſembling our coarſeſt rugs or blankets; and others almoſt equal to our fineſt ſort, or even ſofter, and certainly warmer.

Their implements for fiſhing and hunting, which are both ingeniouſly contrived, and well made, are nets, hooks and lines, harpoons, gigs, and an inſtrument like an oar. This laſt is about 20 feet long, 4 or 5 inches broad, and about half an inch thick. Each edge, for about two thirds of its length, is ſet with ſharp bone teeth, about two inches long. Herrings and ſardines, and ſuch other ſmall fiſh as come in ſhoals, are attacked with this inſtrument; which is ſtruck into the ſhoal, and the fiſh are caught either upon, or between the teeth. Their hooks are made of bone and wood, and rather inartificially; but the harpoon, with which they ſtrike the whales and leſſer ſea animals, ſhews a great reach of contrivance. It is compoſed of a piece of bone, cut into two barbs, in which is fixed the oval blade of a large muſcle ſhell, in which is the point of the inſtrument. To this is faſtened about two or three fathoms of rope; and to throw this harpoon, they uſe a ſhaft of about 12 or 15 feet long, to which the rope is made faſt, and to one end of which the harpoon is fixed, ſo as to ſeparate from the ſhaft,

ſhaft, and leave it floating upon the water as a buoy, when the animal darts away with the harpoon.

We ſailed from Nootka Sound on the 26th of April, and ſoon loſt ſight of land; but on the 2d of May, ſteering N. W. by N. we diſcovered a round elevated mountain, which was named Mount Edgecumbe, and the point of land ſhooting out from it, Cape Edgecumbe. The land, except in ſome places cloſe to the ſea, was all of a conſiderable height, and hilly. The more elevated hills were covered with ſnow; but the lower ones were free from it, and covered with a fine wood.

Hence he coaſted along, noting ſeveral inlets, iſlands, capes, and mountains, (to which in the order of diſcovery, he gave the names of the Bay of Iſlands, Croſs Cape, Croſs Sound, Cape Fair Weather, Mount Fair Weather, Bhering's Bay, the mountain called by Bhering, Mount Elias, Cape Suckling's, Kaye's Iſland, and Comptroller's Bay) till the 12th of May, when he anchored before a ſmall cove, a little within a cape, to which he gave the name of Cape Hinching Broke. Near this were ſome rocky iſlands, to which Mr. Gore was ſent in a boat, in hopes of ſhooting ſome eatable birds. But he had hardly got to them, before the natives made their appearance in two large canoes, on which he thought proper to return to the ſhips, and they followed him. They would not venture along-ſide, but kept at a diſtance, hollowing aloud, and alternately claſping and extending their arms; and in a ſhort time, began a kind of ſong, exactly after the manner of thoſe at Nootka. Their heads were all powdered with feathers. One man held out a white garment, which was interpreted as a ſign of friendſhip; and another ſtood up in a canoe, quite naked, for almoſt a quarter of an hour, with his arms ſtretched out like a croſs, and motionleſs. Though the captain returned all their ſigns of friendſhip, and by every expreſſive geſture, tried to encourage them to come along-ſide, he could not prevail. After receiving ſome preſents which were thrown to them, they retired to that part

of

of the ſhore whence they came, making ſigns they would appear again the next morning.

The next morning, Captain Cook got under ſail, in order to look out for ſome ſnug place, where he might ſearch for a leak, which he had lately ſprung. At firſt the clearneſs of the weather tempted him to ſteer to the N. farther up the largeſt inlet; but bad weather returning, he was obliged to anchor, before he had got ſo far into the bay as he intended.

The weather, bad as it was, did not hinder three of the natives from paying him a viſit. They came off in two canoes, two men in one, and one in the other, being the number each could carry. Each of theſe men had a ſtick, about three feet long, with the large feathers or wings of birds tied to it. Theſe they frequently held up, with a view, as was gueſſed, to expreſs their pacific diſpoſition.

The treatment theſe men met with induced many more to come, between one and two the next morning (the 14th) in great and ſmall canoes. Some ventured on board the ſhip, but not till ſome of the crew had ſtepped into their boats. Amongſt thoſe who came on board, was a good-looking middle-aged man, who was afterwards found to be the chief. He was cloathed in a dreſs made of the ſea otter's ſkin, and had on ſuch a cap as is worn by the natives of Nootka Sound, ornamented with ſky blue glaſs beads about the ſize of a large pea. He ſeemed to ſet a much higher value upon theſe, than upon our white glaſs beads. Any ſort of beads, however, ſeemed to be in high eſtimation with theſe people; and they readily gave whatever they had in exchange for them, even their fine otter ſkins.

Theſe people were alſo deſirous of iron, but they wanted pieces of eight or ten inches long at leaſt, and of the breadth of three or four fingers. For they abſolutely rejected ſmall pieces. Conſequently they got but little, iron having, by this time, become a ſcarce article. The captain could not prevail upon the chief to truſt himſelf below the upper deck; nor did he and his com-

panions remain long on board. But while he had their company, it was neceſſary to watch them narrowly, as they ſoon betrayed a thieviſh diſpoſition. At length, after being about three or four hours along-ſide the Reſolution, they all left her and went to the Diſcovery; none having been there before, except one man, who at this time came from her, and immediately returned thither in company with the reſt. When this was obſerved, it was thought this man had met with ſomething there, which he knew would pleaſe his countrymen better than what they had met with on board the Reſolution.

As ſoon as they were gone, I ſent a boat to ſound the head of the bay: for as the wind was moderate, I had thoughts of laying the ſhip aſhore, if a convenient place could be found where I might begin our operation to ſtop the leak. It was not long before all the natives left the Diſcovery, and inſtead of returning to us, made their way toward our boat employed as above. The officers in her ſeeing this, returned to the ſhip, and was followed by all the canoes. The boat's crew had no ſooner got on board, leaving in her two of their number, by way of a guard, than ſome of the natives ſtepped into her. Some preſented their ſpears before the two men; others caſt looſe the rope which faſtened her to the ſhip, and the reſt attempted to tow her away. But the inſtant they ſaw us preparing to oppoſe them, they let her go, ſtepped out of her into their canoes, and made ſigns for us to lay down our arms, having the appearance of being as perfectly unconcerned as if they had done nothing amiſs. This, though rather a moſt daring attempt, was hardly equal to what they had meditated on board the Diſcovery. The man who came and carried all his countrymen from the Reſolution to the other ſhip, had firſt been on board of her, where, after looking down all the hatchways, and ſeeing nobody but the officer of the watch, and one or two more, he no doubt thought they might plunder her with eaſe, eſpecially as ſhe lay at ſome diſtance from us. It was unqueſtionably with this

view

view that they all repaired to her. Several of them, without any ceremony, went on board, drew their knives, made ſigns for the officer and people on deck to keep off, and began to look about them for plunder. The firſt thing they met with was the rudder of the boat, which they threw overboard to thoſe of the party who remained in the canoes. Before they had time to find another object that pleaſed their fancy, the crew were armed, and began to come on deck with cutlaſſes. On ſeeing this, the whole company of plunderers ſneaked off into their canoes, with as much deliberation and indifference as they had given up the boat, and they were obſerved deſcribing to thoſe who had not been on board, how much longer the knives of the ſhip's crew were than their own. It was at this time, that my boat was on the ſounding duty, which they muſt have ſeen; for they proceeded directly for her, after their diſappointment at the Diſcovery.

This day in heaving the anchor out of the boat, one of the ſeamen, either through ignorance or careleſſneſs, was carried overboard by the buoy-rope, and followed the anchor to the bottom. It is remarkable, that in this critical ſituation, he had preſence of mind to diſengage himſelf, and come up to the ſurface of the water, where he was taken up, with one of his legs fractured in a dangerous manner.

The 15th and 16th was employed in ſtopping the leak. This was done in a bay, which Captain Cook very properly called Snug Corner Bay.

On the 17th the captain weighed, and ſteered to the North-weſtward; thinking, if there ſhould be any paſſage to the N. through this inlet, that it muſt be in that direction. Soon after he was under ſail, the natives in both great and ſmall canoes, paid another viſit, which gave an additional opportunity of forming a more perfect idea of their perſons, dreſs and other particulars. Theſe viſitors ſeemed to have no other buſineſs but to gratify their curioſity, for they entered into no ſort of traffic.

From various circumſtances, Capt. Cook found it highly improbable that there ſhould be a paſſage to the N. He proceeded, therefore, on the 18th, to the South-weſtward, down the inlet, another paſſage to which he diſcovered, to the S. W. of that by which he came in, which enabled him to ſhorten his way out to ſea. It is ſeparated from the other by an iſland, extending 18 leagues in the direction of N. E. and S. W. to which he gave the name of Montagu Iſland. In this S. W. channel are ſeveral iſlands. Thoſe that lie in the entrance, next the open ſea, are high and rocky. But thoſe within are low ones, and being entirely free from ſnow, and covered with wood and verdure, on this account they were called Green Iſlands. In a channel between theſe iſlands and Montagu Iſland, he ſteered on the 19th, and on the 20th, was again in the open ſea, the coaſt tending W. by S. as far as the eye could reach.

To the inlet, which Capt. Cook had juſt left, he gave the name of Prince William's Sound, and from what he ſaw of it, he ſuppoſed that it occupied at leaſt a degree and a half of latitude, and two of long. excluſive of the arms or branches, the extent of which is not known.

The natives were in general not above the common height, though many of them were under it. They were ſquare or ſtrong cheſted; and the moſt diſproportioned part of their body ſeemed to be their heads, which were very large, with thick ſhort necks, and large, broad, or ſpreading faces; which, upon the whole, were flat. Their eyes, though not ſmall, ſcarce bore a proportion to the ſize of their faces; and their noſes had full round points, hooked, or turned up at the tip. Their teeth were broad, white, equal in ſize, and evenly ſet. Their hair black, thick, ſtraight and ſtrong; and their beards in general thin, or wanting; but the hairs about the lips of thoſe who have them, were ſtiff or briſtly, and frequently of a brown colour. But ſeveral of the elderly men had even, large and thick, but ſtraight beards.

Though,

Though, in general, they agree in the make of their perſons, and largeneſs of their heads, there is a conſiderable variety in their features; but very few can be ſaid to be of the handſomer ſort, though their countenance indicates a natural ſhare of vivacity, good nature, and frankneſs. Some of the women have agreeable faces, and many are eaſily diſtinguiſhable from the men by their features, which are more delicate; but this ſhould be underſtood chiefly of the younger ſort, or middle-aged. The complexion of the women, and of the children, is white; but without any mixture of red. And ſome of the men, who were ſeen naked, had rather a browniſh or ſwarthy caſt, which could ſcarcely be the effect of any ſtain; for they do not paint their bodies.

Their common dreſs (for men, women, and children, are clothed alike) is a kind of cloſe frock, or rather robe, reaching generally to the ankles, though ſometimes only to the knees. And the upper part is a hole juſt ſufficient to admit the head, with ſleeves that reach to the wriſt. Theſe frocks are made of the ſkins of different animals; the moſt common of which are thoſe of the ſea-otter, grey fox, racoon, and pine-martin, with many of ſeal ſkins; and, in general, they are worn with the hairy ſides outward. Some alſo have theſe frocks made of the ſkins of fowls, with only the down remaining on them, which they glue on other ſubſtances. When it rains, they put over this another frock, ingeniouſly made from the inteſtines of whales, or ſome other large animal, prepared ſo ſkilfully, as almoſt to reſemble our gold-beaters leaf. It is made to draw tight round the neck; its ſleeves reach as low as the wriſt, round which they are tied with a ſtring; and its ſkirts, when they are in the canoes, are drawn over the rim of the hole in which they ſit, ſo that no water can enter. At the ſame time, it keeps the men entirely dry upward. For no water can penetrate through it, any more than through a bladder.

The men commonly wear their hair cropt round the neck and forehead, but the women allow it to grow long;

long; and moſt of them tie a ſmall lock of it on the crown, or a few club it behind, after our manner. Both ſexes have the ears perforated with ſeveral holes, about the outer and lower part of the edge, in which they hang like bunches of beads. The ſeptum of the noſe is alſo perforated, through which they frequently thruſt the quill feathers of ſmall birds, or little bending ornaments, ſtrung on a ſtiff ſtring, 3 or 4 inches long, which give them a truly groteſque appearance. But the moſt uncommon and unſightly ornament faſhion, adopted by ſome of both ſexes, is their having their under lip ſlit, or cut, quite through, in the direction of the mouth, a little before the ſwelling part. This inciſion, which is made even in the ſuckling children, is often above two inches long; and either by its natural retraction, when the wound is freſh, or by the repetition of ſome artificial management, aſſumes the true ſhape of lips, and becomes ſo large as to admit the tongue through. This happened to be the caſe when the firſt perſon having this inciſion was ſeen by one of the ſeamen, who called out that the man had two mouths; and indeed, it does not look much unlike it. In this artificial mouth they ſtick a flat, narrow ornament, made chiefly out of a ſolid ſhell or bone, cut in little narrow pieces, like ſmall teeth, almoſt down to the baſe or thickeſt part, which has a ſmall projecting bit at each end that ſupports it when put into the divided lip, the cut part then appearing outward. Others have the lower lip only perforated into ſeparate holes; and then the ornament conſiſts of many diſtinct ſhelly ſtuds, whoſe points are puſhed through theſe holes, and the heads appear within the lip, as another row of teeth under their own.

Theſe are the native ornaments. But many beads of European manufacture were found among them, chiefly of a pale blue colour, which they hang in their ears, about their caps, or join to their lip-ornaments, which have a ſmall hole drilled in each point to which they are faſtened, and others to them, till they hang ſometimes as low as the point of the chin. But, in this laſt

laſt caſe, they cannot remove them ſo eaſily; for, as to their own lip-ornaments, they, can take them out with their tongue, or ſuck within, at pleaſure. They alſo wear bracelets, of the ſhelly beads, or others of a cylindrical ſhape, made of a ſubſtance like amber, which are alſo uſed in their ears and noſes. And ſo fond are they, in general, of ornaments, that they ſtick any thing in their perforated lip; one man appearing with two of our iron nails projecting from it like prongs; and another endeavouring to put a large braſs button into it.

The men frequently paint their faces of a bright red, and of a black colour, and ſometimes of a blue, or leaden colour; but not in any regular figure; and the women, in ſome meaſure, endeavour to imitate them, by puncturing or ſtaining their chin with black, that comes to a point in each cheek. Their bodies are not painted, which may be owing to the ſcarcity of proper materials; for all which they brought to ſell in bladders, were in very ſmall quantities.

The weapons, and inſtruments for fiſhing and hunting, with their canoes, are the very ſame that are made uſe of by the Eſquimaux and Greenlanders. For defenſive armour they have a kind of jacket, or coat of mail, made of thin laths, bound together with ſinews, which makes it quite flexible, though ſo cloſe as not to admit of an arrow or dart. It only covers the trunk of the body, and may not be improperly compared to a woman's ſtays.

As none of theſe people lived in the bay where Captain Cook anchored, or landed, he ſaw none of their habitations; and had not time to look after them. Of their domeſtic utenſils, they brought in their boats ſome round and oval ſhallow diſhes of wood; and others of a cylindrical ſhape, much deeper. The ſides were made of one piece, bent round, like our chip-boxes, though thick, neatly faſtened with thongs, and the bottoms fixed in with ſmall wooden pegs. Others were ſmaller, and of a more elegant ſhape, ſomewhat reſembling a large oval butter-boat, without a handle, but more

ſhallow,

ſhallow, made from a piece of wood, or horny ſubſtance. Theſe laſt were ſometimes neatly carved. They had many little ſquare bags, made of the ſame gut with their outer frocks, neatly ornamented with very minute red feathers interwoven with it, in which were contained ſome very fine ſinews, and bundles of ſmall cord, made from them, moſt ingeniouſly plaited. They alſo brought many chequered baſkets, ſo cloſely wrought as to hold water; ſome wooden models of their canoes; a good many little images, four or five inches long, either of wood, or ſtuffed; which were covered with a bit of fur, and ornamented with ſmall quill feathers, in imitation of their ſhelly beads, with hair fixed on their heads. Whether theſe might be mere toys for children, or held in veneration, as repreſenting their deſeaſed friends, and applied to ſome ſuperſtitious purpoſe, could not be determined. But they have many inſtruments made of two or three hoops, or concentric pieces of wood, with a croſs-bar fixed in the middle, to hold them by. To theſe are fixed a great number of dried barnacle-ſhells, with threads, which ſerve as a rattle, and make a loud noiſe, when they ſhake them. This contrivance ſeems to be a ſubſtitute for the rattling-bird at Nootka; and perhaps both of them are employed on the ſame occaſion.

With what tools they make their wooden utenſils, frames of boats, and other things, is uncertain; as the only one ſeen amongſt them was a kind of adze, made almoſt after the manner of thoſe of Otaheite, and the other iſlands of the South Seas. They have a great many iron knives; ſome of which are ſtraight; others a little curved; and ſome very ſmall ones, fixed in pretty long handles, with the blades bent upward, like ſome of our ſhoemakers inſtruments. But they have ſtill knives of another ſort, which are ſometimes near two feet long, ſhaped almoſt like a dagger, with a ridge in the middle. Theſe they wear in ſheaths of ſkins, hung by a thong round the neck, under their robe; and they are, probably, only uſed as weapons; the other knives being apparently applied to other purpoſes. Every thing

thing they have, however, is as well and ingeniouſly made, as if they were furniſhed with the moſt complete tool-cheſt; and their ſewing, plaiting of ſinews, and and ſmall work on their little bags, may be put in competition with any the moſt delicate manufactures found in any part of the known world. In ſhort, conſidering the rude unciviliſed ſtate in which theſe people are, their Northern ſituation, amidſt a country perpetually covered with ſnow, and the wretched materials they have to work with, it appears, that their invention and dexterity, in all manual works, is at leaſt equal to that of any other nation.

The food which they they were ſeen to eat, was dried fiſh, and the fleſh of ſome animals, either broiled or roaſted. Some of the latter that was brought, ſeemed to be bear's fleſh, but but with a fiſhy taſte. They alſo eat the longer ſort of fern-root, mentioned at Nootka, either baked, or dreſſed in ſome other way: and ſome were ſeen to eat freely of a ſubſtance which was ſuppoſed to be the inner part of the pine bark. Their drink is moſt probably water; for in their boats they brought ſnow in the wooden veſſels, which they ſwallowed by mouthfuls. Perhaps it could be carried with leſs trouble, in theſe open veſſels, than water itſelf. Their method of eating ſeems decent and cleanly; for they always took care to ſeperate any dirt that might adhere to their victuals. And though they ſometimes did eat the raw fat of ſome ſea animal, they cut it carefully into mouthfuls, with their ſmall knives. The ſame might be ſaid of their perſons, which to appearance, were always clean and decent, without greaſe or dirt; and the wooden veſſels, in which their victuals were probably put, were kept in excellent order; as well as their boats, which were neat and free from lumber.

Their language ſeems difficult to be underſtood at firſt; not from any indiſtinctneſs or confuſion in their words and ſounds, but from the various ſignifications they have.

Beſides thoſe animal, which were ſeen at Nootka, there are ſome in this place which are not found there; ſuch as, the white bear; of whoſe ſkins the natives brought ſevaral pieces, and ſome entire ſkins of cubs; from which their ſize could not be determined. There was alſo the wolverine, or quickhatch, which had very bright colours; a larger ſort of ermine than the common one, which is the ſame as at Nootka, varied with a brown colour, and with ſcarcely any black on its tail. The natives alſo brought the ſkin of the head of ſome very large animal; but it could not poſitively be determined what it was; though from the colour and ſhagginеſs of the hair, and its unlikeneſs to any other land animal, it might probably be that of the large male urſine ſeal, or ſea bear. But one of the moſt beautiful ſkins, and which ſeems peculiar to this place, is that of a ſmall animal about ten inches long, of a brown or ruſty colour on the back, with a great number of obſcure whitiſh ſpecks; and the ſides of a blueiſh aſh colour, alſo with a few of theſe ſpecks. The tail is not above a third of the length of its body, and is covered with hair of a whitiſh colour at the edges. It is no doubt the ſame with thoſe called ſpotted field mice, by Mr. Stæhlin, in his ſhort account of the New Northern Archipelago. But whether they be really of the mouſe kind, or a ſquirrel, could not be told, for want of perfect ſkins; though Mr. Anderſon was inclined to think that it is the ſame animal deſcribed under the name of the Caſon marinot, by Mr. Pennant. The number of ſkins found here, points out the great plenty of theſe ſeveral animals juſt mentioned; but it is remarkable, neither the ſkins of the mouſe nor of the common deer were to be ſeen.

Of the birds mentioned at Nootka, were found here only the white-headed eagle; the ſhag; the alcyon, or great king-fiſher, which had very fine bright colours; and the huming-bird, which came frequently about the ſhip, while at anchor; though it can ſcarcely live here in the winter, which muſt be very ſevere. The water fowl were geeſe, a ſmall ſort of duck, almoſt like that

mentioned

mentioned at Kerguelen's Land; another ſort which no one knew; and ſome of the black ſeapyes, with red bills, which were found at Van Diemen's Land and New Zealand. Some of the people who went on ſhore, killed a gooſe, a ſnipe, and ſome plovers. But though, upon the whole, the water fowl were pretty numerous, eſpecially the ducks and geeſe, which frequent the ſhore, they were ſo ſhy, that it was ſcarcely poſſible to get within ſhot; ſo that they obtained a very ſmall ſupply of them as a refreſhment.

Their metals were copper and iron; both which, particularly the latter, were in ſuch plenty, as to conſtitute the points of moſt of the arrows and lances. The ores, with which they painted themſelves, were a red, brittle, unctuous ochre, or iron-ore, not much unlike cinnabar in colour; a bright blue pigment; and black lead. Each of theſe ſeems to be very ſcarce, as they brought very ſmall quantities of the firſt and laſt, and ſeemed to keep them with great care.

Few vegetables of any kind were ſeen; and the trees which chiefly grew here, were the Canadian and ſpruce pine, and ſome of them tolerably large.

The beads and iron found amongſt theſe people, left no doubt, that they muſt have received them from ſome civilized nation. It was pretty certain, from circumſtances already mentioned, that Captain Cook's people were the firſt Europeans with whom they had ever communicated directly; and it remains only to be decided, from what quarter they had got our manufactures, by intermediate conveyance. And there cannot be the leaſt doubt of their having received theſe articles, through the intervention of the more inland tribes, from Hudſon's Bay, or the ſettlers on the Canadian lakes; unleſs it can be ſuppoſed (which however is leſs likely) that the Ruſſian traders, from Kamſchatka, have already extended their traffic thus far; or at leaſt that the natives of their moſt Eaſterly Fox Iſlands communicate along the coaſt, with thoſe of Prince William's Sound.

As to the copper, theſe people ſeem to procure it themſelves, or at moſt it paſſes through very few hands to them; for they uſed to expreſs it being in a ſufficient quantity amongſt them, when they offered any to barter, by pointing to their weapons; as if to ſay, that having ſo much of this metal of their own they wanted no more.

"It is, however, remarkable," ſays Captain Cook, "if the inhabitants of this Sound be ſupplied with European articles, by way of the intermediate traffic to the Eaſt coaſt, that they ſhould, in return, never have given to the more inland Indians any of their ſea-otter ſkins; which would certainly have been ſeen, ſome time or other, about Hudſon's Bay. But, as far as I know, that is not the caſe; and the method of accounting for this, muſt be by taking into conſideration the very great diſtance; which, though it might not prevent European goods coming ſo far, as being ſo uncommon, might prevent the ſkins, which are a common article, from paſſing through more than two or three different tribes, who might uſe them for their own cloathing: and ſend others, which they eſteemed leſs valuable, as being of their own animals, Eaſtward, till they reach the traders from Europe."

CHAP. VI.

Diſcovery of Cook's River.—Reflections on this Diſcovery.—Poſſeſſion taken of the Country and River, in his Majeſty's name.—A beautiful bird deſcribed.—Conjectures concerning a Ruſſian Letter brought on board by one of the Natives.—Picturesque Appearance of a volcano.—Second viſit from a Native.—Providential Eſcape.—Arrival at the Iſland of Oonalaſhka, and Intercourſe with the Natives.

AFTER leaving Prince William's Sound, on the 20th of May, 1778, Captain Cook ſteered S. W. as the coaſt lay; and, on the 21ſt, diſcovered a lofty promontory, which he named Cape Elizabeth, and which

which at firſt, he miſtook for the weſtern extremity of America. But he ſoon ſaw more land to the weſtward, and found that this, with that which he had before ſuppoſed to be the weſt cape of America, were the two boundaries of the entrance into a very large river, up which he ſailed above 70 leagues, before he was abſolutely certain it was not a ſtreight which led into the northern ocean. This river has ſince been named Cook's River, by the expreſs command of Lord Sandwich.

"If the diſcovery," ſays Captain Cook, "of this great river, which promiſes to vie with the moſt conſiderable ones already known to be capable of extenſive inland navigation, ſhould prove of uſe either to the preſent, or to any future age, the time we ſpent in it ought to be the leſs regretted. But to us who had a much greater object in view, the delay thus occaſioned was an eſſential loſs. The ſeaſon was advancing apace. We knew not how far we might have to proceed to the South; and we were now convinced, that the continent of America extended farther to the Weſt than, from the modern moſt reputable charts we had reaſon to expect. This made the exiſtence of a paſſage into Baffin's or Hudſon's Bay leſs probable; or, at leaſt, ſhewed it to be of greater extent. It was a ſatisfaction to me, however, to reflect, that, if I had not examined this very conſiderable inlet, it would have been aſſumed by ſpeculative fabricators of Geography, as a fact, that it communicated with the ſea to the North, or with Baffin's or Hudſon's Bay to the Eaſt; and been marked, perhaps, in future maps of the world, with greater preciſion, and more certain ſigns of reality, than the inviſible, becauſe imaginary, Straits of de Fuca and de Fonte."

Before Captain Cook quitted this river, he ſent Lieutenant King, with two armed boats, with orders to land on a point of land, on the S. E. ſide of the river; to diſplay the flag there; to take poſſeſſion of the country and river in his Majeſty's name; and to bury in the ground a bottle containing ſome pieces of Engliſh coin,

coin, of the year 1772, and a paper, on which was inſcribed the names of the ſhips, and date of the diſcovery. On this account, this point of land was called Point Poſſeſſion. The natives of the adjoining iſlands and coaſt, who trafficked much with the crews of the two ſhips, while they were exploring the river, ſeemed to bear ſuch a ſtriking reſemblance of the inhabitants of Prince William's Sound, that a deſcription of them is quite unneceſſary.—To the preceding reflections on the diſcovery of this river, Captain Cook adds, that "there is not the leaſt doubt, that a very beneficial fur trade might be carried on with the inhabitants of this vaſt coaſt; but that unleſs a northern paſſage ſhould be found practicable, it ſeems rather too remote for Great Britain to receive any emolument from it."

Having cleared the mouth of Cook's river, on the 6th of June, the captain ſteered, for ſeveral days, S. W. by W. as the coaſt lay, being continually within ſight of the continent, among innumerable iſlands, and generally in thick foggy weather.

On the 18th, having occaſion to ſend a boat on board the Diſcovery, one of the people in her ſhot a very beautiful bird of the hawk kind. It is ſomewhat leſs than a duck, and of a black colour, except the fore-part of the head, which is white; and from above and behind each eye ariſes an elegant yellowiſh white creſt, revolved backwards as a ram's horn. The bill and feet are red. Captain Cook conjectures it to be the Alca Monochra of Steller, mentioned in the Hiſtory of Kamtſchatka. Several of theſe birds were afterwards ſeen, and ſometimes in large flocks.

On the 19th, ſome natives, in three or four canoes, who had been following the Diſcovery for ſome time, at length got under her ſtern. One of them then made many ſigns, taking off his cap, and bowing, after the European manner. A rope being handed down, to this he faſtened a ſmall thin wooden caſe or box; and having delivered this ſafe, and ſpoken ſomething, and made ſome more ſigns, the canoes dropped aſtern, and left the Diſcovery. No one on board had any ſuſpicion that

that the box contained any thing till after the departure of the canoes, when it was accidentally opened, and a piece of paper was found, folded up carefully, upon which ſomething was written in the Ruſſian language, as was ſuppoſed. The date 1778 was prefixed to it; and, in the body of the written note, there was a reference to the year 1776. Not one being learned enough to decypher the alphabet of the writer, his numerals marked ſufficiently that others had preceded us in viſiting this dreary part of the globe, who were united to us by other ties beſides thoſe of our common nature; and the hopes of ſoon meeting with ſome of the Ruſſian traders, could not but give a ſenſible ſatisfaction to thoſe who had, for ſuch a length of time, been converſant with the ſavages of the Pacific Ocean, and of the continent of North America.

Captain Clarke was, at firſt, of opinion, that ſome Ruſſians had been ſhipwrecked here; and that theſe unfortunate perſons, ſeeing the ſhip paſs, had taken this method to inform them of their ſituation. Impreſſed with humane ſentiments, on ſuch an occaſion, he was deſirous of ſtopping till they might have time to join the ſhips. But no ſuch idea occurred to Captain Cook, to whom it ſeemed obvious, that if this had been the caſe, it would have been the firſt ſtep taken by ſuch ſhipwrecked perſons, in order to ſecure to themſelves, and to their companions, the relief they could not but be ſolicitous about, to ſend ſome of their body off to the ſhips in the canoes. For this reaſon, he rather thought that the paper contained a note of information, left by ſome Ruſſian traders, who had lately been amongſt theſe iſlands, to be delivered to the next of their countrymen who ſhould arrive; and that the natives, ſeeing the ſhips paſs, and ſuppoſing them to be Ruſſians, had reſolved to bring off the note, thinking it might induce them to ſtop. Fully convinced of this, Captain Cooke did not ſtay to enquire any farther into the matter; but made ſail, and ſtood away to the weſtward.

On

On the 21ſt, at noon, Captain Cook found himſelf two leagues diſtant from Halibut Iſland. Rocks and breakers now forced him ſo far from the continent, that he had but a diſtant view of the coaſt between Rock Point and Halibut Iſland. Over this and the adjoining iſlands he could ſee the main land covered with ſnow; but, particularly, ſome hills, whoſe elevated tops were ſeen towering above the clouds, to a moſt ſtupendous height. The moſt ſouth Weſterly of theſe hills was diſcovered to have a volcano, which continually threw up vaſt columns of black ſmoke. It ſtands not far from the coaſt; and in the latitude of 54 deg. 48 min. and the longitude of 195 deg. 45 min. It is alſo remarkable from its figure, which is a complete cone; and the volcano is at the very ſummit. He ſeldom ſaw this (or indeed any other of theſe mountains) wholly clear of clouds. At times, both baſe and ſummit would be clear; when a narrow cloud, ſometimes two or three, one above another, wou'd embrace the middle, like a girdle; which with the column of ſmoke, riſing perpendicular to a great height out of its top, and ſpreading before the wind into a tail of vaſt length, made a pictureſque appearance. It may be worth remarking, that the wind, at the height to which the ſmoke of this volcano reached, moved ſometimes in a direction contrary to what it did at ſea, even when it blew a freſh gale.

In the afternoon, having three hours calm, the people caught upwards of a hundred halibuts, ſome of which weighed a hundred pounds. This was a very ſeaſonable refreſhment. In the height of the fiſhing, which was three or four miles from the ſhore, a ſmall canoe, conducted by one man, came to them from an adjacent iſland. On approaching the ſhip, he took off his cap, and bowed, as the other had done, who viſited the Diſcovery the preceeding day. It was evident, that the Ruſſians muſt have a communication and traffic with theſe people; not only from their acquired politeneſs, but from the note before mentioned. But there was now a freſh proof of it; for this viſitor wore a pair of

of green cloth breeches, and a jacket of black cloth, or ſtuff, under the gut, ſhirt or frock of his own country. He had nothing to barter, except a grey fox ſkin, and ſome fiſhing implements or harpoons; the heads of the ſhaft of which, for the length of a foot, or more, were neatly made of bone, as a walking-cane, and carved. He had with him a bladder, full of ſomething which was ſuppoſed to be oil; for he opened it, took a mouthful, and then faſtened it again.

On the 26th, although it was day-light, the weather was ſo thick and foggy, that they could not ſee a hundred yards before them; but, as the wind was now moderate, the captain ventured to run. At half paſt four, he was alarmed at hearing the ſound of breakers on his larboard bow. On heaving the lead, he found twenty-eight fathoms water; and the next caſt, twenty-five. He immediately brought the ſhip to, and anchored in this laſt depth; calling to the Diſcovery, which was cloſe by, to anchor alſo. A few hours after, the fog having cleared away a little, it appeared that he had eſcaped imminent danger. He found himſelf three quarters of a mile from the North Eaſt ſide of an iſland, which extended from South by Weſt half Weſt, to North by Eaſt half Eaſt, each extreme about a league diſtant. Two elevated rocks, the one bearing South by Eaſt, and the other Eaſt by South, were about half a league each from the ſhips, and about the ſame diſtance from each other. There were ſeveral breakers about them; and yet, providence had, in the dark, conducted the ſhips through, between theſe two rocks, which we ſhould not have ventured in a clear day, and to ſuch an anchoring place, that we could not have choſen a better.

The iſland, to which they were conducted in this providential manner, lies on the South ſide of Oonalaſhka, another iſland, where they afterwards found an excellent harbour, called by the natives Samganooda. Here they watered, but found no wood. Oonalaſhka is one of the numerous group of iſlands, which extend for a conſiderable diſtance towards the

S. W. from a very projecting cape on the continent of America, which lies in latitude 54 and half deg. N. and, by Captain Cook, is named Alaſhka. In approaching this iſland, they ſaw ſome natives towing in two whales, which it was ſuppoſed they had juſt killed. A few of them, now and then, came off to the ſhips, and bartered a few trifling things with the people, but never remained above a quarter of an hour at a time. On the contrary, they rather ſeemed ſhy; and yet the crew could judge that they were no ſtrangers to veſſels, in ſome degree like theirs. They behaved with a degree of politeneſs unknown to ſavage tribes.

While the ſhips lay in the harbour of Samganooda, ſeveral of the natives came off, each in a canoe, and bartered a few fiſhing implements for tobacco. One of them, a young man, overſet his canoe, while alongſide of one of the boats. Our people caught hold of him, but the canoe went adrift, and being picked up by another, was carried aſhore. The youth, by this accident, was obliged to come into the ſhip; and he went down into the cabin, upon the firſt invitation, without expreſſing the leaſt reluctance, or uneaſineſs. His dreſs was an upper garment like a ſhirt, made of the large gut of ſea animals, probably the whale; and an under garment of the ſame ſhape, made of the ſkin of birds, dreſſed with the feathers on, and neatly ſewed together; the feathered ſide being worn next to the ſkin. It was mended, or patched, with pieces of ſilk ſtuff; and his cap was ornamented with two or three ſorts of glaſs beads. His own clothes being wet, Captain Cook gave him others, in which he dreſſed himſelf, with as much eaſe as the captain could have done. From his behaviour, and that of ſome others, he was convinced that theſe people were no ſtrangers to Europeans, and to ſome of their cuſtoms. But there was ſomething in the ſhips that greatly excited their curioſity; for ſuch as could not come off in canoes, aſſembled on the neighbouring hills to look at them.

Soon after they anchored, a native brought on board ſuch another note as had been given to Captain Clerke.

He preſented it to Captain Cook; but it was written in the Ruſſian language, which, as already obſerved, none of them could read. As it could be of no uſe to Captain Cook, and might be of conſequence to others, he returned it to the bearer, and diſmiſſed him with a few preſents; for which he expreſſed his thanks, by making ſeveral low bows as he retired.

In walking, next day, along the ſhore, Captain Cook met with a group of natives of both ſexes, ſeated on the graſs, at a repaſt, conſiſting of raw fiſh, which they ſeemed to eat with as much reliſh as we ſhould a turbot, ſerved up with the richeſt ſauce. Thick fogs, and a contrary wind, detained him till the 2d of July; which afforded an opportunity of acquiring ſome knowledge of the country, and of its inhabitants.

Captain Cook left Oonalaſhka on the 2d of July, 1778, and proceeded Northward. On the 3d of Auguſt, he loſt Mr. Anderſon, ſurgeon, who had been lingering under a conſumption upwards of a year. To perpetuate the memory of this valuable man, to whom he had been indebted for many judicious obſervations in natural hiſtory, an iſland diſcovered ſoon after his deceaſe, was called Anderſon's Iſland. On the 9th Captain Cook came in ſight of the moſt weſterly point of all America hitherto known, to which he gave the name of Cape Prince of Wales. This Cape is ſituated in lat. 65 deg. 46 min. and in the long. of 191 deg. 45 min. Hence we ſtood over to a point of land, which forms the eaſtern extremity of the continent of Aſia, diſtant from Cape Prince of Wales about 13 leagues. This, as it appeared in the ſequel, is the country of the Tſchurſki, explored by Beering in 1728. Captain Cook anchored on the S. W. ſide of this Cape, in a bay, to which, it being the 10th of Auguſt, he gave the name of St. Lawrence.

As we were ſtanding into this bay, we perceived on the North ſhore, a village, and ſome people, whom the ſight of the ſhips ſeemed to have thrown into confuſion or fear. We could plainly ſee perſons running up the country with burdens upon their backs. At theſe

habitations we propoſed to land, and accordingly, went with three armed boats, accompanied by ſome of the officers. About 30 or 40 men, each armed with a ſpontoon, a bow and arrows, ſtood drawn on a riſing ground cloſe by the village. As we drew near, three of them came down towards the ſhip, and were ſo polite as to take off their caps, and to make us low bows. We returned the civility, but this did not inſpire them with ſufficient confidence to wait for our landing; for the moment we put the boats aſhore, they retired. The captain followed them aſhore without arms; and by ſigns and geſtures prevailed on them to ſtop, and to receive ſome trifling preſents. In return for theſe they gave us two fox-ſkins, and a couple of ſea-horſe teeth.

They ſeemed very fearful and cautious; expreſſing their deſire, by ſigns, that no more of our people ſhould be permitted to come up. On my laying my hand on the ſhoulder of one of them, he ſtarted back ſeveral paces. In proportion as I advanced, they returned backwards; always in the attitude of being ready to make uſe of their ſpears; while thoſe on the riſing ground ſtood ready to ſupport them with their arrows. Inſenſibly, myſelf, and two or three of my companions, got in amongſt them. A few beads diſtributed to thoſe about us, ſoon created a kind of confidence; ſo that they were not alarmed when a few more of our people joined us; and, by degrees, a ſort of traffic commenced. In exchange for knives, beads, tobacco, and other articles, they gave us ſome of their cloathing, and a few arrows. But nothing that we had to offer could induce them to part with a ſpear or a bow. Theſe they held in conſtant readineſs, never once quitting them, except at one time, when four or five perſons laid theirs down, while they gave us a ſong and a dance. And even then, they placed them in ſuch a manner, that they could lay hold of them in an inſtant; and, for their ſecurity, they deſired us to ſit down.

The arrows were pointed with either bone or ſtone, but very few of them had barbs; and ſome had a round

round plump point. What uſe they may be applied to, we could not ſay, unleſs to kill ſmall animals, without damaging the ſkin. The bows were ſuch as we had ſeen on the American coaſt. The ſpears or ſpontoons, were of iron or ſteel, and European or Aſiatic workmanſhip; in which no little pains had been taken to ornament them with carving, and inlayings of braſs, and of a white metal. Thoſe who ſtood ready with bows and arrows in their hands, had the ſpear ſlung over their right ſhoulder by a leathern ſtrap. A leathern quiver, ſlung over their left ſhoulder, contained arrows; and ſome of theſe quivers were extremely beautiful, being made of red leather, on which was very neat embroidery, and other ornaments.

Several other things, and in particular their clothing, ſhewed that they were poſſeſſed of a degree of ingenuity, far ſurpaſſing what one could expect to find amongſt ſo Northern a people. All the Americans we had ſeen ſince our arrival on that coaſt, were rather low of ſtature, with round chubby faces, and high cheek bones. The people we now were amongſt, far from reſembling them, had long viſages, and were ſtout and well made. In ſhort, they appeared to be quite a different nation. We ſaw neither women, nor children of either ſex, nor any aged, except one man, who was bald headed, and he was the only one who carried no arms. The others ſeemed to be picked men, and rather under than above the middle age. The old man had a black mark acroſs his face, which I did not ſee in any others. All of them had their ears bored; and ſome had glaſs beads hanging to them. Theſe were the only fixed ornaments we ſaw about them, for they wear none in the lips. This is another thing in which they differ from the Americans we had lately ſeen.

Their clothing conſiſted of a cap, a frock, a pair of breeches, a pair of boots, and a pair of gloves, all made of leather, or of the ſkins of deer, dogs, ſeals, &c. and extremely well dreſſed; ſome with the hair or furs on; but others without it. The caps were made to fit the head very cloſe, and beſides theſe caps, which moſt

moſt of them wore, we got from them ſome hoods, made of ſkins of dogs, that were large enough to cover both head and ſhoulders. Their hair ſeemed to be black, but their heads were either ſhaved, or the hair cut cloſe off; and none of them wore any beard. Of the few articles which they got from us, knives and tobacco were what they valued moſt.

We found the village compoſed both of ther ſummer and their winter habitations. The latter are exactly like a vault, the floor of which is ſunk below the ſurface of the earth. One of them, which we examined, was of an oval form, about 20 feet long, and 12 or more high. The framing was compoſed of wood, and the ribs of whales, diſpoſed in a judicious manner, and bound together with ſmaller materials of the ſame ſort. Over this framing is laid a covering of ſtrong coarſe graſs; and again is covered with earth; ſo that on the outſide, the houſe looks like a little hillock, ſupported by a wall of ſtone, three or four feet high, which is built round the two ſides, and one end. At the other end, the earth is raiſed ſloping, to walk up to the entrance, which is by a hole in the top of the roof over that end. The floor was boarded, and under it a kind of cellar, in which I ſaw nothing but water. And at the end of each houſe was a vaulted room, which we took to be a ſtore-room.

After a ſtay of between two and three hours with theſe people, Captain Cook returned to his ſhips, and weighing anchor, proceeded Northward, keeping the coaſt of America as near as poſſible on board. On the 17th, we perceived a brightneſs in the Northern horizon, like that reflected from ice, commonly called the blink. It was little noticed, from a ſuppoſition that it was improbable they ſhould meet with ice ſo ſoon. And yet the ſharpneſs of the air, and gloomineſs of the weather, for two or three days paſt, ſeemed to indicate a ſudden change. About half an hour after, the ſight of a large field of ice left them in no doubt about the cauſe of the brightneſs of the horizon. About half paſt two we tacked cloſe to the edge of the ice, in

22 fathoms

22 fathoms water, being then in the lat. of 70 deg. 41 min. not being able to ſtand on any farther, for the ice was quite impenetrable, and extending from W. by S. to E. by N. as far as the eye could reach. Here were abundance of ſea-horſes, ſome on the water, but more upon the ice.

The next day at noon, we were cloſe to the edge of the ice, which was as compact as a wall, and ſeemed to be 10 or 12 feet high at leaſt. But farther North, it appeared much higher. Its ſurface was extremely rugged; and here and there we ſaw upon it pools of water. At this time they were three or four miles from the American coaſt, which extended from S. to S. E. by E. The Eaſtern extreme formed a point, which was much incumbered with ice, for which reaſon it obtained the name of Ice Cape. Its lat. is 70 deg. 29 min. and its long. 198 deg. 20 min.

On the 19th, they found a good deal of driſt ice about them, and the main ice was about 2 leagues to the N. At half paſt one they got in with the edge of it. It was not ſo compact as that which they had ſeen to the Northward; but it was too cloſe, and in too large pieces, to attempt forcing the ſhips through it. On the ice lay a prodigious number of ſea horſes, and as they were in want of freſh proviſions, the boats from each ſhip went to get ſome.

By ſeven in the evening, they had received on board the Reſolution nine of theſe animals; which, till now, they had ſuppoſed to be ſea-cows, ſo that they were not a little diſappointed, eſpecially ſome of the ſeamen, who, for the novelty of the thing, had been feaſting their eyes for ſome days paſt. Nor would they have been diſappointed now, nor have known the difference, if they had not happened to have one or two on board who had been at Greenland, and declared what animals they were, and that no one ever eat of them. But notwithſtanding this, they lived upon them as long as they laſted; and there were few on board who did not prefer them to ſalt meat.

They

They lie in herds of many hundreds upon the ice, huddling one over the other like ſwine, and roar or bray very loud; ſo that in the night or foggy weather, they gave us notice of the vicinity of the ice, before we could ſee it. We never found the whole herd aſleep, ſome being always upon the watch; theſe on the approach of the boat would wake thoſe next to them, and the alarm being thus gradually communicated, the whole herd would be awake preſently; but they were ſeldom in a hurry to get away, till they had been once fired at, then they would tumble the one over the other into the ſea in the utmoſt confuſion. The female will defend the young to the very laſt, at the expence of her own life, whether in the water or upon the ice. Nor will the young one quit the dam, though ſhe be dead, ſo that if you kill one you are ſure of the other.

It is worth obſerving, that for ſeveral days we had frequently ſeen flocks of ducks flying to the ſouthward. They were of two ſorts, the one much larger than the other. The largeſt were of a brown colour, and of the ſmall ſort, either the duck or drake was black and white, and the other brown. Does not this indicate that there muſt be land to the North, where theſe birds find ſhelter in the proper ſeaſon to breed, and from whence they were now returning to a warmer climate?

From this day to the 29th, Captain Cook kept beating along the edge of the ice, from the American to the Aſiatic coaſt, with intent, if poſſibe, to penetrate it, and proceed to the Northward; but without effect. At one time, he was in a manner ſurrounded by the ice, and had no way left to clear it, but by ſtanding to the Southward. Afterwards, having fallen in with the main ice, they were directed how to keep along the edge of it, by the roaring of the ſea-horſes.

On the 27th, Captain Cook went with the boats, to examine the ſtate of the ice. He found it conſiſting of looſe pieces, of various extent, and ſo cloſe together, that he could hardly enter the outer edge with a boat; and it was as impoſſible for the ſhips to enter it, as if it had been ſo many rocks. He took particular notice, that

that it was all pure tranſparent ice, except the upper ſurface, which was a little porous. It appeared to be entirely compoſed of frozen ſnow, and to have been all formed at ſea. For ſetting aſide the improbability, or rather impoſſibility, of ſuch huge maſſes floating out of rivers, in which there is hardly water for a boat, none of the productions of the land were found incorporated, or fixed in it; which muſt have unavoidably been the caſe, had it been formed in rivers, either great or ſmall. The pieces of ice that formed the outer edge of the field, were from forty or fifty yards in extent, to four or five; and he judged, that the larger pieces reached thirty feet, or more under the ſurface of the water. It alſo appeared to him very improbable, that this ice could have been the production of the preceding winter alone. I ſhould ſuppoſe it rather to have been the production of a great many winters. Nor was it leſs improbable, according to my judgment, that the little that remained of the ſummer, could deſtroy the tenth part of what now ſubſiſted of this maſs; for the ſun had already exerted upon it the full influence of his rays. It is the wind, or rather the waves raiſed by the wind, that brings down the bulk of theſe enormous maſſes, by grinding one piece againſt another. We meaſured the depth of one piece of ice, and found it to be fifteen feet, ſo that the ſhips might have ſailed over it. If I had not meaſured this depth, I would not have believed that there was a ſufficient weight of ice above the ſurface, to have ſunk the other ſo much below it.

On the 29th, Captain Cook proceeded Northward, as far as Cape North, on the coaſt of Aſia; this Cape he determined to weather, being convinced that the coaſt beyond it muſt take a weſterly direction, as he could ſee no land to the Northward of it, though the horizon was then pretty clear. Being diſappointed in this attempt, the captain now found that the ſeaſon was ſo far advanced, and the time when the froſt was expected to ſet in ſo near at hand, that he could not think it prudent to make any farther attempts to find a paſſage into the Atlantic this year, in any direction.

His attention, therefore, was now directed to find out ſome place, where he might be ſupplied with wood and water; and the firſt object in his thoughts was, how he ſhould ſpend the winter, ſo as to make ſome improvements in Geography and Navigation, and at the ſame time, be in a condition to return to the North in farther ſearch of a paſſage the enſuing ſummer.

CHAP. VII.

Return to the Southward—Burney's Iſland—Paſs the Eaſtern Cape of Aſia—Deſcription and ſituation of it—Arrival at Norton Sound—Interview with the natives—Deſcription of the Ruſſian ſettlement at Oonalaſka—Mowee and Owhyhee, two of the Sandwich Iſlands, diſcovered—The natives refuſe to drink ſugar-cane beer.

LEAVING theſe dreary regions of ice and ſnow, Captain Cook now ſteered Southward, and on the 31ſt of Auguſt, 1778, paſſed by a ſmall iſland, about three leagues from the main, in the lat. of 67 deg. 45 min. The next day he came in ſight of a pretty lofty promontory, in the lat. of 67 deg. 3 min. and in the long. of 188 deg. 11 min. He was now well aſſured, that this was the country of the Tſchutſki, or the N. E. coaſt of Aſia, and that this Cape was the limit of Beering's voyage in 1728.

On the 2d of September, they had fair weather and ſun-ſhine, of which, for near five days before, they had been deprived; as they ranged along the coaſt at the diſtance of four miles, they ſaw ſeveral of the inhabitants, and ſome of their habitations, which looked like little hillocks of earth. In the evening they paſſed the Eaſtern Cape; the ſame point of land which they had paſſed on the 11th of Auguſt; and from which the coaſt changes its direction, and tends S. W. They who believe implicitly in Mr. Stæhlin's map thought it then to be the Eaſt point of his Iſland Alaſchka; but they were ſatisfied, by this time, that

it could be no other than the Eaſtern promontory of Aſia; and, probably, the proper Tſchukotſkoi Noſs; though the promontory to which Beering gave that name, is farther to the S. W. However Captain Cook, concluded, as Beering did before him, that this is the moſt Eaſterly point of Aſia. It is a peninſula of conſiderable height, joined to the continent by a very low, and, to appearance, narrow neck of land. It ſeems a ſteep rocky cliff next the ſea; and off the point are ſome rocks like ſpires.

After paſſing this Cape, Captain Cook ſteered for the Northern point of St. Lawrence Bay, in which he had anchored on the 10th of Auguſt. He reached it the next morning, and ſaw ſome of the inhabitants of the place where he had ſeen them before, as well as ſeveral others on the oppoſite ſide of the bay. None of them, however, attempted to come off to the ſhips, which he thought a little extraordinary, as the weather was favourable enough; and thoſe whom he had lately viſited, had no reaſon that he could think of, to diſlike their viſitors. Theſe people muſt be the Tſchutſki, a nation that the Ruſſians had not been able to conquer; and from the whole of their conduct with us, it appears that they have not brought them under ſubjection, though it is obvious they muſt have a trade with the Ruſſians, either directly, or by the means of ſome neighbouring nation; as we cannot otherwiſe account for their being in the poſſeſſion of the Spontoons, in particular, of which we took notice.

As Captain Cook gave the name of St. Lawrence to this bay, on account of his having anchored in it on the 10th of Auguſt. This bay is, at leaſt, five leagues broad at the entrance, and four leagues deep, narrow towards the bottom, where it appeared to be tolerably well ſheltered from the ſea-winds, provided there be ſufficient depth of water for ſhips. The captain, however, did not wait to examine it, although he was very deſirious of finding an harbour in thoſe parts, to which he might reſort next ſpring. But he wanted one where wood was to be got; an article, in which he well knew

this place to be deficient. In the afternoon, in the direction of their courſe, they ſaw what was firſt taken for a rock, but it proved to be a dead whale, which ſome natives of the Aſiatic coaſt had killed, and were towing aſhore. They ſeemed to conceal themſelves behind the fiſh, to avoid being ſeen; but this was unneceſſary, as the captain purſued his courſe, without taking any notice of them.

On the 4th of September, he ceaſed to follow the direction of the coaſt, as he found that it tended weſterly, towards the gulf of Anadir, into which he had no inducement to go. He therefore ſteered to the Southward, and in the evening came in ſight of Beering's Iſland of St. Lawrence. He was now about twelve leagues from the Southernmoſt point of the main land, which bore South, 83 min. Weſt. This he took to be the point which Beering calls the Eaſt point of Suchotſki, or Cape Tſchukotſkoi; a name, which he gave it with propriety, becauſe it was from this part of the coaſt that the natives came off to him, who call themſelves of the nation of the Tſchutſki. Captain Cook makes its lat. to be 64 deg. 13 min. and its long. 186 deg. 36 min.

Being thus perfectly convinced that he was on the coaſt of Aſia, and not on the Eaſt ſide of the great iſland called Alaſchka, he now ſtood over to the coaſt of America, in hopes of finding it there. He was rather induced to ſpend ſome time in ſearch of this iſland, as it is repreſented to abound with wood, which was greatly wanted by both ſhips.

On the 8th, he arrived at a Sound, laying between two points of land, one of which to the North, he named Cape Derby, and the other to the South, Cape Denbigh. This inlet, which (in honour of Sir Fletcher Norton, now Lord Grantham) he named Norton Sound, extends to the northward as far as lat. 64 deg. 54 min. Here they found water, and plenty of drift wood. He ſtaid here till the 17th, occaſionally landing, not only to procure wood and water, but to refreſh the men, who were alternately ſent on ſhore to feed on the berries,

berries, and to cut brooms, of which they were in want, and the branches of ſpruce trees for beer. He likewiſe ſent Lieutenant King, with a party of men, in two boats, to explore the ſound, and to land on the adjacent heights. From the reſult of Lieutenant King's obſervations, he was perfectly ſatisfied that Mr. Stæhlin's iſland was quite imaginary; and, in the ſequel, he found that the name of Alaſchka is given both by the Ruſſians and natives to the American continent in general, although it properly belongs to a very projecting cape adjoining to the iſland of Oonamaka.

During Captain Cook's ſtay in this Sound, he had ſome intercourſe with the natives. A family of them came near to the place where we were taking off wood. I know not how many there were at firſt; but I only ſaw the huſband, the wife, and the child; and a fourth perſon, that bore the human ſhape, and that was all; for he was the moſt deformed cripple I had ever ſeen or heard of. The other man was almoſt blind; and neither he nor his wife, were ſuch good looking people as we had ſometimes ſeen amongſt the natives of this coaſt. The under lips of both were bored; and they had in their poſſeſſion ſome ſuch glaſs beads as I had met with before amongſt their neighbours. But iron was their beloved article. For four knives, which we had made out of an old iron hoop, I got from them near 400 pounds weight of fiſh, which they had caught on this or the preceding day.

Having finiſhed the neceſſary occupations at Norton Sound, Captain Cook thought it high time to think of leaving theſe Northern regions, and to retire to ſome place during the winter, where he might procure refreſhments for his people, and a ſmall ſupply of proviſions. Petropaulowſka, or the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, in Kamtſchatka, did not appear likely to furniſh either the one or the other, for ſo large a number of men. He had, beſides other reaſons for not repairing thither at this time. The firſt, and on which all others depended, was the great diſlike to lie inactive for ſix or ſeven months, which would have been

the

the neceſſary conſequence of wintering in any of theſe Northern parts. No place was ſo conveniently within his reach, where he could expect to have his wants relieved as the Sandwich Iſlands. To them therefore, he determined to proceed; after firſt endeavouring to find a harbour on the continent of America, to the Southward, where he could meet with a farther ſupply of water.

Leaving Norton Sound on the 17th, Captain Cook ſucceſſively ſaw Beſborough Iſland, Stuart's Iſland, Clerke's Iſland, Gore's Iſland, and Pinnacle's Iſland. But neither among theſe, nor along the coaſt, could he find an harbour, where he could procure the wiſhed-for ſupply of water. It is here to be obſerved, that no land was to be ſeen to the Southward of Point Shallow Water, which he judged to lie in the lat. of 63 deg. ſo that between this lat. and Shoal Neſs, in the lat. of 60 deg. the coaſt is entirely unexplored.

At length, on the 2d of October, he again arrived at the iſland of Oonalaſhka, and hauled into a bay, known by the name of Egoochſhack, lying ten miles to the Weſtward of the harbour of Samganooda, where he had formerly anchored; but finding very deep water in this bay, he was glad to get out again. The natives, many of whom lived here, viſited them at different times, bringing with them dried ſalmon and other fiſh, which they exchanged with the ſeamen for tobacco. But a few days before every ounce of tobacco that was in the ſhip, had been diſtributed among them; and the quantity was not half ſufficient to anſwer their demands. Notwithſtanding this, ſo improvident is an Engliſh ſailor, that they were as profuſe in making their bargains, as if they had now arrived at the port in Virginia; by which means, in leſs than 48 hours, the value of this article of barter was lowered above 1000 per cent.

On the 3d they anchored in Samganooda harbour; and the carpenters were employed in repairing a leak, which the Reſolution had ſprung, in her paſſage from Norton Sound. The vegetables that had been here

met

met with, were now moſtly in a ſtate of decay; ſo that they were but little benefited by the great quantities of berries every where found aſhore. That they might avail themſelves as much as poſſible of this uſeful refreſhment, one third of the people, by turns, had leave to go and pick them. Conſiderable quantities of them were alſo procured from the natives. If there were any ſigns of the ſcurvy in either ſhip, theſe berries, and the uſe of ſpruce beer, which they had to drink every day, effectually eradicated them. The fiſhery likewiſe enabled them to make a conſiderable ſaving of their ſea proviſions. And, at this iſland, the captain found a Ruſſian ſettlement or factory, for the procuring of the ſkins of ſea-otters. Mutual civilities paſſed between the Captain and the Chiefs of this ſettlement; from whom he procured much uſeful information; and by whoſe means he diſpatched a letter to the Lords of the Admiralty (incloſing a Chart of all the Northern coaſt he had viſited) which was to be forwarded the enſuing ſpring to Major Behm, Governor of Kamtſchatka, and by him the following winter to Peterſburgh.

Captain Cook continued at Oonalaſhka till the 26th of October, 1778. But before we proceed farther in the Voyage, we ſhall give his account of ſeveral intereſting particulars relative to this iſland.

After we became acquainted with theſe Ruſſians, ſome of our gentlemen, at different times, viſited their ſettlement on the iſland; where they always met with a hearty welcome. This ſettlement conſiſted of a dwelling-houſe, and two ſtore-houſes. And, beſides the Ruſſians, there was a number of the Kamtſchadales, and of the natives, as ſervants or ſlaves, to the former. Some others of the natives, who ſeemed independent of the Ruſſians, lived at the ſame place. Such of them as belonged to the Ruſſians were all males; and they are taken, or perhaps, purchaſed from their parents when young. There were at this time, about twenty of theſe, who could be looked upon in no other light than as children. They all live in the ſame houſe; the Ruſſians at the upper end; the Kamtſchadales in the middle;

middle; and the natives at the lower end; where is fixed a large boiler for preparing their food, which conſiſts chiefly of what the ſea produces, with the addition of wild roots and berries. There is little difference between the firſt and laſt table, beſides what is produced by cookery, in which the Ruſſians have the art to make indifferent things palitable. I have eaten whale's fleſh of their dreſſing, which I thought very good; and they make a kind of pan-pudding of ſalmon roe, beaten up fine, and fryed, that is no bad ſuccedanum for bread. They may, now and then, taſte real bread, or have a diſh in which flour is an ingredient; but this can only be an occaſional luxury. If we except the juice of berries, which they ſip at their meals, they have no other liquor beſides pure water; and it ſeems to be very happy for them that they have nothing ſtronger.

As the iſland ſupplies them with food, ſo it does, in a greaat meaſure, with clothing. This conſiſts chiefly of ſkins, and is perhaps the beſt they could have. The upper garment is made like our waggoner's frock, and reaches as low as the knee. Beſides this, they wear a waiſtcoat or two; a pair of breeches; a fur cap; and a pair of boots, the ſoles and upper leathers of which are of Ruſſian leather; but the legs are made of a kind of ſtrong gut. Their two Chiefs, Iſmyloff and Ivanovitch, wore each a calico frock; and they, as well as ſome others, had ſhirts, which were of ſilk. Theſe, perhaps, were the only part of their dreſs not made among themſelves.

There are Ruſſians ſettled upon all the principal iſlands between Oonalaſhka and Kamſchatka, for the ſole purpoſe of collecting furs. This great object is the ſea beaver or otter. I never heard them enquire after any other animal; though thoſe, whoſe ſkins are of inferior value, are alſo made part of their cargoes. I never thought to aſk how long they have had a ſettlement upon Oonalaſhka, and the neighbouring iſles; but to judge from the great ſubjection the natives are under, this cannot be of a very late date. The Ruſſians began to frequent Oonalaſhka in 1762. All theſe furies

furies are relieved, from time to time, by others. Thoſe we met with, arrived here from Okotſk, in 1776, and are to return in 1781; ſo that their ſtay at the iſland will be four years at leaſt.

It is now time to give ſome account of the native inhabitants. To all appearance, they are the moſt peaceable, inoffenſive people, I ever met with. And, as to honeſty, they might ſerve as a pattern to the moſt civiliſed nation upon earth. But, from what I ſaw of their neighbours, with whom the Ruſſians had no connection, I doubt whether this was their original diſpoſiton; and rather think that it has been the conſequence of their preſent ſtate of ſubjection. Indeed, if ſome of our gentlemen did not underſtand the Ruſſians, they had been obliged to make ſome ſevere examples, before they could bring the iſlanders into any order. If there were ſeverities inflicted at firſt, the beſt apology for them is, that they have produced the happieſt conſequences; and, at preſent, the greateſt harmony ſubſiſts between the two nations. The natives have their own Chiefs in each iſland, and ſeem to enjoy liberty and property unmoleſted. But whether or no they are tributaries to the Ruſſians, we could never find out. There was ſome reaſon to think that they are.

Theſe people are rather low of ſtature, but plump and well ſhaped, with rather ſhort necks; ſwarthy, with chubby faces, black eyes, ſmall beards, and long, ſtraight, black hair, which the men wear looſe behind, and cut before, but the women tie it up in a bunch.

Their dreſs has been occaſionally mentioned. Both ſexes wear the ſame faſhion; the only difference is in the materials. The women's frock is made of the ſeal ſkin; and that of the men, of the ſkins of birds, both reaching below the knee. This is the whole dreſs of the women. But over the frock, the men wear another made of the gut, which reſiſts water; and has a hood to it, which draws over the head. Some of them wear boots; and all of them have a kind of oval ſnouted cap, made of wood, with a rim to admit the head.

Theſe caps are dyed with green and other colours; and round the upper part of the rim, are ſtuck the long briſtles of ſome ſea animal, on which are ſtrung glaſs beads; and on the front is a ſmall image or two made of bone.

They make uſe of no paint, but the women puncture their faces ſlightly; and both men and women bore the under lip, to which they fix pieces of bone. But it is as uncommon at Oonalaſhka, to ſee a man with this ornament, as to ſee a woman without it. Some fix beads to the upper lip, under the noſtrils; and all of them hang ornaments in their ears.

Their food conſiſts of fiſh, ſea-animals, birds, roots, and berries; and even of ſea weed. They dry large quantities of fiſh in ſummer, which they lay up in ſmall huts for winter uſe; and, probably, they preſerve roots and berries for the ſame time of ſcarcity. They eat almoſt every thing raw. Broiling and boiling were the only methods of cookery that I ſaw them make uſe of; and the firſt was very probably learnt from the Ruſſians. Some have got little braſs kettles; and thoſe who have not, make one of a flat ſtone, with ſides of clay, not unlike a ſtanding pye.

I was once preſent, when the chief of Oonalaſhka, made his dinner of the raw head of a large halibut, juſt caught. Before any was given to the chief, two of his ſervants eat the gills, without any other dreſſing, beſides ſqueezing out the ſlime. This done, one of them cut off the head of the fiſh, took it to the ſea and waſhed it, then came with it and ſat down by the chief, firſt pulling up ſome graſs, upon a part of which the head was laid, and the reſt was ſtrewed before the chief. He then cut large pieces off the cheeks, and laid theſe within the reach of the great man, who ſwallowed them with as much ſatisfaction as we ſhould do raw oyſters. When he had done, the remains of the head were cut in pieces, and given to the attendants, who tore off the meat with their teeth, and gnawed the bones like ſo many dogs.

As theſe people uſe no paint, they are not ſo dirty in their perſons as the ſavages who thus beſmear themſelves; but they are full as louſy and filthy in their houſes. Their method of building is as follows: they dig, in the ground, an oblong ſquare pit, the length of which ſeldom exceeds fifty feet, and breadth twenty; but in general the dimenſions are ſmaller. Over this excavation they form the roof of wood, which the ſea throws aſhore. This roof is covered firſt with graſs, and then with earth; ſo that the outward appearance is like a dunghill. In the middle of the roof, towards each end, is left a ſquare opening, by which the light is admitted; one of theſe openings being for this purpoſe only, and the other being alſo uſed to go in and out by, with the help of a ladder, or rather a poſt, with ſteps cut in it. In ſome houſes there is another entrance below; but this is not common. Round the ſides and end of the huts, the families (for ſeveral are lodged together) have their ſeparate apartments, where they ſleep, and ſit at work; not upon benches, but in a kind of a concave trench, which is dug all round the inſide of the houſe, and covered with mats; ſo that this part is kept tolerably decent. But the middle of the houſe, which is common to all the families, is far otherwiſe. For although it be covered with dry graſs, it is a receptacle for dirt of every kind, and the place for the urine trough; the ſtench of which is not mended by raw hides, or leather being almoſt continually ſteeped in it. Behind and over the trench, are placed the few effects they are poſſeſſed of; ſuch as their clothing, mats and ſkins.

Their houſehold furniture conſiſts of bowls, ſpoons, buckets, cans, matted baſkets, and perhaps a Ruſſian kettle or pot. All theſe utenſils are very neatly made, and well formed; and yet we ſaw no other tools among them but the knife and the hatchet; that is, a ſmall flat piece of iron, made like an adze, by fitting it into a crooked wooden handle. Theſe were the only inſtruments we met with there made of iron. For although the Ruſſians live amongſt them, we found much leſs of

this metal in their poſſeſſion, than we had met with in the poſſeſſion of the tribes on the American continent, who had never ſeen, nor perhaps had any intercourſe with the Ruſſians. Probably a few beads, a little tobacco and ſnuff, purchaſed all they had to ſpare. There are few, if any of them, that do not ſmoke and chew tobacco, and take ſnuff; a luxury that bids fair to keep them always poor.

They did not ſeem to wiſh for more iron, or to want any other inſtruments, except ſewing needles, their own being made of bone. With theſe they not only ſew their canoes, and make their clothes, but alſo very curious embroidery. Inſtead of thread, they uſe the fibres of ſinews, which they ſplit to the thickneſs which each ſort of work requires. All ſewing is performed by the women. They are the tailors, ſhoemakers, and boat-builders, or boat-coverers. They make mats and baſkets of graſs, that are both beautiful and ſtrong. Indeed, there is a neatneſs and perfection in moſt of their work, that ſhews they neither want ingenuity nor perſeverance.

I ſaw not a fire-place in any one of their houſes. They are lighted, as well as heated, by lamps; which are ſimple, and yet anſwer the purpoſe very well. They are made of a flat ſtone, hollowed on one ſide like a plate, and about the ſame ſize, or larger. In the hollow part they put the oil, mixed with a little dry graſs, which ſerves the purpoſe of a wick. Both men and women frequently warm their bodies over one of theſe lamps, by placing it between their legs, under their garments, and ſitting thus over it for a few minutes.

They produce fire both by colliſion and attrition; the former, by ſtriking two ſtones one againſt another; on one of which is a ſtick of about eighteen inches in length, and the other a flat piece. The pointed end of the ſtick they preſs upon the other, whirling it nimbly round as a drill; thus producing fire in a few minutes. This method is common in many parts of the world. It is practiſed by the Kamſchadales, by

theſe

theſe people, by the Greenlanders, by the Brazilians, by the Otaheiteans, by the New Hollanders, and probably by many other nations.

No ſuch thing as an offenſive or defenſive weapon was ſeen amongſt the natives of Oonalaſhka. We cannot ſuppoſe that the Ruſſians found them in ſuch a defenceleſs ſtate; it is more probable that, for their own ſecurity, they have diſarmed them. Political reaſons too may have induced the Ruſſians not to allow theſe iſlanders to have any large canoes; for it is difficult to believe they had none ſuch originally, as we found them amongſt all their neighbours. However, we ſaw none here but one or two belonging to the Ruſſians. The canoes made uſe of by the natives, are the ſmalleſt we had any where ſeen upon the American coaſt; though built after the ſame manner, with ſome little difference in the conſtruction. In the management of their canoes, they make uſe of the double-bladed paddle, which is held with both hands in the middle, ſtriking the water with a quick regular motion, firſt on one ſide, then on the other. By this means, the canoe is impelled at a great rate, and in a direction as ſtraight as a line can be drawn. In ſailing from Egoochſhak to Samganooda, two or three canoes kept way with the ſhip, though ſhe was going at the rate of ſeven miles an hour.

Their fiſhing and hunting implements differ very little from thoſe uſed by the Greenlanders, as they are deſcribed by Crantz. With reſpect to the fiſheries in the ſeas, halibut and ſalmon ſeem to be in the greateſt plenty; and on them the inhabitants of theſe iſles ſubſiſt chiefly; at leaſt, they were the only ſort of fiſh, except cod, which we obſerved to be laid up for their winter ſtore.

On Monday the 26th, Captain Cook left this iſland. His intention was to proceed to the Sandwich Iſlands, there to ſpend a few of the winter months, and then to go to Kamſchatka, ſo as to endeavour to be there by the middle of May, the enſuing ſummer. On the 26th of November, he diſcovered Mowee, and on the 30th Owhyhee,

Owhyhee, two of the Sandwich Iſland. In plying between theſe two iſlands, they had an occaſional traffick with the natives of Owhyhee for proviſions: I never met with a behaviour ſo free from reſerve and ſuſpicion, in my intercourſe with any tribes of ſavages, as we experienced in the people of this iſland. It was very common for them to ſend up into the ſhip the ſeveral articles they brought off for barter; afterward, they would come in themſelves, and make their bargains on the quarter deck. The people of Otaheite, even after our repeated viſits, did not care to put ſo much confidence in us. I infer from this, that thoſe of Owhyhee muſt be more faithful in their dealings with one another, than the inhabitants of Otaheite are. For if little faith were obſerved amongſt themſelves, they would not be ſo ready to truſt to ſtrangers. It is alſo to be obſerved, to their honour, that they never once attempted to cheat us in exchanges, nor to commit a theft. They underſtand trading as well as moſt people, and ſeemed to comprehend clearly the reaſon of our plying upon their coaſt. For though they brought off proviſions in great plenty, particularly pigs, yet they kept up their price; and rather than diſpoſe of them for leſs than they thought they were worth, would take them aſhore again.

Having procured a quantity of ſugar cane; and having upon a trial, made but a few days ago, found that a ſtrong decoction of it produced a very palatable beer, I ordered ſome more to be brewed, for our general uſe. But when the caſk was now broached, not one of our crew even ſo much as taſted it. As I had no motive in preparing this beverage, but to ſave our ſpirits for a colder climate, I gave myſelf no trouble, either by exerting authority, or by having recourſe to perſuaſion, to prevail on them to drink it; knowing that there was no danger of the ſcurvy, ſo long as we could get a plentiful ſupply of other vegetables. But, that I might not be diſappointed in my views, I gave orders that no grog ſhould be ſerved in either ſhip. I myſelf, and the officers, continued to make uſe of this ſugar-cane beer,

beer, whenever we could get materials for brewing it. A few hops, of which we had ſome on board, improved it much. It has the taſte of new malt beer; and I believe no one will doubt of its being very wholeſome. And yet my inconſiderate crew alledged it was injurious to their health.

They had no better reaſon to ſupport a reſolution, which they took on our firſt arrival in King George's Sound, not to drink the ſpruce beer made there. But, whether from a conſideration that it was not the firſt time of their being required to uſe that liquor, or from other reaſon, they did not attempt to carry their purpoſe into actual execution; and I had never heard of it till now, when they renewed their ignorant oppoſition to my beſt endeavours to ſerve them. Every innovation whatever, on board a ſhip, though ever ſo much to the advantage of ſeamen, is ſure to meet with their higheſt diſapprobation. But portable ſoup, and ſour crout were, at firſt, condemned as ſtuff unfit for human beings. Few commanders have introduced into their ſhips more novelties, as uſeful varieties of food and drink, than I have done. Indeed, few commanders have had the ſame opportunities of trying ſuch experiments, or been driven to the ſame neceſſity of trying them. It has, however, been, in a great meaſure, owing to various little deviations from eſtabliſhed practice, that I have been able to preſerve my people, generally ſpeaking, from that dreadful diſtemper, the ſcurvy, which has perhaps deſtroyed more of our ſailors, in their peaceful voyages, than have fallen by the enemy in military expeditions.

Many days were ſpent in plying, in endeavouring to get to the windward of Owhyhee, and to find a proper place for anchorage. At one time the canoes thronged to the ſhip with hogs and women. The latter, the captain obſerved, it was not poſſible to keep from coming on board; no women, he ever met with, were leſs reſerved; and indeed, it appeared to him, that they viſited the ſhips with no other view, than to make a ſurrender of their perſons.

At

At length, on the 16th of January 1779, a bay was diſcovered, into which, after he had ſent to examine it, Captain Cook reſolved to carry the ſhips. As night approached, the greater part of his viſitors retired to the ſhore; but numbers of them requeſted his permiſſion to ſleep on board. Curioſity was not the only motive, at leaſt with ſome; for the next morning, ſeveral things were miſſing, which determined him not to entertain ſo many another time.

On the 17th, he anchored in this bay, which is called by the natives Karakakooa. The ſhips continued to be much crowded with natives, and were ſurrounded by a multitude of canoes. I had no where, in the courſe of my voyage, ſeen ſo numerous a body of people aſſembled at one place. For, beſides thoſe who had come off to us in canoes, all the ſhore of the bay was covered with ſpectators, and many hundreds were ſwimming round the ſhips like ſhoals of fiſh. We could not but be ſtruck with the ſingularity of this ſcene; and perhaps there were few on board who now lamented our having failed in our endeavours to find a Northern paſſage homeward, laſt ſummer. To this diſappointment we owed our having it in our power to reviſit the Sandwich Iſlands, and to enrich our voyage with a diſcovery, which, though the laſt, ſeemed in many reſpects, to be the moſt important that had hitherto been made by Europeans, throughout the extent of the Pacific Ocean.

CHAP. VIII.

Deſcription of Karakakooa Bay—Ceremonies at the landing of Captain Cook—Arrival of Tereeoboo, king of the iſland—Viſit from the king, and returned by Captain Cook—Tereeoboo's magnificent preſent—The ſhips leave the iſland—The Reſolution damaged in a gale, and obliged to return—Death of Captain Cook.

KARAKAKOOA Bay, is ſituated on the W. ſide of the iſland Owhyhee. It is bounded by two points of land, at the diſtance of half a league, and bearing S. S. E. and N. N. W. from each other. On the N. point, which is flat and barren, ſtands the village of Kowrowa; and in the bottom of the bay, near a grove of tall cocoa-nut trees, is another village of a more conſiderable ſize, called Kakooa: between them runs a high rocky cliff, inacceſſible from the ſea ſhore. The S. ſide of the coaſt, for about a mile inland, has a rugged appearance; beyond which the country riſes with a gradual aſcent, and is overſpread with cultivated incloſures and groves of cocoa-nut trees, where the habitations of the natives are ſcattered in great numbers. The ſhore all round the bay, is covered with a black coral rock, which makes the landing very dangerous in rough weather; except at the village of Kakooa, where there is a fine ſandy beach, with a Morai, or burying-place, at one extremity, and a ſmall well of freſh, at the other. In this bay we moored, January 17, 1779, on the N. ſide, about a quarter of a mile from the ſhore, Kowrowa bearing N. W.

As ſoon as the inhabitants perceived our intention of anchoring in the bay, they came off from the ſhore in aſtoniſhing numbers, and expreſſed their joy by ſinging and ſhouting, and exhibiting a variety of wild and extravagant geſtures. The decks and rigging of both ſhips were ſoon completely covered with them; and a multitude of women and boys, who had not been able

to get canoes, came ſwimming round us in ſhoals; many of whom, not finding room on board, remained the whole day playing in the water.

Among the chiefs who came on board the Reſolution, was a young man named Pareea, whom we ſoon perceived to be a perſon of great authority. On preſenting himſelf to Captain Cook, he told him, that he was Jakanee (we afterwards met with ſeveral others of the ſame denomination; but whether it be an office, or ſome degree of affinity, we could never learn with certainty) to the king of the iſland, who was at that time engaged on a military expedition at Mowee, and was expected to return within three or four days. A few preſents from Captain Cook attached him entirely to our intereſts, and he became exceedingly uſeful to us in the management of his countrymen, as we had ſoon occaſion to experience. For we had not been long at anchor, when it was obſerved that the Diſcovery had ſuch a number of people hanging on one ſide, as occaſioned her to heel conſiderably; and that the men were unable to keep off the crowds which continued preſſing into her. Captain Cook, being apprehenſive that ſhe might ſuffer ſome injury, pointed out the danger to Pareea, who immediately went to their aſſiſtance, cleared the ſhip of its incumbrances, and drove away the canoes that ſurrounded her.

The authority of the chiefs over the inferior people appeared, from this incident, to be of the moſt deſpotic kind. A ſimilar inſtance of it happened the ſame day on board the Reſolution; where the crowd being ſo great, as to impede the neceſſary buſineſs of the ſhip, we were obliged to have recourſe to the aſſiſtance of Kaneena, another of their chiefs, who had likewiſe attached himſelf to Captain Cook. The inconvenience we laboured under being made known, he immediately ordered his countrymen to quit the veſſel, and we were not a little ſurpriſed to ſee them jump over board, without a moment's heſitation; all except one man, who loitering behind, and ſhewing ſome unwil-

lingne

ingneſs to obey, Kaneena took him up in his arms, nd threw him into the ſea.

Both the chiefs were men of ſtrong and well proportioned bodies, and of countenances remarkably leaſing, eſpecially Kaneena, who was the fineſt man I ver ſaw. He was above ſix feet high, and regular nd expreſſive features, with lively, dark eyes; his carriage was eaſy, firm, and graceful.

It has been already mentioned, that during our ong cruize off this iſland, the inhabitants had always ehaved with great fairneſs and honeſty in their dealngs, and had not ſhewn the ſlighteſt propenſity to heft; which appeared to us the more extraordinary, ecauſe thoſe with whom we had hitherto held any inercourſe, were of the loweſt rank, either ſervants or ſhermen. We now found the caſe exceedingly altered. The immenſe crowd of iſlanders, which blocked up very part of the ſhips, not only afforded frequent opportunities of pilfering without riſk or diſcovery, but ur inferiority in number, held forth a proſpect of ſcaping with impunity in caſe of detection. Another ircumſtance, to which we attributed this alteration in heir behaviour, was the preſence and encouragement of heir chiefs; for generally tracing the booty into the poſſeſſion of ſome men of conſequence, we had the trongeſt reaſon to ſuſpect that theſe depredations were ommitted at their inſtigation.

Soon as the Reſolution had got into her ſtation, our wo friends, Pareea and Kaneena, brought on board a hird chief, named Koah, who, we were told, was a rieſt, and had been, in his youth, a diſtinguiſhed arrior. He was a little old man, of an emaciated gure. Being led into the cabin, he approached Capain Cook with great veneration, and threw over his oulders a piece of red cloth, which he had brought long with him. Then ſtepping a few paces back, he ade an offering of a ſmall pig, which he held in his and, whilſt he pronounced a diſcourſe that laſted for a onſiderable time. This ceremony was frequently reeated during our ſtay at Owhyhee, and appeared to us,

from many circumſtances, to be a ſort of religious adoration.

When this ceremony was over, Koah dined with Captain Cook, eating plentifully of what was ſet before him; but, like the reſt of the inhabitants of the iſlands in thoſe ſeas, could ſcarcely be prevailed on to taſte a ſecond time our wine or ſpirits. In the evening, Captain Cook, attended by Mr. Bayley and Mr. King, accompanied him on ſhore. We landed at the beach, and were received by four men, who carried wands, tipt with dog's hair, and marched before us, pronouncing, with a loud voice, a ſhort ſentence, in which we could only diſtinguiſh the word Orono. The crowd, which had been collected on the ſhore, retired at our approach; and not a perſon was to be ſeen, except a few lying proſtrate on the ground, near the huts of the adjoining village.

The next morning the 18th, we went on ſhore with a guard of eight marines, including the corporal and lieutenant, having orders to erect the obſervatory, in ſuch a ſituation as might beſt enable me to ſuperintend and protect the waterers, and the other working parties that were to be on ſhore. As we were viewing a ſpot conveniently ſituated for this purpoſe, in the middle of the village, Pareea, who was always ready to ſhew both his power and his good-will, offered to pull down ſome houſes that would have obſtructed our obſervations. However, we thought it proper to decline this offer, and fixed on a field of ſweet potatoes adjoining to the Morai, which was readily granted us; and the prieſts, to prevent the intruſion of the natives, immediately conſecrated the place, by fixng their wands round the wall by which it was incloſed.

This ſort of religious interdiction they call taboo; a word we heard often repeated, during our ſtay among theſe iſlanders, and found to be a very powerful and extenſive operation. No canoes ever preſumed to land near us; the natives ſat on the wall, but none offered to come within the tabooed ſpace, till he had obtained our permiſſion. But though the men, at our requeſt, would

would come acroſs the field with proviſions, yet not all our endeavours could prevail on the women to approach us. Preſents were tried, but without effect; Pareea and Koah were tempted to bring them, but in vain; we were invariably anſwered, that the Eatooa and Terreeoboo (which was the name of their king) would kill them. This circumſtance afforded no ſmall matter of amuſement to our friends on board, where the crowds of people, and particularly of women, that continued to flock thither, obliged them almoſt every hour to clear the veſſel, in order to have room to do the neceſſary duties of the ſhip. On theſe occaſions, two or three hundred women were frequently made to jump into the water at once, where they continued ſwimming and playing about, till they could again procure admittance.

From the 19th to the 24th, nothing very material happened. The caulkers were ſet to work on the ſides of the ſhips, and the rigging was overhauled and repaired. The ſalting of hogs for ſea ſtore, was alſo one of the principal objects of Captain Cook's attention; in which, notwithſtanding it has generally been thought impracticable to cure the fleſh of animals by ſalting, in tropical climates, he was very ſucceſsful.

We had not been long ſettled at our obſervatory, before we diſcovered, in our neighbourhood, the habitations of a ſociety of prieſts, whoſe regular attendance at the Morai had excited our curioſity. Their huts ſtood round a pond of water, and were ſurrounded by a grove of cocoa-nut trees, which ſeparated them from the beach and the reſt of the village, and gave the place an air of religious retirement. On acquainting Captain Cook with this, he reſolved to pay them a viſit; which he accordingly did, and was received with nearly the ſame religious ceremonies as at the Morai.

During the reſt of the time we remained in the bay, whenever Captain Cook came on ſhore, he was attended by one of theſe prieſts, who went before him, giving notice that the Orono had landed, and ordered the people

ple to proſtrate themſelves. The ſame perſon alſo conſtantly accompanied him on the water, ſtanding in the bow of the boat, with a wand in his hand, and giving notice of his approach to the natives, who were in canoes, on which they immediately left off paddling, and lay down on their faces till he had paſſed. Whenever they ſtopped at the obſervatory, Kaireekeea and his brethren made ther appearance with hogs, cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, &c. and preſented them with the uſual ſolemnities. It was on theſe occaſions that ſome of the inferior chiefs frequently requeſted to be permitted to make an offering to the Orono. When this was granted, they preſented the hog themſelves, generally with evident marks of fear in ther countenances; whilſt Kaireekeea and the prieſts chanted their accuſtomed hymns.

The civilities of this ſociety were not, however, confined to mere ceremony and parade. Our party on ſhore received from them, every day a ſupply of hogs and vegetables, more than ſufficient for our ſubſiſtence; and ſeveral canoes loaded with proviſions were ſent to the ſhips with the ſame punctuality. No return was ever demanded, or even hinted at in the moſt diſtant manner. Their preſents were made with a regularity more like the diſcharge of a religious duty, than the effect of mere liberality; and when we enquired at whoſe charge all this munificence was diſplayed, we were told, it was at the expence of a great man called Kaoo, the chief of the prieſts, and grandfather to Kaireekeea, who was at that time abſent attending the king of the iſland.

Things continued in this ſtate till the 24th, when we were a good deal ſurprized to find that no canoes were ſuffered to put off from the ſhore, and that the natives kept cloſe to their houſes. After ſeveral hours ſuſpenſe we learned that the bay was tabooed, and all intercourſe with us interdicted, on account of the arrival of Terreeoboo. As we had not foreſeen an accident of this ſort, our crews were obliged to paſs the day without their uſual ſupply of vegetables. The next morning,

morning, therefore, they endeavoured, both by threats and promiſes, to induce the natives to come along-ſide; and as ſome of them were at laſt venturing to put off, a chief was obſerved attempting to drive them away. A muſquet was immediately fired over his head, to make them deſiſt, which had the deſired effect, and refreſhments were ſoon after purchaſed as uſual. In the afternoon, Terreeoboo arrived, and viſited the ſhips in a private manner, attended only by one canoe, in which were his wife and children. He ſtaid on board till near ten o'clock.

The next day the king, in a large canoe, attended by two others, paddled towards the ſhip in great ſtate. Their appearance was grand and magnificent. In the firſt canoe was Tereeoboo and his chiefs, dreſſed in their rich feathered cloaks and helmets, and armed with long ſpears and daggers; in the ſecond, came the venerable Kaoo, the chief of the prieſts, and his brethren, with their idols diſplayed on red cloth. Theſe idols were buſts of a gigantic ſize, made of wicker work, and curiouſly covered with ſmall feathers of various colours, wrought in the ſame manner with their cloaks. Their eyes were made of large pearl oyſter, with a black nut fixed in the centre; their mouths were ſet with a double row of the fangs of dogs, and together with the reſt of their features, were ſtrangely diſtorted. The third canoe was filled with hogs and vegetables. As they went along, the prieſts in the centre canoe ſung their hymns with great ſolemnity; and after paddling round the ſhips, inſtead of going on board, as we expected, they made towards the ſhore at the beach were we were ſtationed.

As ſoon as I ſaw them approaching, I ordered out our little guard to receive the king; and Captain Cook, perceiving that he was going on ſhore, followed him, and arrived nearly at the ſame time. We conducted them into the tent, where they had ſcarcely been ſeated, when the king roſe up, and in a very graceful manner threw over the captain's ſhoulders the cloak he himſelf wore, put a feathered helmet upon his head, and a curious

curious fan in his hand. He alſo ſpread at his feet five or ſix other cloaks, all exceedingly beautiful, and of the greateſt value. His attendants then brought four very large hogs, with ſugar-canes, cocoa-nuts, and bread-fruit; and this part of the ceremony was conducted by the king's exchanging names with Captain Cook, which, amongſt all the iſlanders of the Pacific Ocean, is eſteemed the ſtrongeſt pledge of friendſhip. A proceſſion of prieſts, with a venerable old perſonage at their head, now appeared, followed by a long train leading large hogs, and others carrying plantains, ſweet potatoes, &c. By the looks and geſtures of Kaireekeea, I immediately knew the old man to be the chief of the prieſts before-mentioned, on whoſe bounty we had ſo long ſubſiſted. He had a piece of red cloth in his hands, which he wrapped round Captain Cook's ſhoulders, and afterwards preſented him a ſmall pig in the uſual form. A ſeat was then made for him, next to the king, after which Kaireekeea and his followers began their ceremonies, Kaoo and the Chiefs joining in the reſponces.

As ſoon as the formalities of the meeting were over, Captain Cook carried Terreeoboo, and as many of the chiefs as the pinnace would hold, on board the Reſolution. They were received with every mark of reſpect; and Captain Cook, in return for the feathered cloak, put a linen ſhirt on the king, and girt his own hanger round him. The ancient Kaioo, and about half a dozen more old chiefs, remained on ſhore, and took up their abode at the prieſts' houſes. During all this time, not a canoe was ſeen in the bay, and the natives either kept within their huts, or lay proſtrate on the ground. Before the king left the Reſolution, Captain Cook obtained leave for the natives to come and trade with the ſhips as uſual; but the women, for what reaſon we could not learn, ſtill continued under the effects of the taboo; that is, were forbidden to ſtir from home, or to have any communication with us.

The inoffenſive behaviour of the natives having taken away every apprehenſion of danger, we did not heſitate

to

to truſt ourſelves amongſt them at all times, and in all ſituations. The officers of both ſhips went daily up the country, in ſmall parties, or even ſingly, and frequently remained out the whole night. It would be endleſs to recount all the inſtances of civility we received upon thoſe occaſions. Wherever we went, the people flocked about us, eager to offer every aſſiſtance, and highly gratified if their ſervices were accepted. Various little arts were practiſed to attract our notice, or to delay our departure. The boys and girls ran before, as we walked through their village, and ſtopped us at every opening, where there was room to form a group for dancing. At one time, we were invited to accept a draught of cocoa-nut milk, or ſome other refreſhment, under the ſhade of their huts; at another, we were ſeated within a circle of young women, who exerted all their ſkill to amuſe us with ſongs and dances.

The ſatisfaction we derived from their gentleneſs and hoſpitality, was however frequently interrupted by their propenſity to ſtealing. Some of their moſt expert ſwimmers were one day diſcovered under the ſhips, drawing out the filling nails of the ſheathings, which they performed very dexterouſly, by means of a ſhort ſtick, with a flint ſtone fixed in the end of it. To put a ſtop to this practice, which endangered the very exiſtence of the veſſels, we at firſt fired ſmall ſhot at the offenders, but they eaſily got out of our reach by diving under the ſhip's bottom. It was therefore found neceſſary to make an example, by flogging one of them on board the Diſcovery.

On the 28th, died, William Watman, a ſeaman of the gunner's crew, an event which I mention the more particularly, as death had hitherto been very rare amongſt us. He was an old man, and much reſpected on account of his attachment to Captain Cook. He had formerly ſerved as a marine 21 years; after which he entered as a ſeaman on board the Reſolution in 1772, and ſerved with Captain Cook in his voyage towards the South Pole. At their return, he was admitted into Greenwich Hoſpital, through the captain's intereſt, at

the ſame time with himſelf; and being reſolved to follow throughout the fortunes of his benefactor, he alſo quitted it along with him, on his being appointed to the command of the preſent expedition. During the voyage, he had frequently been ſubject to ſlight fevers, and was a convaleſcent when he came into the bay, where being ſent on ſhore for a few days, he conceived himſelf perfectly recovered, and, at his own deſire, returned on board; but the day following, he had a paralytic ſtroke, which in two days carried him off.

At the requeſt of the king, he was buried on the Morai, and the ceremony was performed with proper ſolemnity. Old Kaoo and his brethren were ſpectators, and preſerved the moſt profound ſilence and attention, whilſt the ſervice was reading. When we began to fill up the grave, they approached it with great reverence threw in a dead pig, ſome cocoa-nuts, and plantains; and, for three nights afterward, they ſurrounded it, ſacrificing hogs, and performing their uſual ceremonies of hymns and prayers, which continued till almoſt day-break.

At the head of the grave we erected a poſt, and nailed it upon a ſquare piece of board, on which was inſcribed the name of the deceaſed, his age, and the day of his death. This they promiſed not to remove, and we have no doubt but it will be ſuffered to remain as long as the frail materials of which it is made will permit.

The ſhip being in great want of fuel, the captain deſired me, on the 2d of February, to treat with the prieſts, for the purchaſe of the rail that ſurrounded the top of the Morai. I muſt confeſs, I had, at firſt, ſome doubt about the decency of this propoſal, and was apprehenſive, that even the bare mention of it might be conſidered, by them, as a piece of ſhocking impiety. In this, however, I found myſelf miſtaken. Not the ſmalleſt ſurprize was expreſſed at the application, and the wood was readily given, even without ſtipulating for any thing in return. Whilſt the ſailors were taking it away, I obſerved one of them carrying off a carved image;

image; and, on further enquiry, found, that they had conveyed to the boats the whole ſemicircle. Though this was done in the preſence of the natives, who had not ſhewn any mark of reſentment at it, but had even aſſiſted them in the removal, I thought it proper to ſpeak to Kaoo on the ſubject, who appeared very indifferent about the matter, and only deſired, that we would reſtore the center image, which he carried into one of the prieſts' houſes.

Terreeoboo, and his chiefs, had, for ſome days paſt, been very inquiſitive about the time of our departure. This circumſtance had excited in me a great curioſity to know what opinion this people had formed of us, and what were their ideas reſpecting the cauſe and objects of our voyage. I took ſome pains to ſatisfy myſelf on theſe points; but I could never learn any thing farther, than that they imagined we came from ſome country where proviſions had failed; and that our viſit to them was merely for the purpoſe of filling our bellies. Indeed, the meagre appearance of ſome of the crew, the hearty appetites with which we ſat down to their freſh proviſions, and our great anxiety to purchaſe, and carry off, as much as we were able, led them naturally enough, to ſuch a concluſion. To theſe may be added, a circumſtance which puzzled them exceedingly, our having no women with us; together with our quiet conduct, and unwarlike appearance. It was ridiculous enough to ſee them ſtroking the ſides, and patting the bellies, of the ſailors (who were certainly much improved in the ſleekneſs of their looks, during our ſhort ſtay in the iſland), and telling them, partly by ſigns, and partly by words, that it was time for them to go; but if they would come again the next bread-fruit ſeaſon, they ſhould be better able to ſupply their wants. We had now been ſixteen days in the bay; and if our enormous conſumption of hogs and vegetables be conſidered, it need not be wondered, that they ſhould wiſh to ſee us take our leave. It is very probable, however, that Terreeoboo had no other view in his enquiries, at preſent, than a deſire of mak-

ing ſufficient preparation for diſmiſſing us with preſents, ſuitable to the reſpect and kindneſs with which he had received us. For, on our telling him we ſhould leave the iſland on the next day but one, we obſerved a ſort of proclamation was immediately made, through the villages, to require the people to bring in their hogs and vegetables, for the king to preſent to the Orono, on his departure.

The next day being fixed for our departure, Terreeoboo invited Captain Cook and myſelf to attend him, on the 3d, to the place where Kaoo reſided. On our arrival, we found the ground covered with parcels of cloth; a vaſt quantity of red and yellow feathers, tied to the fibres of cocoa-nut huſks; and a great number of hatchets, and other pieces of iron-ware, that had been got in barter from us. At a little diſtance from theſe, lay an immenſe quantity of vegetables, of every kind, and near them was a large herd of hogs. At firſt, we imagined the whole to be intended as a preſent for us, till Kaireekeea informed me, that it was a gift, or tribute, from the people of that diſtrict to the king; and, accordingly, as ſoon as we were ſeated, they brought all the bundles, and laid them ſeverally at Terreeoboo's feet; ſpreading the cloth, and diſplaying the feathers and iron-ware before him. The king ſeemed much pleaſed with this mark of their duty; and having ſelected about a third part of the iron-ware, the ſame proportion of feathers, and a few pieces of cloth, theſe were ſet aſide by themſelves, and the remainder of the cloth, together with all the hogs and vegetables, were afterwards preſented to Captain Cook and myſelf. We were aſtoniſhed at the value and magnitude of this preſent, which far exceeded every thing of the kind we had ſeen, either at the Friendly or Society Iſlands. Boats were immediately ſent to carry them on board; the large hogs were picked out, to be ſalted for ſea-ſtore; and upwards of thirty ſmaller pigs, and the vegetables were divided between the two crews.

The ſame day, we quitted the Morai, and got the tents and aſtronomical inſtruments on board. The

charm

charm of the taboo was now removed; and we had no ſooner left the place, than the natives ruſhed in, and ſearched eagerly about, in expectation of finding ſomething of value, that we might have left behind. As I happened to remain the laſt on ſhore, and waited for the return of the boat, ſeveral came crowding about me, and having made me ſit down by them, began to lament our ſeparation. It was, indeed, not without difficulty I was able to quit them. And here, I hope I may be permitted to relate a trifling occurrence, in which I was principally concerned. Having had the command of the party on ſhore, during the whole time we were in the bay, I had an opportunity of becoming better acquainted with the natives, and of being better known to them, than thoſe whoſe duty required them to be generally on board. As I had every reaſon to be ſatisfied with their kindneſs, in general, ſo I cannot too often, nor too particularly, mention the unbounded and conſtant friendſhip of their prieſts.

On my part, I ſpared no endeavours to conciliate their affections, and gain their eſteem; and I had the good fortune to ſucceed ſo far, that when the time of our departure was made known, I was ſtrongly ſolicited to remain behind, not without offers of the moſt flattering kind. When I excuſed myſelf, by ſaying, that Captain Cook would not give his conſent, they propoſed, that I ſhould retire into the mountains; where, they ſaid, they would conceal me, till after the departure of the ſhips; and on my farther aſſuring them, that the captain would not leave the bay without me, Terreeoboo and Kaoo waited upon Captain Cook, whoſe ſon they ſuppoſed I was, with a formal requeſt, that I might be left behind. The captain, to avoid giving a poſitive refuſal to an offer ſo kindly intended, told them, that he could not part with me, at that time, but that he ſhould return to the iſland the next year, and would then endeavour to ſettle the matter to their ſatisfaction.

Early in the morning of the 4th, we unmoored, and ſailed out of the bay, with the Diſcovery in company,

and

and were followed by a great number of canoes. Capt. Cook's deſign was to finiſh the ſurvey of Owhyhee, before he viſited the other iſlands, in hopes of meeting with a road better ſheltered, than the bay we had juſt left; and in caſe of not ſucceeding here, he purpoſed to take a view of the S. E. part of Mowee, where, the natives informed us, we ſhould find an excellent harbour.

Captain Cook had calm weather for three ſucceeding days, which much impeded his progreſs; and, at midnight, on the 8th, a violent gale came on, which greatly damaged the fore-maſt of the Reſolution. This circumſtance, which proved ſo fatal to Captain Cook, obliged him to return to Karakakooa Bay, and to take up his old ſtation there, till the dangers he had ſuſtained could be properly repaired.

CHAP. IX.

Death of Captain Cook, with an account of the tranſactions at the Iſland of Owhyhee, ſubſequent to the death of Captain Cook—Captain Clerke's departure from Owhyhee—Arrival at Atooi—Final departure from the Sandwich Iſlands—Deſcription of the natives, and treatment of their women.

AS the repairs of the Reſolution required ſome time, the aſtronomical apparatus was got aſhore, and the tents pitched on the Morai, or burying place, where a guard of a corporal and ſix marines was ſtationed. The friendly correſpondence was renewed with the prieſts, who, for the greater ſecurity of the workmen, and their tools, tabooed the place where the maſt lay, ſticking their wands round it as before. But notwithſtanding this friendly behaviour of the prieſts, it was a matter of great ſurpriſe, that when the ſhips came to anchor, their reception was very different from what it had been on their firſt arrival; no ſhouts, no buſtle, no confuſion, but a ſolitary bay, with only here and there a conoe ſtealing cloſe along the ſhore. Theſe

ſuſpicious

ſuſpicious circumſtances gave riſe to many conjectures, but whatever theſe were, things went on in their uſual quiet courſe till the afternoon of the 13th.

Towards the evening of that day, the officer who commanded the watering party of the Diſcovery, came to inform me, that ſeveral chiefs had aſſembled at the well near the beach, driving away the natives, whom he had hired to aſſiſt the ſailors in rolling down the caſks to the ſhore. He told me, at the ſame time, that he thought their behaviour extremely ſuſpicious, and that they meant to give him ſome farther diſturbance. At his requeſt, therefore, I ſent a marine along with him, but ſuffered him to take only his ſide arms. In a ſhort time the officer returned, and on his acquainting me, that the natives had armed themſelves with ſtones, and were grown very tumultuous, I went myſelf to the ſpot, attended by a marine, with his muſquet. Seeing us approach, they threw away their ſtones, and, on my ſpeaking to ſome of the chiefs, the mob were driven away, and thoſe who choſe it, were ſuffered to aſſiſt in filling the caſks. Having left things quiet here, I went to meet Captain Cook, whom I ſaw coming aſhore in the pinnace. I related to him what had juſt paſſed; and he ordered me, in caſe of their beginning to throw ſtones, or behave inſolently, immediately to fire a ball at the offenders. I accordingly gave orders to the corporal, to have the pieces of the centinels loaded with ball, inſtead of ſmall ſhot.

Soon after our return to the tents, we were alarmed by a continual fire of muſquets from the Diſcovery, which we obſerved to be directed at a canoe, that we ſaw paddling toward the ſhore, in great haſte, purſued by one of our ſmall boats. We immediately concluded that the firing was owing to ſome theft, and the captain ordered me to follow him with a marine armed, and to endeavour to ſeize the people as they came on ſhore. Accordingly, we ran toward the place where we ſuppoſed the canoe would land, but were too late; the people having quitted it, and made their eſcape into the country before our arrival.

We

We were at this time ignorant that the goods had been already reſtored; and as we thought it probable, from the circumſtances we had at firſt obſerved, that they might be of importance, were unwilling to relinquiſh our hopes of recovering them. Having therefore enquired of the natives which way the people had fled, we followed them, till it was near dark, when judging ourſelves to be about three miles from the tents, and ſuſpecting, that the natives, who frequently encouraged us in the purſuit, were amuſing us with falſe informations, we thought it in vain to continue our ſearch any longer, and returned to the beach.

During our abſence, a difference of more ſerious and unpleaſant nature had happened. The officer, who had been ſent in the ſmall boat, and was returning on board, with the goods which had been reſtored, obſerving the captain and me engaged in the purſuit of the offenders, thought it his duty to ſeize the canoe, which was left drawn up on the ſhore. Unfortunately, this canoe belonged to Pareea, who arriving at the ſame moment from on board the Diſcovery, claimed his property, with many proteſtations of his innocence. The officer refuſing to give it up, and being joined by the crew of the pinnace, which was waiting for the captain, a ſcuffle enſued, in which Pareea was knocked down, by a violent blow on the head with an oar. The natives, who were collected about the ſpot, and had hitherto been peaceable ſpectators, immediately attacked our people, with ſuch a ſhower of ſtones, as forced them to retreat with great precipitation, and ſwim off to a rock at ſome diſtance from the ſhore. The pinnace was immediately ranſacked by the natives, and but for the timely interpoſition of Pareea, who ſeemed to have recovered from the blow, and forgot it at the ſame inſtant, would ſoon have been entirely demoliſhed. Having driven away the crowd, he made ſigns to our people that they might come and take poſſeſſion of the pinnace, and that he would endeavour to get back the things which had been taken out of it. After their departure, he followed them in his canoe, with a mid-

ſhipman'

ſhipman's cap, and ſome other trifling articles of the plunder, and, with much apparent concern at what had happened, aſked if the Orono would kill him, and whether he would permit him to come on board the next day; on being aſſured, that he would be well received, he joined noſes with the officers, in token of friendſhip, and paddled over to the village of Kowrowa.

When the captain was informed of what had paſſed, he expreſſed much uneaſineſs at it, I am afraid, ſaid he, that theſe people will oblige us to uſe ſome violent meaſures, for they muſt not be left to imagine, that they have gained an advantage over us. He immediately gave orders, that every man and woman on board ſhould be turned out of the ſhip. As ſoon as this order was executed, I returned on ſhore; and our former confidence in the natives being much abated, by the events of the day, I poſted a double guard on the Morai, with orders to call me, if they ſaw any men lurking about the beach. At about eleven o'clock, five iſlanders were obſerved creeping round the bottom of the Morai; they ſeemed very cautious in approaching us, and at laſt finding themſelves diſcovered, retired out of ſight. About midnight, one of them venturing up cloſe to the obſervatory, the centinel fired over him; on which the man fled, and we paſſed the remainder of the night without farther diſturbance.

On the 14th of February, I went on board the Reſolution for the time-keeper, and in my way was hailed by the Diſcovery, and informed, that their cutter had been ſtolen during the night, from the buoy where it was moored.

When I arrived on board, I found the marines arming, and the captain loading his double-barrelled gun. Whilſt I was relating to him what had happened to us in the night, he interrupted me with ſome eagerneſs, and acquainted me with the loſs of the Diſcovery's cutter, and with the preparations he was making for its recovery. It had been his uſual practice, whenever any thing of conſequence was loſt, to get the king, or

ſome of the chiefs on board, and keep them as hoſtages, till it was reſtored. This method, which had always been attended with ſucceſs, he meant to purſue on the preſent occaſion; and, at the ſame time, had given orders to ſtop all the canoes that ſhould attempt to leave the bay, with an intention of ſeizing and deſtroying them, if he could not recover the cutter by peaceable means. Accordingly, the boats of both ſhips, well manned and armed, were ſtationed acroſs the bay; and, before I left the ſhip, ſome great guns had been fired at two large canoes, that were attempting to make their eſcape.

It was between ſeven and eight o'clock when we quitted the ſhip together; the Captain in the pinnace, having Mr. Philips and nine marines with him, and myſelf in the ſmall boat. The laſt orders I received from him were, to quiet the minds of the natives, on our ſide of the bay, by aſſuring them, they ſhould not be hurt, to keep my people together, and to be on my guard. We then parted, the Captain went towards Kowrowa, where the king reſided, and I proceeded to the beach. My firſt care, on going aſhore, was to give ſtrict orders to the marines to remain within the tent, to load their pieces with ball, and not to quit their arms. Afterward I took a walk to the huts of old Kaoo, and the prieſts, and explained to them, as well as I could, the object of the hoſtile preparations, which had exceedingly alarmed them. I found, that they had already heard of the cutter's being ſtolen, and I aſſured them, that though the Captain was reſolved to recover it, and to puniſh the authors of the theft, yet that they, and the people of the village on this ſide, need not be under the ſmalleſt apprehenſion of ſuffering any evil from us. I deſired the prieſts to explain this to the people, and tell them not to be alarmed, but to remain peaceable and quiet. Kaoo aſked me, if their king was to be hurt? I aſſured him, he was not; and both he and his brethren ſeemed ſatisfied with this aſſurance.

In

In the mean time, the captain having called off the launch, which was ſtationed at the N. point of the bay, and taken it along with him, went to Kowrowa, and landed with the Lieutenant, and nine marines. He immediately marched into the village, where he was received with the uſual marks of reſpect; the people proſtrating themſelves before him, and bringing their accuſtomed offerings of ſmall pigs. Finding that there was no ſuſpicion of his deſign, his next ſtep was to inquire for the king, and his ſons, who had been his conſtant gueſts on board the Reſolution. In a ſhort time, the boys returned, with the natives, who had been in ſearch of them, and immediately led the Captain to the houſe where the king had ſlept. They found him juſt awoke from ſleep, and after a ſhort converſation about the loſs of the cutter, from which the Captain was convinced that he was in no wiſe privy to it, he invited him to return in the boat, and ſpend the day on board the Reſolution. To this propoſal the king readily conſented, and immediately got up to accompany him on board.

Things were in this proſperous train, the boys already in the pinnace, and the reſt of the party having advanced near the water-ſide, when an elderly woman, the mother of the boys and one of the king's favourite wives, came after him, and with many tears and entreaties, beſought him not to go on board. At the ſame time, two Chiefs, who came along with her, laid hold of him, and inſiſting that he ſhould go no farther, forced him to ſit down. The natives, who where collecting in prodigious numbers along the ſhore, began to throng round the Captain and their King. In this ſituation, the Lieutenant of marines, obſerving that his men were huddled cloſe together in the crowd, and thus incapable of uſing their arms, if occaſion ſhould require it, propoſed to the Captain to draw them up along the rocks, cloſe to the water's edge; and the crowd readily making way for them to paſs, they were drawn up in a line, at the diſtance of about thirty yards from the place where the king was ſitting.

All this time the old king remained on the ground, with the ſtrongeſt marks of terror and dejection in his countenance; the Captain not willing to abandon the object for which he had come on ſhore, continuing to urge him, in the moſt preſſing manner, to proceed; whilſt, on the other hand, whenever the King appeared inclined to follow him, the Chiefs, who ſtood round him, interpoſed, at firſt with prayers and entreaties, but afterwards, having recourſe to force and violence, and inſiſted on his ſtaying where he was. Captain Cook therefore finding, that the alarm had ſpread too generally, and that it was in vain to think any longer of getting him off, without bloodſhed, at laſt gave up the point: obſerving to Mr. Philips, that it would be impoſſible to compel him to go on board, without the riſk of killing a great number of the inhabitants.

Though the enterprize which had carried Captain Cook on ſhore had now failed, and was abondoned, yet his perſon did not appear to have been in the leaſt danger, till an accident happened, which gave a fatal turn to the affair. The boats, which had been ſtationed acroſs the bay, having fired at ſome canoes, that were attempting to get out, unfortunately had killed a Chief of the firſt rank. The news of his death arrived at the village where Captain Cook was, juſt as he had left the King, and was walking ſlowly towards the ſhore. The ferment it occaſioned was very conſpicuous; the women and children were immediately ſent off; and the men put on their war-mats, and armed themſelves with ſpears and ſtones. One of the natives, having in his hands a ſtone, and a long iron ſpike (which they call a Pahooa,) came up to the Captain, flouriſhing his weapon, by way of defiance, and threatening to throw the ſtone. The Captain deſired him to deſiſt; but the man perſiſted in his inſolence, he was at length provoked to fire a load of ſmall ſhot. The man having his mat on, which the ſhot were not able to penetrate, this had no other effect than to irritate and encourage them. Several ſtones were thrown at the marines; and one of the Erees attempted to ſtab Mr. Phillips with his Pahooa;



Death of Captain Cook.

Pye fec.

Pahooa; but failed in the attempt, and received from him a blow with the but end of his muſquet. Captain Cook now fired his ſecond barrel, loaded with ball, and killed one of the foremoſt of the natives. A general attack with ſtones immediately followed, which was anſwered by a diſcharge of muſquetry from the marines, and the people in the boats. The iſlanders, contrary to the expectations of every one, ſtood the fire with great firmneſs; and before the marines had time to reload, they broke in upon them with dreadful ſhouts and yells. What followed was a ſcene of the utmoſt horror and confuſion.

Four of the marines were cut off among the rocks in their retreat, and fell a ſacrifice to the fury of the enemy; three more were dangerouſly wounded; and the Lieutenant who had received a ſtab between the ſhoulders with a Pahooa, having fortunately reſerved his fire, ſhot the man who had wounded him juſt as he was going to repeat his blow. Our unfortunate commander, the laſt time he was ſeen diſtinctly, was ſtanding at the water's edge, and calling out to the boats to ceaſe firing, and to pull in. If it be true, as ſome of thoſe who were preſent have imagined, that the marines and boat-men had fired without his orders, and that he was deſirous of preventing any further bloodſhed, it is not improbable, that his humanity, on this occaſion, proved fatal to him. For it was remarked, that while he faced the natives, none of them had offered him any violence, but that having turned about, to give his orders to the boats, he was ſtabbed in the back, and fell with his face into the water.

On ſeeing him fall, the iſlanders ſet up a great ſhout, and his body was immediately dragged on ſhore, and ſurrounded by the enemy, who ſnatching the dagger out of each other's hands, ſhewed a ſavage eagerneſs to have a ſhare in his deſtruction.

Thus fell our great and excellent commander! After a life of ſuch diſtinguiſhed and ſucceſsful enterprize, his death, as far as regards himſelf, cannot be reckoned

ed premature; ſince he lived to finiſh the great work for which he ſeems to have been deſigned; and was rather removed from the enjoyment, than cut off from the acquiſition of glory. How ſincerely his loſs was lamented, by thoſe who had ſo long found their general ſecurity in his ſkill and conduct, and every conſolation under their hardſhips, in his tenderneſs and humanity, it is neither neceſſary nor poſſible for me to deſcribe; much leſs ſhall I attempt to paint the horror with which we were ſtruck, and the univerſal dejection and diſmay which followed ſo dreadful and unexpected a calamity.

It having been already mentioned, that four of the marines were killed on the ſpot. The reſt, with Mr. Philips, threw themſelves into the water, and eſcaped, under cover of a ſmart fire from the boats. On this occaſion, a remarkable inſtance of gallant behaviour, and of affection for his men, was ſhewn by that officer. For he had ſcarcely got into the boat, when, ſeeing one of the marines, who was a bad ſwimmer, ſtruggling in the water, and in danger of being taken by the enemy, he immediately jumped into the ſea to his aſſiſtance, though much wounded himſelf, and after receiving a blow on the head from a ſtone, which had nearly ſent him to the bottom, he caught the man by his hair, and brought him ſafe off.

Our people continued for ſome time to keep up a conſtant fire from the boats, (which, during the whole tranſaction, were not more than twenty yards from the land) in order to afford their unfortunate campanions, an opportunity of eſcaping. Theſe efforts, ſeconded by a few guns, fired at the ſame time from the Reſolution, having forced the natives at laſt to retire, a ſmall boat, manned by five young midſhipmen, pulled toward the ſhore, where they ſaw the bodies, without any ſigns of life, but judging it dangerous to attempt to bring them off, with ſo ſmall a force, they returned to the ſhips, leaving them in poſſeſſion of the iſlanders, with ten ſtand of arms.

As ſoon as the general conſternation, which the news of this calamity occaſioned throughout both crews, had a little

a little ſubſided, their attention was called to the party at the Morai, where the maſts and ſails were on ſhore, with a guard of only ſix marines. Being at the diſtance only of a ſhort mile from the village of Kowrowa, we could ſee diſtinctly an immenſe crowd collected on the ſpot where Captain Cook had juſt before landed. We heard the firing of the muſquetry, and could perceive ſome extraordinary buſtle in the multitude.

My firſt care, on hearing the muſquets fired, was, to aſſure the people, who were aſſembled in conſiderable numbers, round the wall of our conſecrated field, and ſeemed equally at a loſs with ourſelves how to account for what they had ſeen and heard, that they ſhould not be moleſted; and that, at all events, was deſirous of continuing on peaceable terms with them, remained in this poſture, till the boats had returned on board, when Captain Clerke, obſerving, through his teleſcope, that we were ſurrounded by the natives, and apprehending they meant to attack us, ordered two four-pounders to be fired at them. Fortunately theſe guns, though well aimed, did no miſchief, and yet gave the natives a convincing proof of their power. One of the balls broke a cocoa-nut tree in the middle, under which a party of them were ſitting; and the other ſhivered a rock, that ſtood in an exact line with them. As I had, juſt before, given them the ſtrongeſt aſſurances of their ſafety, I was exceedingly mortified at this act of hoſtility; and, to prevent a repetition of it, immediately diſpatched a boat to acquaint Captain Clerke, that, at preſent, I was on the moſt friendly terms with the natives; and that, if occaſion ſhould hereafter ariſe for altering my conduct towards them, I would hoiſt a jack, for him to afford us all the aſſiſtance in his power.

We expected the return of the boat with the utmoſt impatience; and after remaining a quarter of an hour under the moſt torturing anxiety and ſuſpenſe, our fears were at length confirmed, by the arrival of Mr. Bligh, with orders to ſtrike the tents as quickly as poſſible,

poſſible, and to ſend the ſails, that were repairing, on board.

Having placed the marines on the top of the Morai, which formed a ſtrong poſt, and left the command with Mr. Bligh, giving him the moſt poſitive directions to act entirely on the defenſive, I went on board the Diſcovery, in order to repreſent to Captain Clerke the dangerous ſituation of our affairs. As ſoon as I quitted the ſpot, the natives began to annoy our people with ſtones; and I had ſcarcely reached the ſhip, before I heard the firing of the marines. I therefore returned inſtantly on ſhore, where I found things growing every moment more alarming. The natives were arming, and putting on their mats, and their numbers increaſed very faſt.

They began at firſt, to attack us with ſtones, from behind the walls of their incloſures, and finding no reſiſtance, they ſoon grew more daring. A few reſolute fellows having crept along the beach, under cover of the rocks, ſuddenly made their appearance at the foot of the Morai, with a deſign of ſtorming it on the ſide next the ſea, which was its only acceſſible part; and were not diſlodged, till after they had ſtood a conſiderable number of ſhot, and ſeen one of their party fall.

The bravery of one of their aſſailants well deſerves to be particularly mentioned. For having returned to carry off his companion, amidſt the fire of our whole party, a wound, which he received, made him quit the body and retire; but in a few minutes, he again appeared, and being again wounded, was obliged a ſecond time to retreat. At this moment I arrived at the Morai, and ſaw him return the third time, bleeding and faint; and being informed of what had happened, I forbid the ſoldiers to fire, and he was ſuffered to carry off his friend, which he was juſt able to perform, and then fell down himſelf and expired.

About this time, a ſtrong reinforcement from both ſhips being landed, the natives retreated behind the wall; which giving me acceſs to our friendly prieſts, I

ſent

ſent one of them to endeavour to bring their countrymen to ſome terms, and to propoſe to them, that if they would deſiſt from throwing ſtones, I would not permit our men to fire. This truce was agreed to, and we were ſuffered to launch the maſt, and carry off the ſails, and our aſtronomical apparatus, unmoleſted. As ſoon as we had quitted the Morai, they took poſſeſſion of it, and ſome of them threw a few ſtones; but without doing us any miſchief.

During this conſultation, a vaſt concourſe of natives ſtill kept poſſeſſion of the ſhore, and ſome of them came off in canoes, and had the boldneſs to come within piſtol ſhot of the ſhips, and to inſult us by various marks of contempt and defiance. It was with great difficulty we could reſtrain the ſailors from the uſe of their arms, on theſe occaſions; but as pacific meaſures had been reſolved on, the canoes were ſuffered to return unmoleſted.

In purſuance of this plan, it was determined, that I ſhould proceed towards the ſhore, with the boats of both ſhips, well manned and armed, with a view to bring the natives to a parley, and, if poſſible, to obtain a conference with ſome of the Chiefs.

If this attempt ſucceeded, I was to demand the dead body of Captain Cook; to threaten them with vengeance in caſe of a refuſal; but, by no means, to fire unleſs attacked; and not to land on any account whatever.

I left the ſhips about four in the afternoon. The whole crowd of the natives was in motion; the women and children retiring; the men putting on their war mats, and arming themſelves with long ſpears and daggers; and as ſoon as we were within reach, they began to throw ſtones at us with ſlings, but without doing us any miſchief. Concluding, therefore, that all attempts to bring them to a parley would be in vain, unleſs I firſt gave them ſome ground for mutual confidence; I ordered the armed boats to ſtop, and went on in the ſmall boat alone, with a white flag in my hand, which, by a general cry of joy from the natives, I had the

ſatisfaction to find was inſtantly underſtood. The women immediately returned from the ſide of the hill, whither they had retired; the men threw off their mats, and all ſat down together by the water ſide, extending their arms, and inviting me to come on ſhore.

Though this behaviour was very expreſſive of a friendly diſpoſition, yet I could not help entertaining ſome ſuſpicions of its ſincerity. But when I ſaw Koah, with a boldneſs and aſſurance altogether unaccountable, ſwimming off towards the boat, with a white flag in his hand, I thought it neceſſary to return this mark of confidence, and therefore received him into the boat, though armed; a circumſtance which did not tend to leſſen my ſuſpicions. I had long harboured an unfavourable opinion of this man. The prieſt had always told us, that he was of a malicious diſpoſition, and no friend of ours; and the repeated detections of his treachery, had convinced us of the truth of their repreſentations. Add to all this, the ſhocking tranſactions of the morning in which he was ſeen acting a principal part, made me feel the utmoſt horror at finding myſelf ſo near him; and as he came up to me with feigned tears, and embraced me, I was ſo diſtruſtful of his intentions, that I could not help taking hold of the point of the pahooah which he held in his hand, and turning it from me.

I told him I was come to demand the body of Captain Cook, and to declare war againſt them unleſs it was inſtantly reſtored. He aſſured me this ſhould be done as ſoon as poſſible; and, after begging of me a piece of iron, with much aſſurance, as if nothing extraordinary had happened, he leaped into the ſea, and ſwam aſhore, calling out to his countrymen that we were all friends again.

We waited near an hour, with great anxiety, for his return; during which time, the reſt of the boats had approaced ſo near the ſhore, as to enter into converſation with a party of the natives, at ſome diſtance from us; by whom they were plainly given to underſtand, that the body had been cut in pieces, and carried up the

the country; but of this circumſtance I was not informed, till our return to the ſhips.

I began now to expreſs ſome impatience at Koah's delay; upon which the chiefs preſſed me exceedingly to come aſhore, aſſuring me, that if I would go myſelf to their king, the body would certainly be reſtored to me. When they found they could not prevail on me to land, they attempted, under pretence of wiſhing to converſe with more eaſe, to decoy our boat among ſome rocks, where they would have had it in their power to cut us off from the reſt. It was no difficult matter to ſee through theſe artifices; and I was therefore ſtrongly inclined to break off all further communication with them, when a chief came to us, who was the particular friend of Captain Clerke, and of the officers of the Diſcovery, on board which ſhip he had ſailed, when we laſt left the bay, intending to take his paſſage to Mowee. He told us, he came from the king, to acquaint us that the body was carried up the country, but that it ſhould be brought to us the next morning. There appeared a great deal of ſincerity in his manner; and being aſked if he told a falſhood, he hooked his two fore-fingers together, which is underſtood amongſt theſe iſlanders as the ſign of truth; in the uſe of which they are very ſcrupulous.

As I was now at a loſs in what manner to proceed, I ſent Mr. Vancouver to acquaint Captain Clerke with all that had paſſed; that my opinion was, they meant not to keep their word with us, and were ſo far from being ſorry at what had happened, that on the contrary, they were full of ſpirits and confidence on account of their late ſucceſs, and ſought only to gain time, till they could contrive ſome ſcheme for gettihg us into their power. Mr. Vancouver came back with orders for me to return on board; having firſt given the natives to underſtand, that, if the body was not brought the next morning, the town ſhould be deſtroyed.

When they ſaw that we were going off, they endeavoured to provoke us by the moſt inſulting and contemptuous geſtures. Some of our people ſaid, they

could diſtinguiſh ſeveral of the natives parading about in the clothes of our unfortunate comrades; and, among them, a Chief brandiſhing Captain Cook's hanger, and a woman holding the ſcabbard. Indeed, there can be no doubt, but that our behaviour had given them a mean opinion of our courage; for they could have but little notion of the motives of humanity that directed it.

In conſequence of the report I made to Captain Clerke, of what I conceived to be the preſent diſpoſition of the natives, the moſt effectual methods were taken to guard againſt any attack they might make in the night. The boats were moored with top-chains; additional ſentinels were poſted on both ſhips; and guard-boats were ſtationed to row round them, in order to prevent the natives from cutting the cables. During the night we obſerved a prodigious number of lights on the hills, which made us imagine, they were removing their effects back into the country, in conſequence of our threats. But I rather believe them to have been the ſacrifices that were performing on account of the war, in which they imagined themſelves about to be engaged; and moſt probably the bodies of our ſlain countrymen were at that time burning.

We remained the whole night undiſturbed, except by the howlings and lamentations which were heard on ſhore; and early the next morning, Koah came alongſide the Reſolution, with a preſent to me. I have mentioned before, that I was ſuppoſed, by the natives, to be the ſon of the Captain; and as he, in his life-time, had always ſuffered them to believe it, I was probably conſidered as the chief, after his death. As ſoon as I came on deck, I queſtioned him about the body; and, on his returning me nothing but evaſive anſwers, I refuſed to accept his preſents, and was going to diſmiſs him, with ſome expreſſions of anger and reſentment, had not Captain Clerke judged it beſt, at all events, to keep up the appearance of friendſhip, and thought it more proper, that he ſhould be treated with the uſual reſpect. He was exceedingly urgent with us to go on

ſhore,

ſhore, laying all the blame of the detention of the bodies on the other chiefs; and aſſuring us, that every thing might be ſettled to our ſatisfaction, by a perſonal interview with their king. However, his conduct was too ſuſpicious to make it prudent to comply with this requeſt; and he left us.

The greateſt part of the day was taken up in getting the fore-maſt into a proper ſituation on deck, for the carpenters to work upon it, and in making the neceſſary alterations in the commiſſion of the officers. The command of the expedition having devolved on Captain Clerke, he removed on board the Reſolution, appointed Lieutenant Gore to be Captain of the Diſcovery, and promoted Mr. Hervey, a midſhipman, to the vacant Lieutenancy. During the whole day, we met with no interruption from the natives; and at night, the launch was again moored with a top-chain, and guard boats ſtationed round both ſhips as before.

About eight o'clock, it being very dark, a canoe was heard paddling towards the ſhip, and as ſoon as it was ſeen, both the centinels on deck fired into it. There were two perſons in the canoe, and they immediately roared out Tinnee, (which was the way in which they pronounced my name) and ſaid they were friends, and had ſomething for me belonging to the Captain. When they came on board, they threw themſelves at our feet, and appeared exceedingly frightened. Luckily neither of them was hurt, notwithſtanding the balls of both pieces had gone through the canoe. One of them, after the loſs of the Orono, told us, that he had brought a part of his body. He then preſented to us a ſmall bundle wrapped up in cloth, which he brought under his arm; and it is impoſſible to deſcribe the horror which ſeized us, on finding in it, a piece of human fleſh, about nine or ten pounds weight. This, he ſaid, was all that remained of the body; that the reſt was cut to pieces, and burnt; but that the head and all the bones, except what belonged to the trunk, were in the poſſeſſion of their king, and the other Earees; and what we ſaw had been allotted to Kaoo, the chief

of

of the prieſts, to be made uſe of in ſome religious ceremony; and that he had ſent it as a proof of his innocence and attachment to us.

This afforded an opportunity of informing ourſelves, whether they were canibals; and we did not neglect it. We firſt tried, by many indirect queſtions, put to each of them apart, to learn in what manner the reſt of the bodies had been diſpoſed of; and finding them very conſtant in one ſtory, that after the fleſh had been cut off, it had all been burnt; we at laſt put the direct queſtion, whether they had not eat ſome of it? They immediately ſhewed as much horror at the idea, as an European would have done; and aſked, very naturally, if that was the cuſtom amongſt us? They afterwards aſked us, with great earneſtneſs and apparent apprehenſion, "When the Orono would come again? and what he would do to them on his return?" The ſame inquiry was frequently made afterwards by others; and this idea agrees with the general tenour of their conduct towards him, which ſhewed, that they conſidered him as a being of a ſuperior nature.

We preſſed our two friendly viſitors to remain on board till morning, but in vain. They told us, that, if this tranſaction ſhould come to the knowledge of the king or chiefs, it might be attended with the moſt fatal conſequences to the whole ſociety (the prieſts) in order to prevent which, they had been obliged to come off to us in the dark, and that the ſame precaution would be neceſſary in returning on ſhore. They informed us farther that the chiefs were eager to avenge the deaths of their countrymen; and, particularly, cautioned us againſt truſting Koah, who, they ſaid, was our mortal and implacable enemy; and deſired nothing more ardently, than an opportunity of fighting us; to which the blowing of ſome conchs, we had heard in the morning, was meant as a challenge to fight us.

We learned from theſe men, that 17 of their countrymen had been killed in the firſt action at Kowrowa, of whom five were chiefs; and that Kaneena and his brother,

brother, our very particular friends, were unfortunately of that number. Eight, they ſaid, were killed at the obſervatory, three of whom were alſo of the firſt rank.

About eleven o'clock, our two friends left us, and took the precaution to deſire, that our guard-boat might attend them till they had paſſed the Diſcovery, leſt they ſhould again be fired upon, which might alarm their countrymen on ſhore, and expoſe them to the danger of being diſcovered. This requeſt was complied with, and we had the ſatisfaction to find, that they got ſafe to ſhore.

On the 16th about noon, finding us perſiſt in our inactivity, great bodies of the natives, after blowing their conchs, and uſing every mode of defiance, marched off, over the hills, and never appeared afterwards. Theſe, however, who remained, were not the leſs daring and inſolent. One man had the audacity to come within muſquet ſhot, a head of the ſhip, and after ſlinging ſeveral ſtones at us, he waved the Captain's hat over his head, whilſt his countrymen were exulting, and encouraging his boldneſs. Our people were all in a flame at this inſult, and coming in a body on the quarter deck, begged they might no longer be obliged to put up with repeated provocations, and requeſted me to obtain permiſſion for them, from Captain Clerke, to avail themſelves of the firſt fair occaſion of revenging the death of their commander. On my acquainting him with what was paſſing, he gave orders for ſome great guns to be fired at the natives on ſhore, and promiſed the crew, that if they ſhould meet with any moleſtation at the watering-place the next day, they ſhould then be left at liberty to chaſtiſe them.

It is ſomething remarkable, that before we could bring our guns to bear, the natives had ſuſpected our intentions, from the ſtir they ſaw in the ſhip, and had retired behind their houſes and walls. We were therefore obliged to fire, in ſome meaſure, at random; notwithſtanding which, our ſhot produced the effects that could have been deſired. For, ſoon after, we ſaw Koah paddling

paddling towards us, with extreme haſte, and on his arrival, we learned, that ſome people had been killed, and amongſt the reſt, Maiha-maiha, a principal chief, and a near relation to the king.

Soon after the arrival of Koah, two boys ſwam off from the Morai towards the ſhips, having each a long ſpear in his hand, and after they had approached pretty near, they began to chant a ſong, in a very ſolemn manner; the ſubject of which, from their often mentioning the word Orono, and pointing to the village where Captain Cook was killed, we concluded to be the late calamitous diſaſter. Having ſung in plaintive ſtrain for about twelve or fifteen minutes, during the whole of which time they remained in the water, they went on board the Diſcovery, and delivered their ſpears; and after making a ſhort ſtay, returned on ſhore. Who ſent them, or what was the object of this ceremony, we were never able to learn.

At night, the uſual precautions were taken for the ſecurity of the ſhips; and as ſoon as it was dark, our two friends, who had viſited us the night before, came off again. They aſſured us, that though the effects of our great guns, this afternoon, had terrified the chiefs exceedingly, they had by no means laid aſide their hoſtile intentions, and adviſed us to be always on our guard.

The next morning the boats of both ſhips were ſent aſhore for water, and the Diſcovery was warped cloſe to the beach, in order to cover their ſervice. We ſoon found, that the intelligence which the prieſts had ſent us, was not without foundation; and that the natives were reſolved to take every opportunity of annoying us, when it could be done without much riſk. In fact, our people were ſo taken up in attending to their own ſafety, that they employed the whole forenoon in filling only one ton of water. As it was therefore impoſſible to perform this ſervice, till their aſſailants were driven to a greater diſtance, the Diſcovery was ordered to diſlodge them, with her great guns; which being effected by a few diſcharges, the men landed without moleſtation.

moleſtation. However, the natives ſoon after made their appearance again; and it was now found abſolutely neceſſary to burn down ſome few ſtraggling houſes near a wall, behind which they had taken ſhelter. In executing theſe orders, I am ſorry to add, that our people were hurried into acts of unneceſſary cruelty and devaſtation; although ſomething ought certainly to be allowed to their reſentment of the repeated inſults, and contemptuous behaviour of the iſlanders, and to the natural deſire of revenging the loſs of their Commander.

I have already mentioned, that orders had been given to burn a only a few ſtraggling huts, which afforded ſhelter to the natives. We were therefore a good deal ſurpriſed to ſee the whole village on fire; and before a boat, that was ſent to ſtop the progreſs of the miſchief, could reach the ſhore, the houſes of our old and conſtant friends, the prieſts, were all in flames. I cannot enough lament the illneſs that confined me on board this day. The prieſts had always been under my protection; and, unluckily, the officers who were on duty, having been ſeldom on ſhore at the Morai, were not much acquainted with the circumſtances of the place. Had I been preſent myſelf, I might probably have been the means of ſaving their little ſociety from deſtruction.

Several of the natives were ſhot in making their eſcape from the flames; and our people cut off the heads of two of the natives, and brought them on board.

At this time an elderly man was taken priſoner, bound, and ſent on board in the boat with the heads of his two companions. I never ſaw horror ſo ſtrongly pictured, as in the face of this man, nor ſo violent a tranſition to extravagant joy, as when he was untied, and told he might go away in ſafety. He ſhewed us he did not want gratitude, as he frequently afterwards returned with preſents of proviſions, and alſo did us other ſervices.

Soon after the village was deſtroyed, we ſaw, coming down the hill, a man, attended by fifteen or twenty boys, holding pieces of white cloth, green boughs, and plantains in their hands. I knew not how it happened, that this peaceful embaſſy, as ſoon as they were within reach, received the fire of a party of our men. This, however, did not ſtop them. They continued their proceſſion, and the officer on duty came up, in time, to prevent a ſecond diſcharge. As they approached nearer, it was found to be our much eſteemed friend Kaireekeea, the prieſt, who had fled on our ſetting fire to the village, and had now returned, and deſired to be ſent on board the Reſolution.

When he arrived, we found him exceedingly grave and thoughtful. We endeavoured to make him underſtand the neceſſity we were under of ſetting fire to the village, by which his houſe, and thoſe of his brethren, were unintentionally conſumed. He expoſtulated a little with us on our want of friendſhip, and on our ingratitude. And indeed, it was not till now, that we learnt the whole extent of the injury we had done them. He told us, that relying on the promiſes I had made them, and on the aſſurances they had afterwards received from the men, who had brought us the remains of Captain Cook, they had not removed their effects back into the country, with the reſt of the inhabitants, but had put every thing that was valuable of their own, as well as what they had collected from us, into a houſe cloſe to the Morai, where they had the mortification to ſee it all ſet on fire by us.

On coming on board, he had ſeen the heads of his countrymen, lying on the deck, at which he was exceedingly ſhocked, and deſired, with great earneſtneſs, that they might be thrown overboard. This requeſt Captain Clerke immediately ordered to be complied with.

In the evening, the watering party returned on board, having met with no farther interruption. We paſſed

paſſed a gloomy night; the cries and lamentations we heard on ſhore being far more dreadful than ever. Our only conſolation was, the hope that we ſhould have no occaſion, in future, for a repetition of ſuch ſeverities.

It is very extraordinary, that amidſt all theſe diſturbances, the women of the iſland, who were on board, never offered to leave us, nor diſcovered the ſmalleſt apprehenſions either for themſelves or their friends on ſhore. So entirely unconcerned did they appear, that ſome of them, who were on deck when the town was in flames, ſeemed to admire the ſight, and cried out, that it was maitai, or very fine.

The next morning, Koah came off as uſual to the ſhips. As there exiſted no longer any neceſſity for keeping terms with him, I was allowed to have my own way. When he approached towards the ſide of the ſhip, ſinging his ſong, and offering me a hog, and ſome plantains, I ordered him to keep off, cautioning him never to appear again without Captain Cook's bones, leſt his life ſhould pay the forfeit of his frequent breach of promiſe. He did not appear much mortified with this reception, but went immediately on ſhore, and joined a party of his countrymen, who were pelting the waterers with ſtones.

The natives being at laſt convinced that it was not the want of ability to puniſh them, which had hitherto made us tolerate their provocations, deſiſted from giving us further moleſtation; and, in the evening, a chief called Eappo, who had ſeldom viſited us, but whom we knew to be a man of the very firſt conſequence, came with preſents from the king to ſue for peace. The preſents were received and he was diſmiſſed with the ſame anſwer which had before been given, that until the remains of Captain Cook, ſhould be reſtored, no peace would be granted. We learned from this perſon, that the fleſh of all the bodies of our people, together with the bones of the trunks, had been burnt; that the limb bones of the

marines had been divided amongſt the inferior chiefs; and that thoſe of Captain Cook, had been diſpoſed of in the following manner: the head to a great chief, called Kahoo-opeon; the hair to Mahia-mahia; and the legs, thighs, and arms, to the king. After it was dark, many of the inhabitants came off with roots and other vegetables; and we alſo received two large preſents of the ſame articles from Kaireekeea.

The 19th was chiefly taken up in ſending and receiving the meſſages which paſſed between Captain Clerke and the King. Eappo was very preſſing, that one of our officers ſhould go on ſhore; and, in the mean time, offered to remain an hoſtage on board. This requeſt, however, it was not thought proper to comply with; and he left us with a promiſe of bringing the bones the next day. At the beach, the waterers did not meet with the leaſt oppoſition from the natives; who, notwithſtanding our cautious behaviour, came amongſt us again, without the ſmalleſt appearance of diffidence or apprehenſion.

About ten in the morning of the 20th, we ſaw a great number of people deſcending the hill, which is over the beach, in a kind of proceſſion, each man carrying a ſugar-cane on his two ſhoulders, and bread-fruit, taro, and plantains in his hand. They were preceded by two drummers; who, when they came to the water-ſide, ſat down by a white flag, and began to beat their drums, while thoſe who had followed them, advanced, one by one; and, having depoſited the preſents they had brought, retired in the ſame order. Soon after, Eappo came in ſight, in his long feathered cloak, bearing ſomething with great ſolemnity in his hands; and having placed himſelf on a rock, he made ſigns for a boat to be ſent him.

Captain Clerke conjecturing that he had brought the bones of Captain Cook, which proved to be the fact, went himſelf in the pinnace to receive them; and

and ordered me to attend them in the cutter. When we arrived at the beach, Eappo came into the pinnace, and delivered to the Captain the bones wrapped up in a large quantity of fine new cloth, and covered with a ſpotted cloak of black and white feathers. He afterwards attended us to the Reſolution; but could not be prevailed on to go on board; probably not chooſing, from a ſenſe of decency, to be preſent at the opening of the bundle. We found in it both the hands of Captain Cook entire, which were well known from a remarkable ſcar on one of them, that divided the thumb from the forefinger, the whole length of the metacarpal bone; the ſkull, but with the ſcalp ſeparated from it, and the bones that form the face wanting; the ſcalp, with the hair upon it cut ſhort, and the ears adhering to it; the bones of both arms, with the ſkin of the fore-arms hanging to them; the thigh and leg-bones joined together, but without the feet. The ligaments of the joints entire; and the whole bore evident marks of having been in the fire, except the hands, which had the fleſh left upon them, and were cut in ſeveral places, and crammed with ſalt, apparently with an intention of preſerving them. The ſcalp had a cut in the back part of it, but the ſkull was free from any fracture. The lower jaw, which was wanting, Eappo told us, had been ſeized by a chief, and that the king was uſing every means to recover it.

The next morning (Sunday) Eappo and the king's ſon came on board, and brought with them the remaining bones of Captain Cook, and the barrels of his gun, his ſhoes, and other trifles that belonged to him. Eappo took great pains to convince us, that the king, Mahia-mahia and himſelf, were moſt heartily deſirous of peace; that they had given the moſt convincing proof of it in their power; and that they had been prevented from giving it ſooner, by the other chiefs, many of them were ſtill our enemies. He lamented with the greateſt ſorrow, the death of ſix chiefs we had killed, one of whom was

our

our beſt friend. The cutter he told us, was taken away by Pareea's people; very probably in revenge for the blow that was given him; and that it was broken up the next day.

Nothing now remained, but to perform the laſt offices to our great and unfortunate commander. Eappo was diſmiſſed with orders to taboo all the bay; and in the afternoon, the bones having been put into a coffin, and the ſervice read over them, they were committed to the deep with the uſual military honours. What our feelings were on this occaſion, I leave the world to conceive, thoſe who were preſent know, that it is not in my power to expreſs them.

During the forenoon of the 22d, not a canoe was ſeen paddling in the bay; the taboo, which Eappo had laid on it the day before, at our requeſt, not being yet taken off. At length Eappo came off to us. We aſſured him, that we were now entirely ſatisfied; and that as the Orono was buried, all the remembrance of what had paſſed was buried with him. We afterwards deſired him to take off the taboo, and to make it known that the people might bring their proviſions as uſual. The ſhips were ſoon ſurrounded with canoes, and many of the chiefs came on board, expreſſing great ſorrow at what had happened, and their ſatisfaction at our reconciliation. Several of our friends, who did not viſit us, ſent preſents of large hogs, and other proviſions. Amongſt the reſt came the old treacherous Koah, but was refuſed admittance.

As we had now every thing ready for ſea, Captain Clerke imagining, that, if the news of our proceedings ſhould reach the iſlands to leeward before us, it might have a very bad effect, gave orders to unmoor. About eight in the evening we diſmiſſed all the natives; and Eappo, and the friendly Kaireekeea, took an affectionate leave of us. We immediately weighed, and ſtood out of the bay. The natives were collected on the ſhore in great numbers; and, as we paſſed along, received our laſt farewels, with every mark of affection and good-will.

His

His firſt object was to ſearch for an harbour on the S. E. ſide of Mowee. Being driven, however, by the Eaſterly winds and current, he was not able to gain it, but, on the 1ſt of March, anchored again off the iſland of Atooi. The great buſineſs there was to procure water and proviſions; but the party employed on ſhore for this purpoſe, were in the moſt imminent danger. Nothing but the moderation and management of Lieutenant King could have prevented a repetition of the cataſtrophe of Owhyhee. Harmony however was reſtored by the interpoſition of the chiefs, who attributed this hoſtile circumſtance to a want of ſubordination, which was the natural conſequence of the civil diſſentions which then reigned in the iſlands, and which were occaſioned by the goats which Captain Cook had left at Oneeheow, and which were all deſtroyed in the conteſt. On the 8th, Captain Clerke ſailed from Atooi, and anchored the ſame afternoon off Oneeheow. On the 12th, he finally left theſe iſlands.

We have already given various particulars of the Sandwich Iſlands, in our deſcription of the iſland of Atooi. It will be now proper to add a few obſervations. —They conſiſt of a group of eleven in number, extending it lat. from 18 deg. 54 min. to 22 deg. 15 min. North; and in long. from 199 deg, 36 min. to 205 deg. to 206 min. E. They were named the Sandwich Iſlands by Captain Cook, in honour of the Earl of Sandwich, under whoſe auſpices this voyage was undertaken. The climate here differs very little from that of the Weſt India Iſlands, which lie in the ſame latitude. Whether they are ſubject to the ſame violent winds and hurricanes could not be diſcovered, as the ſhips were not there in any of the ſtormy months; but Captain King thinks it probable, that, in this reſpect, they reſemble the Society and Friendly Iſlands, which are, in a great meaſure, free from theſe dreadful viſitations.

Of the quadrupeds in theſe iſlands, the only ſort worthy of obſervation are the dogs, and that merely on account of the manner in which they are treated here;

here; a manner ſo different from the Europeans. Theſe dogs are about the ſize of the common turnſpit; exceeding ſluggiſh in their nature; which may be more owing to the manner in which they are treated, than to their natural diſpoſition. They are, in general, fed, and left to herd, with the hogs; nor did there appear one inſtance in which a dog was made a companion in the manner we do in Europe. Indeed, the cuſtom of eating them is an inſuperable bar to their admiſſion into ſociety; and as there are neither beaſts of prey in the iſlands, nor objects of chace, it is probable, that the ſocial qualities of the dog, his fidelity, attachment, and ſagacity, will remain unknown to the natives.

With reſpect to the vegetables, the moſt remarkable were ſeveral large roots brought to the ſhips at Oneeheow. They were of a brown colour, ſhaped like a yam, and from ſix to ten pounds in weight. The juice, which it yields in great abundance, is very ſweet, and of a pleaſant taſte, and was found to be an excellent ſubſtitute for ſugar. The natives are very fond of it, and uſe it as an article of their common diet; and our people alſo found it very palatable and wholeſome. It was ſuppoſed to be the root of ſome kind of fern.

The natives of theſe iſlands, are, in general, above the middle ſize, and well made; they walk very gracefully, run nimbly, and are capable of bearing great fatigue; though, upon the whole, the men are ſomewhat inferior, in point of ſtrength and activity, to the Friendly Iſlanders, and the women leſs delicately limbed than thoſe of Otaheite. Their complexion is rather darker than that of the Otaheiteans, and they are not altogether ſo handſome a people. However, many of both ſexes had fine open countenances; and the women in particular, had good eyes and teeth, and a ſweetneſs and ſenſibility of look, which rendered them very engaging. Their hair is of a browniſh black, and neither uniformly ſtraight, like that of the Indians in America, nor uniformly curling, as among the African negroes, but varying, in this reſpect, like the hair of

Europeans.

A Man and Woman of Sandwich Islands.

Europeans. One ſtriking peculiarity, in the features of every part of this great nation, I do not remember to have ſeen any where mentioned; which is, that, even in the handſomeſt faces, there is always a fulneſs of the noſtril, without any flatneſs or ſpreading of the noſe, that diſtinguiſhes them from Europeans. It is not improbable that this may be the effect of their uſual mode of ſalutation, which is performed by preſſing the ends of their noſes together.

Notwithſtanding the irreparable loſs we ſuffered from the ſudden reſentment and violence of the people, yet, in juſtice to their general conduct, it muſt be acknowledged, that they are of the moſt mild and affectionate diſpoſition; equally remote from the extreme levity and fickleneſs of the Otaheiteans, and the diſtant gravity and reſerve of the inhabitants of the Friendly Iſlands. They appear to live in the utmoſt harmony and friendſhip with one another. The women, who had children, were remarkable for their tender and conſtant attention to them; and the men would often lend their aſſiſtance in thoſe domeſtic offices, with a willingneſs that does credit to their feelings.

It muſt, however, be obſerved, that they fall very ſhort of the other iſlanders, in that beſt teſt of civilization, the reſpects paid to the women. Here they are not only deprived of the privilege of eating with the men, but the beſt ſorts of food are tabooed, or forebidden them. They are not allowed to eat pork, turtle, ſeveral kinds of fiſh, and ſome ſpecies of the plantains; and we were told that a poor girl got a terrible beating, for having eaten, on board our ſhip, one of theſe interdicted articles. In their domeſtic life, they appear to live almoſt entirely by themſelves, and though we did not obſerve any inſtances of perſonal ill treatment, yet it was evident they had little regard or attention paid them.

The great hoſpitality and kindneſs, with which we were received by them, have been frequently remarked; and indeed they make the principal part of our tranſactions with them. Whenever we came on ſhore,

there was a conſtant ſtruggle who ſhould be moſt forward in making us little preſents, bringing refreſhments, or ſhewing ſome other mark of their reſpect. The old people never failed of receiving us with tears of joy; ſeemed highly gratified, with being allowed to touch us, and were conſtantly making compariſons between themſelves and us, with the ſtrongeſt marks of humility. The young women were not leſs kind and engaging, and till they found, notwithſtanding our endeavours to prevent it, that they had reaſon to repent of our acquaintance, attached themſelves to us without the leaſt reſerve.

In juſtice, however, to the ſex, it muſt be obſerved, that theſe ladies were probably all of the lower claſs of the people, for I am ſtrongly inclined to believe, that, excepting the few, whoſe names are mentioned in the courſe of the narrative, we did not ſee any woman of rank in the iſland.

Their natural capacity ſeems, in no reſpect, below the common ſtandard of mankind. Their improvements in agricultre, and the perfection of their manufactures, are certainly adequate to the circumſtances of their ſituation, and the natural advantages they enjoy. The eager curioſity, with which they attended the armourer's forge, and the many expedients they had invented, even before we left the iſlands, for working the iron they had procured from us, in ſuch forms as were beſt adapted for their purpoſes, were ſtrong proofs of docility and ingenuity.

Our unfortunate friend, Kaneena (killed with his brother and fifteen of the natives in the fatal conflict with Capt. Cook) poſſeſſed a degree of judicious curioſity, and a quickneſs of conception, which was rarely met with amongſt theſe people. He was very inquiſitive after our cuſtoms and manners; aſked after our king; the nature of our government; our numbers; the method of building our ſhips; our houſes; the produce of our country; whether we had wars; with whom; and on what occaſions; and in what manner they were carried on; who was our God; and many

other queſtions of the ſame nature, which indicated an underſtanding of great comprehenſion.

We met with two inſtances of perſons diſordered in their minds, the one a man at Owhyhee, the other a woman at Oneeheow. It appeared, from the particular attention and reſpect paid to them, that the opinion of their being inſpired by the Divinity, which obtains among moſt of the nations of the Eaſt, is alſo received here.

The inhabitants of theſe iſlands differ from thoſe of the Friendly Iſles, in ſuffering, almoſt univerſally, their beards to grow. There were, indeed, a few, amongſt whom was the old king, that cut it off entirely; and others that wore it only upon their upper lip. The ſame variety, in the manner of wearing the hair, is alſo obſervable here, as among the other iſlanders of the ſouth ſeas; beſides which, they have a faſhion, as far as we know, peculiar to themſelves. They cut it cloſe on each ſide the head, down to the ears, leaving a ridge, of about a ſmall hand's breadth, running from the forehead to the neck; which, when the hair is thick and curling, has the form of a creſt of the ancient helmet. Others wear large quantities of falſe hair, flowing down their backs in long ringlets; and others again, tie it into a ſingle round bunch on the top of the head, almoſt as large as the head itſelf; and ſome into five or ſix diſtinct bunches. They daub their hair with a grey clay, mixed with powdered ſhells, which they keep in balls, and chew it into a kind of ſoft paſte, when they have occaſion to make uſe of it. This keeps the hair ſmooth, and in time, changes it to a pale yellow colour.

Both ſexes wear necklaces, made of ſtrings of ſmall variegated ſhells; and an ornament, in the form of the handle of the cup, about two inches long, and half an inch broad, made of wood, ſtone, or ivory, finely poliſhed, which is hung about the neck, by fine threads of twiſted hair, doubled ſometimes an hundred fold. Inſtead of this ornament, ſome of them wear on their

breaſt, a ſmall human figure, made of bone, ſuſpended in the ſame manner.

The fan, or fly-flap, is alſo an ornament uſed by both ſexes. The moſt ordinary kind are made of the fibres of the cocoa-nut, tied looſe, in bunches, to the top of a ſmooth poliſhed handle. The tail feathers of the cock, and of the tropic bird, are alſo uſed in the ſame manner; but the moſt valuable are thoſe which have the handle made of the arm or leg bones of an enemy ſlain in battle, and which are preſerved with great care, and handed down, from father to ſon, as trophies of ineſtimable value.

The cuſtom of tatowing the body, they have in common with the reſt of the natives of the South Sea iſlands, but it is only at New Zealand, and the Sandwich iſlands, that they tatow the face.

From ſome information we received, relative to the cuſtom of tatowing, we were inclined to think, that it is frequently intended as a ſign of mourning on the death of a chief, or any other calamitous event. For we were often told, that ſuch a particular mark was in memory of ſuch a chief, and ſo of the reſt. It may be here too obſerved, that the loweſt claſs are often tattowed with a mark, that diſtinguiſhes them as the property of the ſeveral chiefs to whom they belong.

The dreſs of the men generally conſiſts of a piece of thick cloth called the maro, about ten or twelve inches broad, which they paſs between the legs, and tie round the waiſt. This is the common dreſs of all ranks of people. Their mats, ſome of which are beautifully manufactured, are of various ſizes, but moſtly about five feet long, and four broad. Theſe they throw over their ſhoulders, and bring forward before; but they are ſeldom uſed, except in time of war, for which purpoſe they ſeem better adapted than for ordinary uſe, being of a thick and cumberſome texture, and capable of breaking the blow of a ſtone, or any blunt weapon. Their feet are generally bare, except when they have occaſion to travel over the burnt ſtones, when they ſecure them with a ſort of ſandal made of cords, twiſted

from

from the fibres of the cocoa-nut. Such is the ordinary dreſs of the iſlanders; but they have another, appropriated to their chiefs, and uſed on ceremonious occaſions, conſiſting of a feathered cloak and helmet, which, in point of beauty and magnificence, is perhaps nearly equal to that of any nation in the world. Theſe cloaks are made of different lengths, in proportion to the rank of the wearer, ſome of them reaching no lower than the middle, others trailing on the ground. The inferior chiefs have alſo a ſhort cloak, reſembling the former, made of the long-tailed feathers of the cock, the tropic and man of war birds, with a broad border of the ſmall and yellow feathers, and a collar of the ſame. Others again are made of feathers entirely white, with variegated borders. The helmet has a ſtrong lining of wicker-work, capable of breaking the blow of any war-like inſtrument, and ſeems evidently deſigned for that purpoſe. Theſe feathered dreſſes ſeemed to be exceedingly ſcarce, appropriated to perſons of the higheſt rank, and worn by the men only.

The exact reſemblance between this habit, and the cloak and helmet formerly worn by the Spaniards, was too ſtriking not to excite our curioſity to inquire, whether there were any probable grounds for ſuppoſing it to have been borrowed from them. After exerting every means in our power, of obtaining information on this ſubject, we found that they had no immediate knowledge of any other nation whatever; nor any tradition remaining among them of theſe iſlands, having been ever viſited before by any ſuch ſhips as ours. But notwithſtanding the reſult of theſe inquiries, the uncommon form of this habit appears to me a ſufficient proof of its European origin; eſpecially when added to another circumſtance, that it is a ſingular deviation from the general reſemblance in dreſs, which prevails amongſt all the branches of this tribe, diſperſed through the South Sea. We were driven indeed, by this concluſion, to a ſuppoſition of the ſhipwreck of ſome Buccaneer, or Spaniſh ſhip, in the neighbourhood of theſe iſlands. But when it is recollected, that the courſe of

the

the Spaniſh trade from the Acapulco to the Manillas, is but a few degrees to the Southward of the Sandwich Iſlands, in their paſſage out, and to the Northward, on their return, this ſuppoſition will not appear in the leaſt improbable.

The common dreſs of the women bears a cloſe reſemblance to that of the men. They wrap round the waiſt a piece of cloth, that reaches half way down the thighs; and ſometimes in the cool of the evening, they appeared with looſe pieces of fine cloth thrown over their ſhoulders, like the women of Otaheite. The pau is another dreſs very frequently worn by the younger part of the ſex. It is made of the thinneſt and fineſt ſort of cloth, wrapt ſeveral times round the waiſt, and deſcending to the leg; ſo as to have exactly the appearance of a full ſhort petticoat. Their hair is cut ſhort behind, and turned up before, as is the faſhion among the Otaheiteans and New Zealanders; all of whom differ in this reſpect from the women of the Friendly Iſlands, who wear their hair long. We ſaw, indeed, one woman in Karakakooa Bay, whoſe hair was arranged in a very ſingular manner; it was turned up behind, and brought over the forehead, and then doubled back, ſo as to form a ſort of ſhade for the face, like a ſmall bonnet.

Their necklaces are made of ſhells, or of a hard ſhining red berry. Beſides which, they wear wreaths of dried flowers of the Indian mallow; and another beautiful ornament called Eraie, which is generally put about the neck, but is ſometimes tied like a garland round the hair, and ſometimes worn in both theſe ways at once. It is a ruff of the thickneſs of a finger, made in a curious manner, of exceeding ſmall feathers, woven ſo cloſe together as to form a ſurface as ſmooth as that of the richeſt velvet. The ground was generally of a red colour, with alternate circles of greeen, yellow, and black.

At Atooi, ſome of the women wore little figures of the turtle, neatly formed of wood or ivory, tied on their fingers in the manner we wear rings. Why this animal

mal is thus particularly diſtinguiſhed, I leave to the conjectures of the curious. There is alſo an ornament made of ſhells, faſtened in rows on a ground of ſtrong netting, ſo as to ſtrike each other, when in motion; which both men and women, when they dance, tie either round the arm or the ankle, or below the knee. Inſtead of ſhells, they ſometimes make uſe of dog's teeth, and a hard red berry, reſembling that of the holly.

There remains to be mentioned another ornament (if ſuch it may be called,) the figure of which may be conceived by the following deſcription: It is a kind of maſk, made of a large gourd, with holes cut in it for the eyes and noſe. The top was ſtuck full of ſmall green twigs, which, at a diſtance, had the appearance of an elegant waving plume; and from the lower part hung narrow ſtripes of cloth, reſembling a beard. We never ſaw theſe maſks worn but twice, and both times by a number of people together in a canoe, who came to the ſide of the ſhip, laughing and drolling, with an air of maſquerading. Whether they may not likewiſe be uſed as a defence for the head againſt ſtones, for which they ſeem beſt deſigned, or in ſome of their public games, or be merely intended for the purpoſes of mummery, we could never inform ourſelves.

In addition to the furniture of their houſes, which has been accurately deſcribed by Captain Cook, I have only to add, that at one end are mats on which they ſleep, with wooden pillows, or ſleeping ſtools, exactly like thoſe of the Chineſe. Some of the better ſort of houſes have a court-yard before them, neatly railed in, with ſmaller houſes built round it, for their ſervants. In this area they generally eat, and ſit during the day-time. In the ſides of the hills, and among the ſteep rocks, we alſo obſerved ſeveral holes or caves, which appeared to be inhabited; but as the entrance was defended with wicker-work, and we alſo found, in the only one that was viſited, a ſtone fence running acroſs

it within, we imagine they are principally deſigned for places of retreat, in caſe of an attack from an enemy.

The way of ſpending their time appears to be very ſimple, and to admit of little variety. They riſe with the ſun; and, after enjoying the cool of the evening, retire to reſt a few hours after ſun-ſet. The making of canoes and mats forms the occupations of the Erees; the women are employed in manufacturing cloth; and the Towtows are principally engaged in the plantations and fiſhing. Their idle hours are filled up with various amuſements. Their young men and women are fond of dancing; and, on more ſolemn occaſions, they have boxing and wreſtling matches, after the manner of the Friendly Iſlands; though, in all theſe reſpects, they are much inferior to the latter.

Their dances have a much nearer reſemblance to thoſe of the New Zealanders, than of the Otaheiteans or Friendly Iſlanders. They are prefaced with a ſlow, ſolemn ſong, in which all the party join, moving their legs, and gently ſtriking their breaſts, in a manner, and with attitudes, that are perfectly eaſy and graceful; and ſo far they are the ſame with the dances of the Society Iſlands.

Their muſic is of a ruder kind, having neither flutes nor reeds, nor inſtruments of any other ſort, that we ſaw, except drums of various ſizes. But their ſongs, which they ſung in parts, and accompany with a gentle motion of the arms, in the ſame manner as the Friendly Iſlanders, had a very pleaſing effect.

It is very remarkable, that the people of theſe iſlands are great gamblers. They have a game very much like our draughts; but, if one may judge from the number of ſquares, it is much more intricate. The board is about two feet long, and is divided into two hundred and thirty-eight ſquares, of which there are fourteen in a row, and they make uſe of black and white pebbles, which they move from ſquare to ſquare.

There is another game, which conſiſts in hiding a ſtone under a piece of cloth, which one of the parties ſpreads out, and rumples in ſuch a manner, that the place

place where the ſtone lies is difficult to be diſtinguiſhed. The antagoniſt, with a ſtick, then ſtrikes the part of the cloth where he imagines the ſtone to be; and as the chances are, upon the whole, conſiderably againſt his hitting it, odds, of all degrees, varying with the opinion of the ſkill of the parties, are laid on the ſide of him who hides.

Beſides theſe games, they frequently amuſe themſelves with racing-matches between the boys and girls; and here again they wager with great ſpirit. I ſaw a man in a moſt violent rage, tearing his hair, and beating his breaſt, after loſing the hatchets at one of theſe races, which he had juſt before purchaſed from us, with half his ſubſtance.

Swimming is not only a neceſſary art, in which both their men and women are more expert than any people we have hitherto ſeen, but a favourite diverſion amongſt them. One particular mode, in which they ſometimes amuſe themſelves with this exerciſe, in Karakakooa Bay, appeared moſt perilous and extraordinary, and well deſerving a diſtinct relation.

The ſurf, which breaks on the coaſt round the bay, extends to the diſtance of about one hundred and fifty yards from the ſhore, within which ſpace, the ſurges of the ſea, accumulating from the ſhallowneſs of the water, are daſhed againſt the beach with prodigious violence. Whenever, from ſtormy weather, or any extraordinary ſwell at ſea, the impetuoſity of the ſurf is increaſed to its utmoſt height, they chooſe that time for their amuſement, which is performed in the following manner: Twenty or thirty of the natives, taking each a long narrow board, rounded at the ends, ſet out together from the ſhore. The firſt wave they meet, they plunge under, and ſuffer it to roll over them, riſe again beyond it, and make the beſt of their way, by ſwimming out into the ſea. The ſecond wave is encountered in the ſame manner with the firſt; the great difficulty is in ſetting the proper moment of diving under it, which, if miſſed, the perſon is caught by the ſurf, and driven back again with great violence; and all his

dexterity is then required to prevent himſelf from being daſhed againſt the rocks. As ſoon as they have gained, by theſe repeated efforts, the ſmooth water beyond the ſurf, they lay themſelves at length on their board, and prepare for their return. As the ſurf conſiſts of a number of waves, of which every third is remarked to be always much larger than the others, and to flow higher on the ſhore, the reſt breaking in the intermediate ſpace, their firſt object is to place themſelves on the ſummit of the largeſt ſurge, by which they are driven along with amazing rapidity towards the ſhore. If by miſtake they ſhould place themſelves on one of the ſmaller waves, which breaks before they reach the land, or ſhould not be able to keep their plank in a proper direction on the top of the ſwell, they are left to the fury of the next, and to avoid it, are obliged again to dive and regain the place from which they ſet out. Thoſe who ſucceed in their object of reaching the ſhore, have ſtill the greateſt danger to encounter. The coaſt being guarded by a chain of rocks, with here and there a ſmall opening between them, they are obliged to ſteer their board on one of theſe, or, in caſe of failure, to quit it, before they reach the rocks, and plunging under the wave, make the beſt of their way back again. This is reckoned very diſgraceful, and is often attended with the loſs of the board, which I have often ſeen, with great terror, daſhed to pieces, at the very moment the iſlander quitted it. The boldneſs and addreſs, with which we ſaw them perform theſe difficult and dangerous manœuvres, was altogether aſtoniſhing, and is ſcarcely to be credited.

An accident, of which I was a near ſpectator, ſhews at how early a period they are ſo far familiarized to the water, as both to loſe all fear of it, and to ſet its dangers at defiance. A canoe being overſet, in which was a woman with her children, one of them an infant, who, I am convinced, was not more than four years old, ſeemed highly delighted with what had happened, ſwimming about at its eaſe, and playing a hundred tricks, till the canoe was put to right again.

Beſides

Beſides the amuſements I have already mentioned, the young children have one, which was much played at, and ſhewed no ſmall degree of dexterity. They take a ſhort ſtick, with a peg ſharpened at both ends, running through one extremity of it, and extending about an inch on each ſide; and throwing up a ball made of green leaves moulded together, and ſecured with twine, they catch it on the point of the peg; and immediately throwing it up again from the peg, they turn the ſtick round, and thus keep catching it on each point alternately, without miſſing it for a conſiderable time. They are not leſs expert at another game of the ſame nature, toſſing up in the air, and catching in their turns a number of theſe balls; ſo that we frequently ſaw little children thus keep in motion five at a time. With this latter play, the young people likewiſe divert themſelves at the Friendly Iſlands.

The great reſemblance which prevails in the mode of agriculture and navigation, amongſt all the inhabitants of the South Sea iſlands, leaves me very little to add on thoſe heads.—The moſt curious ſpecimens of their ſculpture, which we ſaw during our ſecond viſit, are the bowls in which the chiefs drink ava. Theſe are uſually about eight or ten inches in diameter, perfectly round, and beautifully poliſhed. They are ſupported by three, and ſometimes four ſmall human figures in various attitudes. Some of them reſt on the hands of their ſupporters, extended over the head; others on the head and hands; and ſome on the ſhoulders. The figures, I am told, are accurately proportioned, and neatly finiſhed, and even the anatomy of the muſcles, in ſupporting the weight, well expreſſed.

Their cloth is made of the ſame materials, and in the ſame manner as at the Friendly and Society Iſlands. That which is deſigned to be painted, is of a thick and ſtrong texture, ſeveral folds being beaten and incorporated together; after which it is cut in breadths, about two or three feet wide, and is painted in a variety of patterns, with a comprehenſive and regularity of deſign, that beſpeaks infinite taſte and fancy. The ex-

actneſs with which the moſt intricate patterns are continued, is the more ſurprizing, when we conſider that they have no ſtamps, and that the whole is done by the eye, with pieces of bamboo cane dipped in paint; the hand being ſupported by another piece of the cane, in the manner practiſed by our painters. Their colours are extracted from the ſame berries, and other vegetable ſubſtances, as at Otaheite.

The buſineſs of painting belongs intirely to the women, and is called kipparee; and it is remarkable that they always gave the ſame name to our writing. The young women would often take the pen out of our hands, and ſhew us, that they knew the uſe of it as well as we did; at the ſame time telling us, that our pens were not ſo good as theirs. They looked upon a ſheet of written paper, as a piece of cloth ſtriped after the faſhion of our country, and it was not without the utmoſt difficulty, that we could make them underſtand, that our figures had a meaning in them which theirs had not.

Their mats are made of the leaves of pandanus; and, as well as their cloths, are beautifully worked in a variety of patterns, and ſtained of different colours. Some have a ground of pale green, ſpotted with ſquares, or romhoids of red; others are of a ſtraw colour, ſpotted with green; and others are worked with beautiful ſtripes, either in ſtraight or waving lines of red and brown. In this article of manufacture, whether we regard the ſtrength, fineneſs, or beauty, they certainly excel the whole world.

Their fiſhing-hooks are made of mother-of-pearl, bone, or wood, pointed and barbed with ſmall bones, or tortoiſe-ſhell. They are of various ſizes and forms; but the moſt common are about two or three inches long, and made in the ſhape of a ſmall fiſh, which ſerves as a bait, having a bunch of feathers tied to the head or tail. Thoſe with which they fiſh for ſharks, are of a very large ſize, being generally ſix or eight inches long. Conſidering the materials of which theſe

hooks

hooks are made, their ſtrength and neatneſs are really aſtoniſhing; and in fact we found them upon trial, much ſuperior to our own.

The line which they uſe for fiſhing, for making nets, and for other domeſtic purpoſes, is of different degrees of fineneſs, and is made of the bark of the touta, or cloth tree, neatly and evenly twiſted in the ſame manner as our common twine; and may be continued to any length. They have a finer ſort, made of the bark of a ſmall ſhrub called Areemah; and the fineſt is made of human hair; but this laſt is chiefly uſed for things of ornament. They alſo make cordage of a ſtronger kind, for the rigging of their canoes, from the fibrous coatings of the cocoa-nuts. Some of this we purchaſed for our own uſe, and found it well adapted to the ſmaller kinds of running rigging. They likewiſe make another ſort of cordage, which is flat, and exceedingly ſtrong, and uſed principally in laſhing the roofing of their houſes, or whatever they wiſh to faſten tight together. This laſt is not twiſted like the former ſorts, but is made of the fibrous ſtrings of the cocoa-nut's coat, plaited with the fingers, in the manner our ſailors make their points for the reefing of ſails.

The gourds grow to ſo enormous a ſize, that ſome of them are capable of containing from ten to twelve gallons, are applied to all manner of domeſtic purpoſes; and in order to fit them the better to their reſpective uſes, they have the ingenuity to give them different forms, by tying bandages round them during their growth. Thus, ſome of them are of a long cylindrical form, as beſt adapted to contain their fiſhing-tackle; others are of a diſh form, and theſe ſerve to hold their ſalt, and ſalted proviſions, their puddings, vegetables, &c. which two ſorts have neat cloſe covers, made likewiſe of the gourd; others again are exactly the ſhape of a bottle with a long neck, and in theſe they keep their water. They have likewiſe a method of ſcouring them with a heated inſtrument, ſo as to give them the appearance of being painted in a variety of neat and elegant deſigns.

From

From the Sandwich Iſlands, Captain Clerke bent his courſe to the coaſt of Kamptſchatka, in ſight of which he came on the 22d of April, 1779. On the 25th he loſt ſight of the Diſcovery; but coming to anchor in the Bay of Awatſka, on the 28th, at ſome diſtance from the ſmall town and harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, he had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing her ſtand into the Bay on the firſt of May. This town, otherwiſe called Petropaulowſki; conſiſted only of a few miſerable log-houſes and ſome comical huts, raiſed on poles. But, in this wretched extremity of the earth, ſituated beyond every thing that could be conceived to be moſt barbarous and inhoſpitable, and, as it were out of the very reach of civilization, barricaded with ice, and covered with ſummer ſnow in a poor miſerable port, far inferior to the meaneſt of our fiſhing towns, they met with feelings of humanity, joined to a greatneſs of mind, which would have done honour to any nation or climate.

The arrival of the ſhips gave great alarm at firſt to the Commander at Petropaulowſki; but proper explanations and conſequent civilities ſoon took place. Mr. King, Mr. Webber, and two ſailors, who had each a boat-hook, being ſent to wait upon the Commander, who was a ſerjeant in the Ruſſian ſervice, met with great difficulties in walking over the ice, which extended half a mile from the ſhore. On their return, therefore, the ſerjeant provided a ſledge, drawn by five dogs, with a driver for each of them. The ſailors were highly delighted with this mode of conveyance; and what diverted them ſtill more was, that a ſledge was appropriated to each of the boat-hooks.

As there was no poſſibility of procuring proviſions or naval ſtores at Petropaulowſki; and as the ſerjeant could not act in this affair without orders from the Ruſſian Commander of Kamptſchatka, who reſided at Bolcheretſk, a town on the weſt ſide of the Peninſula, diſtant from Petropaulowſki about 135 miles; the ſerjeant, on the firſt interview, had diſpatched a meſſenger to his ſuperior officer. This meſſenger, who was ſent off on the

29th,

29th, about noon, in a ſledge drawn by dogs, returned early in the morning on the 3d of May; ſo that he was little more than three days and a half in performing a journey of 270 miles.

On the 4th, a Mr. Fedoſitſch, a Ruſſian merchant, and a German, named Port, (who, in the ſequel, proved very uſeful as an interpreter) waited on Captain Clerke, with a letter from Major Behm, the Commander of Kamptſchatka. This letter was merely complimental, inviting Captain Clerke and his officers to Bolcheretſk, to which place the people who brought it were to conduct them.

Capt. Gore, Mr. King, and Mr. Webber being appointed by Capt. Clerke to wait upon the Commander at Bolcheretſk, they ſet out on the 7th, accompanied by Meſſrs. Fedoſitſch and Port, and two Coſſacks. Part of the way they proceeded by the tedious and difficult navigation of the river Awatſka. In the evening they erected a marquee, and ſlept on ſhore. In the morning of the 8th, they were met by the Toion or chief of the Oſtrog of Karatchin, (an Oſtrog, is a ſmall town, fortified by paliſadoes, where the Ruſſian Coſſacks and other inhabitants reſide) who, having been apprized of their coming, had provided canoes that were better contrived for navigating the higher part of the river. When they arrived at the Oſtrog, they were received at the water ſide by the Kamptſchadale men and women, and ſome Ruſſian ſervants belonging to Fedoſitſch. They were all dreſſed out in their beſt clothes. Thoſe of the women were pretty and gay, conſiſting of a full looſe robe of white nankeen, gathered cloſe round the neck, and faſtened with a collar of coloured ſilk. Over this they wear a ſhort jacket without ſleeves, made of different coloured nankeens, and petticoats of a ſlight Chineſe ſilk. Their ſhifts, which had ſleeves down to the wriſts, were alſo of ſilk; and coloured ſilk handkerchiefs were bound round their heads, concealing entirely the hair of the married women, while thoſe that were unmarried brought the handkerchief under the hair, and ſuffered it to flow looſe behind.

This

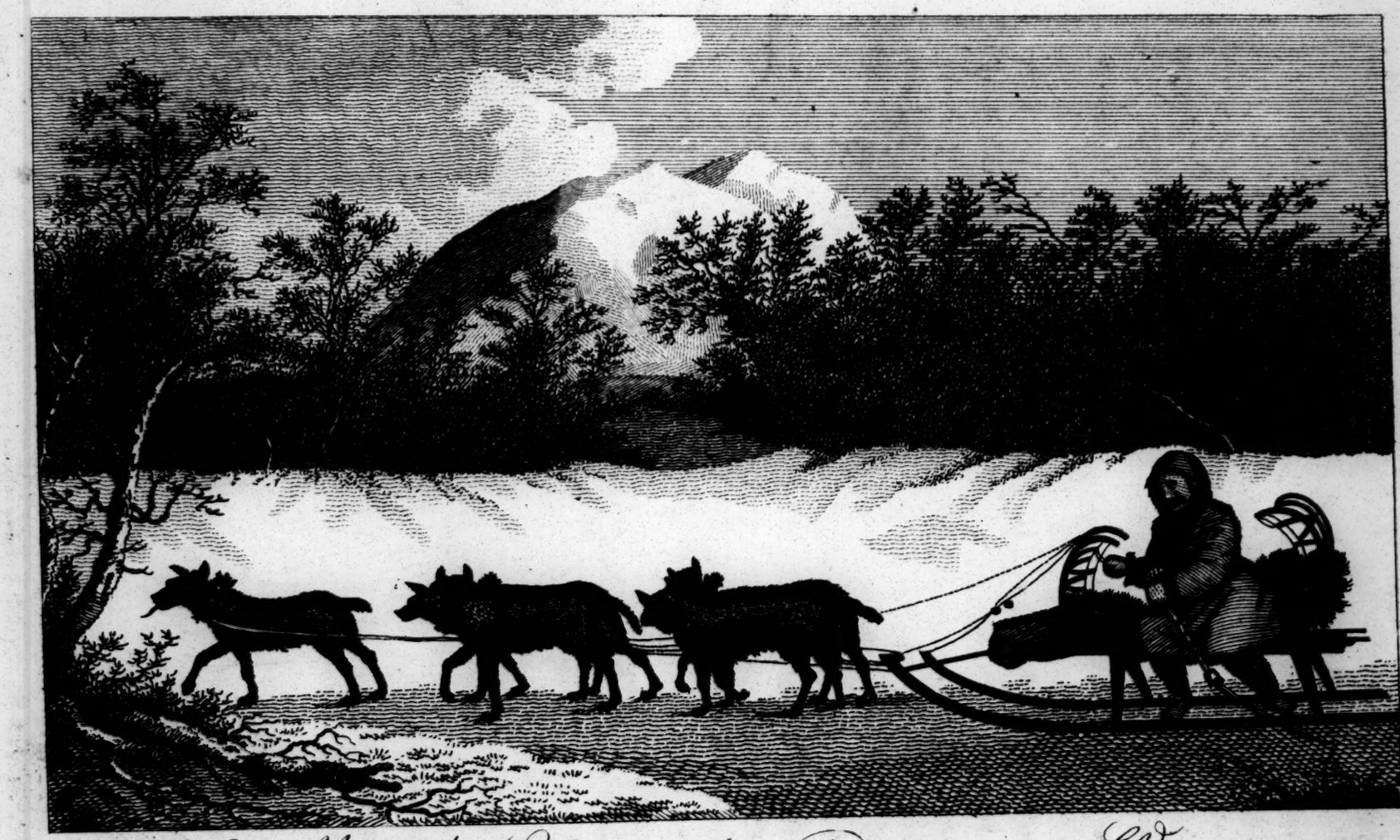
This Oſtrog was pleaſantly ſituated by the ſide of the river, and conſiſted of three log-houſes; three jourts, or houſes made under ground; and nineteen balagans, or ſummer habitations. We were conducted to the dwelling of the Toion, who was a plain decent man, born of a Ruſſian woman, by a Kampſchadale father. His houſe, like all the reſt in this country, was divided into two apartments. A long narrow table, with a bench round it, was all the furniture we ſaw in the outer; and the houſehold ſtuff of the inner, which was the kitchen, was no leſs ſimple and ſcanty. But the kind attention of our hoſt, and the hearty welcome we received, more than compenſated for the poverty of his lodgings.

His wife proved an excellent cook; and ſerved us with fiſh and game of different ſorts, and various kinds of heath berries, that had been kept ſince the laſt year.

While we were at dinner in this miſerable hut, the gueſts of the people, with whoſe exiſtence we had been ſcarce acquainted, and at the extremity of the habitable globe, a ſolitary half-worn pewter ſpoon, whoſe ſhape was familiar to us, attracted our attention; and, on examination, we found it ſtamped on the back with the word London. I cannot paſs over this circumſtance in ſilence, out of gratitude for the many pleaſant thoughts, the anxious hopes, and tender remembrances it excited in us. Thoſe who have experienced the effects that long abſence and extreme diſtance from their native country produce on the mind, will readily conceive the pleaſure ſuch trifling incidents can give. To the philoſopher and the politician they may perhaps ſuggeſt reflections of a different nature.

After the moſt hoſpitable treatment during the courſe of the day, Mr. King and his party, who were now to proceed on ſledges, retired to reſt, having previouſly agreed with their conductors to be called up as ſoon as the ground was hard enough to bear the ſledges. At nine in the evening, they were awaked by the melancholy howlings of the dogs, which continued all the time the baggage was laſhing upon the ſledges; but, as

ſoon



A Man of Kamtschatka Travelling in Winter.

ſoon as the dogs were yoked, and they were all prepared to ſet out, this changed into a light cheerful yelping, which entirely ceaſed the inſtant they marched off.

The body of this ſledge is about four feet and a half long, and a foot wide, made in the form of a creſcent, of light tough wood, ſtrongly bound together with wicker-work; which in thoſe belonging to the better ſort of people is elegantly ſtained of a red and blue colour, and the ſeat covered with bear-ſkins, and other furs. It is ſupported by four legs, about two feet high, which reſt on two flat pieces of wood, five or ſix inches broad, extending a foot at each end beyond the body of the ſledge. Theſe are turned up before in the manner of the ſkate, and ſhod with the bones of ſome ſea-animal. The forepart of the carriage is ornamented with thongs of leather, and taſſels of coloured cloth; and from the croſs bar, to which the harneſs is joined, are hung links of iron, or ſmall bells, the jingling of which they conceive to be encouraging to the dogs. They are ſeldom uſed to carry more than one perſon at a time, who ſits at one ſide, reſting his feet on the lower part of the ſledge, and carrying his proviſions and other neceſſaries, wrapped up in a bundle behind him. The dogs are uſually five in number, yoked two and two with a leader. The reins not being faſtened to the head of the dogs, but to the collar, have little power over them, and are therefore generally hung upon the ſledge, whilſt the driver depends entirely on their obedience to his voice for the direction of them. With this view, the leader is always trained with a particular degree of care and attention; ſome of them riſing to a moſt extraordinary value on account of their docility and ſteadineſs; inſomuch, that for one of theſe, I am well aſſured, forty roubles (or ten pounds) was no unuſual price. The driver is alſo provided with a crooked ſtick, which anſwers the purpoſe both of whip and reins; as by ſtriking it into the ſnow, he is enabled to moderate the ſpeed of the dogs, or even to ſtop them entirely; and when they are

lazy, or otherwiſe inattentive to his voice, he chaſtiſes them by throwing it at them. Upon theſe occaſion, their dexterity in picking it up again is very remarkable, and forms the principal difficulty of their art. But it is indeed not ſurpriſing, that they ſhould labour to be ſkilful in practice upon which their ſafety ſo materially depends. For they ſay, that if the driver ſhould happen to loſe his ſtick, the dogs will inſtantly perceive it, and unleſs their leader be of the moſt ſober and reſolute kind, they will immediately run a-head full ſpeed, and never ſtop till they are quite ſpent. But as that will not be the caſe ſoon, it generally happens, that either the carriage is overturned, daſhed to pieces againſt the trees, or they hurry down ſome precipice, and are all buried in the ſnow. The accounts that were given us of the ſpeed of theſe dogs, and of their extraordinary patience of hunger and fatigue, were ſcarcely credible, if they had not been ſupported by the beſt authority. We were ourſelves witneſſes of the great expedition with which the meſſenger, who had been diſpatched to Bolcheretſk with the news of our arrival, returned to the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, though the ſnow was, at this time, exceedingly ſoft. But I was informed by the commander of Kamtſchatka, that this journey was generally performed in two days and an half; and that he had once received an expreſs from the latter place in twenty-three hours.

The dogs are fed during the winter on the offals of dried and ſtinking fiſh; but are always deprived even of this miſerable food a day before they ſet out on a journey, and never ſuffered to eat before they reach the end of it. We were alſo told, that it was not unuſual for them to continue thus faſting two entire days, in which time they would perform a journey of 120 miles. Theſe dogs are in ſhape ſomewhat like the Pomeranian breed, but conſiderably larger.

Travelling parties are often overtaken with dreadful ſtorms of ſnow, on the approach of which, they drive with the utmoſt preciptation, into the neareſt wood, and there are obliged to ſtay, till the tempeſt, which frequently

frequently laſts ſix or ſeven days, is over; the dogs remaining all this while quiet and inoffenſive; except that ſometimes, when preſſed by hunger, they will devour their reins, and other leathern parts of the harneſs.

As we did not chooſe to truſt to our own ſkill, we had each of us a man to drive and guide the ſledge, which, from the ſtate the roads were now in, proved a very laborious taſk. For, as the thaw had advanced very conſiderably in the vallies, through which our road lay, we were under the neceſſity of keeping along the ſides of the hills; and this obliged our guides, who were provided with ſnow-ſhoes for that purpoſe, to ſupport the ſledges on the lower ſide with their ſhoulders for ſeveral miles together. I had a very good humoured Coſſack to attend me, who was, however, ſo very unſkilful in his buſineſs, that we were overturned almoſt every minute, to the great entertainment of the reſt of the company. Our party conſiſted in all of ten ſledges. That in which Capt. Gore was carried, was made of two laſhed together, and abundantly provided with furs and bear-ſkins; it had ten dogs, yoked four a-breaſt; as had alſo ſome of thoſe that were heavy laden with baggage.

When he had proceeeded about four miles, it began to rain; which, added to the darkneſs of the night, threw us all into confuſion. It was at laſt agreed, that we ſhould remain where we were till day-light; and accordingly we came to anchor in the ſnow, (for I cannot better expreſs the manner in which the ſledges were ſecured,) and wrapping ourſelves up in our furs, waited patiently for the morning. About three o'clock we were called on to ſet out, our guides being apprehenſive, that if we waited longer, we might be ſtopped by the thaw, and neither be able to proceed, nor to return. After encountering many difficulties, which were principally occaſioned by the bad condition of the road, at two in the afternoon, we got ſafe to Oſtrog, called Natcheekin, ſituated on the ſide of a ſtream, which falls into the Bolchoireka, a little way below the town. The diſtance between Karatchin and Natcheekin

is

is 38 werſts (or 25 miles) and had the hard froſt continued, we ſhould not, by their account, have been more than four hours in performing it; but the the ſnow was ſo ſoft, that the dogs, almoſt at every ſtep, ſunk up to their bellies; and I was indeed much ſurpriſed at their being at all able to overcome the difficulties of ſo fatiguing a journey.

At Natcheekin we were received in the ſame hoſpitable manner as at Karatchin; and in the afternoon we went to viſit a remarkable hot ſpring, near this village. We ſaw, at ſome diſtance, the ſteam riſing from it, as from a boiling cauldron, and as we approached, perceived the air had a ſtrong ſulphurous ſmell. The main ſpring forms a baſon of about three feet in diameter; beſides which, there are a number of leſſer ſprings of the ſame degree of heat, in the adjacent ground, ſo that the whole ſpot, to the extent of near an acre, was ſo hot that we could not ſtand two minutes in the ſame place. The water flowing from theſe ſprings is collected in a ſmall bathing pond, and afterwards forms a little rivulet; which, at the diſtance of about an hundred and fifty yards, falls into the river. The bath, they told us, had wrought great cures in ſeveral diſorders, ſuch as rheumatiſms, ſwelled and contracted joints, and ſcorbutic ulcers. In the bathing-place, the thermometer at 100 degrees, or blood heat; but in the ſpring, after being immerſed two minutes, it was ten deg. above boiling ſpirits. The thermometer in the air, at this time, was 34 deg. in the river 40 deg. and in the Toin's houſe 64 deg. The ground where theſe ſprings broke out, is on a gentle aſcent; behind which there is a green hill of a moderate ſize. I am ſorry I was not ſufficiently ſkilled in botany to examine the plants, which ſeemed to thrive here with great luxuriance; the wild garlic, indeed, forced itſelf on our notice, and was at this time ſpringing up very vigorouſly.

The remainder of the way they proceeded in canoes up the river Bolchoireka, and on the 12th, in the

the forenoon, arrived at Bolcheretſk. They were received at the water ſide by the commander, in a manner the moſt engaging that could be conceived. In company with Major Behm, was Capt. Schmaleff, the ſecond in command, and all the merchants of the place. They conducted us to the commander's houſe, where we were received by his lady with great civility, and found tea and other refreſhments for us. After the firſt compliments were over, Mr. Webber was deſired to acquaint the major with the object of our journey, with our want of naval ſtores, flour, and freſh proviſions, and other neceſſaries for the ſhip's crews, and at the ſame time to aſſure him, that we were ſenſible from what we had already ſeen of the country about Awatſka Bay, we could not expect much aſſiſtance from him in that quarter; that the impoſſibility of ſending heavy braſs ſtores acroſs the peninſula, during the preſent ſeaſon of the year, was but two apparent from the difficulties we had met with on our journey; and that, long before any material change could take place, we ſhould be under the neceſſity of proceeding on our voyage. We were here interrupted by the commander, who obſerved, that we did not know what they were capable of doing; that, at leaſt, it was not his buſineſs to think of the difficulties of ſupplying our wants, but only to learn what were the articles we ſtood in need of, and the longeſt time we could allow him for procuring them. After expreſſing our ſenſe of his obliging diſpoſition, we gave him a liſt of the naval ſtores, the number of cattle, and the quantity of flour, we were directed to purchaſe, and told him, that we purpoſed recommencing our voyage about the 5th of June.

Capt. King next relates many particulars of the well-ſupported politeneſs and attention which they experienced in the courſe of the day. Early in the morning, we received the compliments of the commander of Captain Schmaleff, and of the principal inhabitants of the town, who all honoured us with viſits

viſits ſoon after. The two firſt having ſent for Port, after we were gone to reſt, and inquired of him what articles we ſeemed to be moſt in want of on board the ſhips; we found them prepared to inſiſt on our ſharing with the garriſon under their command, in what little ſtock of proviſions they had remaining. At the ſame time they lamented, that we had arrived at a ſeaſon of the year, when there was always the greateſt ſcarcity of every thing amongſt them; the ſloops not being yet arrived with their uſual ſupply from Okotſk.

We agreed to accept the liberality of theſe hoſpitable ſtrangers with the beſt grace we could; but on condition, that we might be made acquainted with the price of the articles we were to be ſupplied with; and that Capt. Clerke ſhould give bills to the amount, upon the victualling office in London. This the major poſitively refuſed; and whenever it was afterwards urged, ſtopped us ſhort, by telling us, he was certain, that he could not oblige his miſtreſs more, than in giving every aſſiſtance in his power to her good friends and allies the Engliſh; and that it would be a particular ſatisfaction to her, to hear, that in ſo remote a part of the world, her dominions had afforded any relief to ſhips engaged in ſuch ſervices as ours; that he could not therefore act ſo contrary to the character of his empreſs, as to accept of any bills; but that, to accommodate the matter, he would take a bare atteſtation of the particulars, with which we might be furniſhed; and that this he ſhould tranſmit to his court, as a certificate of having performed his duty. I ſhall leave (he continued) to the two courts, all farther acknowledgments; but cannot conſent to accept any thing of the kind alluded to.

When the matter was adjuſted, he began to inquire about our private wants; ſaying, he ſhould conſider himſelf as ill uſed, if we had any dealings with the merchants, or applied to any other perſon except himſelf.

In

In return for ſuch ſingular generoſity, we had little to beſtow but our admiration and our thanks. Fortunately, however, Captain Clerke had ſent by me a ſet of prints and maps, belonging to the laſt voyage of Captain Cook, which he deſired me to preſent in his name to the commander; who being an enthuſiaſt in every thing relating to diſcoveries made in the preſent voyage; and as I judged, that a perſon in his ſituation, and of his turn of mind, would be exceedingly gratified by a communication of this ſort, though, out of delicacy he had forborn to aſk more than a few general queſtions on the ſubject, I made no ſcruple to repoſe in him a confidence of which his whole conduct ſhewed him to be deſerving.

I had the pleaſure to find, that he felt this compliment as I hoped he would, and was much ſtruck at ſeeing, in one view, the whole of that coaſt, as well on the ſide of Aſia as on that of America, of which his countrymen had been ſo many years employed in acquiring a partial and imperfect knowledge.

Excepting this mark of confidence, and the ſet of prints I have already mentioned, we had brought nothing with us that was in the leaſt worth his acceptance; for it ſcarce deſerves noticing, that I prevailed on his ſon, a young boy, to accept of a ſilver watch I happened to have about me; and I made his little daughter very happy with two pair of ear-rings, of French paſte. Beſides theſe trifles, I left Captain Schmaleff the thermometer I had uſed on my journey; and he promiſed me to keep an exact regiſter of the temperature of the air for one year, and to tranſmit it to Mr. Muller, with whom he had the pleaſure of being acquainted.

Bolcheretſk is ſituated in a low ſwampy plain, that extends to the ſea of Okotſk, being about 40 miles long, and of a conſiderable breadth. It lies on the N. ſide of the Bolchoi-reka (or great river,) between the

the mouth of the Gottſofka and the Biſtraia, which here empties themſelves into this river; and the peninſula, on which it ſtands, has been ſeparated from the Continent by a large canal, the work of the preſent commander; which has not only added to its ſtrength as a fortreſs, but has made it much leſs liable than it was before to inundations. Below the town, the river is from ſix to eight feet deep, and about a quarter of a mile broad. It empties itſelf into the ſea of Okotſk, at the diſtance of twenty-two miles; where, according to Kraſheninicoff, it is capable of admitting veſſels of a conſiderable ſize. There is no corn of any ſpecies cultivated in this part of the country; and Major Behm informed me, that his was the only garden that had yet been planted. This ground was for the moſt part covered with ſnow, that which was free from it, appeared full of ſmall hillocks, of a black turfy nature. I ſaw about twenty or thirty cows, and the major had ſix ſtout horſes. Theſe and their dogs are the only tame animals they poſſeſs; the neceſſity they are under, in the preſent ſtate of the country, of keeping great numbers of the latter, making it impoſſible to bring up any cattle that are not in ſize and ſtrength a match for them. For, during the ſummer ſeaſon, their dogs are entirely let looſe, and left to provide for themſelves; which makes them ſo exceedingly ravenous, that they will ſometimes even attack the bullocks.

The houſes in Bolcheretſk are all of one faſhion, being built of logs and thatched. That of the commander is much larger than the reſt, conſiſting of three rooms of a conſiderable ſize, neatly papered, and which might have been reckoned handſome, if the tale with which the windows were covered, had not given them a poor and diſagreeable appearance. The town conſiſts of ſeveral rows of low buildings, each conſiſting of five or ſix dwellings, connected together, with a long common paſſage running the length

length of them; on one ſide of which is the kitchen and ſtore-houſe; and on the other the dwelling apartments. Beſides theſe, are barracks for the Ruſſian ſoldiers and Coſſacks; a good-looking church; and a court-room; and at the end of the town a great number of Balagans, belonging to the Kamptſchadales. The inhabitants, taken altogether, amount to between five and ſix hundred.

The next morning we applied privately to the merchant Fedoſitſch, to purchaſe ſome tobacco for the ſailors, who had been upwards of a twelvemonth without this favourite commodity. However, this, like all our other tranſactions of the ſame kind, came immediately to the major's knowledge, and we were ſoon after ſurpriſed to find, in our houſe, four bags of tobacco, weighing upwards of 100lb. each, which he begged might be preſented in the name of himſelf, and the garriſon under his command, to our ſailors. At the ſame time, they had ſent us twenty loaves of fine ſugar, and as many pounds of tea, being articles they underſtood we were in great want of, which they begged to be indulged in preſenting to the officers. Along with theſe Madam Behm, had alſo ſent a preſent for Captain Clerke, conſiſting of freſh butter, honey, figs, rice, and ſome other little things of the ſame kind, attended with many wiſhes, that, in his infirm ſtate of health, they might be of ſervice to him. It was in vain we tried to oppoſe this profuſion of bounty, which I was anxious to reſtrain, being convinced, that they were giving away, not a ſhare, but almoſt the whole ſtock of the garriſon. The conſtant anſwer the major returned us, on thoſe occaſions, was, that we had ſuffered a great deal, and that we muſt needs be in diſtreſs. Indeed, the length of time we had been out, ſince we touched at any known port, appeared to them ſo very incredible, that it required the teſtimony of our maps and other corroborating circumſtances, to gain their belief. Among the latter was a very curious fact which Major Behm related to us this morning, and

which he ſaid, but for our arrival, he ſhould have been totally at a loſs to account for.

It is well known, that the Tſchutſki are the only people of the North of Aſia, who have maintained their independence, and reſiſted all the attempts that have been made by the Ruſſians to reduce them. The laſt expedition againſt them was undertaken in the year 1750, and terminated, after various ſucceſs, in the retreat of the Ruſſian forces, and the loſs of the commanding officer. Since that time, the Ruſſians had removed their frontier fortreſs from the Anadyr to the Ingiga, a river that empties itſelf into the Northern extremity of the ſea of Okotſk, and gives its name to a gulf, ſituated to the Weſt of that of Penſhinſk. From this fort, Major Behm had received diſpatches the day of our arrival at Bolcheretſk, containing intelligence, that a tribe, or party of the Tſchutſki, had arrived at that place with proviſions for friendſhip, and a voluntary offer of tribute; that on enquiring into the cauſe of this unexpected alteration in their ſentiments, they had informed his people, that towards the latter end of laſt ſummer they had been viſited by two very large Ruſſian boats; that they had been treated by the people, who were in them, with great kindneſs, and had entered into a league of friendſhip and amity with them; and that, relying on his friendly diſpoſition, they were now come to the Ruſſian fort, in order to ſettle a treaty, on ſuch terms as might be acceptible to both nations. This extraordinary hiſtory had occaſioned much ſpeculation, both at Ingiginſk and Bolcheretſk; and, had we not furniſhed them with a key to it, muſt have remained perfectly unintelligible. We felt no ſmall ſatisfaction in having, though accidentally, ſhewn the Ruſſians, in this inſtance, the only true way of collecting tribute, and extending their dominions; and in the hopes that the good underſtanding, which this event hath given riſe to, may reſcue a brave people from the future invaſions of ſuch powerful neighbours.

In

In return for the trifles which Mr. King had given to the children of Major Behm, he was preſented by his litte boy, with a moſt magnificent Kamptſchadale dreſs. It was of the kind worn by the principal Toions of the country, on occaſions of great ceremony, and which he underſtood afterwards from Fedoſitſch, could not have been purchaſed for 120 roubles. At the ſame time, he had a preſent from his daughter of a handſome ſable muff.

The next day we dined with the commander, who, in order to let us ſee as much of the manners of the inhabitants, as our time would permit, invited the whole of the better ſort of people in the village to his houſe this evening. All the women appeared very ſplendidly dreſſed, after the Kamptſchadale faſhion. The wives of Captain Schmaleff and the other officers of the garriſon, were prettily dreſſed, half in the Siberian, and half in the European mode, and Madame Behm, in order to make the ſtronger contraſt, had unpacked part of her bage, and put on a rich European dreſs. I was much ſtruck with the richneſs and variety of the ſilks which the women wore, and the ſingularity of their habits. The whole was like ſome enchanted ſcene in the midſt of the wildeſt of dreary country in the world. Our entertainment conſiſted of ſinging and dancing.

Early in the morning, every thing being ready for our departure, we were invited to call on Madame Behm, in our way to the boats, and take our leave of her. Impreſſed, as our minds were, with ſentiments of the warmeſt gratitude, by the attentive, benevolent, and generous treatment we had met with at Bolcheretſk, they were greatly heightened, by the affecting ſcene which preſented itſelf to us, on leaving our lodgings. All the ſoldiers and Coſſacks, belonging to the garriſon, were drawn up on one hand, and the male inhabitants of the town, dreſſed out in their beſt clothes, on the other; and, as ſoon as we came out of the houſe, the whole body of the people joined in a melancholy ſong, which, the Major told us, it was uſual, in that country,

to ſing on taking leave of their friends. In this manner we marched down to the commander's houſe, preceded by the drums and muſic of the garriſon, where we were received by Madam Behm, attended by the ladies, who where dreſſed in long ſilk cloaks, lined with very valuable furs of different colours, which made a moſt magnificent appearance.

After partaking of ſome refreſhment, that was prepared for us, we went down to the water ſide, accompanied by the ladies, who now joined in the ſong with the reſt of the inhabitants; and as ſoon as we had taken leave of Madam Behm, and aſſured her of the grateful ſenſe we ſhould ever retain of the hoſpitality of Bolcheretſk, we found ourſelves too much affected not to haſten into the boats with all the expedition we could. When we put off, the whole company gave us three cheers, which we returned from the boat; and as we were doubling a point, where for the laſt time we ſaw our friendly entertainers, they took their farewel in another cheer.

On the return of the party to Petropaulowſki, they were accompanied by Major Behm, who had reſigned the government of Kamptſchatka to his ſecond in command, and was to proceed thence to Okotſk, in his way to Peterſburgh. They arrived at Petropaulowſki on the 23d; and Capt. Clerke, and his men, did not fail to behave with all the reſpect to the major, which his noble conduct had merited. The various curioſities that had been collected in the courſe of the voyage were ſhewn to him, and a complete aſſortment of every article preſented to him by Capt. Clerke.

On this occaſion, I muſt not paſs over an inſtance of great generoſity and gratitude in the ſailors of both ſhips; who, when they were told of the handſome preſent of tobacco that was made them by the major, deſired, entirely of their own accord, that their grog might be ſtopped, and their allowance of ſpirits preſented, on their part, to the garriſon of Bolcheretſk, as they ſaid they had reaſon to conclude that brandy was ſcarce in the country, and would be very acceptable to them,

ſince the ſoldiers on ſhore had offered four roubles a bottle for it. We, who knew how much the ſailors always felt, whenever their allowance of grog was ſtopped, which was generally done in warm weather, that they might have it in greater proportion in cold, and that this offer would deprive them of it during the inclement ſeaſon we had to expect in our next expedition to the North, could not but admire ſo extraordinary a ſacrifice; and that they might not ſuffer by it, Capt. Clerke, and the reſt of the officers, ſubſtituted in the room of the very ſmall quantity the major could be prevailed on to accept, the ſame quantity of rum. This, with a dozen or two of Cape wine, for Madam Behm, and ſuch other little preſents as were in our power to beſtow, were accepted in the moſt obliging manner. The next morning the tobacco was divided between the crews of the two ſhips, three pounds being allotted to every man that chewed or ſmoked tobacco, and only one pound to thoſe that did not.

Major Behm now offered to charge himſelf with any diſpatches we might truſt to his care. This was an opportunity not to be neglected; and accordingly Captain Clerke acquainted him, that he would take the liberty of ſending by him ſome papers, relating to our voyage, to be delivered to our ambaſſador at the Ruſſian court. Our firſt intentions were to ſend only a ſmall journal of our proceedings; but afterwards, Captain Clerke being perſuaded that the whole account of our diſcoveries might ſafely be truſted to a perſon who had given ſuch ſtriking proofs both of his public and private virtues; and conſidering that we had a hazardous part of the voyage ſtill to undertake, determined to ſend, by him, the whole of the journal of our late Commander, with that part of his own, which completed the period from Capt. Cook's death, till our arrival at Kamptſchatka; together with the chart of all our diſcoveries. Mr. Bayley and myſelf thought it alſo proper to ſend a general account of our proceedings to the board of longitude; by which precautions, if any misfortune had afterward befallen us, the Admiralty would have been in poſſeſſion of

of a complete hiſtory of the principal facts of our voyage. It was alſo determined, that a ſmall pacquet ſhould be ſent by an expreſs from Okotſk, which, the major ſaid, if he was fortunate enough in his paſſage to that port, would reach Peterſburg by Dec. and that he himſelf ſhould be there in Feb. or March.

During the three following days, the major was entertained alternately in the two ſhips, in the beſt manner we were able. On the 25th he took his leave, and was ſaluted with 13 guns; and the ſailors, at their own deſire, gave him three cheers. The next morning Mr. Webber and myſelf, attended him a few miles up the Awatſka river, where we met the Ruſſian prieſt, his wife and children, who were waiting to take the laſt farewel of their commander.

It was hard to ſay, whether the good prieſt and his family, or ourſelves, were moſt affected on taking our leave of major Behm. Short as our acquaintance had been, his noble and diſintereſted conduct had inſpired us with the higheſt eſteem for him; and we could not part with a perſon to whom we were under ſuch obligations, and whom we had little proſpect of ever ſeeing again, without feeling the moſt tender concern. The intrinſic value of the private preſents we received from him, excluſive of the ſtores which might be carried to a public account, muſt have amounted, according to the current price of articles in that country, to upwards of 200l. But this generoſity, extraordinary as it may appear in itſelf, was exceeded by the delicacy with which all his favours were conferred, and the artful manner in which he endeavoured to prevent our feeling the weight of obligations, which he knew we had no means of requiting. If we go a ſtep further, and conſider him as ſupporting a public character, and maintaining the honour of a great Sovereign, we ſhall find a ſtill higher ſubject of admiration, in the juſt and enlarged ſentiments by which he was actuated. The ſervice in which you are employed, he would often ſay, is for the general advantage of mankind, and therefore gives you a right, not merely to the offices of humanity, but to the privileges

of

of citizen, in whatever country you may be thrown. I am ſure I am acting agreeably to the wiſhes of my miſtreſs, in affording you all the relief in my power; and I cannot forget either her character, or my own honour, ſo much, as to barter for the performance of a duty.

At other times, he would tell us, that he was particularly deſirous of ſetting a good example to the Kamptſchadales, who, he ſaid, were but juſt emerging from a ſtate of barbariſm; that they looked up to the Ruſſians as their pattern in every thing; and that he had hopes they might, in future, look upon it as a duty incumbent upon them to aſſiſt ſtrangers to the utmoſt of their power, and believe, that ſuch was the univerſal practice of civilized nations. To all this muſt be added, that, after having relieved, to the utmoſt of his abilities, all our preſent diſtreſſes, he ſhewed himſelf no leſs mindful of our future wants; and as he ſuppoſed it more than probable we ſhould not diſcover the paſſage we were in ſearch of, and therefore ſhould return to Kamptſchatka in the fall of the year; he made Captain Clerke give him a liſt of what cordage and flour we ſhould want, and promiſed they ſhould be ſent from Okotſk, and wait our arrival. For the ſame purpoſe, he gave Capt. Clerke a paper, enjoining all the ſubjects of the Empreſs, whom we might happen to meet, to give us every aſſiſtance in their power.

On our firſt arrival, we found the Ruſſian hoſpital, which is near the town of St. Peter and St. Paul, in a condition truly deplorable. All the ſoldiers were, more or leſs affected by the ſcurvy, and a great many in the laſt ſtage of that diſorder. The reſt of the Ruſſian inhabitants were alſo in the ſame condition; and we particularly remarked, that our friend the ſerjeant, by making too free with the ſpirits we gave him, had brought on himſelf, in the courſe of a few days, ſome of the moſt alarming ſymptoms of that malady. In this lamentable ſtate, Captain Clerke put them all under the care of the ſurgeons, and ordered a ſupply of ſour krout, and malt for wort, to be furniſhed for their

their uſe. It was aſtoniſhing to obſerve the alteration in the figures of almoſt every perſon we met on our return from Bolcheretſk; and I was informed, by our ſurgeons, that they attributed their ſpeedy recovery principally to the effects of the ſweet wort.

After ſeveral attempts to clear the Bay of Awatſka, Captain Clerke finally left it on the 16th of June, ſteering to the N. N. E. We cannot follow him in all the tackings, and nautical circumſtances that occurred, in his various attempts to go to the North, between the two continents: they were obſtructed by impenetrable ice. During their voyage they had ſometimes an opportunity to hoiſt out their boats and ſend them in purſuit of the ſea-horſes, which were in great numbers on the pieces of ice that ſurrounded us. The people were more ſucceſsful than they had been before, returning with three large ones, and a young one; beſides killing and wounding ſeveral others. The gentlemen who went on this party were witneſſes of ſeveral remarkable inſtances of parental affection in thoſe animals. On the approach of the boats towards the ice, they all took their cubs under their fins, and endeavoured to eſcape with them into the ſea. Several, whoſe young were killed or wounded, and left floating on the ſurface, roſe again, and carried them down, ſometimes as our people were going to take them up into the boats; and might be traced bearing them to a great diſtance through the water, which was coloured with their blood: they were afterwards obſerved bringing them, at times, above the ſurface, as if for air, and again diving under it with a dreadful bellowing. The female, in particular, whoſe young had been deſtroyed, and taken into the boat, became ſo enraged, that ſhe attacked the cutter, and ſtruck her two tuſks through the bottom of it.

Another remarkable circumſtance that was obſerved during this attempt to go to the North, was the arctic gull's diſguſting mode of feeding, which has procured it the name of the paraſite, and which, if the reader is not already acquainted with it, will find in the following

ing

ing manner: This bird, which is ſomewhat larger than the common gull, purſues the latter kind whenever it meets them; the gull, after flying for ſome time, with loud ſcreams, and evident marks of great terror, drops its dung, which its purſuer immediately darts at, and catches before it falls into the ſea.

Captain Clerke was unable to proceed farther North than latitude 70 deg. 33 min. which was five leagues ſhort of the point to which they had advanced laſt ſeaſon. At length, on the 21ſt of July it was perceived, that one connected, ſolid piece of ice, rendered fruitleſs every effort to a nearer approach to the American continent, and joining, as it was ſuppoſed, to it, they took a laſt farewel to the North Eaſt paſſage to Old England; determined, however, to explore the coaſt of Aſia, in order to ſucceed, if poſſible, to the North Weſt.

But in this attempt they were equally unſucceſsful; and, on the 22d, the wind kept driving the looſe pieces of ice upon them in ſuch quantities, that they were in manifeſt danger of being blocked up by them.

In the morning of the 23d, the clear water, in which we continued to ſtand to and fro, did not exceed a mile and a half, and was every inſtant leſſening. At length, after uſing our utmoſt endeavours to clear the looſe ice, we were driven to the neceſſity of forcing a paſſage to the Southward, which, at half paſt ſeven, we accompliſhed, but not without ſubjecting the ſhip to ſome very ſevere ſhocks. The Diſcovery was leſs ſucceſsful. For, at eleven, when they had nigh got clear out, ſhe became ſo entangled by ſeveral large pieces, that her way was ſtopped, and immediately dropping bodily to leeward, ſhe fell, broadſide foremoſt, on the edge of a conſiderable body of ice; and having, at the ſame time, an open ſea to windward, the ſurf cauſed her to ſtrike violently upon it. This maſs at length either ſo far broke, or moved, as to ſet them at liberty to make another trial to eſcape; but, unfortunately, before the ſhip gathered way enough to be under command, ſhe again fell to leeward on another

fragment; and the ſwell making it unſafe to lie to windward, and finding no chance of getting clear, they puſhed into a ſmall opening, furled their ſails, and made faſt with ice-hooks.

In this dangerous ſituation we ſaw them at noon, about three miles from us, bearing N. W. a freſh gale from the S. E. driving more ice to the N. W. and increaſing the body that lay between us. Our lat. by account, was 69 deg. 8 min. the long. 187 deg. and the depth of water 28 fathoms. To add to the gloomy apprehenſions which began to force themſelves on us, at half paſt four in the afternoon, the weather becoming thick and hazy, we loſt ſight of the Diſcovery; but that we might be in a ſituation to afford her every aſſiſtance in our power, we kept ſtanding in cloſe by the edge of the ice.

At ſix, the wind happily coming round to the North, gave us ſome hopes, that the ice might drift away and releaſe her; and in that caſe, it was uncertain in what condition ſhe might come out, we kept firing a gun every half hour, in order to prevent a ſeparation. Our apprehenſions for her ſafety did not ceaſe till nine, when we heard her guns in anſwer to ours; and ſoon after, being hailed by her, were informed, that upon change of the wind the ice began to ſeparate; and that, ſetting all their ſails, they forced a paſſage through it. We learned farther, that whilſt they were encompaſſed by it, they found the ſhip drift, with the main body to the N. E. at the rate of half a mile an hour. We were ſorry to find, that the Diſcovery had rubbed off a great deal of her ſheathing from the bows, and was become very leaky, from the ſtrokes ſhe had received when ſhe fell upon the edge of the ice.

On the 27th, the damages which the Diſcovery had received were found to be of ſuch a nature as would require three weeks to repair, and render it neceſſary to retire into ſome port, for that purpoſe. Thus, finding a farther advance to the Northward, as well as a nearer approach to either continent, obſtructed by a

ſea

ſea blocked up with ice, we judged it both injurious to the ſervice, by endangering the ſafety of the ſhips, as well as fruitleſs, with reſpect to the deſign of our voyage, to make any further attempts towards a paſſage.

This therefore, added to the repreſentation of Captain Gore, determined Captain Clerke not to loſe more time in what he concluded to be an unattainable object, but to ſail for Awatſka Bay, to repair our damages there; and before the winter ſhould ſet in, and render all other efforts towards diſcovery impracticable at this time, to explore the coaſt of Japan.

I will not endeavour to conceal the joy that brightened the countenance of every individual, as ſoon as Captain Clerke's reſolutions were made known. We were all heartily ſick of a navigation full of danger, and in which the utmoſt perſeverance had not been repaid with the ſmalleſt ſucceſs. We therefore turned our faces towards home, after an abſence of three years, with a delight and ſatisfaction, which, notwithſtanding the tedious voyage we had ſtill to make, and the immenſe diſtance we had to run, were as freely entertained, and perhaps as fully enjoyed, as if we had been already in ſight of the Land's-end.

CHAP. X.

Return to Kamptſcatka—Death of Captain Clerke—An account of his ſervices—Anchor in the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul—Funeral of Captain Clerke—Departure from Awatſka Bay—Captain King ſent to Canton—Arrival at the Cape of Good Hope—At the Orkneys; and at the Nore—Concluding reflections.

HAVING taken a final leave of the N. E. coaſt of Aſia, they arrived, on the 21ſt of Auguſt, 1779, within ſight of the coaſt of Kamptſchatka. On the 22d, at nine in the morning, departed this life Captain Charles Clerke, in the 38th year of his age. He died of a conſumption, which had evidently com-

menced before he left England, and of which he had lingered during the whole voyage. His very gradual decay had long made him a melancholy object to his friends; yet the equanimity with which he bore it, the conſtant flow of good ſpirits, which continued to the laſt hour, and a cheerful reſignation to his fate, afforded them ſome conſolation. It was impoſſible not to feel a more than common degree of compaſſion for a perſon, whoſe life had been a continued ſcene of thoſe difficulties and hardſhips, to which a ſeaman's occupation is ſubject, and under which he at laſt ſunk. He was brought up to the navy from his earlieſt youth, and had been in ſeveral actions during the war begun in 1756, particularly in that between the Bellona and Courageux, where being ſtationed in the mizen-top, he was carried overboard with the maſt, but was taken up without having received any hurt. He was midſhipman in the Dolphin, commanded by Commodore Byron, on her firſt voyage round the world, and afterwards ſerved on the American ſtation.

In 1768, he made his ſecond voyage round the world, in the Endeavour, as maſter's mate, and by the promotion which took place during the expedition, he returned a lieutenant. His third voyage round the world was in the Reſolution, of which he was appointed the ſecond lieutenant; and ſoon after his return, in 1775, he was promoted to the rank of maſter and commander. When the preſent expedition was ordered to be fitted out, he was appointed to the Diſcovery, to accompany Captain Cook; and by the death of the latter, ſucceeded, as has been already mentioned, to the chief command.

It would be doing his memory extreme injuſtice not to ſay, that during the ſhort time the expedition was under his direction, he was moſt zealous and anxious for its ſucceſs. His health, about the time the principal command devolved upon him, began to decline very rapidly, and was every way unequal to encounter the rigours of a high Northern climate. But the vigour and activity of his mind had, in no ſhape, ſuffered

ſuffered by his body: and though he knew, that by delaying his return to a warmer climate, he was giving up the only chance that remained for his recovery, yet, careful and jealous to the laſt degree, that a regard to his own ſituation ſhould never bias his judgment to the prejudice of the ſervice, he perſevered in the ſearch of a paſſage, till it was the opinion of every officer in both ſhips, that it was impracticable, and that any further attempts would not only be fruitleſs, but dangerous.

On the 24th, the Reſolution entered the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, with the enſign half ſtaff up, on account of their carrying the body of their late Captain. The Diſcovery followed ſoon after.

We had no ſooner anchored, than our old friend, the ſerjeant, who was ſtill the Commander of the place, came on board with a preſent of berries, intended for our poor deceaſed captain. He was extremely affected when we told him of his death, and ſhewed him the coffin that contained his body. And as it was Captain Clerke's particular requeſt to be buried on ſhore, and, if poſſible, in the church of Paratounca, we took the preſent opportunity of explaining this matter to the ſerjeant, and conſulting with him about the proper ſteps to be taken on the occaſion. In the courſe of our converſation, which, for want of an interpreter, was carried on but imperfectly, we learned that Profeſſor de l'Iſle, and ſeveral Ruſſian gentlemen, who died here, had been buried in the ground near the barracks, at the Oſtrog of St. Peter and St. Paul's; and that this place would be preferable to Paratounca, as the church was to be removed thither the next year. It was therefore determined, that we ſhould wait for the arrival of the Prieſt of Paratounca, whom the ſerjeant adviſed us to ſend for, as the only perſon that could ſatisfy our inquiries on this ſubject.

In the morning of the 25th, Captain Gore made out the new commiſſions, in conſequence of Captain Clerke's death; appointing himſelf to the command of the Reſolution, and me to the command of the Diſcovery.

covery. The ſame day we were viſited by the Pope Romanoff Vereſhagen, the worthy Prieſt of Paratounca. He expreſſed his ſorrow at the death of Captain Clerke, in a manner that did honour to his feelings, and confirmed the account given by the ſerjeant reſpecting the intended removal of the church to the harbour; adding, that the timber was actually preparing, but leaving the choice of either place entirely to Captain Gore.

In the afternoon of the 29th, the laſt offices were paid to Captain Clerke. The officers and men of both ſhips walked in proceſſion to the grave, whilſt the ſhips fired minute-guns; and the ſervice being ended, the marines fired three vollies. He was interred under a tree, which ſtands on a riſing ground, in the valley to the North ſide of the harbour, where the hoſpital and ſtore-houſes are ſituated; Captain Gore having judged this ſituation moſt agreeable to the laſt wiſhes of the deceaſed, for the reaſons above-mentioned; and the Prieſt of Paratounca having pointed out a ſpot for his grave, which, he ſaid, would be as near as he could gueſs, in the center of the new church. This reverend Paſtor walked in the proceſſion, along with the gentleman who read the ſervice; and all the Ruſſians in the garriſon were aſſembled, and attended with great reſpect and ſolemnity.

On the 30th of September, Captain Gore went to Paratounca, to put up in the church there an eſcutcheon, prepared by Mr. Webber, with an inſcription upon it, ſetting forth Captain Clerke's age and rank, and the object of the expedition in which he was engaged at the time of his deceaſe. A board, with an inſcription upon it to the ſame effect, was alſo affixed to the tree under which he was buried.

It is here proper to obſerve, that from the 24th of Auguſt when the ſhips firſt entered the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, to the 19th of October, when they finally cleared Awatſka Bay, was employed in the neceſſary repairs of both ſhips, in the procuring of a proper ſupply of proviſions and naval ſtores, and occaſionally

ſionally in various amuſements on ſhore, and the reciprocal exchange of civilities between the Captains of the two ſhips, and the new commander of Bolcheretſk. Before we proceed on the voyage, it muſt be farther noticed that the inſtructions from the Board of Admiralty having left a diſcretionary power with the commanding officer of the expedition, in caſe of failure in ſearch of a paſſage from the Pacific into the Atlantic Ocean, to return to England by whatever route he ſhould think beſt for the farther improvement of Geography; Captain Gore demanded of the principal officers their ſentiments, in writing, reſpecting the manner in which theſe orders might moſt effectually be obeyed. The reſult of their opinions, which he had the ſatisfaction to find unanimous, and entirely coinciding with his own, was, that the condition of the ſhips, as well as of the ſails and cordage, made it unſafe to attempt, at ſo advanced a ſeaſon of the year, to navigate the ſea between Japan and Aſia; which would otherwiſe have afforded the largeſt field for diſcovery; that it was therefore adviſeable to keep to the Eaſtward of that iſland, and in the way thither to run along the Kuriles, and examine more particularly the iſlands that lie neareſt the northern coaſt of Japan, which are repreſented as of a conſiderable ſize, and independent of the Ruſſian and Japaneſe governments. If ſo fortunate as to find in theſe any ſafe and commodious harbours, it was conceived they might be of importance, either as places of ſhelter for any future navigators, who may be employed in exploring the ſeas, or as the means of opening a commercial intercourſe among the neighbouring dominions of the two empires. The next object was to ſurvey the coaſt of the Japaneſe iſlands, and afterwards to make the coaſt of China as far to the Northward as poſſible, and to run along it to Macao.

This plan being adopted, Captain King received orders from Captain Gore, in caſe of ſeparation, to proceed to Macao; and at ſix o'clock in the evening of the 9th of October, as before obſerved, having cleared

the

the entrance of Awatſka Bay, they ſteered to the South, along the coaſt of Kamptſchatka.

On the 12th they came in ſight of Cape Lopatka, the Southernmoſt extremity Kamptſchatka, lying in lat. 51 deg. long. 156 deg. 45 min. At the ſame time, they ſaw the firſt of the Kurile Iſlands, called Shoomaſka, and, on the 13th, the ſecond, named Paramouſir, which is the largeſt of the Kuriles under the dominions of the Ruſſians. On the 14th and 15th, the wind blowing ſteadily and freſh from the Weſtward, they were obliged to ſtand to the Southward, and conſequently prevented from ſeeing any more of the Kurile Iſlands.

This chain of iſlands, running in a South Weſt direction, from the ſouthern promontory of Kamptſchatſka to Japan, extending from lat. 51 deg. to 45 min. is called the Kuriles, from the inhabitants of the neighbourhood of Lopatka, who gave their own name to theſe iſlands, on firſt becoming acquainted with them. They are, according to Spanberg, twenty-two in number, without reckoning the very ſmall ones. The Northernmoſt, called Shoomaſka, is not more than three leagues from the promontory of Lopatka, and its inhabitants are a mixture of natives and Kamptſchadales. The next to the South, called Paramouſir, is inhabited by the true natives; their anceſtors, according to a tradition among them, having come from an iſland a little farther to the South, called Onecutan.

Thoſe two iſlands were firſt viſited by the Ruſſians in 1713, and at the ſame time brought under their dominion. The others in order, are at preſent made tributary down to Ooſheſheer, incluſive, as Mr. King was informed by the worthy paſtor of Paratounca, who is their miſſionary, and viſits them once in three years, and ſpeaks of the iſlanders in terms of the higheſt commendation, repreſenting them as a friendly, hoſpitable, generous, humane race of people, and excelling their Kamptſchadale neighbours, not leſs in the formation of their bodies, than in docility and quickneſs of underſtanding. Though Ooſheſheer is the ſouthernmoſt

iſland

iſland that the Ruſſians have yet brought under their dominions, yet they trade to Ooroop, which is the eighteenth; and where there is a good harbour for ſhips of burthen. Beyond this, to the South, lies Nadeegſda, which was repreſented by the Ruſſians, as inhabited by a race of men remarkably hairy, and who, like thoſe of Ooroop, live in a ſtate of entire independence.

In the ſame direction, but inclining ſomewhat more to the Weſtward, lie a group of iſlands which the Japaneſe call Jeſo, a name which they alſo give to the whole chain of iſlands between Kamptſchatka and Japan. The ſouthernmoſt, called Matmai, hath been long ſubject to the Japaneſe, and is formed and garriſoned on the ſide towards the continent. The two iſlands to the N. E. of Matmai, Kunachir, and Zellany, and likewiſe the three ſtill farther to the N. E. called the Three Siſters, are perfectly independent.

From this account of the Kurile Iſlands, it was a great mortification to our navigators, to find themſelves obliged, on the 24th, to give up all farther thoughts of diſcovery to the North of Japan; the wind for ſome days paſt having continued quite unfavourable to their views. Captain King, however, has enriched his account of this part of their tranſactions, with ſeveral obſervations on the errors of former geographers.

In conſequence of this diſappointment, Captain Gore ſhaped his courſe Weſt South Weſt for the North part of Japan. At day-break, on the 26th, they had the pleaſure of ſeeing high land to the Weſtward, which proved to be that iſland; along the Eaſt coaſt of which they run, (experiencing ſome unexpected effects of the currents) till the 2d of November, when the threatening appearances of a ſudden and ſevere gale made it prudent to leave the ſhore, and ſtand off to the Eaſtward, to prevent being entangled with the land. Nor were we wrong in our prognoſtications; for it ſoon afterwards began, and continued till the next day to blow a heavy gale, accompanied with hazy and rainy weather.

In the morning of the third, we found ourſelves, by our reckoning, upwards of fifty leagues from the land, which circumſtance, together with the very extraordinary effect of currents before mentioned, the late ſeaſon of the year, the unſettled ſtate of the weather, and the little likelihood of any change for the better, made Captain Gore reſolve to leave Japan altogether, and proſecute our voyage to China; hoping, that as the track he meant to purſue had never yet been explored, he ſhould be able to make amends by ſome new diſcovery, for the diſappointments we had met with on this coaſt.

If the reader ſhould be of opinion that we quitted this object too haſtily, in addition to the facts already ſtated, it ought to be remarked, that Kæmpfer deſcribes the coaſt of Japan as the moſt dangerous in the whole world; and that it would have been equally dangerous, in caſe of diſtreſs, to run into any of their harbours; where we know, from the beſt authorities, that the averſion of the inhabitants to any intercourſe with ſtrangers, has led them to commit the moſt atrocious barbarities; that our ſhips were in a leaky condition; that our ſails were worn out, and unable to withſtand a gale of wind; and that the rigging was ſo rotten as to require conſtant and perpetual repairs.

On the 14th, they diſcovered an iſland, about five miles long, lying in lat. 24 deg. 48 min. long. 141 deg. 12 min. On the South point of this is a high barren hill, which evidently preſented a volcanic crater. The earth, rock, or ſand (for it was not eaſy to diſtinguiſh of which its ſurface is compoſed) exhibited various colours; and a conſiderable part was conjectured to be ſulphur, both from its appearance to the eye, and the ſtrong ſulphureous ſmell, perceived as they approached the point; and ſome thought they ſaw ſteams riſing from the top of the hill. From theſe circumſtances Captain Gore gave it the name of Sulphur Iſland. Two other iſlands were likewiſe diſcovered; the one to the N. and the other to the S. of Sulphur Iſland.

Captain

Captain Gore now ſteered his courſe for the Baſhée Iſlands. Theſe they miſſed, and on the 28th, paſſed the iſland of Prata. On the 30th, they ran along the Lema Iſles, of which they had the ſame view as repreſented in a plate of Lord Anſon's voyage. They alſo paſſed the rock marked R, in Lord Anſon's plate; but inſtead of hauling up to the Northward of the Grand Ladrone Iſland, as was done by the Centurion, they proceeded to leeward, a courſe againſt which Captain King has cautioned the mariners.

Two Chineſe pilots were now taken on board the Reſolution; and they finally anchored in the Typa, near the road of Macao, on the 2d of December. Here we received the firſt intelligence of the war. Hence on the 11th, Captain King took paſſage, not without many previous difficulties, to Canton, in order to expedite a ſupply of naval ſtores for the ſhips. Although he arrived here on the 18th, various delays prevented the accompliſhment of this buſineſs till the 26th.

On the 27th he left Canton, and took a paſſage down the river Tygris to Macao, where he arrived the next day. Beſides a handſome preſent of tea, which Captain King received from the Engliſh ſupercargoes at Canton, he mentions as a valuable acquiſition, a large collection, of our periodical publications, which both ſerved to amuſe their impatience during their tedious voyage home, and enabled them to return no total ſtrangers to what had been tranſacting in their native country.

While the ſhips lay in the Typa, Captain King was ſhewn, in a garden belonging to an Engliſh gentleman at Macao, the rock, under which, as the tradition there goes, the poet Camoens uſed to ſit and compoſe his Luſiad. It is a lofty arch of one ſolid ſtone, and forms the entrance of a grotto dug out of the riſing ground behind it. The rock is overſhadowed by large ſpreading trees, and commands

mands an extenſive and magnificent view of the ſea, and the interſperſed iſlands.

Captain Gore, previous to his departure from Macao, put both the ſhips in a very reſpectable ſtate of defence, but having received undoubted intelligence, that orders had been iſſued by the French court, and alſo by the American Congreſs to all their commanders, not to moleſt the ſhips that ſailed under Captain Cook, he thought himſelf bound, in return, to obſerve an exact neutrality during the remainder of the voyage.

On the 13th of January, 1780, Captain Gore left the Typa, and on the 16th, paſſed the iſland of Sapata. On the 20th, they anchored in an harbour on the S. W. end of the iſland Condore, in order to procure a ſupply of wood and proviſions. Here it was found adviſeable that a party ſhould go in the boat and land. While ſome of the men remained with Captain Gore, in the boat, Captain King and an armed party proceeded through the woods till they came near two huts. On approaching them, they were deſcried by two men, who immediately ran away, notwithſtanding all the peaceable and ſupplicating geſtures that could be deviſed.

On reaching the huts, I ordered the party to ſtay without, leſt the ſight of ſo many armed men ſhould terrify the inhabitants, whilſt I entered, and reconnoitred alone. I found in one of the huts an elderly man, who was in a great fright, and preparing to make off with the moſt valuable of his effects that he could carry. However, I was fortunate enough, in a very little time, ſo entirely to diſpel his fears, that he came out, and called to the two men who were running away to return. The old man and I ſoon came to a perfect underſtanding. A few ſigns, particularly that moſt ſignificant of holding out a handful of dollars, and then pointing to a herd of buffaloes, and the fowls that were running about the huts in great numbers, left him without any doubts as to the real objects of my viſit. He pointed towards a

place

place where the town ſtood, and made me comprehend, that by going thither, all my wants would be ſupplied. By this time the young men, who had fled, were returned, and the old man ordered one of them to conduct me to the town, as ſoon as an obſtacle ſhould be removed, of which we were not aware. On our firſt coming out of the wood, a herd of buffaloes, to the number of twenty at leaſt, came running towards us, toſſing up their heads, ſnuffing the air, and roaring in a hideous manner. They had followed us to the huts, and ſtood drawn up in a body, at a little diſtance; and the old man made us underſtand, that it would be exceeding dangerous for us to move, till they were driven into the woods; but ſo enraged were the animals grown at the ſight of us, that this was not effected without a great deal of time and difficulty. The men, not being able to accompliſh it, we were ſurpriſed to ſee them call to their aſſiſtance a few little boys, who ſoon drove them out of ſight.

Afterward we had occaſion to obſerve, that in driving theſe animals, and ſecuring them, which is done by putting a rope through a hole which is made in their noſtrils, little boys were always employed, who could ſtroke and handle them with impunity, at times when the men durſt not approach them.

Our viſit to the town ended in the purchaſe of a number of buffaloes. Early in the morning of the 23d, the launches of both ſhips were ſent to the town, to fetch the buffaloes we had purchaſed; but they were obliged to wait till it was high water, as they could at no other time get through the opening at the head of the harbour. On their arrival at the village, they found the ſurf breaking on the beach with ſuch force, that it was with the utmoſt difficulty each launch brought a buffaloe on board in the evening; and the officers, who were ſent on this ſervice, gave it as their opinion, that between the violence of the ſurf, and the fierceneſs of the buffa-

loes,

loes, it would be extremely imprudent to attempt bringing any more off in this way. We had purchaſed eight, and were now at a loſs in what manner to proceed to get them on board. We could kill no more than what was juſt neceſſary for the conſumption of one day, as in this climate meat will not keep till the next. At laſt it was concluded, that the remainder ſhould be driven through the wood, and over the hill down to the bay, where Captain Gore and I had landed the day before, which being ſheltered from the wind, was more free from ſurf. This plan was accordingly put in execution; but the untractable and prodigious ſtrength of the buffaloes, rendered it a tedious and difficult operation.

The method of conducting them was, by paſſing ropes through their noſtrils, and round their horns; but having been once enraged at the ſight of our men, they became ſo furious, that they ſometimes broke the trees to which we were often under the neceſſity of tying them; ſometimes they tore aſunder the cartilage of the noſtril, through which the ropes ran, and got looſe.

On theſe occaſions, all the exertions of our men to recover them would have been ineffectual, without the aſſiſtance of ſome young boys, whom theſe animals would permit to approach them, and by whoſe little managements their rage was ſoon appeaſed. And when at length they were got down to the beach, it was by their aid, in twiſting ropes round their legs, in the manner they were directed, that we were enabled to throw them down, and by that means to get them into the boats.

A circumſtance, reſpecting theſe animals, which I thought no leſs ſingular than this gentleneſs toward, and, as it ſhould ſeem, affection for little children, was, that they had not been twenty-four hours on board, before they became the tameſt of all creatures. I kept two of them, a male and female, for a conſiderable time, which became great favourites with the ſailors, and, thinking that a breed of animals of

ſuch

ſuch ſtrength and ſize, ſome of them weighing, when dreſſed, 700lb. would be a valuable acquiſition, I was inclined to have brought them with me to England; but my intention was fruſtrated by an incurable hurt that one of them received at ſea.

Captain Gore left Pulo Cundore on the 28th, and ſteered for Pulo Timoun, which he paſſed on the 31ſt, and the ſtraits of Sunda on the 8th of February. They afterwards touched for water at the iſland of Cracatoa, and on the 13th of April came to anchor at the Cape of Good Hope.

They remained at the Cape till the 9th of May, and on the 12th of June paſſed the equater for the fourth time during this voyage. On the 12th of Auguſt we made the Weſtern coaſt of Ireland, and after a fruitleſs attempt to get into Port Galway, were obliged, by ſtrong ſoutherly winds, to ſteer to the Northward. The next object was to put into Lough Swilly, but the wind continuing in the ſame quarter, we ſtood on to the Northward of Lewis Iſland; and on the 22d of Auguſt, both ſhips came to an anchor at Stromneſs. From hence Captain King was diſpatched, to acquaint the Admiralty with their arrival; and on the 4th of October the ſhips arrived ſafe at the Nore, after an abſence of four years, two months, and twenty-two days.

Captain King concludes his narration with the following intereſting reflections: On quitting the Diſcovery at Stromneſs, I had the ſatisfaction of leaving the whole crew in perfect health: and at the ſame time, the number of convaleſcents on board the Reſolution, did not exceed two or three, of whom only one was incapable of ſervice. In the courſe of our voyage, the Reſolution loſt but five men by ſickneſs, three of whom were in a precarious ſtate of health at our departure from England; the Diſcovery did not loſe a man. An unremitting attention to the regulations eſtabliſhed by Captain Cook, with which the world is already acquainted, may be juſtly conſidered as the principal cauſe, under the bleſſing

of divine providence, of this ſingular ſucceſs. But the baneful effects of ſalt proviſions might perhaps, in the end, have been felt, notwithſtanding theſe ſalutary precautions, if we had not aſſiſted them, by availing ourſelves of every ſubſtitute our ſituation at various times afforded. Theſe frequently conſiſting of articles, which our people had not been uſed to conſider as food for men, and being ſometimes exceedingly nauſeous; it required the joint aid of perſuaſion, authority, and example, to conquer their prejudices and diſguſts.

The preventives we principally relied on, were ſour krout and portable ſoup. As to the antiſcorbutic remedies, with which we were amply ſupplied, we had no opportunity of trying their effects, as there did not appear the ſlighteſt ſymptoms of the ſcurvy, in either ſhip, during the whole voyage. Our malt and hops had alſo been kept as a reſource, in caſe of actual ſickneſs, and on examination at the Cape of Good Hope, were found intirely ſpoiled. About the ſame time were opened ſome caſks of biſcuit, flour, malt, peaſe, oatmeal, and groats, which, by way of experiment, had been put up in ſmall caſks, lined with tin frail, and found all, except the peaſe, in a much better ſtate, than could have been expected in the uſual manner of package.

I cannot neglect this opportunity of recommending to the conſideration of government, the neceſſity of allowing a ſufficient quantity of Peruvian bark, to ſuch of his Majeſty's ſhips as may be expoſed to the influence of unwholeſome climates. It happened very fortunate in the Diſcovery, that only one of the men that had fevers in the ſtraits of Sunda, ſtood in need of this medicine, as he alone conſumed the whole quantity uſually carried out by ſurgeons in ſuch veſſels as ours. Had more been affected in the ſame manner, they would probably all have periſhed, from the want of the only remedy capable of affording them effectual relief.

Another

Another circumſtance attending this voyage, which if we conſider its duration, and the nature of the ſervice in which we were engaged, will appear ſcarcely leſs ſingular than the extraordinary healthineſs of the crews, was, that the two ſhips never loſt ſight of each other for a day together, except twice; which was owing, the firſt time, to an accident that happened to the Diſcovery off the coaſt of Owhyhee; and the ſecond, to the fogs we met with at the entrance of Awatſka Bay.

A ſtronger proof cannot be given of the ſkill and vigilance of our ſubaltern officers, to whom this ſhare of merit almoſt intirely belongs.

APPENDIX.

As many very important improvements have been made, both in the population and cultivation of the ſettlements at Port Jackſon and Norfolk Iſland, ſince Captain Cook diſcovered thoſe iſlands, we have, in this edition, annexed to the accounts of the formation, &c. of thoſe ſettlements, an authentic narrative of their progreſs, and very improved ſtate, according to the moſt recent information.

Commencement and Progreſs of the Operations for forming a Colony, interſperſed with incidental Occurrences.

IN the year 1786, government having formed a deſign of removing many diſagreeable circumſtances, to which this country was expoſed from the gaols in the different parts being crowded with criminals ſentenced to tranſportation; the Eaſtern coaſt of New Holland was fixed upon as the moſt eligible part of the globe for planting a new colony, to carry into effect this neceſſary purpoſe. Captain Cook, in the narrative of his firſt voyage round the world, had mentioned Botany Bay as a ſpot conveniently ſituated for forming a new ſettlement; it was therefore determined by govern-

ment to direct their attention to that place for the accompliſhment of their plans.

Accordingly a fleet, conſiſting of his Majeſty's ſhip Sirius, under the command of Arthur Philip, Eſq. and the Supply armed tender, under the command of Lieutenant Ball, with tranſports, ſtore-ſhips, &c. ſailed for Botany Bay on the 13th of May, 1787, and anchored in that bay on the 20th of January, 1788, after a paſſage of thirty-ſix weeks.

The day after the arrival of the fleet, Governor Philip, accompanied by ſeveral officers, examined the ſouth ſhore; but as Botany Bay, through want of water, and ſome diſadvantages of ſituation, was not deemed very convenient for the purpoſe, they proceeded to explore the coaſt to the northward, examining every cove, and making particular obſervations on the country. Amongſt other places, they examined an opening to which Captain Cook had given the name of Port Jackſon; and ſuch was the ſituation of the harbour, together with other advantages apparent at firſt view, that a reſolution was formed of evacuating Botany Bay the enſuing morn.

Port Jackſon is one of the fineſt and moſt extenſive harbours in the univerſe, and at the ſame time the moſt ſecure, being ſafe from all the winds that blow. It is divided into a great number of coves, to which the Governor has given different names. That on which the town is built, is called Sydney Cove. It is one of the ſmalleſt in the harbour, but the moſt convenient, as ſhips of the greateſt burden can with eaſe go into it, and heave out cloſe to the ſhore. Trincomalee, ackdowledged to be one of the beſt harbours in the world, is by no means to be compared to it. In a word, Port Jackſon would afford ſufficient and ſafe anchorage for all the navies of Europe. During a run up the harbour of about four miles, in a weſterly direction, a luxuriant proſpect preſented itſelf on the ſhores, covered with trees to the water's edge, among which many of the Indians were frequently ſeen, till the fleet arrived at a ſmall ſnug cove to the ſouthward, on the banks

banks of which the plan of operations were deſtined to commence. The natives appeared in conſiderable numbers, from which it was reaſonable to conclude, that the country was more populous than had been repreſented by Captain Cook, who obſerves, that they were few in number, dull of apprehenſion, and void of curioſity; whereas, in ſubſequent narratives, they are ſaid to be gay, ſprightly and curious. They examined the ſtrangers with the utmoſt attention, and ſeemed particularly ſtruck with the appearance of their dreſs, imagining their clothes to be compoſed of ſo many different ſkins, and the hat as making part of the head. Indeed, they ſeemed highly entertained with their new acquaintance, accepted of ſome toys as preſents, and were perfectly cheerful and pleaſant, dancing and ſinging in concert with them, and imitating their words and geſtures.

The following circumſtances, related by the author of the narrative from which it is taken, are inſerted in his own words, as it is preſumed, they will conduce both to entertainment and information.

"When I went with a party to the South ſide of the harbour, and had ſcarcely landed five minutes, we were met by a dozen Indians, naked as at the moment of their birth, walking along the beach. Eager to come to a conference, and yet afraid of giving offence, we advanced with caution towards them: nor would they, at firſt, approach nearer to us than the diſtance of ſome paces. Both parties were armed; yet an attack ſeemed as unlikely on their part as we knew it to be on our own. I had at this time a little boy, of not more than ſeven years of age in my hand. The child ſeemed to attract their attention very much; for they frequently pointed to him, and ſpoke to each other; and, as he was not frightened, I advanced with him towards them, at the ſame time uncovering his boſom, and ſhewing the whiteneſs of the ſkin. On the clothes being removed, they gave a loud exclamation; and one of the party, an old man, with a long beard, hideouſly ugly, came cloſe to us. I bade the little boy not be

afraid, and introduced him to the acquaintance of this uncouth perſonage. The Indian, with great gentleneſs, laid his hand on the child's hat, and afterwards felt his clothes muttering to himſelf all the while. I found it neceſſary, however, by this time, to ſend away the child, as ſuch a cloſe connection rather alarmed him; and in this the concluſion verified I gave no offence to the old gentleman. Indeed, it was putting ourſelves on a par with them; as I had obſerved, from the firſt, that ſome youths of their own, though conſiderably older than the one with us, were kept back by the grown people. Several more came up, to whom we made various preſents; but our toys ſeemed not to be regarded as very valuable; nor would they, for a long time make any returns for them; though, before we parted, a large club, with a head almoſt ſufficient to fell an ox, was obtained in exchange for a looking-glaſs. Theſe people ſeemed at a loſs to know (probably from our want of beards) of what ſex we were, which having underſtood, they burſt into the moſt immoderate fits of laughter, talking to each other, at the ſame time, with ſuch rapidity and vociferation, as I had never before heard. After nearly an hour's converſation, by ſigns and geſtures, they repeated the word *whurra* ſeveral times, which ſignifies be gone, and walked away from us to the head of the bay."

The adventurers, in the late expedition, had ſeveral more interviews with the natives, which ended in ſo friendly a manner, that hopes were entertained of bringing about a connection with them. The firſt object of our people was to win their affection, and the next to convince them of our ſuperiority. To this purpoſe an officer one day prevailed on one of them to place a target, made of bark, againſt a tree, which he fired at with a piſtol, at the diſtance of ſome paces. The Indians, though terrified at the report; did not run away; but their aſtoniſhment exceeded their alarm, on looking at the ſhield which the ball had perforated. As this produced a little ſhyneſs, the officer to diſſipate their fears, and remove their jealouſy, whiſtled the air

of

of *Marlbrouk*, with which they appeared highly charmed, and imitated him with equal pleaſure and readineſs. It has been remarked by the different navigators who have explored theſe ſouthern regions, that the natives of California, and throughout all the iſlands of the Pacific Ocean, and, in ſhort, wherever they have been, ſeemed equally touched and delighted with this little plaintive air.

The neceſſary previous buſineſs having been tranſacted, upon an appointed day, the commiſſions were read, and poſſeſſion was taken of the ſettlement in form. The marine battalion being drawn up, and the convicts aſſembled on the occaſion, his Majeſty's commiſſion was read, appointing his Excellency Arthur Philip, Eſq. Governor and Captain General in and over the territory of New South Wales, and its dependencies; together with the acts of parliament for eſtabliſhing trials by law within the ſame; and the the patents, under the great ſeal of Great Britain, for holding civil and criminal courts of judicature, by which all caſes of life and death, as well as matters of property, were to be decided.

The extent of this authority is defined in the governor's commiſſion, to reach from the latitude of 43 deg. 49 min. North, to the latitude of 10 deg. 37 min. South, being the Northen and Southern extremities of New Holland. It commences again on the 135th deg. of longitude Eaſt, and proceeding in an Eaſterly direction, comprehends all iſlands within the limits of the above ſpecified latitudes in the Pacific Ocean. As the diſcoveries of Engliſh navigators alone are compriſed in this territory, it is preſumed this partition will obviate all cauſe of future litigation between us and the Dutch. It appears from the commiſſion, conſidered in the whole, that government have been no leſs attentive in arming Mr. Philip with plenitude of power, than extent of dominion.

It was found neceſſary to enforce the rigour of the law, in order to reſtrain the violation of public ſecurity. A ſet of deſperate and hardened miſcreants leagued themſelves

themſelves for the purpoſes of depredation; and, as is generally the caſe, had inſinuation enough to entice others, leſs verſed in iniquity, to become inſtrumental in carrying it on.

While the governor was exploring Broken Bay, which is contiguous to Port Jackſon, he ſaw a great number of the natives. One of the females had formed an attachment to his great coat; and to obtain it ſhe uſed a variety of means. Firſt, ſhe danced and played a number of antic tricks, but finding this mode ineffectual, ſhe had recourſe to tears, which ſhe ſhed plentifully. This expedient not anſwering, ſhe ceaſed from weeping, and appeared as chearful as any of the party around her. We have introduced this incident, to ſhew they are not a people devoid of art and fineſſe, in order to obtain their ends.

Though their women appeared with ſuch few decorations, yet it was evident they had no averſion to finery. The ſurgeon obſerved, at a repaſt, wherein he grouped with the natives, one of the women who ſat next to him, obſerving that he had a white handkerchief in his hand, exhibited a number of laſcivious airs, in order to obtain it. He therefore tore it into ribbons, being deſirous of multiplying one preſent into many, with which he decorated her head and neck. On her admiring the buttons of his coat, as he had nothing elſe left, he cut them away, and tied them round her waiſt. Thus ornamented, and charmed with her acquirements, ſhe turned away with a look of inexpreſſible archneſs and joy, which ſeemed to ſhew, that, like the women in the South Seas in general, they are fond of new ornaments. He alſo obſerved, that there is no hoſpitality nor harmony among them; as appeared from their eating ſo greedily, without regarding the accommodation of any about them; devouring the fiſh voraciouſly, which had been thrown on the fire, and ſcarcely warm.

Theſe people, in their appetites, are very voracious, as appears from the following inſtance. One of the officers ſhot a bird, which fell at an old man's feet. The

exploſion

exploſion at firſt greatly alarmed him; but perceiving no ill was intended, he ſoon got over his fears. The bird was then given to him, which, having barely plucked, and not more than half broiled, he devoured, entrails, bones and all.

A convict, who had been gathering what they call ſweet tea, about a mile from the camp, met a party of the natives, conſiſting of fourteen, by whom he was beaten and wounded with the ſtick uſed in throwing their ſpears. They then made him ſtrip, and would have taken from him his clothes, and probably his life, had it not been for the report of ſome muſkets, which they no ſooner heard than they ran away.

The deſtructive nature of their weapons, and their ſkill and adroitneſs in the uſe of them, will appear evident from the following circumſtances. A convict, being in a ſtate of convaleſcence, had obtained permiſſion from the governor to go a little way up the country, to gather herbs, for the purpoſe of making tea. This man, after night ſet in, was brought to the hoſpital, with one of the ſpears uſed by the natives ſticking in his loins. It had been darted at him as he was ſtooping, and while his back was turned to the aſſailant. The weapon was barbed, and ſtuck ſo very faſt, that it would admit of no motion. The ſurgeon, after dilating the wound to a conſiderable length and depth, with ſome difficulty extracted the ſpear, which had penetrated the fleſh nearly three inches. After the operation, the convict gave information, that he received his wound from three of the natives, who came behind him at a time when he expected no perſon to be near him, except another convict, whom he had met a little before, employed on the ſame buſineſs as himſelf. He added, that, after they had wounded him, they beat him in a cruel manner; and ſtripping the clothes from his back, carried them off, making ſigns to him (as he interpreted them) to return to the camp. He further related, that, after they had left him, he ſaw his fellow convict in the poſſeſſion of another party of the natives, who were dragging him along,

along, with his head bleeding, and ſeemingly in great diſtreſs; while he himſelf was ſo exhauſted with the loſs of blood, that, inſtead of being able to aſſiſt his companion, he was happy to eſcape with his life.

The natives continued to avail themſelves of every opportunity of exerciſing their cruelty on our people. An officer of the marines, who had been up at the harbour to procure ſome ruſhes for thatch, brought to the hoſpital the bodies of two men employed as ruſh-cutters, whom he found murdered by the natives in a ſhocking manner. One of them was transfixed through the breaſt with one of their ſpears, which was extracted with great difficulty and force. He had two other ſpears ſticking in him to a depth which muſt have proved mortal. His ſkull was divided and comminuted ſo much, that his brains eaſily found a paſſage through. His eyes were out. The other was a youth, and had only ſome trifling marks of violence about him. This lad could not have been many hours dead; for when the officer found him among ſome mangrove trees, and at a conſiderable diſtance from where the other man lay, he was not ſtiff, nor very cold; nor was he perfectly ſo when brought to the hoſpital. The natives, whenever an opportunity offers, never fail to ſteal or deſtroy any of the live ſtock they can poſſibly get poſſeſſion of. Nor are they leſs cowardly than cruel; for they always behave with an apparent civility when they fall in with men that are armed; but when they meet perſons unarmed, they ſeldom fail to take every advantage of them; in conſequence of which many of the convicts have fallen ſacrifices to theſe ſavages; but the ſoldiers they never aſſail, being always terrified at the ſight of a red coat.

They are very happy at grimace and mimicry; as an inſtance of which, it is remarked by the ſurgeon of the ſettlement, that, going upon an excurſion, they obſerved a party of the natives fiſhing, and ſat down near the bank to watch their motions. To paſs away time, one of the gentlemen ſung ſeveral ſongs; and when he had done, the females in the canoes either

ſung

ſung one of their own ſongs, or imitated him, in which they ſucceeded beyond conception. Any thing ſpoken by our people they moſt accurately recited, and this in a manner in which the Europeans fell greatly ſhort in their attempts to repeat the language after them, which ſhews the ſtrength of their organical powers. Nor are they without ingenuity, as appeared from various figures obſerved by a party of our people on their excurſion to the weſtward. Theſe figures were cut on the ſmooth ſurface of ſome large ſtones, and conſiſted chiefly of repreſentations of themſelves in different attitudes, of their canoes, of ſeveral ſorts of fiſh, and animals; and, conſidering the rudeneſs of the inſtruments with which the figures muſt have been executed, they ſeemed to exhibit tolerable likeneſſes.

The men, in general, are from five feet ſix inches to five feet nine inches high: they are thin, but very ſtrait, and well proportioned; walk very erect, and are extremely active. The women alſo, in general, are well made, not ſo thin as the men, but rather ſmaller limbed. Their ſkin is of the colour of wood ſoot, or which would be called a dark chocolate colour. Their hair is black, but not woolly: it is ſhort, but not cropt; in ſome lank, in others curled. Some parts of their bodies are painted red; and the upper lip and breaſts of ſome of them are painted with ſtreaks of white. Their features are far from diſagreeable; and their teeth even and white. Their voices are ſoft and tuneable. It is remarked, that the deficiency of one of the fore teeth of the upper jaw, mentioned by Dampier, was ſeen in almoſt the whole of the men; but their organs of ſight, ſo far from being defective, as that author mentions thoſe of the inhabitants of the weſtern ſide of the continent to be, are remarkably quick and piercing. Many of the women wanted the two lower joints of the little finger of the left hand; but the reaſon or meaning of it could not be diſcovered at the time in which the obſervation was made; nor has any account of it been given ſince. The defect was not only apparent in old women, and in young girls of eight or nine years old,

but in young women who had children, and thoſe who had not: the finger has been ſeen perfect in individuals of all the above ages and deſcriptions. They have bracelets upon the upper part of their arms, made of plaited hair. They are fond of ornament, though abſolutely without apparel: and one of them, to whom was given an old ſhirt, inſtead of throwing it over any part of the body, tied it as a fillet round her head.

Both ſexes go ſtark naked, and ſeem to have no more ſenſe of indecency in diſcovering their whole body, than the inhabitants of England have in diſcovering their hands and face. Their principal ornament is the bone which they thruſt through the cartilage that divides the noſtrils from each other. What perverſion of taſte could induce them to think this a decoration, or what could prompt them, before they had worn it, or ſeen it worn, to ſuffer the pain and inconvenience that muſt of neceſſity attend it, is perhaps beyond the power of human ſagacity to determine. As this bone is as thick as a man's finger, and between five and ſix inches long, it reaches quite acroſs the face, and ſo effectually ſtops up both the noſtrils, that they are forced to keep their mouths wide open for breath, and ſnuffle ſo when they attempt to ſpeak, that they are ſcarcely intelligible even to each other. The ſeamen, with ſome humour, called it the ſpritſail-yard; and, indeed, it had ſo ludicrous an appearance, that, till our people were uſed to it, they found it difficult to refrain from laughter. Beſides the noſe-jewel, they have necklaces made of ſhells, very neatly cut, and ſtrung together; bracelets of ſmall cord, wound two or three times about the upper part of their arm; and a ſtring of plaited human hair, about as thick as a thread of yarn, tied round the waiſt. Some of them have alſo gorgets of ſhells hanging round the neck, ſo as to reach acroſs the breaſt.

But though theſe people wear no clothes, their bodies have a covering beſides the dirt; for they paint them both white and red. The red is commonly laid on in broad patches upon the ſhoulders and breaſt; and the

the white ſtripes, ſome narrow and ſome broad: the narrow are drawn over the limbs, and the broad over the body, not without ſome degree of taſte. The white is alſo laid on in ſmall patches upon the face, and drawn in a circle round each eye. The red ſeemed to be ochre, but what the white was could not be diſcovered: it was cloſe grained, ſaponaceous to the touch, and heavy. Beſides the paint with which they beſmear their bodies, they alſo uſe greaſe, or ſome ſtinking oily ſubſtance, for the ſame purpoſe. Some of them ornament their hair with the teeth of fiſh, faſtened on by gum and the ſkin of the kanguroo. The bodies of the men are much ſcarified, particularly their breaſts and ſhoulders. Theſe ſcarifications are conſiderably raiſed above the ſkin; and although they are not in any regular form, yet they are conſidered as ornamental.

Upon their bodies were ſeen no marks of diſeaſe or ſores, but large ſcars, in irregular lines, which appeared to be the remains of wounds they had inflicted upon themſelves with ſome blunt inſtrument, and which our people underſtood, by ſigns, to have been memorials of grief for the dead.

Upon ſuch ornaments as they had, they ſeemed to ſet ſo great a value, that they would never part with the leaſt article for any thing that could be offered; which was the more extraordinary, as the European beads and ribbons were ornaments of the ſame kind, but of better form, and more ſhowy materials.

Though both ſexes, and thoſe of all ages, are invariably found naked, it muſt not be inferred from this, that cuſtom ſo inures them to the change of the elements, as to make them bear, with indifference, the extremes of heat and cold; for they give viſible and repeated proofs, that the latter affects them ſeverely, when they are ſeen ſhivering and huddling themſelves up in heaps in their huts, or the caverns of the rocks, until a fire can be kindled.

Theſe people have no fixed habitation; but repoſe wherever they may be overtaken by night; and to render

ſituation as tolerable as poſſible, they make a fire, which heating the rock all round them, it becomes as warm as an oven, and they lie huddled together upon the graſs, which is firſt pulled and dried to ſerve them as a couch. In this inſtance may be obſerved the kindneſs of Providence in the preſervation of his creatures. The inhabitants of theſe remote regions have not the leaſt notion of erecting an edifice, or conſtructing any kind of ſhelter from the inclemency of the ſeaſons; ſo far from it, they have not even deviſed the means of cloathing their naked bodies. To remedy theſe eſſential defects, it is ſo ordained by infinite wiſdom, that the rocks on the ſea-coaſt, as well as thoſe in the interior parts of the country, are compoſed of ſoft, crumbly, ſandy ſtone; the external parts, which are moſt expoſed to the rigour of the ſeaſon, are generally of a harder texture than the internal, which are leſs expoſed; ſo that the latter gradually mouldering away under the preſſure of the former, a cavity is made, of dimenſions ſufficient to contain fifty or ſixty of theſe poor forlorn creatures, who are thereby provided with a tolerably comfortable lodging. In ſuch parts as are not very rocky, they build a kind of huts with pliable rods, not thicker than a finger, by bending them, and ſticking the two ends in the ground. The covering is of palm leaves and pieces of bark; and the entrance by a large hole, oppoſite which the fire is made. Theſe huts are deſigned for the accommodation of ſuch as follow the hunting of the kanguroo, opoſſums, rats, ſquirrels, and other animals which inhabit the woods, and which, when purſued, generally run into the hollow of a tree. In order, therefore, to ſecure the animal when found in the tree, a man climbs even the talleſt tree with great eaſe, by means of notches cut with a ſtone hatchet in the trunk at convenient diſtances: when he reaches the ſummit, or any part that may open away for the eſcape of the animal, he fixes himſelf there with a club in his hand, while another below applies a fire, which fills the hollow of the tree with ſmoke; ſo that

the

the animal attempting to eſcape, is almoſt certain of falling a prey to its purſuers.

The only furniture obſerved belonging to theſe huts, that fell under obſervation, was a kind of oblong veſſel, made of bark, by the ſimple contrivance of tying up the two ends with a withy, which, not being cut off, ſerves for a handle.

Their chief utenſil was a ſmall bag, about the ſize of a moderate cabbage-net, which is made by laying threads loop within loop, ſomewhat in the manner uſed by ladies to make purſes. This bag the man carries looſe upon his back, by a ſmall ſtring, which paſſes over his head. It generally contains a lump or two of paint or reſin, ſome fiſh-hooks and lines, a few points of darts, and their uſual ornaments, which include all the worldly treaſure of the richeſt man among them.

They are utterly ſtrangers to the cultivation of the ground, and appear to live chiefly upon what the ſea affords, as the coloniſts found the coaſt much more populous than the interior parts. They do not, in general, eat animal food raw, but having no veſſel in which water can be boiled, they either broil it upon the coals, or bake it in a hole by the help of hot ſtones.

The men are very dexterous in the uſe of the fiſh-gig, an inſtrument upwards of three feet in length. Theſe gigs, have, ſome one, ſome two, ſome three, and ſome four prongs, pointed and barbed with a fiſh or other animal's bone. In fine weather a man has often been obſerved by the coloniſts lying acroſs a canoe with his face in the water, and his fiſh-gig immerſed, ready for darting. In this manner he lies ſtill, and is almoſt certain of ſtriking the fiſh, as his face being a little under the ſurface of the water, he can ſee it diſtinctly, and conſequently rarely miſſes his aim. Women were frequently obſerved occupied in this neceſſary employment of fiſhing with lines and hooks in edge of a ſurf that would intimidate an experienced ſeaman. The youngeſt child, if very ſmall, lies acroſs the lap of the mother,

mother, and is ſafe from falling, though ſhe is buſy in fiſhing, as the boat being very ſhallow, ſhe ſits in the bottom with her knees up to her breaſt, and between her knees and her body the child is perfectly ſecure.

The men likewiſe dive with amazing alacrity for ſhell fiſh, which adhere to the rocks: they ſpring from a rock into the ſurf, and there continue for a long ſpace of time; and on their riſing, caſt the fiſh they have taken off the rocks on ſhore, which is received by ſome of their comrades, who are placed there for that neceſſary purpoſe.

Their canoes are mean and rude. Thoſe on the ſouthern part of the coaſt are nothing more than a piece of bark, about twelve feet long, tied together at the ends, and kept open in the middle by ſmall boughs of wood. Thoſe farther to the northward are not made of bark, but of the trunk of a tree, hollowed, perhaps, by fire. They are about fourteen feet long; and being very narrow, are fitted with an outrigger, to prevent their overſetting. Theſe are worked with paddles, that are ſo large as to require both hands to manage one of them.

The only tools ſeen among them were, an adze, wretchedly made of ſtone, ſome ſmall pieces of the ſame ſubſtance in form of a wedge, a wooden mallet, and ſome ſhells and fragments of coral. For poliſhing their throwing ſticks and the points of their lances, they uſe the leaves of a kind of wild fig-tree, which bites upon wood almoſt as keenly as the ſhave-graſs of Europe, which is uſed by our joiners. With ſuch tools, the making even ſuch a canoe as has been deſcribed, muſt be a moſt difficult and tedious labour. To thoſe who have been accuſtomed to the uſe of metal, it appears altogether impracticable; but there are few difficulties that will not yield to patient perſeverance; and he who does all he can, will certainly produce effects that greatly exceed his apparent power.

The weapons uſed by the natives are ſpears or lances, and thoſe are of different kinds. Some of them have four prongs, pointed with bone, and barbed.

Others

Others have but one point. The ſhaft is ſtrait and light, and from eight to fourteen feet long.

They have a ſhort ſtick, which aſſiſts them in throwing the lance; it is about three feet long, flattened on one ſide, with a hook of wood at one end, and a flat ſhell let into a ſplit in the ſtick at the other, and faſtended with gum. Upon the flat ſide of this ſtick the lance is laid. In the upper end is a ſmall hole, in which the point of the hook of the throwing-ſtick is fixed; this retains the lance on the flat ſide of the ſtick. They poiſe it, thus fixed in one hand, with the fore-finger and thumb over it, to prevent its falling off ſideways; at the ſame time holding faſt the throwing-ſtick, they diſcharge it with conſiderable force, and in very good direction, to the diſtance of about ſixty or ſeventy yards. It was ſuppoſed by ſeveral of the coloniſts, who ſaw theſe weapons frequently thrown, that a man upon his guard might with eaſe either parry or avoid them; though they confeſſed they flew with aſtoniſhing velocity.

Theſe ſpears, or lances, however, are dreadful weapons; for, when once they have taken place, they can never be drawn back, without tearing away the fleſh, or leaving the ſharp ragged ſplinters of the bone, or ſhell, which forms the beard, behind them in the wound. They are thrown with great force and dexterity. If intended to wound at a ſhort diſtance, between ten and twenty yards, ſimply with the hand; but if at the diſtance of forty or fifty yards, or more, with the throwing-ſtick. The coloniſts were inclined to hold the ſpears of the natives very cheap. Fatal experience, however, convinced them, that the wound inflicted by this weapon is not a trivial one; and that the ſkill of the Indians in throwing it is far from being deſpicable. Nor are their weapons of offence confined to the ſpear only; for they have beſides long wooden ſwords, ſhaped like a ſabre, capable of inflicting a mortal wound; and clubs of an immenſe ſize.

The natives, when equipped for any exploit, are armed with a ſhield, made of the bark of a tree, with which

which they very dexterouſly ward off any thing thrown at them. They have alſo a bludgeon, or club, about twenty inches long, with a large and pointed end: and ſometimes a ſtone hatchet. Theſe make up the catalogue of their military implements. But the principal means of annoying their European viſitors was by ſetting fire to the high graſs, which, being very dry, burnt with great rapidity, and did much damage.

The natives of this country do not appear to entertain the moſt diſtant idea of religion, nor to have any object of adoration. They are as regardleſs of the ſun, moon, ſtars, or any of the ſtupendous works of the Creator, as they are of any of the animals which inhabit their extenſive regions. It was evident that they burn their dead, as a diſcovery was made of a freſh grave, on a ſurvey of a diſtant branch of Port Jackſon, by a party of the coloniſts. When the earth was removed, a quantity of white aſhes was diſcovered, which appeared to have been but a ſhort time depoſited there. Among the aſhes were found part of a human jaw-bone, and a ſmall piece of the ſcull, which, although it had been in the fire, was not ſo much injured, as to prevent aſcertaining, beyond a doubt, what it was. The aſhes were put together, and covered up as before. The grave was not more than ſix inches under the ſurface of the ground, but the earth was raiſed as high as it is above our graves in Europe.

Of the animals produced in this iſland, the kanguroo is one of the moſt valuable, and grows to a very conſiderable ſize; ſome of them weigh not leſs than 150 pounds. A male of 130 pounds weight has been killed, whoſe dimenſions were as follows: Extreme length, ſeven feet three inches. Length of the tail, three feet four inches and a half. Length of the hinder legs, three feet two inches. Length of the fore paws, one foot ſeven inches and a half. Circumference of the tail at the root, one foot five inches. Notwithſtanding this, the kanguroo, on being brought forth, is not larger than a rat. In running, this animal confines himſelf entirely to his hinder legs, which are poſſeſſed with

with an extraordinary muſcular power. Their ſpeed is very great, though not in general quite equal to that of a greyhound: but when the greyhounds are ſo fortunate as to ſeize them, they are incapable of retaining their hold, from the amazing ſtruggles of the animal. The bound of the kanguroo, when not hard preſſed, has been meaſured, and found to exceed twenty feet. At what time of the year they copulate, and in what manner, is not known. The teſticles of the male are placed contrary to the uſual order of nature. When young, the kanguroo eats tender, and well flavoured, taſting like veal; but the old ones are more tough and ſtringy than bull-beef. They are not carnivorous, but ſubſiſt altogether on particular flowers and graſs. Their bleat is mournful, and very different from that of any other animal: it is, however, ſeldom heard but in the young ones.

The dogs of this country are remarkably ſwift: their chace of the kanguroo, if in an open wood, is ſeldom more than eight or ten minutes; and if there are more dogs then one, rarely ſo long. When the dog ſeizes the kanguroo, he turns, and catching hold of him with the claws of his hind feet, tears him to ſuch a degree, that the dog is frequently carried home covered with wounds. If the dog catches the kanguroo by the throat, he holds him until one of the hunters comes to his aſſiſtance, and many dogs have nearly loſt their lives in the ſtruggle. Several attempts were made to cure thoſe dogs of their natural ferocity: one of the Engliſh officers took much pains on the attempt of a little puppy, which nevertheleſs, would ſnap off the head of a fowl, or worry a pig, in defiance of the ſevereſt correction. They have been repreſented as good natured animals when domeſticated; but from their extreme ferocity, the poſſibility of taming them was much doubted. Some of the natives, however, were ſeen with dogs which appeared to be domeſticated the ſame as ours in Europe; they are of the wolf kind, of a duſky red colour.

The oppoſſum is an animal which abounds in this country. It bears much reſemblance to the kanguroo in the ſtrength of its tail, and make of its fore-legs, which are very ſhort in proportion to the hind ones.

The female oppoſſum has a pouch, or pocket, in which ſhe carries her young. Some have been ſhot with a young one, not larger than a walnut, ſticking to a teat in this pocket. Others with young ones no bigger than a rat; one of which was moſt perfectly formed, with every mark and diſtinguiſhing characteriſtic of the kanguroo. There is alſo a peculiar formation in the generative parts of this animal.

Moſt of the animals in this country partake, in a great meaſure, of the nature of the kanguroo. There is the kanguroo oppoſſum, the kanguroo rat, &c. the formation of the fore-legs and feet of which bear no proportion to the length of the hind legs. There is a quadruped, which the natives call *quoll*. It reſembles a pole-cat. The back is brown, ſpotted with white; and the belly white, unmixed. To beaſts of prey our people were utter ſtrangers; nor have they yet any cauſe to believe that they exiſt in the country. And happy it is for them that they do not, as their preſence would deprive them of the only freſh meals the ſettlement affords, the fleſh of the kanguroo.

It is remarked, from the ſimilarity in ſome part or other of the different quadrupeds found here, that there is great reaſon to ſuppoſe a promiſcuous intercourſe between the different ſexes of the reſpective animals.

Of bats, which hold a middle place between the beaſts and the birds, there are many of different kinds, particularly one, which is larger than a partridge. Our people were not fortunate enough to take one, either alive or dead.

The country abounds with birds of various kinds, amongſt which are many of exquiſite beauty, particularly loriquets and cockatoos. The water fowl are, gulls, ſhags, ſoland geeſe, or gannets, of two ſorts; boobies, noddies, curlieus, ducks, pelicans of an enormous

enormous ſize, and many others. One of the moſt remarkable was black and white, much larger than a ſwan, and in ſhape ſomewhat reſembling a pelican. The land birds are, crows, parrots, pigeons, daves, quails, buſtards, herons, cranes, hawks, and eagles.

But the bird which principally claims attention is the caſſowary, a ſpecies of oſtrich, approaching nearer to the *emu* of South America than any other known. One of them was ſhot, at a conſiderable diſtance, with a ſingle ball, by a convict employed for that purpoſe by the governor. Its weight, when complete, was ſeventy pounds; and its length, from the end of the toe to the tip of the beak, ſeven feet two inches; though there was reaſon to believe it had not attained its full growth. On diſſection, many anatomical ſingularities were obſerved: the gall-bladder was remarkably large, the liver not bigger than that of a barn-door fowl; and, after the ſtricteſt ſearch, no gizzard could be found. The legs, which were of a vaſt length, were covered with thick, ſtrong ſcales, plainly indicating the animal to be formed for living amidſt deſarts; and the foot differed from an oſtrich's by forming a triangle, inſtead of being cloven. Goldſmith, whoſe account of the emu is the only one we can refer to, ſays, "that it is covered, from the back and rump, with long feathers, which fall backward, and cover the anus: theſe feathers are grey on the back, and white on the belly. The wings are ſo ſmall as hardly to deſerve the name, and are unfurniſhed with thoſe beautiful ornaments which adorn the wings of the oſtrich. All the feathers are extremely coarſe; but the conſtruction of them deſerves notice: they grow in pairs from a ſingle ſhaft, a ſingularity which the author we have quoted has omitted to remark. It may be preſumed, that theſe birds are not very ſcarce, as ſeveral have been ſeen, ſome of them immenſely large; but they are ſo wild as to make ſhooting them a matter of great difficulty. Though incapable

of flying, they run with ſuch ſwiftneſs, that our fleeteſt greyhounds are left far behind in every attempt to catch them. The fleſh was eaten, and taſted like beef.

The fiſh caught here are in general excellent; but ſeveral of them partake of the properties of the ſhark, like the animals in ſome degree reſembling the kanguroo. The land, the graſs, the trees, the animals, the birds, and the fiſh, in their different ſpecies, approach by ſtrong ſhades of ſimilitude to each other. A certain likeneſs runs through the whole. They are in general palatable, and ſome of them are very delicious. Upon the ſhoals and reefs are incredible numbers of the fineſt green turtle in the world, and oyſters of various kinds, particularly the rock-oyſter, and the pearl-oyſter. The cockles are of ſuch an enormous ſize, that one of them is more than one perſon can eat. There are alſo large muſcles, and ſtingrays, which weigh no leſs than 336 pounds after the entrails are taken out. In the rivers and ſalt creeks are alligators. A ſhark of an enormous ſize was found here, which meaſured at the ſhoulders ſix feet and a half in circumference. His liver yielded 24 gallons of oil; and in his ſtomach was found the head of a fiſh of the like ſpecies. The Indians, probably from having felt the effects of their voracious fury, teſtify the utmoſt horror on ſeeing theſe terrible fiſh.

Of inſects, here is a very peculiar kind of ant, as green as a leaf. They live upon trees, where they build their neſts. Theſe neſts are of a very curious ſtructure: they are formed by bending down ſeveral of the leaves, each of which is as broad as a man's hand: they glue the points of them together, ſo as to form a purſe. The viſcous uſed for this purpoſe is an animal juice, which nature has enabled them to elaborate. Their method of firſt bending down the leaves our naturaliſts had not an opportunity to obſerve; but they ſaw thouſands uniting all their ſtrength to hold them in this poſition, while other

buſy

buſy multitudes were employed within, in applying the gluten that was to prevent their returning back. To ſatisfy themſelves that the leaves were bent and held down by the efforts of theſe diminutive artificers, our people diſturbed them in their work; and, as ſoon as they were driven from their ſtation, the leaves, on which they were employed, ſprang up with a force much greater than they could have thought them able to conquer by any combination of their ſtrength. But though our people gratified their curioſity at the expence of theſe inſects, the injury did not go unrevenged, for thouſands immediately threw themſelves upon them, and gave them intolerable pain with their ſtings, eſpecially thoſe which took poſſeſſion of the deck and hair, from whence they were not eaſily driven. There are upon the leaves of the mangrove great numbers of ſmall green caterpillars; their foreheads are thick ſet with hairs, and they range upon the leaves ſide by ſide, like a file of ſoldiers, to the number of twenty or thirty together; the hair of their bodies, on touching them, has the quality of a nettle, and give a more acute, though leſs durable, pain. This country abounds with beautiful plants and flowers, and is therefore adapted to afford great entertainment to the curious in botany. There were found ſome wild ſpinach, parſley and ſorrel; but not in any quantity.

The climate is undoubtedly very deſirable to live in. In ſummer the heats are uſually moderated by the ſea breeze, which ſets in early; and in the winter the degree of cold is ſo ſlight as to occaſion but little inconvenience. It is remarked, as a circumſtance peculiar to this country, that every part of it, even the moſt inacceſſible and rocky, appears as if, at certain times of the year, it was all on fire. Indeed, in many parts large trees are ſeen, the trunks and branches of which are evidently rent and demoliſhed by lightning. The ground was ſo very

dry

dry and parched, that poles or pegs could not be driven into it without conſiderable difficulty.

The governor, invariably intent on exploring the country, having formed a party, with unwearied induſtry, and great toil, traverſed an extenſive track of ground, which appeared, from ſuch obſervations as could be made, capable of producing every thing which a happy ſoil and genial climate can bring forth. The face of the country was ſuch as to promiſe ſucceſs, whenever it ſhould be cultivated; for the ſoil was found to be much richer than as deſcribed by Captain Cook; as, inſtead of ſand, they found a deep black mould, which ſeemed very fit for the production of grain of any kind. But ſuch were the labour and difficulty attending the clearing of the ground, that, incredible as it may appear, it is a known fact, that ten or twelve men have been employed for five whole days in grubbing up a tree; and when this has been effected, the timber has only been fit for fire wood; ſo that, in conſequence of the great labour in clearing the ground, and the weak ſtate of the people, to which may be added the ſcarcity of tools, moſt of thoſe brought from England being loſt in the woods among the graſs, through the careleſſneſs of the convicts, the proſpect of future ſucceſs is not the moſt promiſing, till they can ſo far clear the ground, as to produce a ſufficient ſupport for the new ſettlement: but, however, the richneſs of the ſoil will amply repay them, when they can ſurmount this difficulty.

The timber is very unfit for the purpoſe of building; the only purpoſe for which it will anſwer is firewood, and for that it is excellent; but in other reſpects it is the worſt wood that any country or climate can produce; although ſome of the trees, when ſtanding, appear fit for any uſe whatever, maſts for ſhipping not excepted. Strange as it may be imagined, moſt of the wood in this country, though dried ever ſo well, will not float. Repeated trials have only ſerved to prove, that, immediately on immerſion,

merſion, it ſinks to the bottom like a ſtone. The trees were not of many ſpecies. Among others, there was a large one, which yielded a gum not unlike that called dragon's blood. In the woods was found a tree, which bore fruit, that, in colour and ſhape, reſembled a cherry: the juice had an agreeable tartneſs, though but little flavour. Between the trees the ground is covered with graſs, of which there is great abundance, growing in tufts as large as can well be graſped in the hand, which ſtand very cloſe to each other. In thoſe places where trees are ſcarce, a variety of flowering ſhrubs abound: moſt of them entirely new to an European, and ſurpaſſing, in beauty, fragrance, and number, all ever ſeen in an uncultivated ſtate. Among theſe a tall ſhrub, bearing an elegant white flower, which ſmells like Engliſh may, is particularly delightful, and perfumes the air around to a great diſtance.

There is a kind of vine, running to a great extent along the ground: the ſtalk is not ſo thick as the ſmalleſt honey-ſuckle, nor is the leaf ſo large as the common bay leaf, though ſomewhat ſimilar to it; and the taſte is ſweet, exactly like the liquorice root of the ſhops. Of this the convicts and ſoldiers make an infuſion, which is tolerably pleaſant, and ſerves as no bad ſuccedaneum for tea. The ſurgeon found it to be a good pectoral, and not at all unpleaſant.

Free ſtone, of an excellent quality, abounds in this country, which was conſidered as an happy circumſtance, as it tended ſo materially to forward the intended plan of forming the town. The greateſt impediment to building was a want of lime ſtone, of which no ſigns had hitherto appeared. Clay, for making bricks, abounding, a conſiderable quantity of them were burned, and ready for uſe.

In the month of March, 1788, the ſcurvy prevailed amongſt the ſeamen, marines, and convicts, in a greater degree than when on board the ſhips, which appeared rather extraordinary, after having been ſome time on land, and obtaining the advantage of

vegetable

vegetable productions; but this was attributed by the gentlemen of the faculty to the neceſſity of continuing the ſame ſalt diet: however, excepting theſe, and a few who were troubled with dyſenteries, the people in general enjoyed a tolerable ſtate of health.

About the middle of May a convaleſcent, who had been ſent from the hoſpital to gather vegetables, was killed by the natives. Soon after this accident a report prevailed that part of the bones of a man had been found near a fire, at which a party of the natives had been regaling themſelves. This report gave riſe to a conjecture, that, as this man had been murdered near the ſpot, thoſe who committed the act had devoured him. It cannot be poſitively affirmed, that the natives of this place are in general cannibals; but, from this circumſtance, there is ground to ſuſpect, that if the horrid cuſtom of eating human fleſh does not univerſally prevail, it is ſometimes practiſed: indeed, it was confirmed by the reply of a native to one of the coloniſts, who, interrogating him on the ſubject, he acknowledged that one of their chiefs had eaten a man he had ſlain.

On the 27th of Auguſt, the Supply tender arrived from Norfolk Iſland, whither ſhe had been diſpatched by the governor with ſtores and proviſions for the ſettlement he had formed there: and in the month of October the governor ſent the Sirius to the Cape of Good Hope, to purchaſe proviſions for the accommodation of the ſettlement; whence ſhe returned, and anchored in Sydney Cove on the 8th of May, 1789. She had been abſent 219 days, 51 of which ſhe lay in Table Bay, Cape of Good Hope; ſo that it is obſerved by the officer who commanded the Sirius, that, although, during the voyage, they had fairly gone round the world, they had only been 168 days in deſcribing that circle.

In the beginning of February, 1788, Governor Philip ſignified his intention of ſending Lieutenant King, of the Sirius, with ſome marines and convicts, to form a ſettlement on Norfolk Iſland. Accordingly, that officer,

cer, having received his commiſſion, appointing him ſuperintendant and commandant of Norfolk Iſland, embarked for that purpoſe with twenty-three perſons on board the Supply tender, on the 15th. On the 29th of February they made Norfolk Iſland, at the diſtance of ſeven or eight leagues. Lieutenant King, on their approach, landed in the boat with the commander of the Supply, in queſt of a place to caſt anchor. Rowing along ſhore, they obſerved, towards the north-eaſt point of the iſland, a cluſter of high rocks, to which the cammander gave the name of Cook's Rocks, from that celebrated navigator's having diſcovered this iſland, and landed near theſe rocks, in 1774. After ſeveral fruitleſs attempts, they landed at length on the ſide of a large rock, which lies cloſe to the ſhore, at the weſt end of a ſmall ſtony beach. This was imagined to be the rock on which Captain Cook landed, as there is no other place on that ſide of the iſland where it could have been practicable: But it was found an improper place to land either the people or ſtores, there being no freſh water near it.

On the 4th of March the commandant, with his officers, landed again, in order to take a view of the country; and, after aſcending a very ſteep hill, got to the top of the iſland, which they found to be a plain; but every foot of ground was covered with trees, or large roots of trees, which not only obſtructed their paſſage, but obliged them to cut their way through them. During this excurſion, they did not ſee a leaf of flax, or any kind of herb: the ground, though the ſoil was both rich and deep, was entirely bare. This appeared very ſingular, after Captain Cook had obſerved, that the flax plant was rather more abundant here than he had found it to be in New Zealand. Birds were ſeen in great number and variety, ſuch as pigeons, parrots, parroquets, doves, &c. They were ſo remarkably tame, that they were knocked down with ſticks. As large pieces of pumice-ſtone were diſperſed in every part

of the iſland, it was imagined that a crater, or the remains of one, might be found at or near a mountain in the middle of the iſland; which, in honour of the Chancellor of the Exchequer, was called Mount Pitt.

At length a place, afterwards called Anſon's Bay, having been explored, was found fit for landing. Here, therefore, the commandant was determined to fix; and accordingly, on the 6th of March left the Supply with two boats, in which were all the perſons belonging to the ſettlement; together with the tents, a part of the proviſions, and ſome of the uſeful tools. Theſe being landed, they began clearing a ſmall piece of ground to erect the tents upon. The colours were hoiſted; and, before ſunſet, every perſon and article belonging to the ſettlement were on ſhore, and the tents pitched. Soon after landing, they found a very fine rivulet of water, which ran cloſe at the back of the ground where the ſettlement was fixed. As there were only twelve men, one of whom was a man ſeventy-two years old, and another a boy of fifteen, excluſive of the mate and ſurgeon, the progreſs of the ſettlement for ſome time was very ſlow.

On the 9th of March (being Sunday) every perſon in the ſettlement aſſembled in the governor's tent, where he performed divine ſervice; after which his commiſſion from Governor Philip was read, appointing Lieutenant King ſuperintendant and commandant of this iſland. The commandant then aſſured the people in general, that his intention was to forward the King's ſervice to the utmoſt of his power: he endeavoured to impreſs on the minds of the convicts his reſolution, that thoſe who were idle or diſhoneſt ſhould meet with condign puniſhment. He informed them what ratio of proviſions would be allowed daily; and propoſed every encouragement to incite them to induſtry and good behaviour.

From this time to the middle of the month, the people were employed in clearing away, and turning

ing

ing up the garden ground, which was ſown in a rich and deep ſoil, with different ſeeds, and afforded a pleaſing proſpect of ſucceſs.

In proceſs of time, one of the officers, in an excurſion about the iſland, diſcovered the flax-plant. As no deſcription had been given of this plant, our coloniſts had no idea of its being what Captain Cook calls the flax-plant of New Zealand. The cliffs and ſhore near the ſettlement were covered with it. The root is bulbous; and the plant, in its general form, bears great reſemblance to the iris, except that the leaves are much thicker and larger: the flaxy part is the fibres, which extend the whole length of the leaf; towards the root they are very thick and ſtrong, and diminiſh in ſize as they approach the end of the leaf. The flax-plant in its green ſtate is of ſurpriſing ſtrength. As Captain Cook had given no deſcription of the method of preparing this plant, our coloniſts adopted the European method of preparing the flax.

The ſtore-houſe being finiſhed in the beginning of April, the proviſions and ſtores were conveyed from the commandant's tent, and depoſited there. A blight from the ſouth-weſt deſtroyed all the plants that were in a thriving ſtate, which, added to the deſtruction of ſome Indian corn by the rats, proved very diſtreſſing circumſtances.

As it was found that no vegetables would thrive at this ſeaſon on the ſouth ſide of the mount, it was deemed expedient to turn up the garden ground, and ſow it with wheat. The tents were moved, ſome of the men began to build huts, and the carpenters were employed in the preparation of materials for building an houſe for the commandant.

The new coloniſts had reaſon to fear that the turtle, of which they found great numbers at their firſt landing, were frightened away from the iſland, as none had been ſeen near the beach during the courſe of a month. They felt the want of this reſource, as the turtle proved ſo ſalutary to every in-

dividual on the iſland; not one of whom was free from the ſcurvy on landing; and ſome of the convicts were affected with it in an extreme degree; but the people in general were ſoon entirely recovered. They laboured under a dearth of garden vegetables, but found a good ſubſtitute in the cabbage-tree, the excellence of which is well known to all who have viſited theſe climes. The rats, which abound here, deſtroyed the wheat which was ſown within the ſpace of three days; and as the coloniſts had no cats, and only one dog, and were grievouſly annoyed by theſe vermin, the empty caſks were converted into traps.

On the 6th of April, ſeveral orders were made for the preſervation of regularity and decorum, which, though they did not affect matters that deſerved corporal puniſhment, might prevent ſuch miſdemeanours as would render ſuch a ſtep neceſſary.

Having made theſe neceſſary diſpoſitions, the commandant proceeded to give ſuch directions to the people, and make ſuch arrangements, as might tend to further the progreſs of the ſettlement.

But their operations were frequently retarded by colds, to which, though the only ſickneſs hitherto experienced, the people were very ſubject. The workmen, indeed, had been often blinded for ſeveral days together by the white ſap of a tree, which, getting into their eyes, occaſioned an excruciating pain for a conſiderable time. The beſt remedy was Florence oil, which being dropped into the eye, deſtroyed the acrimony of the ſap. One man was totally blinded with it, for want of timely application for relief. Two ſawyers, the carpenter, and three convicts, were poiſoned by eating ſome beans, which reſembled the Windſor bean in appearance. They were ſeized with violent gripings, retchings, and cold ſweats. Sweet oil and ſome other medicines, happily afforded them relief; but they were ſo weakened as not to be able to work for ſome days.

The

The people received a fortunate ſupply of fiſh on the 9th of May. Pigeons were very numerous on their firſt landing, and ſo tame that they were knocked down with ſticks; but afterwards they harboured about the tops of the trees. Many were taken that weighed from three quarters to one pound each.

On the 8th of December all the barley was houſed which had been raiſed on an acre of ground, and was ſown in June and July. During its early growth it had a moſt promiſing appearance; but when the ear was ſhot, and nearly filled, ſome heavy rains in September laid great part of it down, beſides a great quantity that was deſtroyed by rats and quails; ſo that, inſtead of getting at the leaſt fifty buſhels of grain, according to expectation, the whole, when gleaned, yielded no more than ten buſhels. The barley, though ſmall in quantity, was very fine, and 116 ears were produced from one grain. Garden vegetables ſucceeded very well, and cabbages were cut that weighed twenty pounds each. On the 22d ſome wheat was reaped that had been ſown on the eleventh of Auguſt; the grain was full and fine; but the crop was not ſo good as expected.

On the 25th of February, 1789, the new ſettlement ſuſtained a moſt ſevere ſhock from a dreadful hurricane, attended with conſtant deluges of rain. Pines and oak trees were town up by the roots; and others, whoſe roots were too deep in the earth to be torn up, bent their tops nearly to the ground. To add to the horror of the ſcene, a very large tree fell acroſs the granary, and daſhed it to pieces, ſtaving a number of flour caſks; but, by the activity of the people, the flour, Indian corn, and ſtores, were collected, and lodged in the commandant's houſe. The products of the gardens were nearly deſtroyed; for, incredible as it may appear, the violence of the wind blew up cabbages, turnips, and other vegetables, by the roots; but happily the wind at length veered

veered about, the ſtorm ſubſided, and fine weather ſucceeded this moſt tremendous hurricane.

On the 7th of May, the wheat, which had before a very fine appearance, was blighted in many places by a ſmall black caterpillar. Many methods were uſed to extirpate them, but without effect.

On the 13th of March, 1790, Governor Philip ſent Lieutenant Governor Rois to take the command of Norfolk Iſland; the ſervice rendering it neceſſary for Lieutenant King, who was firſt appointed commandant, to return to England, in order to give his Majeſty's Miniſters ſuch particular information relative to the ſettlement he had eſtabliſhed as could not be conveyed by letter.

Norfolk Iſland is ſituated in the latitude of 29 degrees, 0 min. ſouth; and in the longitude of 168 degrees, 0 min. eaſt. Its form is nearly oblong, and it contains from twelve to fourteen thouſand acres. It is ſix miles in length, and four in breadth. The face of the country is hilly, and ſome of the vallies are tolerably large for the ſize of the iſland. Many of the hills are very ſteep, and ſome few ſo very perpendicular that they cannot be cultivated; but where ſuch ſituations are, they will do very well for fuel: on the tops of the hills are ſome very extenſive flats.

Mount Pitt is the only remarkable high hill in the iſland, and is about one hundred and fifty fathoms high. The cliffs which ſurround the iſland are about forty fathoms high, and perpendicular; the baſis of the iſland is a hard firm clay. The whole iſland is covered with a thick wood, choaked up with a thick underwood. The air is remarkably ſalubrious; as a proof of it, it is remarked by an officer belonging to the ſettlement, that he never knew the conſtitutions either of the human race, or any other animal, more prolific in any part of the world: two children at a birth is no uncommon thing; and elderly women, who have believed themſelves long paſt the period of child bearing, have repeatedly had as fine healthy children as ever were ſeen. There is not only a fine rivulet at the

back

back of the ſettlement, as before obſerved, but many ſtreams of water large enough to turn a mill; and all theſe ſtreams abound with fine eels.

The ſoil is in general good; but, from the ſides of the cliffs which ſurround the coaſt, to the ſummit of Mount Pitt, it is excellent; varying from a rich brown mould to a light red earth.

There are five kinds of trees on the iſland which are good timber, viz. The pine, live oak, a yellow wood, a hard black wood, and a kind of beech. The pine trees are of a large ſize, many of which are from one hundred and eighty to two hundred and twenty feet in height, and from ſix to nine feet in diameter. The timber of the pine is very uſeful in buildings, and is plentiful along the coaſts. The live oak, yellow wood, black wood, and beech, are all of a cloſe grain, and a durable wood.

Sydney Bay, on the ſouth ſide of the ſland, is where the ſettlement is made. Landing at this place entirely depends on the wind and the weather. Sometimes there is as good landing as in the Thames for a fortnight or three weeks together, at other times it is impracticable to land for ten or twelve days ſucceſſively; but it is much oftener good landing than bad. Anſon Bay is a ſmall bay with a ſandy beach, where landing is in general good with an off-ſhore wind and moderate weather. Ball Bay is on the ſouth-eaſt ſide of the iſland; the beach is of large looſe ſtone. When landing is bad in Sydney Bay it is very good here; as it alſo is in Caſcade Bay on the north ſide of the iſland.

The ſpring is viſible in Auguſt; but the native trees, and many plants in the iſland, are in a conſtant ſtate of flowering. The ſummer is warm, and ſometimes the droughts are very great. All the grain and European plants ſeeded in December. From February to Auguſt may be called the rainy ſeaſon: not that there are any ſtated times for rains in theſe months, as it is ſometimes very fine weather for a fortnight together; but when the rain does fall it is in torrents; but

thunder

thunder is very rare. The winter is very pleaſant, and it never freezes.

The proper time for ſowing wheat and barley is from May to Auguſt, and is got in in December. That which was ſowed produced twenty-five fold. Two buſhels of barley, ſowed in 1789, produced twenty-four buſhels of a ſound full grain. The Indian corn produced well; and it was the general opinion, the beſt grain to cultivate in any quantity, on account of the little trouble attending its growth and manufacturing for eating. The Rio Janeiro ſugar cane grows very well, and is thriving. Vines and oranges are very thriving; of the former there will be a great quantity in a few years. Potatoes thrive remarkably well, and yield a very great increaſe. Two crops a year of that article may be got with great eaſe. Every kind of garden vegetable thrives well, and comes to great perfection.

In February, 1791, great improvements were carrying on at Port Jackſon; a conſiderable town was laid out at Roſe Hill, a very pleaſant ſituation; many good buildings were erected, and roads cut. Several acres of land were cleared for corn, and eighty acres for buildings and gardens. But the ſoil about Roſe Hill requires good farmers, and much manure, before plentiful crops can be expected. From the ſudden viciſſitudes of cold and heat, this country may be ſuppoſed to be unhealthy; but four years experience have proved otherwiſe.

In the beginning of May, the officers and men of the New South Wales corps went into the new barrack at Roſe Hill. Thoſe natives who had been moſt accuſtomed to live at the ſettlement, would leave it for ſeveral days together, as they found plenty of fiſh towards the head of the harbour. The buildings at Roſe Hill being carried on ſo far as to form a regular town between Roſe Hill and the landing-place in the creek, it was named by the governor Paramatta.

In the courſe of this year a whale fiſhery was firſt introduced on the coaſt of New South Wales. In the month

month of December ſeveral improvements were made at Sydney Cove, and in particular a building was covered in at Paramatta, which was intended as a place of worſhip until a church could be built.

By that time the ſettlement at Norfolk Iſland was conſiderably improved. The wheat harveſt was ſucceſsful, yielding about a thouſand buſhels of wheat, which were well got in, and thatched in ſtacks. The Lieutenant Governor had eſtabliſhed ſome military regulations, and laid down rules for the obſervance of every perſon on the iſland; ſo that on the 15th of January, 1792, things in general wore a promiſing aſpect in this ſettlement: 260 buſhels of Indian corn were gathered in; many acres were in different ſtates of growth, and likely to yield plentiful harveſts. The ſtorehouſes and granaries were in good repair; and every effort was made to extirpate the virmin with which they were infeſted. The vines flouriſhed exceedingly, and afforded the coloniſts the pleaſing expectation of a ſpeedy and ample ſupply of wines. At Norfolk Iſland a quantity of excellent lime-ſtone was diſcovered, which forming a very good cement, obviated every inconvenience to which they had been previouſly ſubjected in erecting their buildings. This account arrived in 1793.

From diſpatches received in 1795, it appears, that great improvements were making at the ſettlement called Paramatta, which is ſituated on an elevated ſpot, in the form of a creſcent. A ſtrong redoubt is conſtructed in that place, where there are barracks for a detachment of the military, which is always on duty there, as well to preſerve good order and regularity among the convicts, as a check upon the natives, who, from the diſtance to Sydney Cove, might be tempted to moleſt the ſettlers, were there no armed force to protect them.

Much order and decorum prevailed among the convicts, who were in general more attentive to their buſineſs, and reſpectful to thoſe who are appointed to ſuperintend them, than can be eaſily imagined. Some are employed in making bricks and tiles, others in building warehouſes, huts, &c. a great number in

clearing the grounds, bringing in timber, and making roads. Others at their different callings, ſuch as ſmiths, gardeners, cooks, ſhoemakers, taylors, bakers, attendants on the ſick, &c. The hours of work are from ſun-riſe till half paſt ſeven, when they breakfaſt: at half paſt eight they reſume their work till half paſt eleven, when they are rung to dinner: at two they recommence their labours; and the ſetting of the ſun is the ſignal that terminates their daily toil, and which is announced by the drum beating a retreat.

In order to encourage the cultivation of gardens, Saturday is appropriated to clear away and cultivate ſpots for themſelves; and thoſe who have been induſtrious, now find the benefit by having plenty of vegetables, which ſaves their ſalt proviſions, and enables them to truck with the natives for fiſh. Independent of this advantage, thoſe who rear the greateſt quantities of vegetables and plants, receive premiums from the governor, who, at the proper ſeaſon of the year, diſtributes ſeeds among them for that purpoſe. The women ſweep round the huts every morning, and return each man his reſpective linen, waſhed and mended on the Sunday morning.

No perſon is excuſed from attending divine worſhip, which is performed every Sunday morning at eleven o'clock, when all the convicts are obliged to attend in clean linen, and behave in a more orderly and devout manner than would be naturally expected. Indeed, the indefatigable zeal and wiſe meaſures purſued by the governor, in the formation of this infant colony, is beyond all praiſe.

Thoſe convicts whoſe term of tranſportation is expired, have lands granted them in the following proportions: thirty acres to every ſingle man; fifty to the married men, and ten more for every child. They receive proviſions and cloathing from the public ſtores for the firſt eighteen months; the neceſſary tools and implements of huſbandry, with ſeeds and grain to ſow the ground the firſt year. Two ſow pigs

pigs are alſo given to each ſettler, and a pair or two of fowls. On theſe conditions twenty-ſeven, at the cloſe of this year, had commenced farming in the neighbourhood of Paramatta; and as there are many induſtrious people among the ſettlers, their ſtock ſoon began to thrive, and the face of the country to ſhew evident ſigns of culture.

From the lateſt accounts, dated December 21, 1795, and received the beginning of January 1797, it appears that the colony at Port Jackſon is extended forty miles up the country, and much increaſed in population, as well as highly improved in cultivation. It is ſtated in theſe accounts, that the flouriſhing condition of this ſettlement preſented the moſt marked contraſt to the opinions which prevailed in England. In Norfolk Iſland, where the ground is much more fertile than at Port Jackſon or Paramatta, the wheat frequently produces an increaſe of twenty fold; and it is conjectured that future harveſts will be more productive.

When the laſt diſpatches came away it was the ſummer ſeaſon, and all deſcriptions of perſons were engaged in collecting the harveſt, which was moſt abundant. The crops of all kind of grain were good, of wheat particularly ſo; it was thought equal to two years conſumption; and ſuch, in fact, as to obviate, in future, the diſtreſs the ſettlement had hitherto experienced from the delay or neglect in forwarding ſupplies from England. The only ſcarcity they experienced was of animal food; for, although there is a conſiderable number of cattle in the colony, yet the proprietors, deſirous of increaſing their ſtock, rarely ſend them to market.

The town of Sydney, the capital of the colony, with the exception of the governor's houſe, and a few others belonging to the civil and military officers, is ſtill compoſed of huts: improvements are ſpoken of, but the principal concern is wiſely directed to agriculture. The other ſettlements are Hawkeſbury and Paramatta. The latter, although

the more recent eſtabliſhment, is in every reſpect the moſt promiſing: it is pleaſantly ſituated on the banks of a river at the head of the harbour called Broken Bay; and the ſoil is fertile.

The productions of this country are but few; at leaſt we have not been fortunate enough to make any recent diſcovery: the interior is, however, little known.

As a ſtriking inſtance of the want of enterpriſe, or activity, it may be neceſſary to mention a fact which lately occurred. Eight years ſince, a bull and ſix cows ſtrayed from their keeper into the woods: a fear of venturing far amongſt the natives, then ſomewhat hoſtile, repreſſed all attempts to regain them; indolence ſucceeded theſe fears, and no ſearch was ever inſtituted. Some time ſince, an officer's ſervant, ſhooting in the woods, between twenty and thirty miles from Sydney, diſcovered them, and conducted the governor and a party of his friends to the ſpot, where they found a herd conſiſting of nearly ſixty head of remarkably fine cattle: the bull attacked the party, who, with ſome difficulty, eſcaped unhurt. That a neighbourhood of thirty miles by land, preſenting no unuſual obſtacles to an adventurer, ſhould, in the almoſt ſtarving ſtate of the colony, have remained unexplored for ſo long a period, is not to be accounted for otherwiſe than by the apathy or deſpondency of the ſettlers. But as the natives, through the perſevering diligence and almoſt inexhauſtible patience of the governor and principal officers, are now more conciliated and familiarized to Europeans than they were at the firſt planting of the colony, they are much leſs annoyed by their incurſions and depredations, and, of conſequence, enjoy much more comfort and tranquility. In ſhort, it appears, from the teſtimony of ſeveral reſpectable perſons who have tranſmitted accounts by the lateſt diſpatches, that the colonies are in a very flouriſhing ſtate; and that, notwithſtanding the former opinions of many to the contrary,

they

they will effectually anſwer every deſign of their eſtabliſhment, and prove the wiſdom and prudence of government, from their apparent advantage to individuals in particular, and the community in general.

GENERAL OBSERVATIONS.

It has been remarked, by an obſerver on the ſpot, of eminent diſcernment and penetration, that if the colony is intended only as a receptacle for convicts, this place ſtands unequalled, from the ſituation, extent, and nature of the country: but that, if taken in a commercial view, its importance will not appear ſtriking, as the New Zealand hemp, of which ſanguine expectations were formed, is not a native of the ſoil: and an adjacent iſland, where an aſſurance was entertained of finding it, is without it; conſequently, the ſcheme of being able to aſſiſt the Eaſt-Indies with naval ſtores, in caſe of a war, muſt be rendered abortive, both from the deficiency and quality of the timber growing in this country. It is alſo given as an opinion, formed on due obſervation, that, through ſufficient numbers, and induſtry in cultivation, the country would, in the courſe of a few years, produce grain enough for the ſupport of its new poſſeſſors; but to effect this, the preſent limits muſt be greatly extended.

To men of ſmall property, contracted deſires, and a diſpoſition for retirement, the continent of New South Wales may have its inducements. One of this deſcription, with letters of recommendation, and a ſufficient capital to furniſh an aſſortment of tools for agricultural and domeſtic purpoſes, poſſeſſed alſo of a few houſehold utenſils, a cow, a few ſheep, and breeding ſows, with proper protection and encouragement, might obtain a comfortable ſubſiſtence, and a moderate independence in a courſe of time. But they who are induced to emigrate hither, are recommended, before they quit England, to provide

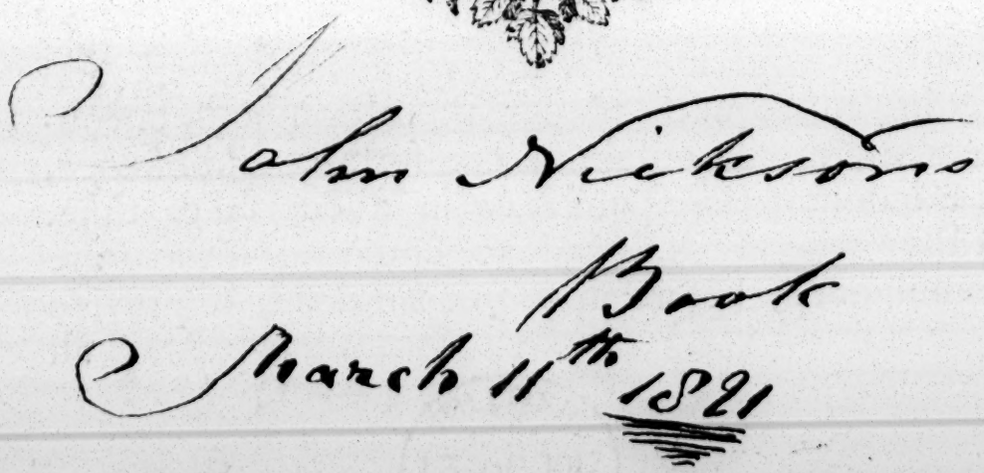
all

all their wearing-apparel for themſelves, family, and ſervants; their furniture, tools of every kind, and implements of huſbandry (among which a plough need not be included, the hoe being uſed) as they will touch at no place where theſe articles can be purchaſed to advantage.

If the ſheep and hogs are Engliſh, it will be the better. With reſpect to wines, ſpirits, tobacco, ſugar, coffee, tea, rice, and many other articles, they may venture to rely on Teneriffe or Madeira, the Brazils, and Cape of Good Hope. It will not be their intereſt to draw bills on their voyage out, as the exchange of money will be found invariably againſt them, and a large diſcount is alſo deducted. Drafts on the places they are to touch at, or caſh (dollars if poſſible) will beſt anſwer their purpoſe. Men of deſperate fortunes, and the lower claſſes, can propoſe to themſelves no kind of advantage, unleſs they can procure a paſſage as indented ſervants, ſimilar to the cuſtom of emigrating to America; for it is abſurd to imagine that government will be diſpoſed to maintain them here until they can be ſettled, and without ſuch ſupport they muſt eventually periſh for want of ſubſiſtence.

FINIS.





Directions to the Binder.

Portrait of Captain Cook to face Title *Page.*
View of Chriſtmas Harbour in Kergulen's Land...272
A Man and Woman of Van Diemen's Land.....326
The Death of Captain Cook.....461
A Man and Woman of Sandwich Iſlands.....480
The Manner of Travelling, &c.....497

